



# AGAINST THE GODS

BOOK 03

*Mars Gravity*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# ***Against the Gods***

(逆天邪神)

by

***Mars Gravity***

(火星引力)

# Synopsis

---

Wielding the sky poison pearl,

Receiving the blood of an evil  
god,

Cultivating the strength to  
oppose heaven,

A lord overlooking the world!

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by alyschu,  
OverTheRainbow, Scrya,  
SummerRain, Dnton,  
crushanapple, Niles, gorold @  
[Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes  
@ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and

incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201 – An Assembly Of Talents

---

Entering the mountain gate, a mountain road as long as five kilometers was up ahead. At the end of the road, was Heavenly Sword Villa. After Xiao Sect's party of seven entered the mountain gate, a conscious difference in pacing appeared as the distance between them grew larger. Xiao Juetian, Xiao Kuangyu, and Xiao Kuanglei walked in front; Xiao Boyun and Xiao Zhen walked in the middle, while Xiao Wuji and Xiao Nan fell to the rear.

Xiao Sect's Sect Master Xiao Juetian had a total of four sons with the names "Wind, Rain, Lightning, Cloud". From the eldest to the youngest, they were individually named Xiao Kuangfeng, Xiao Kuangyu, Xiao Kuanglei, and Xiao Kuangyun. Xiao Kuangfeng became famous during the ranking tournament before the last. Xiao Kuangyu placed third in the previous ranking tournament, and was equally as famous everywhere. This time however, was the current twenty year old Xiao Kuanglei's turn to be on stage. As for the youngest son, Xiao Kuangyun, although he was



younger than Xiao Kuanglei by a month and was also a full twenty years old, it was known to everyone that he was a playboy. If being blunt about it, he was a one hundred percent idiot who only loved wine and women, so it was obvious that Xiao Sect did not bring him to make a fool of himself.

But in Xiao Sect, Xiao Kuangyun was the most pampered. After all, he was the son of Xiao Juetian's one and only true wife.

Xiao Juetian indifferently shot a glance behind him and said to Xiao Kuanglei: "Lei'er, the heavy responsibility of breaking away from the name of the "Thousand year old Number Three" in the ranking tournament this time is now up to you. I, your father, am not hoping that you will defeat Ling Yun but with your innate talent, aside from Ling Yun, there is no reason whatsoever for you to lose to any other... This of course includes Xiao Zhen. He is like a tiger watching his prey when it comes to competing against you and seeing who is better."

“Your child understands, and will definitely not disappoint Father and the sect.” Xiao Kuanglei said while nodding, as a hint of resolution appeared on his face.

“Yu’er, in regards to the matters of ranking tournament, you have to explain it again to Lei’er tonight. Also, when the last sixteen knockout stages begin, don’t forget to give the ‘Earth Shocking Sword’ to Lei’er. It is our secret trump card for this ranking tournament.” Xiao Juetian warned.

“Rest assured Father, I know how I ought to instruct Third Brother.” Xiao Kuangyu faintly smiled.

Behind them, what Xiao Boyun said to Xiao Zhen was pretty much the same. Xiao Boyun’s long eyebrows slanted slightly and had an expression that did not look gentle at all. He said in a low voice: “Zhen’er, this ranking tournament is your chance to be world famous! Your opponents are not only the other sect disciples, there is also Xiao Kuanglei! That time during the struggle for the Sect Master position, I lost to Xiao Juetian,

and could only end up as the Sword Sect's Elder in the end. This, I have accepted. However, my son, definitely will not lose to his son! Not only do you need to seize second place for Xiao Sect, you also have to defeat Xiao Kuanglei and make your father proud."

Xiao Zhen nodded his head seriously: "Father can be at ease, this child of yours will definitely not disappoint the sect, and will more so not disappoint father."

As for Xiao Wuji's conversation

with his grandson Xiao Nan, it was even more simple: “Nan’er, bringing you to the ranking tournament this time, was an opportunity Grandpa fought for with difficulty. You are still young, so entering the top ten is fundamentally impossible. But as a Xiao Sect disciple, whatever happens, you must not place outside the top fiftieth. You have concentrated so long in cultivating, so this time’s real combat is the best experience for you, and is the best place to check of your hard work.”

“Yes!” Xiao Nan respectfully replied: “Grandfather, a few

days ago when this child of yours came out from closed door cultivation, he has occasionally heard that the one you engaged Yuerui to... I think his name was Xiao Luocheng, was crippled by another? Is this true?"

"That did indeed happen." Xiao Wuji nodded, but his expression was neutral. It was evident that he did not care about this matter too much: "Yuerui's aptitude is mediocre; her appearance and temperament is definitely not that showy. Instead of looking for a 'phoenix tail' within the main sect, why not look for a 'chicken head' at a branch sect?"

And with Grandfather here, nobody within the branch sect would dare bully her. Although that Xiao Luocheng's aptitude is only so-so, in New Moon City, he is still regarded as a top genius. If he did not get crippled, he ought to have already married Yuerui by now."

"Hmph, just let him be crippled. Only his looks are pretty decent. Our Xiao Sect has a few hundred branch sects, wouldn't finding someone stronger than him be a dime a dozen. What's more laughable is that the people from the New Moon Branch Sect actually said



it was a youth of sixteen years impersonating the Divine Phoenix Empire's "Eccentric God Hand" Huangfu He that crippled Xiao Luocheng, and even stole everything in the Sect's Treasury; they are virtually treating me like a fool, how extremely ridiculous! They obtained an Emperor Profound Dragon Core from the Black Moon Merchant Guild, and even the Black Moon Merchant Guild confirmed it. Yet they kept on saying that it was only a fake, and actually took out a Nascent Profound Beast's Profound Core to fool me. It's simply outrageous. Not crippling their entire Branch Sect was already as benevolent and humane as

possible of me.”

As he spoke of the later parts, Xiao Wuji's voice already carried hints of hatred and anger within.

“So something like that actually happened. A insignificant New Moon Branch Sect, actually dared to keep such a treasure like a Emperor Profound Dragon Core and not offer it to us. When grandfather lowered himself and personally visited, they even deceived Grandfather again and again.

How really unforgivable; it's fortunate that Yuerui didn't marry over." Xiao Nan chimed in, agreeing.

"No need to mention these little things anymore. You should stroll around some more in the Heavenly Sword Villa tonight, then rest early and store up some energy. Grandfather awaits to see your performance tomorrow."

"Yes, Grandfather."

---

In front of the mountain gate, the appearance of a group of five, instantly attracted the gaze of everyone around them.

All five of them were females. Their attires were very similar to each other; all of them wore a snow-gauze long dress that covered their feet and almost touching the ground. The long dress was originally pure white, but as they walked, bits and pieces of ice-blue glimmers that were like stars naturally floated

around their bodies,  
embellishing ice-blue colors and  
a fantastical aura on the hems of  
their dresses.

The age of the five females all  
seemed very youthful. Other  
than the young girl in the back  
who wore a white gauze on her  
face and seemed to only be  
sixteen or seventeen, the other  
four women all appeared to only  
be around twenty. Two out of  
the five women, who were at the  
front and the back had their face  
covered with light gauze, hiding  
their facial features, only  
revealing their crystal like  
charming eyes. The other three

women had nothing covering their face, and every single one of them was extremely beautiful. All of the three extremely beautiful faces were hazed by a kind of deep coldness. They didn't apply any make up, yet their skin were as soft and smooth as snow jade. It made people subconsciously think of the words "Skin of ice and bones of jade", "Face of snow and lips of scarlet" the instant they saw them.

Although each of the three charming faces were different from one another, they were all flawless and impeccable. Within

the peerless allurements, they revealed a trace of sacredness and loftiness that others almost would not dare to look directly at. They were like goddesses that stood over the nine heavens, not stained by any trace of the mortal world.

Looking at them from afar, one would clearly feel a wave of ethereal aura mixed with ice-cold air directly penetrating one's chest cavity... On their right hand side, a sect's group that was also walking toward the mountain gate stopped in their tracks at the same time they saw them, and watched

them in stupification, as if all of their souls were sucked out in that instant.

As they walked closer, the Heavenly Sword disciple that stood guard in front of the mountain gate froze for an entire five seconds before he finally bit the tip of his tongue with effort. Only after concentrating his attention with all his might while regaining his mind and calming his heart, did he finally calm down with difficulty. But his head remained downwards, and no longer dared to look at them directly with his eyes. Taking a step forward, he



spoke while somewhat  
stuttering: “I... I assume that  
five esteemed guests are fairies  
of Frozen Cloud Asgard? Ple...  
please present the invitation  
letter and list of names.”

After this Heavenly Sword  
disciple finished speaking these  
words, he wished he could slap  
himself twice on the face right  
then and there. Greeting guests  
at the mountain gate was a  
serious affair that affected the  
Villa's face; it was why he, who  
was an important disciple that  
was able to deal with any kind of  
situation, was chosen. He wasn't  
fazed at all and had no change in

expression even when facing Sect Master-ranked personages from the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan, but facing the fairies of Frozen Cloud Asgard, his mind still became chaotic. After all, he was but a normal man.

Even though he had not seen the invitation letter yet, women who possessed such transcendental beauty and disposition could only belong to no other place than Frozen Cloud Asgard. Those floating fantastical ice auroras, was furthermore the ironclad proof. In addition to that, in order to

more easily control the possibility of unexpected situations arising, there was a hard regulation in the ranking tournament's rules. For every single participating force in the tournament, the total number of participating disciples plus escorting personnels must not surpass seven, and even forces like the four major sects would not be an exception. A limit of seven people, was too little even for a small sect; a situation where less than seven people from a force would almost never appear... Except for Frozen Cloud Asgard! It was extremely rare for the Frozen Cloud Asgard to be willing to contact the outside world, especially places

where there was a lot of men, and everyone was well aware of the reason. Only five people coming this time from the Frozen Cloud Asgard, was not surprising in the slightest.

Standing in front of him, the impeccable beauty who wasn't wearing a veil took out the invitation letter and name list, and handed them over to the Heavenly Sword disciple. Looking at the jade hand that was seemingly made of snow and wax, the Heavenly Sword disciple's heart rate instantly sped up. It was the first time in his entire life he had learnt that

a woman's hand could actually be beautiful to such an extent. He even had a feeling that he would die willingly if he could just touch at this jade hand a single time... However, even if he had ten thousand times the guts, he still would not dare to do so. He carefully reached out his hand, pinched a corner of the invitation letter and the name list, and received them.

With his gaze sweeping across the invitation letter and the list of names, he hastily lowered his head and said: "So it is the Fairy of Frozen Glass and Fairy of Frozen Beauty from the Frozen

Cloud Asgard that have  
personally graced us... Ah?  
Frozen... Fairy of Frozen  
Beauty?”

The Heavenly Sword disciple subconsciously raised his head and looked toward the woman who wore a face veil and had a gaze that was as cold as ice. The moment he contacted her gaze, his entire body ran cold with a startle, and immediately realized that he had already seriously lost his composure. He once again hastily lowered his head, and spoke with respect: “The Fairy of Frozen Beauty’s name, is like thunder striking through my

ears. Please forgive this junior for losing composure. Five esteemed guests, please enter...”

After he finished speaking, he moved aside with weak steps. As a wave of ice-cold fragrance swept over his front, he didn't even dare to lift his head.

Only after they had walked far away, did the Heavenly Sword disciple completely regain himself. He looked at their receding back silhouettes in a somewhat stupefied manner; his mind was a little unhinged for a

while. At this time, the disciple beside him suddenly spoke: “Senior Brother Haiya, what you called out before was... Fairy of Frozen Beauty? Don’t tell me it was the rumored Chu Yuechan?”

“Yes!” The disciple called Haiya nodded: “Chu Yueli, Chu Yuechan, Shui Wushuang, Wu Xuexin, Xia Qingyue... That is indeed Chu Yuechan’s name; she actually personally came...”

“Should I report to the Villa Master immediately? If Villa Master knows that Chu Yuechan



actually came, he will definitely be excited...”

“Report your head!” Ling Haiya smacked his head: “Villa Master and Villa Master’s Wife are currently welcoming guests together. In the Villa, even idiots know the name Chu Yuechan is an enormous taboo to the Villa Master’s Wife. If you were to report this and make trouble arise, let’s see how you can handle the consequences!”

“Then, then how should I report it?”

Ling Haiya thought for a bit, and said: “Just say Frozen Cloud Asgard has arrived, a total of five people, and the Fairy of Frozen, Chu Yueli, is leading. In any case, her name is the first name on the attendance list. You must not bring up Chu Yuechan!”

“Oh, alright.” The Heavenly Sword disciple moved hurriedly, took out a Sound Transmission Talisman, and spread the news within the Villa.

At this time, the group of

people that had been struck dumb finally walked over, and the middle-aged man in the front said with cupped fists: “This junior brother, were those people just now the fairies from Frozen Cloud Asgard?”

“Yes.” Ling Haiya nodded simply.

“Sure enough, hearing about it a hundred times is truly not as good as seeing it once, and seeing it once is far better than hearing about it a hundred times.” The middle-aged man

sighed emotionally, and said: “I came from the Eastern Domain’s Profound Sword Sect, just to visit the Heavenly Sword Villa...”

A bunch of sect groups arrived continuously. Although every group only had seven people, not one of the elderly wasn’t famous in an area and an overlord-level person, and not one of the youths wasn’t a peak genius. In the past few days, these overlords, with names that shook the world, as well as genius youths that stood at the highest summit, gathered at this Heavenly Sword Pavilion to

decide their relative superiority at the Ranking Tournament.

At nightfall, a somewhat unusual group of people arrived at the mountain gate. The reason they were unusual was because the group only consisted of four people, which was even fewer than the number of Frozen Cloud Asgard people.

These four people, were precisely Qin Wushang, Cang Yue, Yun Che, and Xia Yuanba.

Just as they walked in front of the mountain gate, Ling Haiya strode over, and said respectfully: "Guests, please halt. Our Villa is preparing for the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament these few days, and we're not accepting guests. Please leave."

There were only four people; other than the elderly man, two of the three young people were only at the True Profound Realm, and the third person was actually only at the Elementary Profound Realm. In this assembly of talents at the Heavenly Sword Villa, this was

simply a spectacle too terrible to behold. No one would believe they were here to participate in the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament.

## Chapter 202 – Heavenly Sword Villa

---

Being treated in this way was not one bit out of Qin Wushang's expectations. He originally thought that Cang Yue would bring a few experts to guard their journey, so aside from the three participating disciples, he did not dare to bring any other people without permission. He didn't expect that Cang Yue would leave alone. Out of the three disciples, two were crippled by Yun Che and one was forced away. After adding Xia Yuanba, there were only four people. Even he himself felt that



it was somewhat laughable.

He stepped forward and said: “This little brother, I am Qin Wushang and I have come this time to attend the ranking tournament.”

“You four... are here to attend the ranking tournament? The Heavenly Sword disciple guarding the mountain gate blankly stared for a while; at this moment, Ling Haiya noticed Cang Yue. After blankly staring for a while, he promptly said: “And this, is Blue Wind Imperial

## Family's Blue Moon Princess?"

"Yes." Cang Yue slightly nodded while handing over the invitation letter and the name list at the same time. "We four came here to represent the Imperial Family and participate in this time's ranking tournament. This is our invitation letter and list of names."

Naturally, the namelist only had four names: Qin Wushang, Cang Yue, Xia Yuanba, Yun Che.

And in the participating disciple section, was only the name “Yun Che”.

Ling Haiya’s facial muscles twitched, then walked to the side and politely said: “So it’s actually the Imperial Family’s esteemed guests that are here. I ask that you’ll forgive me for my rudeness earlier. Four esteemed guests, please come in. Five kilometers ahead, is where the Villa is located, where Villa Master and Villa Mistress are already personally awaiting for you. Please.”

After the four passed through the mountain gate, the few gatekeeping disciples all looked at each other in dismay.

“Only brought along one participating disciple, who’s also only at the True Profound Realm... I believe that in these ranking tournaments thus far, there seems to never have been a participating disciple at the True Profound Realm.” A disciple said.

“Ever since Cang Wanhe became seriously ill, his power

was forcibly seized, plundered, and divided by the Crown Prince and Third Prince. With the political unrest and instability within the Imperial Family, I suppose he is in no mood to think about some ranking tournament. The Imperial Family's performances thus far had always been dismal. I'd reckon that this time, the broken pot has truly been broken apart. For the Blue Moon Princess to personally bring the team here, is probably only to show how much they care about our Villa."

"There are two definites." Ling

Haiya said: “In this ranking tournament, the Imperial Family’s performance is not only going to be dismal. I believe that they’ll be first place in reverse. As for the second, during tomorrow morning’s age and profound strength assessment, the Imperial Family would probably become a big joke. Sigh, to think that our Heavenly Sword Villa’s ancestor and the Imperial Family’s ancestor became mutual brothers to help each other. One held worldly authority while the other held worldly might. Nowadays, our Heavenly Sword Villa’s is at the crown of the Blue Wind Empire, unreachable by any. Although the Imperial Family declined day

by day, they still were in authority for the commoners there. In the eyes of those large and influential sects, they were no longer a deterrence with each passing day. There would probably be even more people looking down at them this time. It is truly regrettable.”

Yun Che and company walked along the mountain road. Although it there was a distance of five kilometers from Heavenly Sword Villa, the dignified atmosphere emitted from its majesty could still be clearly felt.

“It is worthy of being called the Heavenly Sword Villa. This kind of atmosphere lets one feel like there are countless swords dancing by their side.” Yun Che said with feeling.

“Uwaah... Not even in my dreams would I think that I would actually be able to personally come to Heavenly Sword Villa one day. Even Uncle Sikong, who I used to admire the most, had never come to Heavenly Sword Villa before.” On the road there, Xia Yuanba looked in all directions with two eyes that were always wide open, unwilling to blink for even a



second.

Xia Yuanba's emotionally excited manner made Cang Yue unable to hold back her smile. She said to Yun Che: "Junior Brother Yun, Heavenly Sword Villa is unlike any other places. This place could be regarded as Blue Wind Empire's holy land, and also the one and only holy land. Even the lowest ranking disciples of Heavenly Sword Villa are distinctive geniuses in the outside world. Those disciples guarding the mountain gate earlier, are all at the Spirit Profound Realm. Twenty year old Spirit Profound rankers are

all qualified to become instructors in every Profound Palace branch but in Heavenly Sword Villa, they are merely gatekeepers. Heavenly Sword Villa's inside information is ample, and their strength is enormous. It is not something that an ordinary person is capable of imagining."

"Senior sister, I understand. Don't worry. If I am mocked or provoked in anyway, as long as they don't touch my bottom line, I will retreat." Yun Che nodded with a slight smile. He knew the meaning behind Cang Yue's words. Because Cang Yue

knew that he was a person who refuses to suffer a loss. Amongst the one thousand or so participating disciples, his profound strength level was the lowest of the low. It was likely for him to be ridiculed and if he struck back here, if by chance he angered Heavenly Sword Villa, even if Cang Yue personally steps forward, it might not necessarily be possible to keep it under control.

But his prerequisite, was that it had to touch his bottom line. As for this bottom line, it was obviously up to him to decide. For a nobleman to take revenge,

ten years was not too long... But that was in regards to noblemen, and never once did he believe that he was a nobleman.

At the same time, Frozen Cloud Asgard's party of five had already approached Heavenly Sword Villa's main entrance.

“Elder sister, aside from that time when you went to get three Sky Profound Beast profound cores so Qingyue can cultivate ‘Frozen Heart Liquid Jade’, you haven’t left Frozen Cloud Asgard in ten or so years. Why have you

taken the initiative now to come to this ranking tournament?” Chu Yueli’s eyes shifted as she asked the question that she had been wondering about in her heart ever since leaving the Asgard.

Chu Yuechan’s eyes shone like crystals without the slightest of ripples. Her voice was even more like the wind that brushed by with profound ice; soft, yet it also contained a bone-chilling coldness: “I have lived away from the world for far too long. I want to see whether this generation’s young juniors are flourishing or are already in

decline.”

Chu Yueli actually shook her head: “Elder sister, in this world, I’m the one who understands you the most. Other people may believe this reasoning of yours, but how can I possibly believe that?”

Chu Yuechan: “...”

“You suddenly left Asgard half a year ago and only returned last month. When you returned, your heart was always restless.

Elder sister's Frozen Cloud Arts and Frozen Heart Arts have both reached the sixth stage. If something huge did not happen, that would absolutely not be so. And now that Elder sister suddenly says that she wishes to personally come to Heavenly Sword Villa this time..."

"Heavenly Sword Villa is at hand, no need to ask more about what should not need to be asked." Chu Yuechan coldly stated, interrupting Chu Yueli's speech. The coldness within her voice had made the bodies of the three Frozen Cloud disciples at the rear tremble with terror.

Chu Yueli immediately stopped talking and did not dare to ask again. At this time Heavenly Sword Villa's main entrance had now appeared.

“Qingyue put this on. Until the very last moment, do not take this off.” Chu Yueli turned around and put a Frozen Crystal Necklace in the hands of a young veiled girl.

“Yes, Master.” The young girl took the Frozen Crystal Necklace and encircled it around her



snowy neck.

Ling Yuefeng was more than fifty years old but he only looked to be around thirty. When reaching the Emperor Profound Realm, one's lifespan would increase by four or five hundred years. To a Throne, fifty years of age was only the beginning of youth.

Ling Yuefeng's complexion was like crown jade and did not need to be enhanced by make up. He was elegant and his temperament was gentle and

mild without the dignified air of a sword master. Bother his hands were like white jade and did not seem like they had frequently wielded swords at all. When he saw his guests, not only did he personally welcome them, he also had on an amiable smile and gave the proper courtesy in a warm manner without the pride and arrogance of Blue Wind Empire's number one master. A few participating young disciples that saw him all revealed an admiration that was close to infatuation.

Standing next to him was a thirty year old or so woman

dressed in floral pattern. She was Ling Yuefeng's only wife Xuanyuan Yufeng, and also the birth mother of Ling Yun and Ling Jie. Her temperament was graceful, and her appearance was as beautiful as blossoming flowers. Even though her looks were also one in a thousand, if compared to Chu Yuechan, it was still like comparing a mortal woman with a goddess of the heavens; there was at least a difference of one hundred and eight thousand miles.

To make the Ling Yuefeng who was infatuated with Chu Yuechan take Xuanyuan Yufeng

as wife, naturally it was not on account of her looks, and instead was because of her family's background... However, after some twenty-odd years of their marriage, no one had ever dared to ask about the background of Heavenly Sword Villa's Villa Master's wife, and none also dared to investigate. It was because her surname "Xuanyuan", made a deep sense of fear emerge from one's heart just by thinking about it.

Because, that was the surname of a certain Sacred Ground Master that belonged to one of the Four Sacred Grounds in the

## Profound Sky Continent.

“Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Chu Yueli, has brought Senior Sister Chu Yuechan, disciples Shui Wushuang, Wu Xuexin, Xia Qingyue to visit Heavenly Sword Villa and also sends our Mistress’ regards on her behalf to Villa Master Ling and Villa Mistress Ling.” Facing Ling Yuefeng and Xuanyun Yufeng who were welcoming guests, Chu Yueli stood at the very front and slightly bowed towards the coupled surnamed Ling.

As soon as they came over, Ling Yuefeng's state of mind was already in great turmoil because he saw Chu Yuechan. Even though Chu Yuechan wore a snowy veil, even though thirty one years had passed since he had seen Chu Yuechan, he still recognized those eyes of hers in one glance. Only, he didn't dare to be certain because he did not believe that Chu Yuechan would personally come to Heavenly Sword Villa. It was only until the name "Chu Yuechan" came out of Chu Yueli's own mouth did he dare to believe it.

Thirty one years had passed.

No one would think that he had missed and yearned for her for a full thirty one years. Even though he had taken a wife and had children now, and even though two of his sons have already reached the marriageable age, he still had not let that extremely beautiful figure walk out from his heart and the depths of his soul.

This was the first time in several tens of years that this number one master's state of mind was in great turmoil. After Chu Yueli announced her entire sect, he had actually stared in a daze for a full three seconds

before laughing ashamedly and returning the courtesy: “Welcome, five fairies, and thank you for honoring our lowly Villa with your presence. It has also been a several years since I have seen the Asgard Mistress. I wonder if she is still well?”

“Mistress has always been well. I thank Villa Master Ling for his concern.” Chu Yueli slightly nodded her head.

“Oh? This is the world famous ‘Fairy of Frozen Beauty’, Chu



Yuechan?” Xuanyuan Yufeng’s gaze fell on Chu Yuechan’s body as she revealed a meaningful smile: “Several years ago, Yufeng has heard of Blue Wind’s number one beauty, Fairy of Frozen Beauty’s great name. I didn’t expect that I would have the fortune to actually meet you. May I ask if the Fairy of Frozen Beauty could remove her veil to let Yufeng have a look at the gracefulness of Blue Wind’s number one beauty and resolve one of her life’s wishes?”

How many in the entire Blue Wind Empire would dare to not reply to the words of Blue

Wind's number one master's wife? Although these words were clearly directed towards Chu Yuechan, Chu Yuechan's eyes did not waver in the slightest. She coldly looked straight without the slightest of movements, as if she did not hear her say anything.

Xuanyuan Yufeng's crescent eyebrows suddenly slanted to the side.

Ling Yufeng chuckled and opened his mouth to speak: "Honey, these fairies are our

esteemed guests. I understand that you are impatient, but asking guests who have not entered our household a favor, really is a bit somewhat neglectful.”

Xuanyuan Yufeng nodded with a slight smile: “I was indeed a little short-tempered, and I hope that Fairy of Frozen Beauty won’t mind me. Fairies, please enter, there will naturally be personnels taking care of the residence for you all. If you have any needs, you can tell the disciples within the villa without holding back. If there are any neglections, I hope for

your magnanimity and forgiveness.”

“Madam is too polite.” Chu Yueli gave another courtesy, and thereupon, the group of five entered the Heavenly Sword Villa.

Xuanyuan Yufeng’s expression, also draped down after they entered the villa. She glanced at Ling Yuefeng, and sneered: “Ling Yuefeng, you really are deeply sentimental with love. You bitterly chased after her for ten years, and didn’t even get to

see her shadow; we have been married for over twenty years now, yet you actually still haven't forgotten about her! This time, she came to your doorsteps herself instead, aren't you feeling pretty elated right now?"

"Honey, you are misinterpreting me with your words." Ling Yufeng grasped Xuanyuan Yufeng's hand, and said with a wry smile: "I was young at that time, so naturally would have done some stupid things like a young man would. We have been married for twenty-one years; how would

the naive longing back in the days, be comparable to even one ten-thousandth of our affection of over twenty years? I, Ling Yuefeng having a wife like you, am already satisfied to the point of wanting nothing else. I haven't even accepted any concubines in these twenty years, so how could I have any other thoughts? Losing myself in a trance earlier, was only because I had recalled the dumb things I did back then, and merely had some lamentations."

Holding Ling Yuefeng's hand with a reverse grip, the dark clouds on Xuanyuan Yufeng's

face dispersed completely.  
However, she didn't know that  
as Ling Yuefeng spoke, the voice  
in his heart was more than ten  
or hundred of times louder than  
his voice from the mouth.

She actually came... She  
actually came...

I finally got to see her again...

---

Author Note: 【Does it feel a  
little repetitive mentioning  
about Ling Yuefeng being

infatuated with Chu Yuechan...  
Actually, this is a very, very, very  
enormous fuse to be lit (Crap,  
even those words are  
forbidden!).】



## Chapter 203 – Someone's Coming

---

Not long after the people from Frozen Cloud Asgard entered, the four people from Blue Wind Profound Palace entered the Villa as well, and they did not encounter each other. After entering the Villa, they were quickly directed to their pre-arranged residence. And, as the standard for a temporary residence, it was greatly beyond Yun Che's and Xia Yuanba's expectations.

Because, this was not just a

simple guestroom, but evidently, an exquisite small courtyard... no, a big courtyard! There were exactly eight separate rooms in the courtyard, and within it were trees, a pavilion, a pond, and even a weapon rack filled with dozen different types of weapons.

“Wow! This can’t be real, right... I had initially thought that we had to squeeze two people in a single room. I did not expect the place to be this big and luxurious.” Xia Yuanba constantly exclaimed as he looked at the big courtyard.

“As expected of the Heavenly Sword Villa. With just their arrangements in entertaining guests, it is not something the other sects can compare to.” Yun Che exclaimed as well.

Qin Wushang laughed, and said, “The participating teams in this ranking tournament number more than five hundred, and every participating team has one of this courtyard. The number of rooms in each pavilion are never less than eight, so as to allow each guest to have their own private room.

With the Heavenly Sword Villa's large size, forget about five hundred, even if another five hundred teams were to come, they would still not have any problems with an arrangement like this."

"Distinguished guests, please select your own rooms. When night comes, I will bring the meals to your rooms. To prevent any unnecessary conflict before the tournament, a banquet was not arranged. Please forgive us." The Heavenly Sword female disciple, who brought them over to their residence, politely said.

With just four people, there was naturally a large leeway when they had eight rooms to choose from. Qin Wushang chose the second room from the right, Xia Yuanba chose the third from the right, Yun Che chose the fourth from the left, and Cang Yue chose the third from the left. The four of them were only separated by the room which was right opposite the courtyard entrance.

Although it was just a guestroom, the furniture in the room were not simple, and when

compared to the room given to Inner Palace disciples in the Blue Wind Profound Palace, it was many times more luxurious.

With the existence of spatial rings, they naturally did not have anything similar to luggage to unpack and move. Qin Wushang said, “This is the first time Yun Che and Xia Yuanba have visited this Heavenly Sword Villa. This is a rare opportunity, and since it is still early, why don’t you two take a walk around the Villa, and experience the magnificence of Blue Wind Empire’s number one Villa.”

“Alright!” Yun Che and Xia Yuanba nodded at the same time.

Cang Yue immediately said, “I’m coming as well. I came here once three years ago, and I still remember some places, especially the Sword Management Terrace vividly, so I can bring you two around. Palace Chief Qin, are you not going to stroll around the Villa?”

“I will pass. I have come here several times in the past few

years, and I don't wish to once again see those nasty faces filled with ridicule." Qin Wushang said with a laugh.

Cang Yue obviously clearly knew what those "nasty faces filled with ridicule" Qin Wushang was referring to. She consoled him, "Palace Chief Qin, don't worry, this time, Junior brother Yun will definitely allow us to vent out our frustration and hold our heads up high."

"Good." Qin Wushang smiled and nodded. "Get going then, I



just happen to feel like meditating. This villa is reverberated with endless sword essence, and every single time I'm here, I would always benefit from it."

When the three of them left the courtyard, their vicinity was filled with human activities. The guest residences were concentrated together, and most of them were nearby. As the day for the Ranking Tournament approached, this guest residential area would naturally become more lively. Several old acquaintances would stop, and converse with each other. People

who were not acquainted would still smile and greet each other... In this Heavenly Sword Villa, these leading individuals who were usually extremely prideful and respected, no matter if they were old or young, would retract their pride, and become modest and polite. After all, in their own territories, they were individuals capable of controlling everything with the back of their hands, but in here, they might be at the very bottom in terms of influence, and at best, they would only be mediocre. No one would dare to be entirely sure that the person walking over to them would not be able to kill them with merely a finger or two.

And, in this Blue Wind Empire, there was never a single person who dared to act wildly in Heavenly Sword Villa.

“Do you two want to first visit the Sword Management Terrace, or the Sword Discourse Arena? There’s thousands of swords in the Sword Management Terrace, and every single one of them are beyond ordinary. If a Heavenly Sword disciple wishes to obtain a sword from the Sword Management Terrace, he has to subdue the selected sword. The scenic view of countless

thousands of swords flying around, I guarantee that once you guys see it, you will never forget it for your entire lives.” Cang Yue said with sparkling eyes. “As for Sword Discourse Arena, that’s the place where the Ranking Tournament will be held. It is made up of one main stage, and thirty other small stages. The preliminaries of the Ranking Tournament will all be held at the small stages, while the thirty-two finalists will compete on the main stage.”

Suddenly, the moment Cang Yue finished her explanation, behind her, a surprised voice

sounded. “Princess Cang Yue?”

Yun Che raised his head and looked towards the source of the voice, and he saw a group of seven people currently walking towards them. Among the seven, there were four youths and three elders; every one of them was dressed in red, with a red flame crest embroidered on the chest. Among the seven, the oldest was someone whose hair and beard were already pure white, both his elderly face and slightly cloudy eyes had a great amount of vicissitudes settled within. However, the profound aura being emitted out from his

body was actually incomparably dense, causing several passers-by to reveal expressions of deep shock and worry when they looked towards him. Instinctively, these people would take a detour, as they did not dare to approach him.

And this elder caused Yun Che to feel a sense of familiarity. He pondered for a moment, and recalled the time he met this person...

Scarlet Dragon Mountain  
Range, the Flame Dragon's

settlement... He was among the five from Burning Heaven Clan who had attempted to take the Flame Dragon's life. Referred to as the Great Elder by the other four individuals, he was Fen Moli, who possessed strength at half a step to the Emperor Profound Realm!

In other words, these seven people, were members of the Burning Heaven Clan.

And the one who called out was a youth of about twenty-three years old. He looked at Cang Yue

with a smile, and his gaze showed hints of surprise... and infatuation.

Hearing his voice, Cang Yue frowned, turned around, and politely replied. "So it was Young Master Fen, what a coincidence."

Fen Juecheng walked over. With a smile mixed with joy and elegance, he slightly bowed towards Cang Yue and laughed. "Juecheng should be the one calling this a coincidence, because Juecheng finally made a



successful bet. Juecheng went through many troubles to earn the right to visit the Heavenly Sword Villa this time, and my sole reason for it was to see Your Imperial Highness. As I thought, Your Highness did indeed personally make a visit. Juecheng is extremely elated.”

Fen Juecheng’s eyes were entirely fixated on Cang Yue, completely ignoring Yun Che and Xia Yuanba who were by her side... One was at the True Profound Realm and the other was at the Elementary Profound Realm. They basically did not have the privilege of being made

known to him.

“Young Master Fen, that’s kind of you.” Cang Yue forced out a smile. “I still have to bring my two friends on a tour around the villa, if there’s nothing else, I will take my leave.”

Fen Juecheng did not pester her any further, and slightly bowed. “Then I will be taking anymore of Your Highness’ time. Juecheng will make another visit at a later time.”

Cang Yue casually nodded once, then left with Yun Che and Xia Yuanba.

“Hehe, big brother, this is the first time I have ever seen you this patient with a girl. Tch, it’s already been an entire three years. I really want to know how long your patience will last.”

Fen Juebi walked over, and said with a face full of smiles. “But this Blue Moon Princess sure is out of the ordinary, even big brother doesn’t catch her eye. Unless the person she wishes to

marry is the Jade Emperor of the Heavens? Haah... If one day, you're tired of playing this game, with just your one word, I will personally tie her up and send her to your bed. How about it?"

"Do not fool around." Fen Juecheng snorted. "The exhilaration from subduing a woman is way better than simply obtaining a woman. And, although the Imperial Family is gradually declining and will soon be in our control, she's after all, still an imperial princess. She's not someone you can simply kidnap. If you happen to anger the Heavenly

Sword Villa because of that, I would really like to see how you're going to clean up the mess."

"At the very most, the Heavenly Sword Villa will guarantee the safety of Cang Wanhe. I doubt they would have the mood to care about a princess' life." Fen Juebi laughed and then looked towards Cang Yue's graceful and beautiful back while slowly licking the corner of his lips.

Fen Juecheng looked towards the courtyard Cang Yue walked

out from, and coincidentally, the Heavenly Sword female disciple, who made residential arrangements for Cang Yue and the rest, walked out. Fen Juecheng took a step forward and asked, “Junior sister, I am Burning Heaven Clan’s Fen Juecheng, do you mind telling me which room Princess Cang Yue is residing in?”

---

The night sky began to fall, and all of the participating teams for the Ranking Tournament had

arrived. After circling around the open activity areas in the Heavenly Sword Villa, Yun Che and the rest returned to their own rooms.

The meals prepared by Heavenly Sword Villa were exceptionally fulfilling as well. After finishing dinner, it was already about seven in the evening. Although it was still not too late as there was still a slither of light in the sky, the guest residence area in the Heavenly Sword Villa was already in a state of silence. To prepare for the Ranking Tournament tomorrow, almost

every single participating disciple was having an early sleep, so as to recharge their energy. Those who came to accompany them naturally did not make any noise to interrupt them.

But, to Yun Che, it was still a little too early to sleep. After tossing and turning a few rounds on the bed, he sat right up from his bed, opened the door, went out, and arrived before Cang Yue's room which was beside his. Cang Yue's room was still brightly lit. Since she was not going to participate in the tournament tomorrow, she



naturally did not need to sleep early.

“Knock, knock, knock.” Yun Che raised his fist and knocked on the door. “Senior sister, it’s me.”

The door was opened really quickly, and what appeared before him was Cang Yue’s snow-white beautiful figure, shined upon by both the moonlight and candlelight. “Junior brother Yun, the tournament is tomorrow. Why aren’t you asleep yet?”

Yun Che smiled gently, and without saying a word, he entered her room, closed the door, and pulled the door lock. Then, under Cang Yue's tender cry, he suddenly carried her by the waist, and walked over to the bedside with large strides. "That's obviously because I have been thinking about you, senior sister."

"Ah... But, you... have to compete tomorrow... Mnn... Mnnmnn..."

Before she could even finish, her lips were already forcefully kissed by Yun Che. Her entire body was also pressed against the bed, the sounds she instantly turned into moans. She instinctively struggled for a moment, and then, willingly closed her eyes, immersing herself in her lingering kiss with Yun Che.

Cang Yue's pair of lips was as tender as a flower, with a soft and creamy feeling. Yun Che was completely mesmerized as he continued to suck on them. Placing his two hands at her hips, his tongue stretched

directly into her mouth, coming into contact with Cang Yue's tender and timid small tongue, and they tangled around each other.

Cang Yue made a "Mn" sound, her delicate brows slightly trembled from her nervousness. She instinctively gently bit on Yun Che's tongue which had invaded into her mouth with her front teeth. Breathing erratically, her scented breath gently brushed against Yun Che's face.

In the midst of lingering kiss, Cang Yue's face had unknowingly been flushed entirely in red. Her pair of eyes which occasionally opened and closed had turned completely hazy. In the midst of the immersion, the belt at her waist had already been pulled out by Yun Che, and the jade buttons on her garment were opened one at a time. Yun Che stretched his hands, invaded into her clothes, and without any restraints, his hands began to swim around her tender waist.

“Mn...” Having her skin in direct contact, Cang Yue's

eyelids suddenly jumped, and her beautiful pair of eyes were wide open. As she moaned, she instinctively began to struggle. Turning her head aside, she finally managed to escape from Yun Che's tongue, and heavily panted. "No... Don't... You still have a tournament tomorrow..."

"With senior sister giving me strength, I will definitely perform much better tomorrow!" After saying that, he pushed his head forward, and once again pressed his lips against Cang Yue's. The two hands which were under her clothes suddenly went upwards,

grabbing onto the pair of exceptionally tender snow lumps, and gently began to fondle them.

“Mn... Mn!” With her sensitive part being assaulted, Cang Yue’s moans and struggle became even more intense, but with just her strength alone, how could she be able to resist against Yun Che? Very quickly, her struggles began to weaken, and not long after, a strange and foreign feeling began to slowly well up inside her. The pair of hands which were violating her pure body seemed to began to feel hotter as well. His hot touch passed

through her skin and entered her body, causing her to suddenly feel as though a fire was burning within her body. Unknowingly, her soft waist began to gently fidget and erratic breathing sounds were being produced unconsciously from her nose. Her face was dizzily red, and from her eyes, she looked even more tipsy.

At this very moment, Cang Yue was incomparably seductive.

At this time, without any warning, Yun Che suddenly



stopped his movements. His pair of hands were still gently holding onto Cang Yue's pair of towering breasts, but his lips had left Cang Yue's scented lips. His expression became calm, and his breathing had returned to normal as well.

Cang Yue slowly opened her hazy eyes, and her voice was as tender as water. "Junior brother Yun..."

"Shh... Someone's coming." Yun Che lowered his head, gave her another kiss, and said with a

very soft voice.

# Chapter 204 – Ranking Tournament: Start

---

“Knock, knock, knock...”

Not long after Yun Che’s voice landed, a very light sound of footsteps came from outside, accompanied by a series of knocks on the door, which were neither light nor heavy.

Cang Yue instantly restrained her breathing. Currently, her entire face flushed red, her long hair in a mess, and her clothes

were even spread open by Yun Che, revealing a large part of her upper body's snowy skin. She was currently in no condition to see anyone. Keeping her breathing steady and forcing out a calm tone, she asked, "Who is it?"

Fen Juecheng's refined and gentle voice came from the other side of the door. "It's me, Fen Juecheng."

"Mn?" Yun Che shot a glance to the door, and then looked into Cang Yue's eyes with a

complicated smile.

Looking at Yun Che's gaze, Cang Yue was a little flustered in her heart. Afraid that he had misunderstood her relationship with Fen Juecheng, she hurriedly used a cold tone and replied, "For Young Master Fen to visit this late, is there anything I can help you with?"

Fen Juecheng said with a smile, "Earlier, I was roaming the villa in the night, and when I coincidentally passed by this place, I saw that Your Highness'

room was still brightly lit. Since it's still early in the night, I believed that Your Highness should not have gone to sleep. Tonight just happened to be a night with a full moon, and Heavenly Sword Villa's full moon gives off a intriguing feeling. If one were to miss it, it would definitely be a pity. If your highness is free, Juecheng wonders if he could have the honor to invite Your Highness to gaze upon the moon together?"

The corner of Yun Che's lips twitched, and he grinded his teeth hatefully... He was currently making love with the

princess, and was about to advance to the next step, but this trash actually came over to invite her to gaze upon the moon... Why don't you gaze upon your sister's ass!

As he thought that, Yun Che suddenly applied force to his two hands, grasping the pair of snowy filled round plumps to be within his hands, with each of his fingers pressing deeply into them.

“Ah...” Cang Yue let out a moan. The moan was short but

seductive, and was able to instantly stimulate a man's heart to madly throb. Her voice also landed in Fen Juecheng's ears, hurriedly asking, "Your Highness, what happened?"

Cang Yue grabbed onto Yun Che's wrists, looked at him with bashful eyes, and tried her best to calm down. "Young Master Fen, thank you for your good will. However, I'm not entirely interested in moongazing. If there's nothing else, Young Master Fen, please take your leave."



As she was talking, Yun Che's pair of hands started to move about in a bad manner. He gripped, rubbed, and pinched, causing Cang Yue to pant erratically. She had no choice but to grit her teeth, forcing herself to not emit any sound.

Fen Juecheng went into silence for a short moment, before letting out a sigh. "Your Highness, there are a few words, that Juecheng had always been wanting to tell you. Juecheng hopes that Your Highness will give him this chance. After saying those words, Juecheng will definitely leave immediately,

and will not bother Your Highness.”

At this time, one of Yun Che's hands quietly stretched downwards, parted away Cang Yue's long skirt, and his hand immediately sank deep within. Without any sort of restraint, he touched her long and smooth legs. Following the perfect curve of her thigh, his hand slowly moved upwards...

As though she was shocked by electricity, Cang Yue's body trembled. She was both

embarrassed and anxious as she used both of her hands to forcefully block Yun Che's dirty hand from approaching her thigh. With great willpower, she used a calm tone to reply Fen Juecheng:

“I'm already heading to bed, if there's something you want to tell me, that will have to wait until tomorrow. Young Master Fen, please take your leave...”

Under Yun Che's over-excessive violation, her voice slightly quivered. Although Fen

Juecheng was able to notice it, he did not put it into heart. Never would he think that the princess he was smooth-talking to was currently being pressed under a man's body and was being taken advantage of.

He held onto his patient and gentlemanly demeanor, and rather than pressing onto the attack, he calmly said. "Juecheng is extremely ashamed for interrupting Your Highness' rest. I know that Your Highness has a prejudice towards Juecheng due to certain affairs, but Juecheng's intention towards your highness is true

and clear, and the sun and moon can be my witnesses. If Your Highness is willing to give Juecheng a chance, Juecheng will exhaust all of his means to fulfill all of your highness' wishes. I hope that your highness will not stay a thousand mile away from Juecheng, and reject Juecheng, time and time again."

Cang Yue: "..."

After Fen Juecheng left those words, he took two steps back, and without staying for another

moment, he slowly took his leave. After he left the courtyard, he raised his head and glanced at the night sky. He then closed his eyes, and muttered to himself. "In this world, other than I, Fen Juecheng, no one else has the qualifications to possess you. After all, you are the one and only imperial princess, and the only girl whom I, Fen Juecheng, is willing to be this patient with."

After Fen Juecheng left a distance away, Cang Yue was once again pushed down by Yun Che. While tossing and turning

on the mattress with Cang Yue, in the midst of her continuous moans, her clothes had all been quickly stripped off by Yun Che. Her perfect body, like a fine white tallow jade, was completely exposed in front of his eyes.

Cang Yue shrank to a corner of the bed, pulling over the blanket to somehow block the lovely sight of her chest, with misty eyes, she said pitifully. “There’s really nothing going on with Fen Juecheng and I. You... You can’t be angry, right?”

“Hmph, nothing going on?” Yun Che pretended to give a straightened face. “It’s late in the night, and he actually came straight to your room to find you. You must have told him.”

“Uuu... No, that’s not it, really. He must have heard it from the Heavenly Sword disciples.”

“Really... If you want to prove it, then pull away your blanket, and obediently let me eat you.” Yun Che grabbed onto the other corner of the blanket, and said indecently.



“Ah——” Cang Yue softly cried out. She unconsciously tightened her grip on the blanket, and with a face flushed entirely in red, she pitifully said. “Don’t! Wait... Wait till you’re done with the tournament, alright? After the tournament, no matter what you want to do with me, I will... will...”

Yun Che laughed. He flung the blanket away, leaned forward, and gently hugged onto Cang Yue’s soft and tender body. However, he did not make any other movements. “This is what

senior sister personally said. When that time comes, you can't go back on your words."

"Hng..." Cang Yue held onto her chest with both of her hands, and burrowed her head into Yun Che's chest. She no longer dared to look at him in the eye.

The candle-light in Cang Yue's room extinguished. Qin Wushang, who had been meditating at the corner of the courtyard, while staying unnoticed by Yun Che and Fen

Juecheng the entire time, shook his head, and uttered softly. “Haah, what an enviable youth...”

---

9 in the morning. The next day, Heavenly Sword Villa’s Sword Discourse Arena.

The main stage of the Sword Discourse Arena and the thirty other small sword arenas were all circular in shape. The main stage was three hundred meters

long and the small stages were close to sixty meters long. The Sword Discourse Arena was the place used by Heavenly Sword Villa disciples for sparring. It was also where the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament was held. Currently, the seats around the main stage were already filled with people. In front of each seat was a plaque that indicated the group that was present.

Normally, seven people sat behind each plaque. But for Blue Wind Imperial Palace, there was only a pathetic number of four.

“It’s nine. It is about to start.”  
Qin Wushang spoke softly.

Suddenly, a loud and clear sound of screeching swords could be heard from midair. Everyone lifted their heads instinctively and saw that there were suddenly a hundred swords about three hundred metres above them. The floating swords seemed to have a mind of their own and started dancing around in the sky. The screeching sounds of the swords broke the silence of the skies and the sounds were extremely sharp. After circling the stage for a few rounds, they halted in midair

above the main seat, and arranged themselves neatly. Below the floating swords, a white bearded elder walked out slowly, greeted with cusping fists, and spoke in a clear voice: “This old one is Heavenly Sword Villa’s Sword Baptizing Pavilion’s Elder Ling Wugou. I am glad to meet all the heroes and outstanding youths today. I represent our Villa to thank everyone for turning up at Heavenly Sword Villa. This year’s Blue Wind Ranking Tournament...”

“Ling Wugou’s nickname is ‘Scarless Sword’. Even though he

looks like any normal elder, he is rumored to be at the eighth level of the Sky Profound Realm already. I'm no longer considered an opponent for him. He has already hosted several years of the tournament and is fair and just. He does not joke around and even within the Heavenly Sword Villa, he is a well respected figure. Even Ling Yuefeng has to show some respect towards him." Qin Wushang whispered to Yun Che and Xia Yuanba.

"Wah! Stronger than Palace Chief Qin?" Xia Yuanba opened his mouth wide with a face of

shock. Ever since he entered Blue Wind Imperial Palace and found out that Qin Wushang was the legendary “Sky Profound Realm”, he treated him as if he were a deity.

“Haha, in Blue Wind Empire, there are many people stronger than me.” Qin Wushang laughed: “I am only in the third level of the Sky Profound Realm and am far below Ling Wugou. Even if there were ten of me against one of him, I would not be his opponent. When reaching the Sky Profound Realm, every level is as hard as ascending to heavens. The time and effort



needed is far beyond what is required to pass through ten whole levels of Spirit Profound Realm. Furthermore, the bottom half of the Sky Profound Realm and the top half of the Sky Profound Realm is two different worlds. Below the fifth level, they can be found at any flourishing sects. Above the fifth level, they are scarce even in the major sects. They are the true powerful experts... The famous 'Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies' are all above the fifth level of the Sky Profound Realm. Not counting the Frozen Cloud Asgard Mistress and the experts in secluded cultivation, the ones whose profound strength is in the top half of the Sky Profound

Realm in Frozen Cloud Asgard  
are only those seven.”

When he finished, Ling Wugou's usual pre-match brief had almost already finished too. Suddenly, his voice grew higher and each of his words were deafening: “This year's Blue Wind Ranking Tournament's witness comes from Profound Sky Continent's Four Great Sacred Grounds —— Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's Elder Ling Kun! With Elder Ling Kun's strength and birthplace, I believe no one would doubt Elder Ling Kun's qualifications and authority.”

When the four words “Mighty Heavenly Sword Region” came out, everyone was instantly stunned; especially those who had been to the tournament before. The hearts of those who have heard of the legendary “Mighty Heavenly Sword Region” beat faster as they all gasped... Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was one of the legendary Four Great Sacred Grounds! When hearing this name, even all the Sect Masters all felt an invisible form of pressure.

If someone from the Sacred Grounds came to stand as witness, what kind of level would he be at... Who would dare do anything funny during the battles?

It has long been rumored that Heavenly Sword Villa and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region had some relationship and the Elder that came this time also bore the Ling surname. This inevitably proved something to the people.

“Mighty      Heavenly      Sword

Region? What kind of a place is it?” The surrounding audience’s reaction made Xia Yuanba very curious.

“...A place a thousand times stronger than Heavenly Sword Villa... Don’t ask any more questions.” Yun Che whispered.

“Ahh!?” Xia Yuanba eyes grew wider than an ox.

When Ling Wugou shouted, a green attired middle-aged man stood up beside him and nodded

slightly. At the moment he stood up, as if attracted by an invisible force, all eyes were instantly gathered upon him... He looked to be about forty to fifty years of age, with an average built and expressionless face. Even though everyone appeared to be able to see him, they could not sense his presence at all. It was as though he was an imaginary illusion.

As he sat down, everyone's eyes seemed to be repelled away as they all fell on different places. Instantly, everyone's heart were filled with a deep respect and fear... It was no wonder he came from one of the sacred grounds.

The level this Ling Kun was at,  
was completely  
incomprehensible by anyone  
there.

# Chapter 205 – Ranking Tournament: Profound Strength Assessment

---

“Now, let this old man declare the prize of this Ranking Tournament.”

Ling Wugou’s words, made everyone focus their gaze back onto him again and listened earnestly. The prize for every single ranking tournament was different. They only heard Ling Wugou read on: “Third place in the ranking tournament’s individual rankings, will receive



one ‘Purple Striped Dragon Heart Pellet’. Second place in individual rankings, will receive three drops of ‘Purple Veined Marrow Quenching Fluid’....”

As Ling Wugou said till here, the audiences below was already filled with cries of shock. The names of “Purple Striped Dragon Heart Pellet” and “Purple Veined Marrow Quenching Fluid”, was like a thunder striking through the eardrums of everyone present on the seats. Because, these were all godlike medicine that were difficult to obtain even with immense wealth. The former

was rumored to be made by refining the power of True Dragon Profound Cores, and could let all of the profound entrances of those who took it be opened for the next month, increasing their cultivation speed by several times! The latter, could refine one's bone marrows and brain, enhancing their physical and mental prowess by a great extent, allowing one to obtain permanent benefits. These two medicines were both incomparably famous and precious, and it was almost impossible to purchase them no matter how great the amount of money one had. Especially to the younger generation, the "Purple

Striped Dragon Heart Pellet” and “Purple Veined Marrow Quenching Fluid”” were completely and genuinely medicines of miracle.

All of the participating disciples present, including those disciples of the top-notch sects were already staring with their eyes stiff, as gulping sounds continually came from their throats.

However, the conditions to acquire one of these two kind of medicines were extremely

harsh... Rising up to the top three places amongst one thousand and five hundred tip top talents, really was harder than trying to climb up to the heavens.

“... First place in individual rankings, will receive a Sky Profound Artifact, Dragonscale Armor, that originates from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.”

“WHOOA”

The moment the prize for the first place was announced, the entire audience immediately clamored as if hot oil in a pan, and couldn't die down for a long while.

Sky      Profound      Artifact...  
Dragonscale Armor!!

“As expected from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, it really is a show of hands that makes it hard to keep calm even if one wished to.” Xiao Sect's Sect Master Xiao Juetian said with a face full of shock: “I had heard

that this Dragonscale Armor was made by a dragon scale from a true dragon. While being incomparably tough, it also possesses a certain amount of reflective properties toward foreign profound energy. With the Dragonscale Armor on hand, it's comparable to having one... no, several more lives! Lei'er, this time, you absolutely must expend one hundred and twenty percent of effort. For this Dragonscale Armor, you must try your best even if it's Ling Yun you face, and mustn't declare forfeit from the start."

"Yes!" Xiao Kuanglei forcibly

nodded his head in response.

“There are only three protective armors of the Sky Profound rank in the entire Blue Wind Empire. Moreover, none of them could match up to this Dragonscale Armor.” Burning Heaven Clan’s Great Elder Fen Moli also could no longer stay calm. However, he wasn’t as optimistic as Xiao Juetian, and his expression quickly became insipid again: “However regrettably, this Dragonscale Armor is merely used to dazzle our eyes. With Ling Yun here, who could win against him. From what I see here, this may

be a great gift that Ling Kun brought from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, as a mean to instigate our eyeballs while taking advantage of this situation. In the end, it'll still be something of their possession.”

Ling Wugou’s declaration continued: “Top ten forces in the ranking tournament, after the tournament, will be qualified to explore ‘Heaven Basin Secret Realm’ in teams.”

“The top ten forces in the ranking tournament, after the



exploration of ‘Heavenly Basin Secret Realm’, will have the opportunity to see the ‘Demon’ Sealing Ritual carried out personally by Elder Ling Kun of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region with their own eyes.”

“Demon Sealing Ritual? What’s that?” Yun Che puzzledly asked in Qin Wushang’s direction.

Qin Wushang thought for a bit, and said: “I am not very sure either. Counting this time, I’ve been here three times altogether, yet I have never

heard of this sort of ‘reward’. But the word “Demon”, I have heard of. It was rumored that an hundred years ago, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region had sent a ‘Demon’ to Heavenly Sword Villa, and sealed it under the Sword Management Terrace. That gigantic sword at the center of the Sword Management Terrace, exists precisely to seal that ‘Demon’. Perhaps this seal needs to be reinforced once in awhile, or perhaps the reason why this Ling Kun came to Heavenly Sword Villa, was not to witness this session of Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, but to reinforce that seal instead... Of course, this is only a guess.”

The matter of Heavenly Sword Villa having a demon that was sent here by the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, Yun Che had heard Cang Yue mentioning it arbitrarily before as she introduced the Heavenly Sword Villa to him. His gaze swept across the surroundings, and found that most people were all whispering to one another with confused expressions... Clearly they all didn't know what the so-called "Demon Sealing Ritual" was.

"The time hath come. Now, this

old man declares; this session of  
Blue Wind Ranking  
Tournament, officially begins!”

The enormous Sword Discourse  
Arena immediately became  
quiet. One could only see the  
figure of Ling Wugou waver; he  
had already flown up into the  
air. Leaving a line of hazy grey  
phantom, he landed on the dead  
center of the Sword Discourse  
Arena in the blink of an eye.  
There, a gigantic Profound  
Assessing Stone already stood in  
place.

“This session’s Ranking Tournament, has a total of five hundred and thirteen sectoral forces to be ranked, and involves one thousand five hundred and thirty-five participating disciples. The age of every single participating disciple must not be younger than sixteen, and must not be over twenty. Anyone not within this age range will be immediately kicked out. Now begins the lot drawing of the Ranking Tournament. Before the number is drawn, one must be tested for age and profound strength, and then let everyone know the names of younger generation’s outstanding individuals as well... Now, participating disciples called on

by this old man, come up immediately for profound strength assessment and lot number drawing.”

In every single session of the ranking tournament, the profound strength assessment had always been an essential process. However, what this profound strength assessment truly tested for was not profound strength, but was instead age. After all, the ranking tournament had an extremely tight restriction toward the participating disciple's age.

“Skyblade Clan’s Li Badao, Ji Hong, Ye Changqing!”

The three whose names were called by Ling Wugou immediately walked down from the seating, and put their palm on the profound assessing stone one by one. The resulting age was respectively 19, 20, and 20; the respective profound strength ranks were Spirit Profound Realm rank three, Spirit Profound Realm rank two, and Spirit Profound Realm rank two. Afterwards, they drew their own Ranking Tournament numbers

on the side, and returned to their seats.

“Thunderbolt Mountain’s Wu Mu, Wu Feiran, Wu Qingyun!”

“Skyriver Cloud Pavilion....”

“Moon Worshipping Sect...”

“Divine Cloud Isle...”



.....

Waves after waves of participating disciples, with sects as units, came up and carried out profound strength assessment as well as the number drawing. Same as previous sessions, most of the participating disciple's age all grouped at 19 and 20. 18 years olds were already very rare, and 17 extremely so. As for sixteen... Nearly half of the disciples had already gone up, but there still wasn't even one.

Moreover, over ninety percent of these participating disciples, had a profound strength centralized between the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm and fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Ones that surpassed fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm didn't even reach one tenth. To be able to step into the Spirit Profound Realm under the age of twenty, even if it was in the Imperial Capital of the Blue Wind Empire, one would be considered as the genius within geniuses. Even for the Blue Wind's number one Profound Palace, there were merely three people, including the foreign Fen Juechen. For those small

cities like Floating Cloud and New Moon, one wouldn't even dare to imagine it. But in here, it could only be reduced to ordinary. And for young profound practitioners of fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm and above, they would be the prodigies blessed by heavens within prodigies blessed by heavens, as well as the top level group of the ranking tournament.

As for True Profound Realm... At least until now, there hadn't been even a single one.

“Xiao Sect’s Xiao Kuanglei, Xiao Zhen, Xiao Nan.”

The moment the name “Xiao Sect” was announced, the entire audience abruptly became quiet again. The Four Major Sects that inspired awe in the Blue Wind Empire, finally begun to enter the stage!

The three participating disciples of Xiao Sect walked out from the seating area, and walked toward the center of the Sword Discourse Arena shoulder by shoulder. Even the way they

walked was different from the disciples of the other sects. In between their brows, there brimmed a prideful air that almost seemed to be natural.

Xiao Kuanglei, 20 years old, Spirit Profound Realm level nine.

Xiao Kuanglei was the first to take the profound strength assessment. As the result was shown, a burst of exclamation came from below the stage. Especially those disciples who was usually prideful and

referred to as “number one prodigy” in their own regions; they immediately became wide-eyed and slack-jawed, and couldn’t believe their own eyes.

‘At a mere age of twenty, he was actually already at the ninth rank of Spirit Profound Realm, and was only two steps from entering the Earth Profound Realm, how was this possible’, was what they yelled within their trembling hearts.

The exclamation that sounded beside the ears made Xiao Zhen

emit a cold snort, as he took a step forward and pressed his hand onto the Profound Assessing Stone.

Xiao Zhen, 20 years old, Spirit Profound Realm level nine.

This time, those young disciples who were already wide-eyed and slack-jawed stared their eyes even wider. They had only heard the awe-inspiring name of the Four Major Sects with their ears before; yet this time, they had used their eyes, and genuinely witnessed the

dreadfulness of the Four Major Sects.

Xiao Nan was last.

Xiao Nan, 18 years old, Spirit Profound Realm level six.

Even though Xiao Nan's profound strength was the bottom of the three, he was after all two years younger than Xiao Kuanglei and Xiao Zhen. This age coupled with this profound strength rank, the shock factor was not in the slightest weaker



than the previous two.

Not long after, Burning Heaven Clan's three participating disciples also went up on stage at the same time.

Fen Jin, 20 years old, Spirit Profound Realm level nine.

Fen Juebi, 20 years old, Spirit Profound Realm level eight.

Fen Yuange, 19 years old, Spirit

Profound Realm level seven.

“Fen Jin is the eldest grandson of Burning Heaven Clan’s Great Elder Fen Moli, and is also the number one disciple for Burning Heaven Clan in this tournament. As for Feng Juebi, his aptitude is inferior to that of Feng Juecheng, and cannot become the number one main character for Burning Heaven Clan in this Ranking Tournament.” Qin Wushang explained on a whim.

“Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Shui Wushuang, Wu Xuexin, Xia

Qingyue.”

Amongst the Four Major Sects, Frozen Cloud Asgard had the lowest number of disciples. Because when Frozen Cloud Asgard chooses their disciple, not only was it restricted to females, they also had extremely strict requirement for aptitude, talent, as well as appearance. And hence, if one were to talk about the average strength of disciples, even Heavenly Sword Villa couldn't match that of Frozen Cloud Asgard. At the same time, every single one of the Frozen Cloud Asgard's disciples were as beautiful as

blossoming flowers; the number one beauty “Chu Yuechan” who had made countless young and talented men infatuated, had precisely come from Frozen Cloud Asgard.

As expected, when Frozen Cloud Asgard’s three females came out, the entire surrounding was immediately filled with the echoing of continuous gulping. The young disciples that had the ability to arrive to this place have already established themselves as the pinnacle of their territories, so it could be said that they had all kinds of beautiful women at

their disposal. But how could ordinary women compare to the quality of Frozen Cloud Asgard's female disciples. They had natural ice auroras floating around them that enhanced their dreamy atmosphere even more. The last young woman's face was covered by a veil so there was no way to see her true face. The gazes of the young disciples all concentrated upon Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin's beautiful faces and figures, staring for so long that their wide eyes had almost become vertical, as if their spirit had left their bodies.

“Brother-in-law, quick, look!  
It’s big sister!!”

Although Xia Qingyue wore a veil, Xia Yuanba still recognized her at a single glance. He promptly grabbed Yun Che’s arm as he shouted with excitement.

“Shh...” Yun Che quickly silenced him and said in a low voice: “I know that she’s Qingyue and I already knew that she would participate in this ranking tournament... You can call me brother-in-law, but you must not call her big sister

again. Frozen Cloud Asgard's female disciples are forbidden to marry. If someone else hears about something, it would be detrimental to her. We too, would receive unnecessary attention."

Xia Yuanba promptly covered his mouth with both hands, nodded repeatedly, and did not dare to yell out loud.

Yun Che's gaze fell upon Xia Qingyue's back as his heart pounded... It had been a year and a half since he'd last seen

her and she had clearly grown taller. The original incomparably slender and graceful delicate body had become even more perfectly beautiful. Just looking at her from the rear was enough to imagine what kind of peerless beauty she had become... Once she took down her veil, her face had perhaps become even more breath-taking since long ago.

“That girl wearing a veil is... is... Yuanba’s elder sister... Your wife?” Others did not hear what Yuanba had said, but the Cang Yue sitting next to them heard it clearly. She stared at Xia



Qingyue with a somewhat blank look on her face... When seeing the wife of her lover, her voice and expression all revealed an indescribably complex emotion.

Regardless of whether or not they had real feelings for each other, regardless of whether or not they were truly husband and wife... She was still his wife... They were officially married, paid respects to heaven and earth, paid respects to their elders, with heaven and earth as witness...

## Chapter 206 – The Unsurpassable Ling Yun

---

“Yes.” Yun Che did not ignore Cang Yue’s murmur. He went straight to the point, and replied. “She is Yuanba’s sister, and is also my wife, who married me eighteen months ago. She’s seventeen this year... and her birthdate, is only nine days later than mine.”

But, he was using “Xiao Che’s” birthdate as a reference, and not Yun Che’s birthdate. He was basically unsure of when his birthdate was.

Cang Yue's lips slightly moved, and then, she softly asked. "Does she... Do you... really not have any feelings for each other?"

This question caused Yun Che to go silent for a long while. Then, he faintly said. "During the few days after our marriage, I once tried to use various methods to nurture her feelings towards me. But, before I could see any results, an incident suddenly happened, which caused me to have no choice but to leave the Xiao Clan. She does

not have any feelings towards me. At the very least, she does not possess the type of feelings between a man and woman, but she doesn't treat me badly. As for me... I don't dare to say that I don't have any feelings between a man and woman towards her, at the very least, I can't help but be attracted by her beauty, the atmosphere around her, and her personality. I even believe that, no matter which man were to get along with her, they will no doubt be attracted to her."

"But, compared to love, I have more 'respect' for her. When she was twelve, she was selected by

Frozen Cloud Asgard. She became a disciple of the Frozen Cloud Asgard then, and even their Sect Master valued her greatly. But she still stayed in Floating Cloud City until she was sixteen, and did not head for Frozen Cloud Asgard. Even though she was a girl, she was obsessed with cultivating, her talent was also at the extremely high, but in the key four years of foundation, she forced herself to remain in Floating Cloud City, all for the sake of completing the marriage between us...”

“This action of hers was to fulfil her father’s promise, so as

to prevent her father from being known as a man who goes against his words. However, even more so, she did it to protect me, and to protect my grandfather's reputation... After all, back then, I was still a cripple, yet she was a Frozen Cloud Asgard disciple that all people looked up to. There was a difference of a heaven and earth between us. If anyone from the Frozen Cloud Asgard were to appear, and announce her as a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard, she would have been brought away much earlier, and no one would think it to be too much if the marriage promise was broken just like that. No one would have criticized her father

for going against his words. Rather, everyone would think it as a logical course of action. After all, compared to placing a fresh flower onto a piece of cow dung, it would be the most normal, most correct, and most definite choice as a person who have received the tender care from the Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“But she did not do that... the rumors circulating around said that the Xia Family was unwilling to bear the name of a family that goes against their word but I understand that she was grateful towards my father, Xiao Ying, for saving her life,

hence, she used four years of her precious time, and accepted our marriage, so as to protect my grandfather's and my reputation. After the marriage, she still took my dignity into account at all times. When the two of us were alone, she did not allow me to touch a single hair of hers, but when there was someone else present, and I forcefully grabbed onto her hand, she simply endured. She was not willing to harm my dignity in front of others. And she clearly told me that I could take in any concubines, and she would not interfere. If I were to think of having someone else as my legal wife, I could divorce her at any time as well... So, no



matter what, I am unable to feel any animosity towards her.”

Cang Yue quietly listened. Her feeling of awkwardness towards Xia Qingyue silently disappeared, and what took over it, was a feeling of admiration from the depth of her heart.

“It’s just that, my ‘relationship’ with her, is probably nothing more than this. And, currently, I have no idea if our names as husband and wife still exist.” Yun Che looked at Xia Qingyue’s back, and sighed.

“Why?” Cang Yue was curious.

“... On the day I left the Xiao Clan, everyone criticized me as trash picked up from somewhere else, that my marriage with Xia Qingyue, was a form of shameless deceit. They forced me to hand over the marriage certificate and tear it off to remove our relationship as husband and wife. I left the Xiao Clan soon afterwards, but before I left, I handed the marriage certificate to Xia Qingyue. As to whether she tore the marriage certificate after that... I do not

know.” Yun Che smiled. His smile was stiff, which proved that he did not know of the outcome, but it did not mean that he did not care about it. He had never asked Xia Yuanba about it, because, subconsciously, he did not want to hear the answer that he was not willing to hear.

When Yun Che spoke to there, the sense of discomfort that welled up in Cang Yue’s heart because of Xia Qingyue, had already been completely extinguished. Rather, she hoped that Xia Qingyue did not tear that marriage apart. Because,

only that way, would she, under everyone's eyes, sacrifice herself to protect the very last of Yun Che's dignity back then. After all, what she genuinely cared about, was not the relationship between Yun Che and Xia Qingyue, but only Yun Che.

The results of the profound strength of the three disciples from Frozen Cloud Asgard were quickly announced:

Shui Wushuang —— 20 years old —— Spirit Profound Realm level nine.

Wu Xuexin —— 20 years old  
—— Spirit Profound Realm level  
nine.

The former two Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples' level of profound strength were not weaker than anyone from the Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan. And from these results, after being startled for a moment, the people from Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan heaved sighs of relief.

“In the previous tournament,

Frozen Cloud Asgard came out with a devilish disciple, Mu Lingxue. Her level of profound strength was the highest in the tournament, reaching the peak tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, and it was her who defeated Juecheng. Although, in the end, she lost against Ling Yun, back then, Ling Yun had the profound strength at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. When discussing profound strength alone, no one in the tournament was able to compare to her. But, in this tournament, Frozen Cloud Asgard's disciple with the highest level of profound strength, is equal to Jin'er, and also equal to Xiao Sect's Xiao

Kuanglei and Xiao Zhen... Hehe, looks like Frozen Cloud Asgard might not be able to protect their position as the runner-up in this tournament.”

The people of Xiao Sect also had the same thought, and Xiao Juetian said with a smile. “In the previous tournament, the disciple from Frozen Cloud Asgard had a high level of profound strength, which obviously pressured us to a certain degree, but this time, it’s actually a tie. Lei’er, looks like, this time, we have overestimated our opponent. The runner-up position, we will definitely

obtain it!”

Everyone’s eyes landed on the third Frozen Cloud Asgard disciple, the young girl whose face was covered by a shawl.

Xia Qingyue —— 17 years old —— Spirit Profound Realm level eight.

In that instant, the audience was silent for an entire three seconds, and then, suddenly, a large wave of exclamations was set off. The audience, both old



and young, even Ling Yuefeng from the Heavenly Sword Villa, instantly stood up from their seats, and looked at the notification revealed by the Profound Assessing Stone with astonished expressions.

Eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Even though it was an extremely high level, in the four great sects, it was not really exaggerated. What shocked the people was her age... She was only seventeen!

A seventeen year old at the

eighth level of the Spirit  
Profound Realm!

The number one expert in the younger generation, Ling Yun, when he was seventeen, he was also at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. And this girl's talent, was actually encroaching upon Ling Yun's!

“Who is this girl? Xia Qingyue? Why have I never heard of a disciple with this name in the Frozen Cloud Asgard?” Xia Juetian was no longer able to keep his calm, and said with a

tight frown. He could not help but admit that, even though his Xiao Sect was powerful and prosperous, he was sure that his sect was unable to bring up a disciple to the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm at the mere age of seventeen.

“This old man has never heard of her before either. This girl is only seventeen, she must be a new disciple Frozen Cloud Asgard had accepted in the recent years.” Xiao Wuji said as his brows sank. “With her age, she will definitely be able to participate in the next ranking tournament as well... This old

man had thought that the threat posed by Frozen Cloud Asgard has greatly decreased, but I did not expect that they would still possess such an astounding disciple. We must definitely put everything we have in this Ranking Tournament, otherwise, if she were to appear again in the next Ranking Tournament, although this old man is not trying to sell ourselves short, I'm afraid that our Xiao Sect, will not have any disciple capable of going against her."

Xiao Juetian tightly frowned. He was not able to deny Xiao

Wuji's words at all.

“Eighth level of the Spirit  
Profound Realm...” Yun Che's  
chest rose, as he took in a deep  
breath. Even he was deeply  
shocked by Xia Qingyue's  
profound strength today.

“Uwaaaah... Big sister is  
actually... already... so  
amazing!” Xia Yuanba's eyes  
widened roundly, as he let out  
an exaggerated yell.

“In the younger generation,

among the male practitioners, no one is stronger than Ling Yun. This girl called Xia Qingyue, if she were to maintain her talent, before long, she will become number one among the female practitioners.” Qin Wushang sighed. He looked at Xia Yuanba’s figure, and once again sighed in his heart: Xia Qingyue and this guy, are they really siblings? One of them is at the Eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, while the other is only at the Elementary Profound Realm, this... this... this...

Not long after Frozen Cloud

Asgard, Ling Wugou finally shouted out Heavenly Sword Villa's name.

“Heavenly Sword Villa ——  
Ling Yun, Ling Feiyu, Ling Jie.”

At that moment, the Sword Discourse Arena once again quietened down. After all, this was the appearance of Blue Wind Empire's true number one powerhouse. With Ling Yun taking the lead, he placed his hand on the Profound Assessing Stone.

Ling Yun —— 20 years old ——  
Earth Profound Realm level  
three.

Ling Yun slowly removed his hand from the Profound Assessing Stone and slowly left. Without a care about the noise that sounded like the roaring tidal waves surrounding him, his footsteps, his atmosphere, and his expression was as calm as the cool breeze, as though he was a pure and speckless white cloud.

The first Earth Profound Realm



practitioner appeared in the  
Profound Strength Assessment,  
and at the same time, he was the  
only one in the entire history of  
the       Profound       Strength  
Assessment. This one and only  
one, was also not at the  
beginning level of the Earth  
Profound Realm, but had also  
reached the third level.

This level, was like a grenade,  
exploding in front of the eyes  
and hearts of the countless  
participating disciples, causing  
them to be completely  
dumbfounded. They could not  
believe what they saw, and did  
not regain their senses for a long

while. Because, to them, it was basically an incomprehensible reality. A twenty year old at the Earth Profound Realm was so unreal, it was close to being a mythic tale.

In Blue Wind Empire, there were countless of Spirit Profound Realm practitioners. But, the number of Earth Profound Realm practitioners did not even make up a hundredth of that number. Because, when one entered the Earth Profound Realm, not just among the younger generation, but to the entire Blue Wind Empire, it was an actual step

into the realm of experts. Even Qin Wuyou, who was also at the Earth Profound Realm, had the qualifications to become an instructor at the Blue Wind Profound Palace. If one were to regard going from Elementary Profound Realm to Nascent Profound Realm, from Nascent Profound Realm to True Profound Realm, from True Profound Realm to Spirit Profound Realm, as crossing over a large Realm, then, from Spirit Profound Realm to the Earth Profound Realm, was basically crossing over a different dimension. Not only did the difficulty of breaking through increase exponentially, even the difficulty of raising

one's profound energy, was several times much harder.

And Ling Yun was only twenty years old. Not only did he step into the Earth Profound Realm, he even reached the third level of the Earth Profound Realm! It was a realm which even a young practitioner who belonged to the upper levels did not dare to think of.

Just by the revelation of his profound energy alone, forget about obtaining victory over any of the disciples from Xiao Sect

and Burning Heaven Clan, even if all six of their participating disciples were to go against him together, Ling Yun would probably treat it as child's play.

In contrast, the astonishment of the people from Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan only lasted for a few moments, before they completely calmed down. The current Ling Yun possessing the power of the Earth Profound Realm, was not something completely unacceptable. There was no other reason, it's just because he was Ling Yun!

“In the previous tournament, Ling Yun, who was merely seventeen years old, took the top spot with ease. In this tournament, there’s basically no one capable of competing against Ling Yun for it. In the future, he will definitely become another Ling Yuefeng.” Qin Wushang sighed.

“Third level... of the Earth Profound Realm.” The corner of Yun Che’s lips twitched for a couple of times. “This guy, calling him abnormal is simply too courteous.”

After Ling Yun, was Ling Feiyu and Ling Jie.

Ling Feiyu —— 19 years old —— Spirit Profound Realm level nine.

Ling Jie —— 16 years old —— Spirit Profound Realm level six.

The entire audience also shook from the results of the other two beside Ling Yun. Heavenly Sword Villa, was after all, Heavenly Sword Villa.

And Ling Jie, was also the only sixteen year old participating disciple in this Ranking Tournament. Unlike Ling Yun's calmness like the cloud, he was high-spirited, and his eyes were brimmed with excitement. His look of eagerness looked as though he wished to be able to immediately fight a couple of rounds with someone.

“As expected of Ling Yun's little brother. This Ling Jie's progress in this eight months, is not that simple.” Yun Che muttered to himself in his heart.



Right after Heavenly Sword Villa, the name “Blue Wind Imperial Family” finally sounded.

“Blue Wind Imperial Family...” After shouting the name, Ling Wugou suddenly paused. After fixating his eyes on the namelist for a moment, he continued to shout with a weird tone of voice. “Yun Che.”

# Chapter 207 – The True Profound Realm Who Broke History

---

Although the Blue Wind Imperial Family's placing in the ranking tournament wasn't that great, it was still the Imperial Family! It controlled the largest amount of political power within the Blue Wind Empire! As a result, when the name "Blue Wind Imperial Family" came out, it immediately caught the attention of entire audience. But after the name "Yun Che" came out, Ling Wugou's gaze had then left the namelist and did not announce the next name.

There was only this one name.

“It’s my turn.” Yun Che immediately got up and walked towards the Profound Assessing Stone.

The surroundings immediately echoed with the sound of whispers.

“Eh? What’s going on? Only him?”

“Looks like it... What the hell! The Imperial Family seriously only sent one person to participate this year? It was probably influenced by the turmoil within the Imperial Family?”

“Hush, don’t speak nonsense. Perhaps this person’s profound strength is so high that it is enough for the Imperial Family to just send one person. After all, the power rankings of the sects depends on their highest ranked disciple.”

Yun Che walked down from his seat and walked in the midst of everyone's line of sight.

From Frozen Cloud Asgard's seating area, Xia Qingyue, who had always been tranquil and silent, widened her beautiful eyes that carried a trace of deep shock when she saw Yun Che. She murmured in a low tone of voice: "He... how could it be... him..."

The moment Yun Che came out, the ice auroras surrounding

Chu Yuechan instantly became chaotic as her eyes also momentarily became absent-minded. But immediately afterwards, everything became calm once more. She turned her gaze and no longer looked at Yun Che. It was not known what she was thinking.

“Eh?” Chu Yueli fixed her gaze at Yun Che and her expression became more and more doubtful. When Yun Che stood in front of the Profound Assessing Stone, she tilted her head and spoke in Xia Qingyue’s direction: “Qingyue, don’t you feel like he resembles someone?”

“Yun Che... Xiao Che... Xiao Che...” Xia Qingyue slowly muttered, then shook her head gently: “They look really similar but it is impossible that it’s him. His profound veins are crippled and are impossible to restore, so it is even more impossible for him to have any connections with the Imperial Family...”

Chu Yueli looked at Yun Che again for a while more, and then said softly: “Right, it is indeed impossible that it’s him. But there’s actually two people in this world that this much alike.”

“You’ve seen this person before?” Chu Yuechan suddenly raised her brows and asked.

“No.” Chu Yueli shook her head: “But, he looks similar to someone I’ve met before.”

“Who?”

“It is exactly the person Qingyue insisted on marrying that year. That person’s name was Xiao Che. This person’s



name is Yun Che. Not only do they look alike, even their names are similar. What a shocking coincidence.” Chu Yueli explained.

Chu Yuechan: “!!!!!!”

“Elder sister, what’s wrong?” Sensing that Chu Yuechan’s aura had suddenly become chaotic, Chu Yueli immediately tilted her head as she asked in astonishment.

“Nothing.” Chu Yuechan closed

her eyes and said in an ice-cold voice. But immediately afterwards, a crushing sound suddenly sounded from her right hand side. The seat's armrest that was already in the midst of the floating ice auroras became dust.

“Elder sister? You...”

“You aren't allowed to ask any more, I'm fine.” Chu Yuechan closed her charming eyes, and coldly rebuked.

Excluding the Asgard Mistress, Chu Yuechan possessed the highest position and prestige within Frozen Cloud Asgard. Although she was also one of Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies and Chu Yuechan's little sister, Chu Yueli still held her in full reverence. Even though her suspicions grew larger and larger, she still did not dare to ask any further. She could only repeatedly think it over in her heart.

Yun Che —— 17 years old ——  
True Profound Realm level ten.

Once this result came out, the entire audience hissed with displeasure. Subsequently, the sounds of answering snickers filled the area in all directions. Even though the entire surroundings were filled with snickering, the snickering then became the clear sounds unrestrained laughter. The audience was flooded with all sorts of hearty laughter and jeers that even a few elders of virtue and prestige had also involuntarily laughed after seeing this result.

“Pfft... True Profound Realm...  
A True Profound Realm had

actually appeared in this year's ranking tournament. Even a True Profound Realm is brave enough to participate in this ranking tournament? Pff... HAHAAHAHA..."

"The Blue Wind Imperial Family had actually sent out such a disciple to participate? And I'd thought that it would be a shocker... F\*ck! It is indeed a shocker, it's actually a True Profound Realm! Did the Blue Wind Imperial Family come here to be funny this year?"

“Looks like there’s no need to worry about being first place from the bottom anymore, hahahaha!”

“I think I’ve never heard of a True Profound Realm appearing in the ranking tournament. The Blue Wind Imperial Family seriously do not care about their face anymore? Tsktsk tsktsk. If the Blue Wind Imperial Family doesn’t place first from the bottom, I’ll eat shit in public!”

“Sigh, actually seeing a True Profound Realm appear here,

feels like the entire ranking tournament's quality has been dragged down. I'm blushing in shame for them... But this kid actually had the guts to stand out there, tsksk, he's not an ordinary character. His face is thicker than the skin on my butt."

The innate talent of a seventeen year old in the tenth level of the True Profound Realm was considered not bad. Amongst all the disciples participating in the ranking tournament, it could barely rank in the lower levels, and at the age of twenty, it reaching around the third level

of the Spirit Profound Realm could be a possibility. If he entered the ranking tournament at that time, nobody would ridicule him. What everyone present was mocking, was not his innate talent, but rather that a True Profound Realm actually had the ego and courage to join the assembly of talents at the ranking tournament... Even if he did not want his face anymore, the Imperial Family he belonged to, ought to, right?

Out of all the ranking tournaments thus far, a True Profound Realm had indeed never appeared before. Although



the ranking tournament had no fixed rules about the participating disciples' profound strength level, if they could not bring out three disciples from the ages of 16 to 20 at the Spirit Profound Realm, they were essentially unworthy of participating in the ranking tournament, so much that they were not worthy of even getting an invitation. After some sects greatly declined, if they truly could not bring out three Spirit Profound disciples, they had to renounce the ranking tournament. If they could only bring two, or even one disciple at the Spirit Profound Realm, they would still never bring along a True Profound Realm to

fill in their numbers.

And this year, history had been broken just like that. A True Profound Realm participant had appeared... was even the representative of the Blue Wind Imperial Family... and was even Blue Wind Imperial Family's only participant. A large number of people were stupefied and an even larger number of people rocked back and forth with laughter. An intense kind of sect and self strength superiority involuntarily arouse. What they were comparing against, was nevertheless the Blue Wind Imperial Family that dominated

and ruled over the Blue Wind Empire, and this kind of superior feeling was especially strong.

“He actually... really came.” On Heavenly Sword Villa’s side, Ling Yun spoke with a face full of shock.

“Uwah! He’s actually already at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm! Amazing.” Completely different from the surrounding sounds of ridicule, Ling Jie opened his mouth wide with a face brimming with

amazement.

“Oh?” Their reactions made Ling Yuefeng raise his brows: “You two know this person?”

Ling Yun slightly nodded: “He’s that person Little Jie described to you that time with a delighted smile. The last time we saw him was half a year ago. At that time, his profound strength was only at the third level of the True Profound Realm, but he had actually blocked three of Little Jie’s strikes. It has only been half a year since then, yet he is

actually already at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm. This kind of advancement rate... has far surpassed the previous me.”

“What?” A hint of surprise flashed across Ling Yuefeng’s face. He started to closely examine Yun Che with a completely different look in his eyes.

“Being able to withstand three strikes from the Ling Jie in the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm at the third level of the

True Profound Realm, his strength, absolutely cannot be measured by his revealed profound strength. I believe that he is the same as Ling Jie and I; he is completely capable of prevailing over opponents who are several levels higher than his own.” Ling Yun said calmly.

“Profound strength level alone, indeed does not represent one’s complete level of strength.” Ling Yuefeng nodded slightly, “But it is nevertheless the most important indication of strength. Even if one could challenge another above their level, how far could they

possibly step over? Under the Earth Profound Realm, three levels is essentially the maximum limit one could go. Even if he actually is how you describe him and is indeed a talent worthy of attention, unfortunately, he has come too early.”

“Yes, he did indeed come too early.” Ling Yun nodded with complete belief: “When I first saw him, I had even hinted that to him and Princess Cang Yue. I said that he should represent the Imperial Family and participate in the next ranking tournament. At that time, the twenty year old

him would certainly amaze the world when representing the Imperial Family in the next ranking tournament. I never expected that he would actually come this year.”

The sounds of hissing, sneering and ridicule in his surroundings were all within his expectations. But how could all these rouse any ripples within his heart? After drawing his number, he walked down without any changes in expression. His gaze and expression were incomparably calm and composed, as if everything that had happened had nothing to do



with him.

This kind of behavior made Ling Yuefeng's evaluation of him become slightly higher.

“Hahahaha! I'm going to die from laughter. The Blue Wind Imperial Family actually sent out a trash that's only in the True Profound Realm. Do they seriously want to make a fool of themselves? Hahahaha, the team that the uselessly beautiful and noble Blue Moon Princess brought...” Fen Juebi laughed out loud. After suddenly

discovering that not only did Fen Juecheng's face not have a trace of a smile, but was instead stiff, he asked: "Eh? Big bro, what's wrong? Why do you look so bad?"

Fen Juecheng's brows sunk a little as he answered with a frightening somber voice: "That person... is named Yun Che?"

"That's right. Could it be that Big bro knows of this person?" Fen Juebi also stopped laughing, as his expression became serious. As the Young Clan

Master of the Burning Heaven Clan, there were no one that had ever dared to provoke Fen Juecheng. It has already been a few years since he had saw Feng Juecheng making such a face.

“Yun Che... Ha, very good, it really is great... too great!” Fen Juecheng’s voice and complexion became more and more overcast, and even started to emit a burst of ice-cold killing intent. His hands that grasped the chair’s armrests was already bulging with veins; clearly he was already furious to the extremity in his heart.

He first knew of the name “Yun Che” from Third Prince Cang Shuo. Even though Cang Shuo had told him that Yun Che was already dead, he still ordered someone to investigate it. He found that Yun Che really was very close with Princess Cang Yue, but his death in the Wasteland of Death was also the truth.

But now, this Yun Che actually appeared in front of him alive and well.

Having just this one participating disciple, who was also merely at True Profound Realm, yet Princess Cang Yue had personally lead the group; if he was told that Cang Yue had not come here for the purpose to accompany this Yun Che, he would not believe it even if he was to be beaten to death.

However, just these, were actually not enough for him to become as furious as he did.

He recalled from last night, the strange voice he heard when he

stood in front of Princess Cang Yue's door, as well as the slight trembling in Cang Yue's voice as she spoke the last sentence... That time he had only felt that it was slightly odd, but didn't put it to mind at all since he didn't have any reason to think toward that direction. But thinking back on it now, that was clearly some sort of moan from being suddenly stimulated by something... as well as the sounds of her climaxing from being teased...

Bang! Bang!!

The armrests on both sides of Fen Juecheng were simultaneously squeezed into pieces by him. The knuckles of his tightly clenched hands became white, and cracking sounds of bones being displaced made one feel terrified. His face, was as unsightly as if he had just consumed feces.

“Big bro, what’s wrong? I’ve never seen you get this angry before.” Fen Juebi asked in shock.

Fen Juecheng took in a deep

breath, and said with a low tone:  
“Get someone to investigate the number that Yun Che had drawn in the shortest amount of time possible... Then contact every single battle opponent in the group he belongs to... Tell them to be heavy handed when they face against Yun Che for me! Even if they can’t kill him in public, they must at least make sure thoroughly cripple him! Preferably, destroy his face at the same time!”

The mannerisms of Fen Juecheng, made Fen Juebi unable to dare ask any further. He understood deeply, that even



though Fen Juecheng normally appeared polite and gentle, he would be so exceedingly frightening when he truly became furious. He immediately nodded and agreed: “Okay, just a mere True Profound Realm, killing him is as easy as killing a chicken! I’ll immediately order someone to do so. Once he leaves this Heavenly Sword Villa, to either kill him or make him wish that he was dead, wouldn’t it just be the matter of a single word from Big bro?”

Fen Juecheng heavily took a breath in once again, yet the flames of fury in his chest still

could not subside at all. He brooded lowly in his heart... Cang Yue, I had thought you were so pure and clean, so incomparably charming, and so impeccably noble; qualified enough to make me forget my identity as the Burning Heaven Clan's Young Clan Master in order to capture your mind and body. Unexpectedly, so unexpectedly... You actually brought me such a huge surprise... and brought me such great rage and shame as well!

# Chapter 208 – First Battle

---

“These people are simply too much. They’re all mocking and ridiculing... Hmph, when the ranking tournament starts, Junior Brother Yun will definitely make them obediently shut their mouths.” Cang Yue raged without any semblance of the air a princess should have. The mockery from everywhere were all targeted towards Yun Che and the Blue Wind Imperial Family, making her feel much more aggrieved than if she herself had been jeered at.

“You don’t need to take offense, this is still a perfectly normal situation.” Qin Wushang’s expression did not change at all as he said calmly. From what he saw, not being ridiculed would be abnormal instead. If this had happened to other sects, he would naturally be scornful of them, even if he would not laugh out loud.

“Brother-in-law, what number did you pick?” When Yun Che returned, Xia Yuanba went up to him and asked impatiently.

Yun Che showed the tablet he had taken. The number displayed on it was: 1505.

Taking a clear look at the number, Qin Wushang explained, “This number decides which area and what order you will fight in for the first group competition. 1505 means that you are allocated to group 15 and will compete in Sword Discourse Arena number 15. Your first match will be the fifth showing, and your first opponent is number 1545.”

“The first round of group fights will continue for three days, and there are thirty small groups in total. Within each group, there are an average of fifty or so disciples who will be taking part in the competition. All fifty competitors from each group will have to participate in twelve full fights, and the top ten ranked disciples from each group, which will come to a total of three hundred disciples, will then enter the second round of group matches. The thousand and two hundred disciples who do not enter the second round will then move on to the subsequent area to take part in

ranking fights. However, other than the affiliated sects, nobody will take notice of the ranking matches in this second area.

At this, Qin Wushang sighed dully. This was because Blue Wind Imperial City had always been transferred to the second competition area after the first round of group matches had ended. At least, for the few decades since he had been born, Blue Wind Imperial City had never had anyone move on to the second round matches. The dreams of the being in the top hundred was so far away that it seemed to be forever

unattainable.

“The second round of group matches will have a total of three hundred competing disciples, and like before, it will continue for three days. Each disciple will have to finish a full fifteen fights! After which, rankings will be made based on the number of fights each disciple wins. The first hundred spots will be listed, as well as the thirty-two strongest. Subsequently, those who did not make it into the top hundred will similarly be transferred to the secondary arena. The rankings for the thirty third to



the hundredth competitors will thus be completed. If there is anyone who is dissatisfied, they can challenge a competitor who is higher ranked than them in the secondary arena. The challenged must accept the challenge, and if the challenger wins, they will then take the ranking of the person who has lost..... In the main arena, elimination matches for the thirty-two disciples who have won the most fights will then commence.”

“These rankings, are all rankings of the participating disciples. The ranking of the

sect forces, will be ranked based on the final rankings of the their disciples.”

Xia Yuanba touched his fingertips, and then his eyes opened wide as he asked, “That is to say, if you enter the second round of group matches, you’ll have to fight a full twenty seven rounds of matches within six days. So much!”

Cang Yue answered with a completely serious face, “That’s right. The atmosphere has always been tense for the

ranking tournaments. However, the pace for the first group matches are very fast, and it'll be very easy to see the large disparity in strength between competitors and the fights will end very quickly. It's perfectly normal for each small group to conduct a few dozen fights, or even up to a hundred per day. Junior brother Yun, you have to give it all you've got. Don't forget the goal we've set previously... Placing in the individual top hundred!"

"Mn, of course I haven't forgotten." Yun Che smiled gently while nodding and his

gaze concentrated on the faces of each participating disciple who were present... If he could enter the top hundred, he'd definitely shock everybody, and cause those who had mocked him to be stupefied. At the same time, he'd be able to be renowned across the land, allow Blue Wind Profound Palace to puff out its chest in pride, and also let Cang Yue and Qin Wushang become boundlessly happy.....

However, his goal, was definitely not to just enter this insignificant top hundred!

On the Sword Discourse Arena, the profound strength assessments for all participating disciples were finally finished. Ling Wugou then used a very long time to read aloud the ranking tournament's basic procedure and guidelines. After which, this year's Blue Wind Ranking Tournament had finally, officially begun.

“...When fighting, a person loses when he falls onto the ground for more than ten breaths of time or when he concedes the match! No matter for what reason, any competitor who takes more than thirty

breaths of time to go up on stage will be seen as admitting defeat... Now, this old man declares that the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament has officially begun!”

After Ling Wugou’s voice fell, a large area of profound energy fluctuation came from all around. On top of the thirty small Sword Discourse Arenas, transparent profound energy protective screens appeared simultaneously. These profound energy barriers could isolate the two competitors such that their profound energy would not affect the surroundings when

both parties were in combat. At the same time, to a certain extent, it also sets a restriction on the area in which both parties would fight.

Thirty well prepared middle aged men also flew up and descended to the side of the thirty small Sword Discourse Arenas. These were the referees for the first round of small group matches. And these thirty people, could all use the “Profound Floating Technique”, which meant that they were all Sky Profound Realm experts. This fact made many observing disciples to immediately go

slack-jawed.

The thirty small Sword Discourse Arenas were evenly spread out around the main Sword Discourse Arena. To the practitioners watching, from any seat, the circumstances of each small Sword Discourse Arena could be plainly visible just by shifting their gazes a little.

Following the appearance of the thirty judges and the profound energy barriers, the numbers of sixty disciples



flashed brightly at the same time. Very quickly, sixty competitors climbed onto their respective Sword Discourse stage and the first match was officially begun.

“We’ve already checked through. Yun Che’s will be competing on Sword Discourse Stage 15, and his number is 1505. His next few opponents have all been briefed through. Under the circumstance that they can’t kill him, then will trash him as hard as they possibly can to ensure that he can’t hold on until the second round before he loses half his life.... No, he might even

have lost a few limbs after the first stage for all we know.” Fen Juebi returned to his seat and spoke quietly in Fen Juecheng’s ear.

Fen Juecheng glanced at Sword Discourse Arena number fifteen and nodded slowly.

Yun Che was coincidentally sitting very close to the fifteenth Sword Discourse Arena. His first match was arranged to be the fifth match, so he did not immediately move beside the fifteenth Sword Discourse

Arena. Rather, he sat at his seat and quietly observed the battles around him.

There were over five hundred sect forces, and some mainly used swords, while others mainly used knives, or axes, or even whips... All sorts of weapons could be seen, and even more so, all sorts of profound attributes made the scene messy and confusing. All the different heavy, light, and even gaudy profound skills displayed were enough to overwhelm a person.

At least, Xia Yuanba already felt deeply that two eyes just weren't enough.

Currently, it was only the first round of the small group matches, which was also the most basic round of competition in the entire ranking tournament. However, each match there would be considered an extremely heroic showdown to the outside world, because both parties fighting were all below twenty, at the Spirit Profound Realm, and were all geniuses of the ultimate pinnacle to the letter! This was a match of the ranking

tournament that only belonged to the most extremely talented geniuses.

“Quick look! It’s big sis!”

Xia Yuanba suddenly gave a surprised shout and pointed towards the ninth Sword Discourse Arena.

A quarter of an hour passed by, and the ninth Sword Discourse Arena had already finished three matches. During the fourth match, a completely veiled Xia

Qingyue appeared on the Sword Discourse Arena and caused the ninth Sword Discourse Arena to become the center of attention through the entire arena... Whenever a disciple from any of the Four Major Sects appeared, they would definitely become the focal point.

Opposite Xia Qingyue, a twenty year old youth walked up. However, his expression was terrible. Within his heart, he was inwardly complaining about his bitter lot. His profound strength was at the fourth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, and within group nine, he was

in the upper-middle tier, but never did he expect to get a disciple of the Frozen Cloud Asgard as his first opponent.

However, his opponent was only a young girl of seventeen. He simply could not lose face by admitting defeat, so he could only brace himself and pull out his sword, “Illusory Sword Clan’s Han Yunzhi requests this fairy to bestow unto him some guidance!”

As his voice fell, he stepped forward, and thrust his sword

outward. From the start, he was already using his strongest ultimate move, the “Sword of Three Lives”. The surging sword aura coagulated into three sword blossoms, and the power of each of the three points all attacking towards Xia Qingyue.

Xia Qingyue’s gaze was tranquil and calm. Her feet had not moved. Facing Han Yunzhi’s sword aura, her snow-like right hand moved gently...

Whoosh!



A cold wind breezed past and cut at Han Yunzhi's face like numerous blades of knives. His sword aura was defeated in a matter of seconds and it was as if his entire body had been plunged into the extremities of a frozen prison. His four limbs were impossibly rigid and he was made to stagnate there, kept in his pose of wielding a sword and rushing forward. Let alone being able to continue brandishing his sword, he couldn't even move his fingers at all.

In the blink of an eye, a layer of gorgeous hoar frost extended

from his sword's tip to cover his entire body.

All the sect disciples who were seeing the might of Frozen Cloud Asgard's "Frozen Cloud Art" for the first time were all stunned.

"I... admit... defeat..." Han Yunzhi's mouth trembled as he squeezed out those three words. He had originally thought that even though there was a difference of four levels between them, he could at least withstand five to six moves...

But he hadn't thought that he wouldn't even meet the criteria to meet face-to-face with his opponent.

“Illusory Sword Clan's Han Yunzhi admits defeat, Frozen Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue wins!”

At the loud verdict of the referee for the ninth Sword Discourse Arena, the ice on Han Yunzhi's body disappeared. All at once, he fell to kneel on the ground. After taking in large gulps of air, he looked at Xia

Qingyue with eyes filled with insurmountable respect before weakly walking off the Sword Discourse Arena.

The Heavenly Sword Villa, Frozen Cloud Asgard, Xiao Sect and Burning Heaven Clan comprised the highly acclaimed Four Major Sects, and there had never been a need for them to deign to accept another to form the “Five Major Sects”. This was because, apart from these four large sects, there had not even been any other sects that were qualified to make up for the shortfall in number. Their distance from all the other sects

was practically akin to the distance between the skies and the earth. Heritage, resources, strength of skills... All these constituted for the fame and prestige of the Four Major Sects, and they also contributed to the reasons for the extremely large gap between them and the other sects. For several hundred years, the first ten spots for the individual rankings in the ranking tournaments had always been snatched up by disciples from the Four Major Sects, and no disciples from any other sect had ever dared to intrude... There had been no exceptions.

“So strong..... Big sister’s actually so strong.” Xia Yuanba stared with his eyes wide and did not blink until after Xia Qingyue had walked off the Sword Discourse Stage. After a while, he asked blankly, “Brother-in-law, did you see how strong big sister actually was... C... Can you beat big sis?”

“Hehe, of course that’s impossible.” Qin Wushang laughed and replied, “If my guess is not wrong, your sister should be a main disciple that Frozen Cloud Asgard has been nurturing these past few years. This sort of person who is

spoiled by the heavens is definitely not someone our Blue Wind Profound Palace can match.”

Yun Che just watched the competition calmly without speaking.

At this time, a referee’s loud cry came from Sword Discourse Arena Number 15.

“Group 15, fifth match, Blue Wind Imperial Family’s ‘Yun Che’ —— versus —— Southern

Jade Cloud Faction's 'Fu  
Yanjie'!"



## Chapter 209 – Establishing Dominance

---

Once the name “Yun Che” rang, Cang Yue’s reaction was quicker than Yun Che’s. She immediately grabbed Yun Che’s hand. Then she spoke with a nervous and excited manner: “Junior brother Yun, it’s your turn.”

“Brother-in-law, good luck! Go beat up all your opponents and show those people who mock us who’s boss!” Xia Yuanba said with clenched fists.

“I’ll be back soon.” Yun Che casually said that without thinking as he left his seat and walked up to the Sword Discourse Arena.

And the fifteenth Sword Discourse Arena suddenly became the focal point.

“Hurry, look! The kid from the Blue Wind Imperial Family’s up!”

“Tsk tsk, that Fu Yanjie’s truly lucky to be going against this guy in the first match. Why can’t I be that fortunate?”

“I think I remember that Fu Yanjie was at the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm. I’d reckon that he’ll beat him sprawling in three moves... HAHAAHAHA! Why wasn’t I placed in the fifteenth group. Because even if I lose the eleven other matches, I’ll at least be able to pleausurably oppress this kid from the Blue Wind Imperial Family.”

The surroundings immediately echoed with roars of laughter.

Yun Che didn't respond to the surrounding voices as they filled his ears. He was silently looking at the opponent before him. His first opponent had wide shoulders and a round waist, as well as a robust frame. A huge machete of eight feet in length was held in his hand. However, all of these were not the points that Yun Che was paying attention to. What Yun Che was paying attention to, was the slight sneer on the corner of this person's mouth, as well as the unceasingly flickering cruelty in

his eyes.

“Heh...” Yun Che’s brows lowered slightly as the corners of his mouth curled into an extremely light sneer.

“Match, start!!”

As the referee’s voice faded, the enormous blade in Fu Yanjie’s was ferociously swung out, carrying a gust of howling wind with it. He looked at Yun Che, and in midst of sneering, said with a very low voice: “Yun Che,

consider it your misfortune to have met me. Obediently lay flat onto the ground for me!”

Amidst his sneer, Fu Yanjie did not wait for Yun Che to take out weapons and rushed forward with a brisk pace. His frame was robust and huge, and the blade in his hand was also quite enormous, but his speed was not slow in the slightest. With a low cry, he raised the enormous blade, and slashed down toward Yun Che’s left arm while utilizing profound energy.

In the seating area of Burning Heaven Clan, Fen Juebi said while laughing heartily: "Big bro, just wait and watch the show. This person had already been especially informed. He won't give any chance for Yun Che to surrender, and will chop off one of his arms as fast as possible, and then give him a slice on the face along the way."

"Very good." Fen Juecheng's mouth twitched as he laughed coldly.

The wind blade that came

toward him was extremely vicious, without the slightest intent of holding back. Yun Che slightly shifted his body to the side and dodged the blade strike, yet Fu Yanjie's blade then swept upwards in the next instant... The direction of its sweep, was clearly Yun Che's face.

Yun Che's gaze focused. Then, he flew into an extreme rage... I could forgive breaking my arm, and I can even endure losing half my life, but this mother f\*cker actually wants to ruin my face!! This cannot be tolerated and forgiven by any means; even if an old uncle can endure and



tolerate his wife, I still won't tolerate this!

A glimmer of vicious light flashed through Yun Che's eyes. He shifted his body down low, dodging this blade strike. Instead of retreating, he advanced; he suddenly rushed forward like a bolt of lightning, and his elbow violently smashed onto Fu Yanjie's abdominal region.

“Holy crap! This guy's looking to die!”

“Is this kid crazy? Fu Yanjie doesn’t even need to open his eyes. Just a convenient swing on the way downwards can directly end his life there. He really is young in the end. Not only is his profound strength low, his battle experience is also extremely trashy and lacking.”

However, the next scene made everyone freeze right then and there... Yun Che’s forcefully advanced and attacked Fu Yanjie’s abdomen, yet Fu Yanjie’s blade that was suspended above him did not conveniently swing down, but froze there. After Yun Che straightened his posture

and took two step back, his arm still did not drop down.

Clang...

The blade in Fu Yanjie's hand fell down onto the ground.

“Ugh... ug...” Hoarse sounds leaked out from his mouth. Fu Yanjie's eyes fixedly stared wide and bulged out in an extremely exaggerated manner as if they were almost jumping out from their sockets. He slowly knelt down onto the ground, held his

abdomen with both hands in agony, and curled up there like a baby shrimp. His entire body trembled, and the cold sweat on his head flowed down like a rainstorm. The fresh blood in his mouth mixed with white foam and flowed out together.

Even though that elbow blow of Yun Che's earlier did not strike him backwards even half a step, the overbearing energy had already dispersed into countless streams and violently entered his body, making him lose his ability to fight in an instant amidst the immense pain. If not for that this was the arena, and

Yun Che didn't want any possibility of being disqualified because of this, just based on Fu Yanjie's intentions of ruining face alone, he would've definitely crippled him thoroughly.

Yun Che looked down at the Fu Yanjie beside his feet who was in extreme agony, and coldly spoke with a overcast voice: "There are no prior grievances and grudges between you and I, and you don't have any reason to viciously harm me; seems like you were used by someone like a marionette. I can't guess who was the one that ordered you

just yet, but I believe that I'll find out soon enough. Go back and tell that person that I have received his provocations; I'm afraid however, that the consequences will be too much for him to take."

Fu Yanjie was still curled up on the floor and could not even utter a distinct word.

"Fu Yanjie down for ten breaths of time! Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che wins!"

Yun Che leisurely walked down from the Sword Discourse Arena, while Fu Yanjie was still curled up there, unable to get up for a good while. Only after a long time had passed, did his two other clan members go up and drag him down with reddened faces.

The sect disciples who were originally expecting to see a one-sided show instantly became wide-eyed and slack-jawed as they looked at each other's faces.

“What’s going on? Fu Yanjie

actually lost?”

“It should be that Yun Che’s strike earlier had just happened hit Fu Yanjie’s dantian energy gate, and made Fu Yanjie lose all of his strength in an instant... It should be like that, right?”

“Hm, seems like that’s the only way it can be explained anyway. But this Fu Yanjie actually lost under the hand of someone of the True Profound Realm, it’s really just too humiliating.”



The pace at which Yun Che walked down was very slow. He narrowed his eyes halfway and concentrated his focus, perceiving the surrounding presences without any expression on his face. Not long after, he felt a slight hint of killing intent coming toward him... This hint of killing intent was extremely insignificant, however, Yun Che was truly way too familiar and sensitive to this kind of thing called killing intent. He turned his head in a flash, his gaze meeting the owner of the emitted killing intent... An instant after, he retracted his gaze, and returned to the seating area.

Fen Juecheng.... Ha, so it was him. Yun Che coldly smiled, thought about what happened last night in association, and instantly understood everything.

With merely an instant of their gazes meeting, and since it was flat out impossible for Fen Juecheng to possess the kind of frighteningly sharp sense Yun Che did, he naturally did not notice that Yun Che had already found out about him secretly pulling the strings. The result of this battle caused Fen

Juecheng's complexion to darken once more: "Seems like, we have underestimated this Yun Che."

"Tsk." Fen Juebi, however, was extremely disdainful: "No matter what, he's only a laughable True Profound Realm. It's obvious that Fu Yanjie lost because he underestimated the enemy too much and was too unlucky. If nothing out of expectation happens, Yun Che's opponent for the next round, would coincidentally be Fu Yanjie's twin brother. His profound strength is even one rank higher than Fu Yanjie, and

would definitely not let Yun Che have anymore strokes of luck.”

The first round of group stage matches proceeded like a raging fire. Just as Cang Yue said, the pace of the group stage matches was very fast. A mere three hours had passed, and the average number of matches that proceeded in each Sword Discourse Arena had already surpassed thirty. There were matches that ended quickly, as well as matches with dragged on bitter battles. Yet when faced with someone from the Four Major Sects, most would forfeit right away. Especially when met

with super raid bosses like Ling Yun, Xiao Kuanglei, Yan Jin, and Shui Wushuang; their opponents would directly forfeit without even having the thought of fighting... Otherwise, if the other side accidentally struck out a little too heavy, and one ends up being gravely injured or something, it would definitely affect their performance in other matches. It was better to forfeit directly and conserve strength.

“Group Fifteen’s thirty-fifth match: Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che —— versus —— Southern Jade Cloud

Faction's Fu Yinjie!"

Yun Che's second match was about to start, but the opponent of this match made him stare blankly for a bit.

Eh? How could it coincidentally be the Southern Jade Cloud Faction again? And this name sounds quite familiar as well.

Yun Che walked into the Sword Discourse Arena, and looked at the opponent in front of him while feeling very speechless. He

also had wide shoulders and a round waist as well as a robust frame. Other than his different clothing, he looked just like the Fu Yanjie who was struck off the stage by him earlier. Even their weapon was one and the same, an enormous machete.

“This daddy here is Fu Yinjie! You actually dared to severely injure my younger twin brother earlier, this daddy will destroy you!” Fu Yinjie raised up great machete, and roared with rage. His eyes that wasn’t very big were brimmed with ferocious and malicious intent.

“Haha, not only did these two twin brothers get assigned to the same group, they even met the same opponent, how really interesting.”

“Fu Yinjie, quickly beat that brat up and vent the hatred in your little brother’s stead! He lost that match so hard that it went to his granny’s place.”

“If you were to also lose, you two brothers had best immediately go look for some tofu to crash into and die.



Hahahaha.”

Yun Che’s gaze indifferently swept across the surroundings. Fen Juecheng’s malicious sneer, those mocking faces and mouth of those sectoral disciples who thought that they were hot shit, as well as the contemptuous and malicious gaze of the Fu Yinjie before him; he received all of them under his eyelids. The corner of his mouth twitched, and Yun Che began to slightly smile coldly.

Ha... Do you seriously think

that I, Yun Che, is a soft persimmon that could be molded and played around with in anyway you want?

With just you lot, you think you are worthy of judge me with a contemptuous attitude? And worthy of mocking me?

“Match start!”

“I’m going to destroy you!!” Right after the referee’s voice faded, Feng Yinjie lifted the enormous blade and rushed

toward Yun Che while roaring loudly. From the viewpoint of an outsider, Feng Yinjie's rage was perfectly normal since Yun Che made Fu Yanjie lose a great amount of face, and even left him heavily injured. However, Yun Che was very clear about the reason behind his "rage".

"With just you?"

Yun Che laughed with disdain. In midst of many's cry of shock, he empty-handedly greeted toward the Fu Yinjie's enormous blade, and his arm instantly

smashed onto the back of the blade.

Bang!!

Along with an extremely ear-piercing shattering sound, the great blade that Fu Yinjie had filled with abundant profound energy directly shattered into several pieces. Before Fu Yinjie had the chance to even scream from shock, Yun Che's right foot had already flown up and kicked at his chest.

With a “bang” sound, Fu Yinjie’s profound energy defense was directly penetrated like a sheet of scrap paper, and six of his ribs snapped with the sound. His robust frame flew backwards for several tens of meters as if a cannonball, and violently smashed onto the profound energy barrier behind him; the collision even made the entire profound energy barrier tremble slightly.

Fu Yinjie’s body slid down along the profound energy barrier, and slumped down onto the ground. He had already lost consciousness.

Breaking a blade empty handed, and defeating an opponent in one strike; everything, had occurred in an instant. Everyone who was watching this place lost their voice, and even the referee could not react in time.

“Hmph!” Yun Che made an indifferent cold snort. Without taking another glance at Fu Yinjie, he expressionlessly walked off the Sword Discourse Arena.

As if woken up from a dream, it was only just now that the referee hurriedly announced: “Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che, wins!”

## Chapter 210 – Reunion

---

Those who ridiculed him, scorned him, jeered at him, and commented on him... at that very instant, they were all dumbfounded. Even Fen Juebi's and Fen Juecheng's expressions stiffened for a moment.

Everyone thought it was plausible that the reason why Fu Yanjie was struck down with a single hit from Yun Che, was because of the combination of Fu Yanjie's underestimation of his opponent, and bad luck, as Yun Che just happened to attack his



weakness. But earlier, everyone could evidently see that Fu Yinjie used his full strength in his attack, and did not hold anything back. Everyone could clearly hear the howling of the sharp blade slicing through the air from dozens of meters away. A full-powered slash like that, the only option an average opponent of the same level have was dodge, even if the opponent were to block it, he might not be able to completely suppress it.

But, not only did Yun Che not dodge it, he met the attack with his bare hands, instantly breaking the blade which was

infused with profound energy with his hands. At the same time, with a kick... with nothing but a simple kick, he instantly struck Fu Yinjie down, and caused him to faint on-stage.

Even an idiot would not think that it was still a mere coincidence.

At least, none of those sect disciples who used their haughty attitude to ridicule, jeer and show their sense of superiority was capable of achieving this feat. Collectively, they stopped

making any noise, and was no longer able to a single word of scorn. All of them simply looked at Yun Che with dumbfounded expressions. Each of their gaze which was initially filled with underestimation and pride, instantly turned dull, with hints of fear. Their faces were even completely red.

“Is... Is he really at the True Profound Realm?”

“A problem probably occurred with the Profound Assessing Stone.”

“Both Fu Yanjie and Fu Yingjie were instantly defeated. One of them was at the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm, while the other was at the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm... With strength like that, how could he possibly be someone with just the strength at the True Profound Realm?”

Yun Che finished his second round cleanly. Initially, he had planned on trying not to perform this flashy in the grouping matches, so as to avoid being the center of attraction.

However, he did not expect that, the moment the tournament began, there would actually be people preparing to plot against him, and it was even a plot from the Burning Heaven Clan. Since that was the case, he had no need to hold back. He struck down Fu Yinjie with a single blow, giving the people who were scorning him a slap on the face, and at the same time, it was an announcement to Fen Juecheng... If you plan on plotting against me, Yun Che, at the very least, find someone with the qualifications to go against me!

“Father, did you see that?”  
Personally observing that extremely short battle earlier, Ling Yun shifted his gaze, and said with a low voice.

“Mmm.” Ling Yuefeng nodded slightly. “He’s indeed astounding. He has even exceeded my expectations.”

He even lightly added in another line. “Even after I renew my expectations of him now, he might even be more astounding than that. He might even possess the strength to earn a place in

the top hundred! A True Profound Realm practitioner entering the top hundred of the Ranking Tournament, this will definitely create an unbelievable history.”

Ling Yun nodded gently. “I have the same thoughts as well. I’m very curious, he, who is simply a disciple from the Blue Wind Profound Palace, with no advantages in resources and profound arts, is actually able to wield his profound energy to display power that surpasses his level of profound strength... Just how does he do it? Unless he’s really talented and gifted to this

extent?”

Ever since the official start of the ranking tournament, Yun Che received an extreme high level of attention. After the two continuous instant victories, the level of attention he received shot up in a vertical slope. However, the former attention held the nature of scorn, while the latter, was astoundment and disbelief. A True Profound Realm disciple actually defeated two Spirit Profound Realm opponents in a row, and they were both instant victories! Not just the young disciples, even those powerful elders who



accompanied them, were greatly surprised in their hearts.

When Yun Che's third battle began, there were no longer jeers from the vicinity, and the number of people watching the battle once again increased explosively. This time, his opponent had the strength at the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm. However, his opponent no longer had the attitude of as though he had victory in just grasp; rather, he was more cautious, and only after probing a few times, did he begin swinging his weapon and wielding his profound energy to

attack Yun Che.

As to his attack, Yun Che did not even bother looking at it. Straightening his right arm, like pulling out hay, his fist instantly penetrated through the opponent's heavy sword silhouette and profound energy defenses, accurately hitting his upper chest, causing him to tumble in the air dozens of times. When he landed on the ground, he was already in a daze, and the longsword in his hands had flown god knows where.

“Thank you... for going lenient on me. I admit my defeat.” His opponent stood up shakily, gave Yun Che a respectful salute, and then, left the stage. He was clear that Yun Che’s earlier blow was completely capable of easily dealing a him a heavy blow, but, his continuous tumble in the air, caused the powerful horizontal force he suffered to reduce in strength bit by bit, and when he landed, he basically did not suffer any injuries.

“Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins!”

The third battle was another instant victory!

This time, every eye on Yun Che, no longer held any hints of scorn or ridicule... There was only shock and deep disbelief.

Probably because of good luck, Yun Che's group did not have any strong practitioners; there were not even practitioners who were somewhat strong. In a single day, Yun Che fought a total of five matches, and every match was an easy victory. And after every victory, his name was

engraved even deeper into everyone's hearts.

There would always be one or more dark horse appearing in every Ranking Tournament, but there was never such an exaggerated dark horse! With strength at the True Profound Realm, even though he had the lowest profound strength out of all the participating disciples, and even though he had a difference of an entire large realm with the second strongest participating disciple, he actually obtained five straight victories in the first small grouping tournament!

The sun had already begun to set, and thus, the curtains closed for the matches on the first day. More than two thousand matches had undergone on thirty arenas. Within these many matches, there would definitely be some there were spectacular and thrilling, but, after the first day of the tournament ended, the hottest topic brought up was not about any of those matches, but about the unexpected dark horse —— Yun Che.

No... If it was a disciple from

some other sect defeating a disciple of the same level from the Four Major Sects, then that disciple would be called a dark horse. But, Yun Che's level of profound strength was clearly stated, yet, he continuously obtained victories over opponents with higher level of profound strength. He could no longer be called a dark horse, but a freak capable of shocking every single person.

“Haha! Brother-in-law, you simply don't know how spectacular the expressions of those people were. When I looked at them, their eyes

seemed as though they were about to fall onto the ground. Hehe, I just knew that, the moment brother-in-law shows his hand, you will definitely give them a good fright.” Xia Yuanba said exultantly. His excited look was basically as though he had personally obtained a great victory in the Ranking Tournament.

“I have looked at the information of the participants in the fifteenth group. There’s basically no strong practitioners inside; at the very least, there’s not a single disciple from the four great sects. I can only say



that our luck is pretty good.” Qin Wushang said calmly. “That’s why, Yun Che, do not be complacent after obtaining the easy victories today. The opponents you went up against today, all possess strength at the very bottom of the spectrum, none of them have the qualifications to enter the top seven hundred places.”

“I understand.” Yun Che nodded.

At this time, in front of them, five white-clothed, fairy-like

figures flowing with ice spirits slowly walked over. With a single glance, it looked as though five goddesses had descended from the clouds, allowing people to slightly feel as though they had arrived at the realm of immortals.

Looking at them, Yun Che was slightly startled, and he subconsciously stopped walking.

“Ah... it’s big sis!”

“Big sis, big sis!”

Growing up with Xia Qingyue, who was such a world-class beauty, and adding that he had a few screws loose in his brain, Xia Yuanba had a rather strong immunity to beautiful girls. These stunning girls from the Frozen Cloud Asgard, coupled with their extraordinary temperament, were enough to cause even elders who were rich in experience to be trapped in a daze for a long while, let alone energetic youths. But Xia Yuanba was completely untroubled in this area, immediately shouted out of delight, and lightly sprinted towards Xia Qingyue, as though he did not notice the

other girls from the Frozen Cloud Asgard around her.

“Yuanba?” Xia Qingyue’s beautiful eyes showed hints of astonishment. She stopped her steps, and was absolutely surprised from encountering Xia Yuanba here. Looking at her brother who had grown even bigger and muscular, the chill in her eyes had completely dispersed, and with hints of surprise, she said with a gentle voice. “Why are you here?”

Xia Yuanba’s giant figure

stopped before Xia Qingyue, and his expression was filled with excitement. Back then, Xia Qingyue had always stayed within the house, and this was also the first time he was away from Xia Qingyue for such a long time, obviously, he would miss her greatly. Now that they were finally able to meet each other, he was obviously happy beyond compare. “Big sis, brother-in-law and I are no longer at Floating Cloud City. We first arrived at New Moon City, and then, eight months ago, we went to the Blue Wind Profound Palace together. This time, I’m accompanying brother-in-law in his participation in the Ranking

Tournament, and I just knew I would meet big sis. Big sis, you have become so strong now, I have seen all your matches. If dad were to know that you have become so incredible now, he will definitely be unbelievably happy... Big sis, are you doing well over there? Is anyone bullying you? When are you returning home..."

The excited Xia Yuanba poured a large bunch of words onto Xia Qingyue. When he brought up "brother-in-law", Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin, who was beside Xia Qingyue, gave a sidelong glance at the same

time, revealing similar weird looks.

“...” Xia Qingyue’s eyes flurried, and looked towards Yun Che, who was in front of her. “Yuanba, could he... be...”

“Eh?” Xia Yuanba gave Yun Che a glance, and then, shifted his gaze back at Xia Qingyue. He scratched his head, and said with widened eyes. “He’s brother-in-law. It’s only been a year and a half, and big sis no longer recognizes him? Strange, even though brother-in-law’s

looks did not really change in these two years.”

Xia Qingyue: “...”

Chu Yueli clearly heard Xia Yuanba's words as well. She shifted his gaze, and looked at Yun Che with slight astonishment. “You're that Xiao Che who married Qingyue at Floating Cloud City?”

“Ah?” Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin exclaimed uncontrollably at the same time, and they



looked at Yun Che with their widened beautiful eyes.

Only Chu Yuechan, although she stopped walking as well, had a cold expression. She simply stared straight into the distance, as if she was an outsider of the mortal realm..

Yun Che, this ultimate dark horse, had garnered the attention of the entire audience, and naturally, it included the Frozen Cloud Asgard. But to Xia Qingyue and Chu Yueli, although Yun Che looked

somewhat similar to the Xiao Che they knew, they had never thought that Yun Che was Xiao Che. Because the difference between the two was simply too great; so great, that they could be said to be completely different, and that it was impossible for the two of them to belong in the same world. They firmly believed that this Yun Che just happened to have almost the same appearance as Xiao Che.

Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin did not expect that the person they had been talking about for so long, was actually the

husband that Xia Qingyue had married with. But, wasn't it said that the person she married had crippled profound veins, and could only be a cripple his entire life? Then how...

Yun Che took a step forward, and said respectfully. "Yun Che, disciple of Blue Wind Profound Palace, is happy to meet the fairies of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Back then in Floating Cloud City, this disciple did indeed have the name Xiao Che, but currently, this disciple is now named Yun Che." His gaze shifted to Xia Qingyue, and gave a slight smile. "Qingyue, it's been a while."

Xia Qingyue slightly nodded as a response, with a posture that was light and elegant.

Hearing the confirmation from Yun Che himself, Chu Yueli's eyes were in a state of turmoil, and her expression was filled with shock.

Back then, when Xiao Che was chased out of the Xiao Clan, she had personally witnessed the entire scene from the skies above. Xiao Che, at that time, still had crippled profound veins

and those veins had been crippled since he was born. When he had matured, the crippling had already been deeply ingrained into him so it was basically impossible to restore them... Besides, even if he did encounter a heavenly miracle the next day and had his profound veins restored, it had only been eighteen months. When his profound veins were restored, he had to train from the beginning. In other words, the time taken for Yun Che to train from nothing to the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, was merely eighteen months!!!

Even as one of the “Frozen Cloud’s Seven Fairies”, this was a truth that she was unable to completely believe and accept.

## Chapter 211 – Second Round Of Group Stages

---

“It looks like you must have had various strange encounters that allowed to you to greatly reform your body. This is due to your good luck.” Chu Yueli slightly nodded: “From now on, I believe that Qingyue will be more relieved. But...” Her gaze grew cold: “I hope you won’t forget about the status of Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples and moreover, won’t forget why Frozen Cloud Asgard permitted her marriage to you. I don’t want you to harbor any intentions that you should not have just because you

no longer have crippled  
profound veins.”

Yun Che smiled indifferently and said: “Senior should be at ease. With respect to Qingyue, Junior only has unlimited admiration and gratitude. Junior would definitely not do anything that would ever inconvenience her.”

Even though those words were meant to deal with Chu Yueli, but behind her back, they actually had a second meaning... To never inconvenience her, as



for whether or not she would be inconvenienced, hmm...

Chu Yueli took a glance at Chu Yuechan. She knew that Chu Yuechan had an aloof nature and did not like to socialize with others. She immediately said: "Let's go."

"Yuanba, take good care of yourself and father." Xia Qingyue told Xia Yuanba in a gentle voice. A pair of beautiful eyes swept across Yun Che's face and then turned to leave with Chu Yuechan and Chu Yueli.

“Awhh... Big sis, I still have so many things to tell you ! “

Yun Che held back Xia Yuanba who was trying to chase after his sister and shook his head :  
“That’s enough Yuanba, do not go over there. The day that she became a Frozen Cloud Asgard disciple, she could no longer be considered a member of the Xia family. Even after disciples of the Frozen Cloud Asgard Palace die, their bodies eternally remain within Asgard.”

“Oh.” Xia Yuanba nodded his head. No one could tell whether he really understood. His lips curled up in a laugh: “No matter, at least brother-in-law is still here. When big sis went there for two years, you already became so powerful. She will definitely be very happy.”

“...” Yun Che was suddenly left speechless for a long time by Xia Yuanba’s big heart.

“I heard that the ones leading the Frozen Cloud Asgard team this time, are the Fairy of Frozen

Glass, Chu Yueli, and the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, Chu Yuechan, who has not made a public appearance in a long time. The one by Chu Yueli's side should be the Chu Yuechan who pulled the souls and plagued the dreams of uncountable handsome and outstanding youths in the past." Cang Yue walked over and said : "Too bad she's wearing a veil. I would really like to see how beautiful "Blue Wind's Number One Beauty", whom my father has been harping about for half his life, is."

"This Fairy of Frozen Beauty is as cold and aloof as rumored.

Simply looking at her for a while makes me feel like my soul is getting frozen, giving me no confidence to go up and speak to her.” Cang Yue gently petted her chest. Chu Yuechan’s incomparably cold attitude left her an immeasurably deep impression. She carefully said: “However it’s strange. It’s rumored that she usually stays at the Frozen Cloud Asgard, and has never left for a few years or even a few decades now. It’s harder for someone to meet her than to ascend to heaven. Why did she choose to come to this particular ranking tournament?”

“...Perhaps the Frozen Cloud Asgard was too dull for too long so she came out to get a breath of fresh air.” Yun Che randomly said, before sighing faintly in his heart. A while ago, he had been looking at Chu Yuechan continuously, hoping to catch her gaze. Even if his target was cold and unfeeling, any apathetic glance would do... but Chu Yuechan concentrated on her tasks from beginning to end and was as cold as an ice statue. The face behind the veil was serene and completely ignored his existence.

The way she was ignoring him

was worse than if she simply had no feelings.

“But I still get the feeling that Chu Yuechan seems to be stealing glances at you.” Cang Yue suddenly said.

“Stealing glances... at me?” Yun Che’s mouth grew wide open: “She was clearly just standing there without even moving, how do you know that she’s stealing glances at me?”

Cang Yue’s small head was

shocked. After thinking it through for a while, with an entirely serious face, she replied: “A woman’s intuition.”

Yun Che: “Pfft.....”

---

“In this boundless universe, there just aren’t any impossible miracles. Even a person who originally had completely crippled profound veins managed to show a shocking performance at this ranking



tournament in not even two years. Looks like I had been staring at the sky from the bottom of the well when I stayed in Frozen Cloud Asgard for these past years..”

Chu Yueli sighed as she lamented. Clearly, Yun Che’s dramatic transformation had given her a big shock.

“Elder sister, do you know of any method in this world that would let a person whose profound veins which had been destroyed since they were

young, be completely restored?" Chu Yueli faced Chu Yuechan and asked. However, even after waiting for quite a while, she did not get a reply. Chu Yuechan looked straight ahead, the light in her eyes like the reflection of a clear pool of still water, completely without ripples. It seemed like she did not not even hear what she had said at all.

"Elder sister?"

Chu Yuechan still did not respond.

Chu Yueli no longer said anything... Ever since Chu Yuechan suddenly left the palace half a year ago and came back, she suddenly seemed to have become a different person. Even as her younger sister who understood her the most, she could not guess what she was thinking at all.

Behind her, Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin gathered around Xia Qingyue on her left and right, having a private conversation.

“Junior Sister Xia, is that really your brother? The difference between you siblings is really great. You have such a soft and weak body but your brother is like a small giant.”

“That Yun Che is the person that you married? It’s such a surprise to have met him here. However, he’s actually quite good looking... Junior Sister Xia, the reason you persisted in marrying him, was it because you actually like him just a little bit?”

Xia Qingyue gently shook her head: “The only reason I married him was to fulfill the promise my father made in the past and because of my gratitude about his father’s rescue that saved my life. Since I have already become a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard, how could I have developed feelings for him?”

Having said to here, her mind flashed to a scene of when she saw Yun Che for the first time. He was walking together with a maid who had an elegant air and a pretty face, and they were obviously quite close. Her heart

suddenly felt just a tad uncomfortable... but this uncomfortable feeling was very slight, and it disappeared in a flash.

---

On the second and third day, the first round of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament continued.

In this first round of group stages, Yun Che was indeed quite lucky. In the group of fifty people that he was in, not only

were there no disciples from the Four Major Sects, the strongest practitioner was only at the fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. But of the six disciples that were at the fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, he did not even meet a single one. Within three days, he fought twelve battles and the strongest expert he met was only at the fourth level of the Spirit Profound Realm... With his undefeated streak of twelve wins, he entered the top 300 ranking, entering into the second round of group stage matches.

This result was enough to make anyone drop their spectacles.

“Damn! Even though I admit that this person of the True Profound Realm is much stronger than expected, to even be able to fight with others of a higher realm, but to actually enter into the second round of the group stage with an undefeated streak... This is just too exaggerated.”

“This guy’s luck is just too good. The strongest opponent he met was just at the fourth level



of the Spirit Profound Realm. My luck is not as good. Everyone I met was abnormally strong. If I was in his shoes, I would have an undefeated streak too.”

“Forget it. It’s easy talking about it, but getting it done is another matter. Why don’t you try fighting with someone at the third or fourth level of the Spirit Realm while you’re only at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm!?”

“ ... ”

Without any suspense, Xia Qingyue and Ling Yun were also able to clear the first round of group stages with undefeated streaks. Of their twelve rounds, about half their opponents surrendered without a fight. The efficiency simply could not be any higher.

After the first round of group stages ended, Xia Yuanba pumped his fist and cheered. Cang Yue was beaming, and Qin Wushang could not contain his smiles any longer. Even though he was confident that Yun Che could make it into the second round of group stages, when it

finally happened, he was still unable to control his emotions... Because this was the first time ever that the disciples representing the Blue Wind Imperial Family made into the second round of group stages! The first time a disciple entered into the top three hundred rankings!

“I will immediately send news to the Emperor. He will be very happy upon receiving this news. Perhaps if his mood improves greatly then his health might make a turn towards improving.” Qin Wushang said in an incomparably emotional

way. Without waiting any further, he found a corner to send news to the Emperor.

“This is too wonderful Junior Brother Yun. You have established a new ranking record for disciples representing the Imperial Family. After Father receives news of this, he will certainly be very happy. If you could reach the top hundred ranks, then even if Father had to return to heaven, he could do so without any regrets... Junior Brother Yun, I sincerely thank you.” A red flush filled Cang Yue’s face. She gently held Yun Che’s hand, as her brows curved

into two beautiful crescent moons.

Yun Che was about to say something when he suddenly felt a faintly discernable killing intent drift across his face. With the smile not leaving his face, he gripped Cang Yue's hands and gently said: "Then... Senior Sister, how do you intend to reward me?"

"Ah? What kind of reward do you want?" Cang Yue blinked her beautiful eyes.

“I want Senior Sister... to kiss me.” Yun Che slightly turned his face and grinned.

“Ah? Right here?” Cang Yue looked around in all four directions and a shade of pink spread across her absolutely beautiful face. Her lips puckered slightly. She suddenly moved forward, left a quick kiss on Yun Che’s face, and then immediately lowered her head with her heart pounding fiercely.

Not far away, Fen Juecheng was

looking at Yun Che and Cang Yue. From his hands came a “bang” sound. The second armrest of his chair had been broken in his fury.

“Big bro, what’s the matter?”  
Upon hearing this sound, Fen Juebi turned his head to ask.

The flesh on Fen Juecheng’s face spasmed. His face, which was originally handsome, now had a sinister air spread throughout. His eyes were filled with a shocking venom : “I’m going to chop this little

bastard... in... to... thousands of pieces!!”

---

On the fourth day of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, the second round of group stages officially started. At the same time, the one thousand and two hundred disciples that were eliminated in the first round went to the secondary venue in the rear hills to compete for the rankings below the top three hundred. It was only that the ranking tournament at the



secondary venue had a far smaller audience. Both the quality and atmosphere of the secondary venue could not compare to that of the main venue.

The second round of group stages was likewise held on the thirty little sword arenas. Even though the number of participating disciples were condensed to only three hundred, every person had to fight a full fifteen matches! At the same time, even though this round of group stages was still by “group matches”, the competitors were no longer

divided into groups. Everyone's opponent was no longer restricted to a small range and could be drawn from the entire set of disciples who had entered into the second round. This allowed the highest chance of making sure that everything was fair.

However, there was no such thing as absolute fairness. Even though the second round was not divided into groups, the opponent that was selected for every match was still something to watch out for. If someone originally had the ability to rank within the top hundred but was

so unlucky as to encounter opponents from the Four Major Sects for all fifteen of his battles, then he could only cradle his head and cry in pain. There was no way to logically debate against that. And someone else, whose strength was only average but only met opponents who were below average, could manage to win all his battles.

Of course, the chances of either of these two extremes happening were very low. Everyone's fifteen matches were on the whole bound to be fair and equal.

“Sword Discourse Arena  
Number Seven, first match. Blue  
Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che  
—— versus —— Thunderbolt  
Lightning Pavilion’s Lei  
Zhentian!”

The battles at the thirty Sword Discourse Arenas proceeded at the same time. Yun Che’s first opponent was already standing in front of him. With an incomparably stout body, he was only twenty years old but looked like a buff forty year old man. The weapons in his hands were two large round hammers.

The Yun Che who had exploded into the second round of group stages with an undefeated record naturally drew more attention. Looking at his next opponent, everybody's heart had exactly the same idea: This time, this Yun Che would lose for certain.

He could defeat opponents at the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm and opponents at the fourth level of the Spirit Profound Realm... but no matter how overpowered he was, there must be a limit, and this Lei Zhentian was the Young Pavilion

Master of the Thunderbolt Lightning Pavilion from the Northwestern Reaches of the Mighty Jolt Region! His profound strength was at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm! The Twin Thunderbolt Hammers he held in his hands were sufficient to smash a large boulder into small pieces. If smashed onto a person's head it would directly turn them into pulp.

“Junior Brother Yun, do your best...” Cang Yue gripped the hem of her skirts with both hands and nervously mumbled.

## Chapter 212 – Consecutive Victories!

---

Seeing that his opponent was Yun Che, Lei Zhentian was evidently startled for a moment, and then began to laugh out loud. “I didn’t expect that my first opponent today was actually you, brat. Looks like this great dark horse, is about to become a dead horse soon. Reveal your weapon!”

“Then that will depend on whether you have the capability.” Yun Che said indifferently.

If the opponent who said that was several levels higher than him, he would have been alright with it. However, the person who said this was someone who was only at the True Profound Realm; undoubtedly, he instantly went into a rage. Without saying anything more, he swung his twin hammers, creating two fierce and abnormal waves of wind which struck directly towards Yun Che's chest.

Lei            Zhentian's            Twin  
Thunderbolt Hammers weighed



four hundred kilos each, but in his hands, they were incomparably light and nimble, and the roaring of the wind brought by the swings were especially deep and heavy.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!  
Bang!

Six incomparably fierce hammer strikes were entirely blocked by the back of Yun Che's hands. Those concentrated banging sounds were completely unlike the sound of impact between a heavy hammer and a

human body and were more like the sound of a heavy hammer smashing onto a rock. When these six blows landed, shocked surfaced from Lei Zhentian's expression. With the Twin Thunderbolt Hammers that weighed a total of eight hundred kilos together, and adding his innate profound strength, they were actually blocked continuously by his opponent's bare hands!

And after blocking them, forget about injuries, there were not even reddened marks on his hands.

Is his body actually made of iron!?

I simply won't believe that you'll be able to continue blocking all of them!!

Lei Zhentian's gaze darkened. The profound energy in his entire body began to flow wildly and just like a blazing wheel of fire, his body began to spin at high speed. Like a fierce hurricane, he smashed his Twin Thunderbolt Hammers towards Yun Che, with each strike fiercer

than the previous one.

Bang bang bang bang...

In a few breaths of time, dozens of crazy hammer strikes had landed, yet, still none of them had stained Yun Che's clothes; all of them were blocked by the back of his hands and wrists. The more Lei Zhentian struck, the more shocked he became. Finally, with a great roar, his sect's profound art exploded out instantly.

“Rumbling Thunderbolt!!”

The Twin Thunderbolt Hammers suddenly smashed down at the same time with a pressure that was much stronger than earlier by several times. Yun Che frowned. He did not take the hit directly, instead, he retreated a distance of three body lengths. When the two hammers struck empty air, they suddenly smashed against each other. A bolt of lightning which contained a strong concentration of lightning energy was suddenly released, charging straight towards Yun Che's side.

Crack!

With a deafening screech, the bolt of lightning exploded as it made contact with the floor, causing a big portion of the floor to turn crisp black. As for Yun Che, he had already leaped far behind. When he landed, with a swing of his arms, he held onto the Overlord's Colossal Sword in front of him with his two hands.

For the first time in the Ranking Tournament, he finally revealed his heavy sword.

“The hell! What a big sword! So that’s his weapon?”

“Is that the legendary heavy sword? He’s actually using a heavy sword as his weapon? Can he actually swing it?”

The moment Yun Che brought out his heavy sword, it brought about a huge wave of astonishment and whispering voices. On the Sword Discourse Arena, Lei Zhentian’s expression shook, because he realized that the moment Yun Che wielded

his heavy sword, he had changed into a completely different person.

Heavy swords were excessively large; no matter the weight, or size, they were extremely difficult to wield. However, when Yun Che was wielding such a huge sword in his hands, it actually looked very fitting, and there was not even a hint of incoordination, as though the sword was birthed just for him, forming a single entity with Yun Che. It was not grabbed onto by his hands, rather, it grew from his hands, and was a part of his body in the first place.



The atmosphere around Yun Che had undergone an earthshaking change as well. Earlier, he saw that under Yun Che's calmness, there was a hint of mysteriousness but he had not possessed any sharp edges. However, the moment he brought out his heavy sword, it was as though he was looking at a towering mountain with a indiscernible peak in front of him. A thought of "basically no possible way of winning" quickly sprouted in his heart, causing him to grip onto his two hammers even more tightly. However, even after a long while, he did not dare to take a

step forward.

Just what kind of freak is this... I had once tried a heavy sword-type weapon, but I was completely incapable of wielding it, hence, I could only give up on it. But this person, not only can he wield a heavy sword, his compatibility with the heavy sword could actually reach such an extent... With the heavy sword's characteristics, even if it's a genius, he would at least require hundred, or even hundreds of years to reach a realm as high as this...

As he thought of this, Lei Zhentian's back was drenched with even more sweat.

“Receive my blow!”

Yun Che wielded his heavy sword horizontally and with a flash of his body, he instantly closed the distance by fifteen meters. Lei Zhentian quickly regained his senses. With a loud roar, he poured all of his strength into his two arms, taking the blow head on... The heavy sword in his hands moved so quickly that it might be

possible that his heavy sword was simply large in size while its actual weight was not that heavier than a light sword.

Only when the Twin Thunderbolt Hammers clashed against the Overlord's Colossal Sword, did Lei Zhentian realize that the thought he had in his mind was nothing but laughable imagination. A majestically large force that exceeded far beyond his expectations came from right in front of him, causing the hands he was wielding his two hammers with to momentarily numb. As though it had been blown away by a hurricane, his

body was sent flying high in the air...

Bang!!!

Lei Zhentian struck heavily onto the profound energy barrier in the rear, tumbled down onto the ground, and he was completely in a daze. When he finally managed to stand himself up, his Twin Thunderbolt Hammers had long flown away from his hands.

“Do you still want to fight?”

Yun Che lightly tapped his heavy sword on the ground. With the tip of the sword as the starting point, a fissure appeared on the incomparably hard floor of the Sword Discourse Arena. If he had not pulled out his heavy sword, Lei Zhentian could still stand up against him, however, the moment he wielded his heavy sword, Lei Zhentian simply turned into fodder.

It could be said that, when compared to his unarmed state, Yun Che's combat strength wielding his heavy sword was in a completely different realm.

Recalling the catastrophic strength he demonstrated earlier, although Lei Zhentian did not receive any substantive injuries, he no longer had the courage to continue the battle. With a bow, he softly said. “I admit defeat... Since you’re able to wield a heavy sword which I am not capable of even after working so hard to do so, I’m well convinced about my lost!”

“Lei Zhentian admits defeat, Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins!!”

The people who paid attention to this match, who waited for Yun Che to lose terribly, were once again completely dumbfounded.

Even Lei Zhentian, had actually lost in the hands of a disciple from Blue Wind Imperial Family who only possessed the strength at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm!!

A result like this, could only be described ‘incredible’.



In Yun Che's second match, his opponent was a spear-using practitioner with strength at the fifth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. This time, Yun Che wielded his heavy sword the moment the match started, and after three exchanges of blows, his opponent's spear was sent flying, and his opponent was sent flying as well after the fourth exchange...

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che wins!”

Third match...

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family’s  
Yun Che wins!”

Fourth match...

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family’s  
Yun Che wins!”

Fifth match...

Sixth match...

Seventh match...

Eighth match...

.....

Yun Che's matches began to receive even more attention with each subsequent match, to the point when, the moment he stepped onto the Sword Discourse Arena, even if

disciples from the Four Major Sects were competing on another Sword Discourse Arena, a large number of eyes would still immediately shift onto his Sword Discourse Arena. And then, they saw him obtain victory... victory... victory... another victory... and still another victory... Their expressions toward him would change over and over as well, startlement... astonishment... shock... horror... and at the end, they were basically numbed.

Every one of them still recalled the first day of the Ranking Tournament; that burst of

laughter that resounded through the entire audience when Yun Che came up on stage for the Profound Strength Assessment. But now, he used one match after another, with each match capable of being crowned as 'impossible' and 'miraculous' victories, to respectfully give every one of those, who laughed at him, a resounding slap on the face in turn.

Whenever each match began, everyone would think that he would definitely lose that match, but he still turned out victorious... Everyone then began to feel like watching a

match he would lose in, but they were still left disappointed. In the first round of group stages, Yun Che obtained complete victories in all twelve matches. Even during the second round of group stages, as each match went by, he still obtained victory in every one of them, not giving them the chance to see a single loss.

If he was at the peak of the Spirit Profound Realm, or a practitioner at the sixth or seventh level, then everyone would be shocked when he obtained successive victories, but they would not feel that it

was unacceptable. But this Yun Che... His strength was merely at the True Profound Realm! A profound realm in which they thought was simply unworthy of participating in the Ranking Tournament.

Yet he swept through one Spirit Profound Realm absolute genius after another!

And he swept through their understanding as well.

As Yun Che accumulated

victories, Qin Wushang's expression became more and more agitated as well. When Yun Che won his tenth match, he was so agitated that he stood up from his seat and momentarily teared up... Because with these ten victories, even if he were to lose all of the five remaining matches, it would still be enough for him to place in the top hundred of the individual ranking! Blue Wind Imperial Family's group ranking, might even directly enter the top fifty as well!!

Not only did it break Blue Wind Imperial Family's history of



never being in the top hundred of the Ranking Tournament, it was even a huge breakthrough!

Covering her lips with her two hands, Cang Yue's cheeks were also stained in tears. She looked at Yun Che who was walking down the Sword Discourse Arena. Her vision was become more and more blurry, and in her heart, she was screaming this over and over: 'Father, are you seeing this? Junior Brother Yun has carried us to the top hundred rankings... Father, your dream has truly been fulfilled. With this one vent of frustration, our Blue Wind

Imperial Family will no longer be ridiculed by others... Father, are you seeing this...? Are you seeing this...'

Where there were happy people, there would naturally be angry ones as well. At the Burning Heaven Clan's seating area, Fen Juecheng's expression was sullen and his lungs were about to explode from anger. He was currently really regretting coming to the Heavenly Sword Villa personally. Otherwise, he would not be so angry to the extreme, because he was unable to personally take action, and had to suppress his rage so much

that he felt like dying. He wanted to see Yun Che being ridiculed. He wanted to see him tortured by his opponents. Yet, what he saw was Yun Che taking the spotlight time and time again, while grabbing everyone's eyes time and time again; he even suppressed the spotlight of all the Four Major Sects' disciples.

These two rounds of small group matches, were basically his own personal performance matches!!

“Big bro, it’s completely unnecessary for you to be so angry over such a small figure.” Fen Juebi said slowly. “For him to be capable of winning up till now, I can only say that his luck is simply too great. In the first set of small group matches, he was basically allotted into the group with the weakest average strength... and in this second set of group matches, hehe, did you see all those trashy opponents he encountered? Until now, his strongest opponent was only at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. If he had encountered any single disciple from the top ten sects, he would have been thrashed so hard his own mother would’ve been

incapable of recognizing him.”

“Hmph!” Fen Juecheng gave him a glare. “When you’re at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, were you able to defeat an opponent at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm!?”

Fen Juebi was momentarily at a loss of words, and then, he simply pouted his lips. “If you put it that way, then he’s indeed a freak. But currently, I really wish to see him continue winning, until... he enters the top thirty-two.”

Fen Juecheng's eyes flashed.  
“Are you saying?”

“Hehe! If he were to really reach the top thirty-two, enter the elimination matches, and unfortunately be matched up with me, tsksk...” Fen Juebi licked his lips, his expression revealing a smile like that of a poisonous snake. “I have a way to turn this freak into trash. The exhilaration from personally destroying a freak-level genius, big brother, you know of it as well, it’s a wonderful sensation that cannot be described.”

# Chapter 213 – Qingyue

## Under The Moon

---

The wind was blowing loudly in the pitch black night. The moonlight was dull and the stars were sparse; it was prime time to secretly sneak around... Ah no, to secretly night crawl.

Tomorrow was the last day for the second round of the group stage. Yun Che, who won ten out of ten matches, had already secured his rank in the top hundred. Yun Che didn't even think of it as anything special himself, yet Qin Wushang was

unbearably full of joy, and that laughing mouth of his had not closed from afternoon all the way till evening. Of course, Cang Yue was also terribly delighted, and when a beauty was delighted, it was naturally much easier to take action.

Perhaps, she would fall to him tonight.

As he thought to here, Yun Che instantly started to laugh lewdly. Just as he jumped off the bed and was about to head out for Cang Yue's room, the door to his



room was suddenly knocked, and Xia Yuanba's voice came from the outside: "Brother-in-law, are you asleep yet?"

The time wasn't very late yet, but it was already very quiet outside. In order to not disturb him, Qin Wushang and Xia Yuanba would never visit him at night, unless there was some urgent matter.

Yun Che walked over to open the door: "Yuanba, what is it?"

“Oh, it’s that big sis just came earlier, and wanted me to give this thing to you.” Xia Yuanba took out a small spatial ring, and gave it to Yun Che.

“Your sister? Qingyue came over earlier?” Yun Che took the ring, and said in a surprised tone.

“Mhm.” Xia Yuanba nodded: “Big sis said that you actually don’t need these things anymore, but they are also useless to be carried around on her, and wants me to pass this

on to you anyway.”

Something that Qingyue my wife would give to me? What would it be?

Yun Che lifted the ring, and opened his inner vision... In the spacious spatial ring, there only existed three things.

A profound core. Its aura was thick and rich; it was clearly an Earth Profound Beast's profound core! A chunk of fist sized crystal that looked like purple-colored

ice crystals... it was shockingly a Purple Veined Heavenly Crystal! And planted within a transparent jade bottle, was an eccentric grass with a twisted stem, seven sharp and long leaves, as well as a seven-colored brilliance flowing through its entire body...

Seven Profound Gem Grass!!

The inside of Yun Che's heart violently shook.

Seven Profound Gem Grass,

Purple Veined Heavenly Crystal, Earth Profound Beast's profound core... These were clearly the three things that he had mentioned to Xia Qingyue back then, that could be used to heal his crippled profound veins at time.

Yun Che lifted his head up, and asked urgently: "How long has it been since Qingyue left?"

"Ehm, she just left a little while ago. Brother-in-law, you want..."

Before Xia Yuanba finished talking, Yun Che had already rushed out like a gust of wind, and instantly vanished before Xia Yuanba's eyes.

Xia Yuanba stood in front of the room's door, scratched his head with a innocent face, and muttered in a small voice: "Should I have told Brother-in-law right when Big Sis came..."

After exiting the courtyard, Yun Che stopped for an instant, and perceived the remaining threads of ice-cold aura with his

incomparably sharp sense. Following the direction that the ice-cold aura had lead to, Yun Che went full throttle, and madly chased. Not long after, under the pitch-black curtain of night, a graceful figure in fluttering snow-colored attire appeared in his vision. He slowed down his footsteps, and quickly shouted: "Qingyue!"

The voice that came from behind made Xia Qingyue stop her feet. She quietly turned around, and her eyes met with Yun Che, who had chased here. In regards to Yun Che's pursuit, she did not seem to be very

surprised. Her charming eyes did not waver, and her voice was soft and calm: “What matter does Sir Yun seek from this Qingyue?”

The form of address “Sir Yun” made the corner of Yun Che’s mouth slightly cramp. He opened his mouth and asked: “Qingyue my wife, I want to ask you a question... Our marriage certificate that I passed over to you that day... is it still there?”

Xia Qingyue lifted her snow-white hand, and lightly stroked



her ring. A sheet of flat and undamaged marriage certificate that was meticulously protected within a colorless crystal was taken out by her. With a lifting motion of her hand, the marriage certificate flew toward Yun Che, and landed in his hands... And this sheet of paper, was precisely the marriage certificate between him and Qingyue that was perfectly flawless and undamaged!

A kind of wordless moved emotion birthed in Yun Che's heart. The existence of this marriage certificate, perhaps could not prove that Xia

Qingyue truly held some feelings toward him, but it proved that after the day he left, she protected his last bit of dignity with all her might.

At least, when her husband was in a perilous situation, she, as the wife, did not take the opportunity to forsake him, but had actually went through with the most sacred part of a wife's duty.

The existence of this marriage certificate, was also proclaiming that they had always been

husband and wife, including now.

“That time, you didn’t have the power to protect this marriage certificate, so you passed it on to me. Now, I believe you already have the strength to protect it, so it should be returned to you anyway.” Xia Qingyue said in a light voice.

“Then, do you remember what I said, when I gave the marriage certificate to you?” Yun Che asked in a very quiet voice as he carefully put away the marriage

certificate.

Xia Qingyue: "..."

"I said at that time: 'If you still want to continue being my wife, then protect it; if you want to obtain complete freedom, then destroy it'...." As he spoke to here, Yun Che made a self-mocking laugh: "Actually, when I left that day, I had always thought that your choice would be to destroy the marriage certificate. Because, no matter if it's for your father's promise, or repaying the debt of gratitude

toward Uncle Xiao Ying, the person you ought to marry was Xiao Ying's son. However, you had already known that I wasn't even Xiao Ying's son at all, and was only a 'bastard that was picked up' in their mouths. You totally could have destroyed the marriage certificate, as well as our name as husband and wife in a right and proper way, and then cleanly enter Frozen Cloud Asgard. Why did you choose to instead, protect this marriage certificate?"

Xia Qingyue's charming eyes looked straight at Yun Che's, and did not have even a tiny bit of

the intention of avoiding anything. The expression in her gaze was completely tranquil. After these one and half years in Frozen Cloud Asgard, Yun Che clearly felt that Xia Qingyue's entire disposition had changed so much that it was as if heaven and earth had flipped. In those few days that they lived together after marriage, her gaze was indifferent, cold, and even a little bit loftiness and immaturity was hidden within. But now, the coldness in her eyes was completely replaced by apathy, and was as unfeeling as tranquil water, without the slightest of perturbation. The aura of her energy, however, had become bone-chilling cold.

Other than Frozen Cloud Arts, the Frozen Cloud Asgard's core profound arts also included Frozen Heart Arts. The latter, could make one calm the heart, and empty the mind. To the extremes, one could achieve a state of truly having no desires, and look disinterestedly upon all life and death, victory and defeat, ambitions, as well as any good and evil in the world...

However, could a human without desire and pursuit, still be considered "human"?

“Qingyue cannot answer this question.”

“Why can’t you answer?”

Xia Qingyue said quietly: “Because what Qingyue thought that time, is already now forgotten. Perhaps, it is because the fate of us as husband and wife had yet to be finished.”

As she said the words “Fate as husband and wife”, these few



words that were supposed to carry a sense of sentiment, were spoken with indifference, and without any hint of drifting emotions. And this kind of indifference, gave Yun Che an uncomfortable feeling of suffocation. The Xia Qingyue of the old days was like an aloft ice lotus situated on a snow mountain. Even though the him that time was disabled and insignificant, he still had the incessant intention to probe and tease, and the desire to conquer and pluck her. If not for the unforeseen event that happened after, if given enough time, he firmly believed that he would succeed if they were under the same roof day and night.

But the Xia Qingyue now, gave him a feeling comparable to the bright moon that hung atop the blue sky; still impeccable as always, but was already extremely far away from him, to the point that it was impossible to reach.

Ahhh!! This Frozen Cloud Asgard place, is really harmful!!

As he thought about how Chu Yuechan, who had lived together with him for five months, still left resolutely even after

XXOOing, along with the changes in Xia Qingyue... Yun Che's heart instantly boiled with an impulse to destroy Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Taking in so many peerlessly beauties, yet turning them into otherworldly beings unstained by the desires of the world... It was virtually a place that all men, no matter human or god, would be angry towards in their hearts!

Yun Che's chest rose up and back down. After calming his

state of mind, he said with a peaceful tone: “Thank you for finding me the Seven Profound Gem Grass, Earth Profound Beast’s profound core, and Purple Veined Heavenly Crystal. I know that even if it’s Frozen Cloud Asgard, to find all three of these within one and half years would not be that easy. Moreover, you were only a newly entered disciple.”

“No need for thanks,” Xia Qingyue’s voice was light yet graceful: “Compared to your favor of opening all of my profound entrances, these, can’t be considered much.”

“Me opening your profound entrances, was only expending a few drops of sweat. But you finding all these things for me, was not as simple as just expending a few drops of sweat. However, I indeed should not say thank you, since we are husband and wife.” Yun Che slightly smiled.

Xia Qingyue: “....”

“May I ask you three questions?”

“Please ask.” Xia Qingyue did not refuse.

It had gone deeper and deeper into the night. Even though there were only a few sparse stars in the sky, the round moon was extraordinarily brilliant, and generously poured down its bright moonlight. But as it shone on Xia Qingyue's body, these flawless and beautiful moonbeams, could only be reduced into the unnoticeable background. Emanating a kind of indescribable and suffocating beauty, the Xia Qingyue under

the moonlight was as if a goddess had descended from the heavens. Seeing this figure that was beautiful to the point of almost illusory, to say that Yun Che's heartbeat did not increase in pace was impossible. He slowly took a breath in, and asked: "In Frozen Cloud Asgard, did you live well?"

"Very well. The Asgard Mistress, Master, Senior Masters, Junior Masters, as well as all the Junior and Senior Sisters all treated me very well." Xia Qingyue answered in a very succinct manner.

“Mn, then that’s great.” Yun Che nodded: “Second question. I had wanted to know this answer a long time ago. However, at that time, you did not tell me... I want to know, when we married, exactly what realm was your profound strength already at?”

The Yun Che at that time was absolutely sure, that Xia Qingyue’s profound strength was definitely not the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm that was shown on the surface. However, the rank of



her profound strength at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm was known throughout the entire city, and no one had ever questioned it. Even those of the senior generation, who had strength far surpassing Elementary Profound Realm, thought her as only in the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm. It was as if her true strength was hidden with some kind of special method. As for the reason to hide it, Yun Che understood that very well. In a little place like Floating Cloud City, a 16 year old at the pinnacle of the Elementary Profound Realm was already a number one genius recognized by the masses.

If the profound strength she exhibited was of the Nascent Profound Realm, or even the peak of the Nascent Profound Realm, it would definitely instigate an unpredictable uproar.

This time, Xia Qingyue did not refuse, and directly answered: “When I was twelve, I met Master. At the age of thirteen, I broke through the Elementary Profound Realm, and stepped into the Nascent Profound Realm. Fourteen, I broke through Nascent Profound, and entered the True Profound Realm. After my marriage with

you at the age of sixteen, I was at the pinnacle of True Profound Realm, just like you right now.”

Yun Che: “...!!!”

# Chapter 214 – The True Beginning

---

Yun Che was silent for a long time with only shock in his heart.

At that time, even though he was absolutely certain that Xia Qingyue's profound strength was not just at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm, he only surmised that her true profound strength was at the Nascent Profound Realm, and at most, the peak of the Nascent Profound Realm. Never would he have expected that the Xia

Qingyue then, was actually the same as the current him, at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm! And was only at a distance of a step away from the Spirit Profound Realm.

It was something the him at that time would never imagine. Because to a little Floating Cloud City, reaching the pinnacle of the True Profound Realm at the age of sixteen, was even more mythical than myth.

If she had immediately announced her sixteen year old

self's profound strength to be at tenth level of the True Profound Realm at that time, that kind of sensation, would not merely be in just a Floating Cloud City, but also deeply startle the surrounding cities, including the Blue Wind Imperial Family. If that happened, it would be fundamentally impossible for Xia Qingyue to even think about comfortably staying within Floating Cloud City.

It was also no wonder that Frozen Cloud Asgard would choose Xia Qingyue. Her innate talent, was actually at this shocking level!

“So that’s how it is. I suppose your Master was afraid that your profound strength was just too universally shocking, so she used some kind of method to help you cover it up and let your profound strength aura be only at the tenth level of the Elementary Profound Realm. Right?”

Xia Qingyue nodded slightly.

“Third question.” Yun Che looked straight at Xia Qingyue with a bit of an assertiveness in

his gaze: “I want to know, in this period of time you’ve been at Frozen Cloud Asgard, have you ever, once in awhile, thought about me?”

“...” Xia Qingyue became silent. After a short while, she turned around and softly said: “It is already getting late. There are still matches tomorrow, it’s best to rest early. Qingyue should also return now.”

When she finished speaking, without waiting for Yun Che’s response, she was already



shifting away with light steps. After her snowy clothes started to float lightly, her figure was already moving further and further away at a fast pace... without the slightest hesitation.

Yun Che did not chase after her. He sucked air in and softly yelled out in a voice loud enough for her to hear: “After tomorrow, I will definitely enter the last thirty-two ranking battles! If we meet during the Round of Thirty Two, I hope that you will not go easy on me!!”

His voice slowly swept outwards and Xia Qingyue's silhouette, had already disappeared from his line of sight.

---

Sixth day of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, which was also the last day of the second round of group stages.

The focus of most of the gazes, was still upon Yun Che's matches. Everyone wanted to see

how far this person with the lowest profound strength amongst numerous disciples, who was a freak level super dark horse, could possibly go in this ranking tournament.

Since yesterday's ten consecutive wins in the second round of group stages, Yun Che's victories within the group stage had not stopped, rather, it continued on after every match within each and every shocked shout.

Eleventh match:

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins!”

Qin Wushang tightly gripped both hands in excitement, itching to wave his hands in the air and shout loudly without the slightest of elegance.

Twelfth match:

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins!”

Qin Wushang stood up in excitement with trembling lips. As both his hands shook, it was as if he did not know where to put them.

Thirteenth match:

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins!”

Even Qin Wushang’s black beard started to shake as he continued to repeat himself:

“Top fifty... Top fifty... Top fifty...”

Top fifty in the individual ranking was a position that he did not even dare to even wish for! His long time wish was the same as Cang Wanhe's, and he only wished for their power ranking to be in the top hundred. And now, Yun Che alone, had already let the entire Imperial Family obtain a rank so high it was not known how many times higher it was from their original goal... He could imagine how excited this would make Cang Wanhe feel when he received news of this.

.....

Fifteenth match, which was also the last match:

“...Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins!”

“Blue Wind Imperial Family’s competing disciple Yun Che, second round of group stages, complete victory in all fifteen matches, directly advances to tomorrow’s elimination

rounds!”

The referee declared these achievements with a type of incomparable amazement when looking at Yun Che... Fifteen consecutive victories. In the previous ranking tournaments, even though there were very few disciples outside of those belonging to that of the Four Major Sects who had accomplished this, it wasn't like there weren't any who had not done it before. But, obtaining fifteen consecutive victories with a profound strength at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm...



A single phrase wildly surged inside the referee's heart... What kind of cosmic joke was this! Have I gone crazy or did the entire continent already go mad!

Aside from Yun Che, Xia Qingyue, Ling Yun, Fen Jin, Xiao Kuanglei, and other disciples within the Four Major Sects also finished with complete victories in the second round of group stages, which meant that they too, did not need to be ranked and could directly advance into tomorrow's elimination rounds.

“Complete victory... top thirty-two... Even if he were to place last in tomorrow’s elimination rounds, his individual ranking would still be at thirty second place...” It had been a while since Qin Wushang’s bottom had touched his seat. He was so excited that he was essentially incapable of sitting down as he continued to rave deliriously, with each of his words carrying a deep vibrato. At this moment, he deeply felt that he was currently dreaming, and was also deeply afraid that this was merely a dream...

In contrast, Cang Yue was much more tranquil. After all, unlike Qin Wushang, she did not carry the burden of always seeing the previous ranking tournament's dismal performance results that brought along such humiliation, resentment, and unwillingness. She also had never constantly dreamed, and wished for a day of one day being this proud with elation. Seeing Yun Che knock down every opponent that came his way, while reaching an even greater height that evoked a higher cry of surprise from the entire audience, she was inwardly joyous, proud, and completely filled with a sense of satisfaction. As she thought back

to the time when she had first gotten acquainted with him in New Moon City and all the little details that came after that, she unwittingly, began to smile.

He is a person who has always brought hope, nice surprises, and miracles...

Meeting him, is my lifetime's most fortunate of miraculous encounters.

“What a truly unforeseen outcome. I originally thought

that I was already overestimating him, but I didn't expect that I was still greatly underestimating him. He actually entered the top thirty-two with a sweeping victorious performance. For a True Profound Realm to obtain such an accomplishment is the first of all historical precedents, and is also something that is fundamentally impossible to happen again in the future." Ling Yuefeng lamented with sincerity as he watched Yun Che walk down the Sword Discourse Arena after fifteen consecutive victories.

“Mn.” Ling Yun nodded slowly.

“However, for him to obtain such a result, we also have to say that a large portion of that is due to good luck. After all, in the second round of group stages, he had never come across anyone from any large sects; especially, disciples from our Four Major Sects. Otherwise, it is fundamentally impossible for him to continuously keep up his consecutive victories. But if we put this aside, for him to have reached this point with strength only in the True Profound Realm... this younger generation will surpass us in time.”

“Father, for one to defeat an opponent of a higher level, there are only three possible reasons why. One of them, is when one’s innate talent of using of profound energy is so high that they are able to bring out a power that’s double their own profound strength. The second, is when one’s profound arts and techniques are so strong that they are able to completely crush their opponent. The third, is when one’s innate talent is astonishingly superior with a special nature, like an innate divine strength, a hardened body, a sharp perception, and so on. The majority that appear

amongst all these are those who have crushingly strong profound arts and profound techniques... Father, can you tell what kind of profound art he is using?" Ling Yun cautiously asked.

Ling Yuefeng actually shook his head: "I am completely incapable of seeing through his profound art. No matter his freestyle martial arts or his use of the heavy sword, the profound energy that he releases is incomparably fierce. It directly releases and retracts; the feeling it gave me was instead more like pure profound energy, without the existence of



any profound arts. However, the strength of this pure profound energy far surpassed the limit of the True Profound Realm... To be able to triumph over opponents across such a big gap, is also the first I've seen in my life. Seems like, after the match, it'll be necessary for me to find him for a little chat."

Ling Yun glanced at his father with a slight surprise. From his birth until now, it was actually the first time he had see his father show such curiosity towards a youth. However, Yun Che did indeed have such qualifications.

After the second round of group stages, the sect's disciples were directly ranked out using the number of wins. Among them, the top thirty-two disciples in the rankings would proceed to the last elimination round on the main Sword Discourse Arena tomorrow. Disciples below the one hundredth rank, as well as rank thirty three to one hundred, would respectively be transferred to different secondary arenas, and progress to the ranking battles between their ranks.

The elimination round, was the last stage of the Ranking Tournament, as well as the core existence of the entire Ranking Tournament. Because, among over one thousand and five hundred participating disciples, these were the decided strongest thirty-two people! Who represented the pinnacle of the Blue Wind Empire's younger generation's strength! Even though the elimination round only had thirty-two people, it would last for an entire five days, longer than any round of group stage matches. The arena would also no longer be the small Sword Discourse Arenas, and would instead be the enormous central Main Sword

## Discourse Arena.

---

The next morning, as the sky was just barely lighting up, the Sword Discourse Arena in the Heavenly Sword Villa was already clamoring.

The final event of Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, the Round of Thirty Two, had finally begun!

An enormous profound stone was temporarily erected in the center of the Main Sword Discourse Arena, and the names of the thirty-two people who had entered the Round of Thirty Two, as well as the sect they belonged to were displayed on top. Amongst these thirty-two names, the twelve disciples from the Four Major Sects were all present without any exceptions.

But in the history of this Ranking Tournament, this was a sight that was most common. If even one were to be missing from there, it would instead be abnormal. The great disparity

between the Four Major Sects and the other sects, could be glimpsed at from this. And so, there was another name for this last Round of Thirty Two, called the “Four Major Sect’s Showdown Battle”, which by name, wasn’t exaggerated in the least.

“I had never thought even in my dreams, that there would be a day our Blue Wind Imperial Family’s name would actually appear on it.” Looking at that enormous profound stone in the arena, Qin Wushang’s complexion actually carried a deep devoutness within. He was

excited to the point of being unable to sleep at all last night, and to also come here so early in the morning. His feeling of excitement could not be suppressed no matter what.

Every single name on the profound stone was more breathtaking than the last, and the name of the sects was also more astonishing than the last. Qin Wushang believed, that Yun Che's steps in this Ranking Tournament would be stopped here, because none of the last thirty one could be compared to the opponents he had encountered before. But even if

he were to lose on the first round, the gains from this Ranking Tournament would already far surpass the original expectations; there was already nothing he was unsatisfied about.

“Participating disciples of the Round of Thirty Two, please come to the stage and draw the lot for battle order!”

There was only one judge during the entire Round of Thirty Two, and that would be Ling Wugou. Following Ling



Wugou's loud cry, thirty-two people came up one by one and drew their own battle number.

“Junior Brother Yun, what number... Ah? It's actually... Number one!”

Cang Yue took the plate in Yun Che's hand. The number on there, was shockingly, a large “One”.

Which is to say, that in today's match, Yun Che would be the first to take the stage!

“If I’m first, then I’m first. Saves me from impatiently waiting anyway.” Yun Che said nonchalantly.

“Yun Che, it is already very very impressive of you to be able to enter the Round of Thirty Two.” Qin Wushang said: “However, in the Round of Thirty Two, every single opponent would be extraordinary. Especially the Four Major Sect’s disciples; you have never met them before, and simply do not know their dreadfulness at all. So, in today’s

matches, if you feel that you cannot win, it is not shameful at all to surrender early. You have already created a miracle that has shocked the entire audience, so you definitely should not try to flaunt yourself. Otherwise, it would be bad if you, by any chance, receive malicious injuries from the opponent. It is already enough for you to reach here in this year's ranking tournament. The next ranking tournament, would be your true stage."

Yun Che nodded: "Palace Chief Qin, be at ease. I will definitely advance when I need to, and

when I ought to retreat, I won't  
brainlessly overexert myself  
either."

"That's good then." Qin  
Wushang nodded while smiling.

Gripping his own number plate  
while looking toward the  
gigantic central Sword Discourse  
Arena in front of him under  
rows after rows of gazes with  
variant intentions, Yun Che  
truly felt that this current round  
in the ranking tournament, was  
not at all the finish line that Qin  
Wushang had expressed...

Instead, it was the true beginning!!

---

Author note: 【That's right, the Ranking Tournament has just begun. The earlier group stages was all for(filling)-mali(up)-ty(words), the true match only starts now. Speaking of which, in the last last book from this Mars, Pig Feet and Hua Qimeng fought for an entire ten-odd chapters on the final match... I was thinking, if I did ten-odd

chapters for every single match  
ahead here, Mn... I believe that  
all of you definitely would not  
beat me to death!! 】

# Chapter 215 – Fighting Xiao Nan

---

After all thirty-two remaining people selected their numbers, their battle order appeared on the Profound Stone.

Once the order was released, it instantly caused a large debate amongst the audience.

The thirty-two contestants were split into two groups of sixteen. Every match, one contestant would be eliminated.

The two victors of the groups would eventually face off in the finals to decide who will be the champion.

However, the two groups that the participating disciples had been separated into were far too different in terms of their strength!

The finale of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament would usually turn into a ranking tournament for the Four Major Sects. It was always the case for the past hundred years, and



would undoubtedly be the same this time as well. When comparing the strength of the group, simply comparing the quantity and quality of disciples from the Four Major Sects would be sufficient.

In the second group, there were seven disciples from the Four Major Sects. They were: Heavenly Sword Villa's Young Villa Master, the one who everyone was certain would be victorious, Ling Yun. Frozen Cloud Asgard's Shui Wushuang, Wu Xuexin, Xia Qingyue were all in the same group. The last three were Xiao Sect's Xiao

Kuanglei, Xiao Zhen and  
Burning Heaven Clan's Fen Jin!!

The main disciples in the Four  
Major Sects, were all gathered in  
the second group!

Needless to mention Ling Yun,  
who was in the third level of the  
Earth Profound Realm and  
looked down upon the whole  
crowd. Shui Wushuang, Wu  
Xuexin, Fen Jin, Xiao Kuanglei,  
and Xiao Zhen were all at the  
ninth level of the Spirit  
Profound Realm. All their  
profound strengths lost to Ling

Yun and they all had a chance to obtain second. The lowest, Xia Qingyue, was also in the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm.

Looking at the first group, there were five contestants from the four main sects. However, all of them were either not their main force and were all their second or third tier. The contestants were Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Feiyu and Ling Jie, Xiao Sect's Xiao Nan, and Burning Heaven Clan's Fen Juebi and Fen Yuange.

Among them, only Ling Feiyu was in the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, the others: Fen Juebi was in the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Ling Jie being the youngest, was only in the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Xiao Nan and Fen Yuange were also young and had only came for experience; respectively, they were only in the sixth and seventh level of the Spirit Profound Realm.

The difference in the two groups was really overwhelmingly huge!

“The difference in strength between the two groups can’t be this huge? This is the first time a Ranking Tournament has such an overwhelming difference in strength between the two groups, right?”

“Such an overwhelming difference has never happened before. However, this was all based on the number randomly ‘selected’ by each contestant. We can’t do anything even if such a situation happens. We can only say that those who were split into the first group were very

lucky. Any disciple from one of the main sects in the second group could trash the entire the first group.”

“No matter what happens, the victor would no doubt be Ling Yun.”

“That’s great, the group Junior Brother Yun is in has very little top class opponents.” Cang Yue said happily as she saw the battle order.

Qin Wushang also smiled and

nodded: “Not very little, there are practically none. It looks like Lady Luck has been shining down on us all this time. If our good luck continues, Yun Che’s progress might not stop at the top thirty-two. He might even progress to the top sixteen! If that really happens, it would really be a miracle amongst miracles.”

“The first match is brother-in-law’s, his opponent... Ahhh, it’s Xiao Sect’s Xiao Nan! Wahh, it’s the Xiao Sect... Ugh, however, he is only in the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Brother-in-law has already been

numerous opponents at that level. He can definitely win this match for sure!” Xia Yuanba said full of anticipation.

“No,” Qin Wushang was not as optimistic: “Although at the same level, a disciple of the Four Major Sect’s strength far exceeds one of another sect. Despite being only the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, it wouldn’t be weird if he could beat an eighth level Spirit Profound Practitioner from another sect. That is also why he was able to enter the top thirty-two with this kind of profound strength... Yun Che, don’t be



careless. If it becomes too tough, remember what I said before.”

“Yes.” Yun Che replied.

On the Sword Discourse Arena, the profound stone that has displayed the battle order was kept by Ling Wugou and said loudly: “The battle order of the thirty-two contestants has been decided and the first match shall begin soon. The contestants are: Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che and Xiao Sect’s Xiao Nan. Please prepare yourself and come onto the arena within

sixty breaths of time!”

Yun Che did not hesitate at all. He stood up and walked towards the Sword Discourse Arena immediately. Behind him came the nervous cheers of Cang Yue and Xia Yuanba... After all, who he was going to face was a disciple of the Four Major Sects!

“Nan’er, go, this opponent should be an easy victory for you. However, it is only ‘should be’ and not ‘for sure’. Remember what Grandfather always says, no matter who the opponent is,

never underestimate him.” Xiao Wuji reminded Xiao Nan.

“Yes, Grandfather.” Looking at Yun Che who was already on stage, Xiao Nan also stood up, breathed in slightly and lifted himself high, jumping across several tens of meters before landing gently on the Sword Discourse Arena, standing face to face with Yun Che.

“Yun Che... This name, why do I have the feeling that I have heard it before.” Seeing the two on stage, Xiao Wuji knitted his

brows and spoke to himself.

“Xiao Nan’s first opponent is actually a dark horse that only climbed so far due to good luck. Heh, what luck. If he loses this, it would put shame upon the family.” Xiao Kuanglei muttered under his breath at the side.

On stage, Xiao Nan had already taken out his weapon. it was a jade sword that gave off a cool glow. The jade sword was called Wind Spirit Sword and it was a Earth Profound Weapon. With sword in hand, he signalled

towards Yun Che: “Xiao Sect Sword Sect’s disciple Xiao Nan, please guide me!”

Because of Xiao Kuangyun, Yun Che already had a very bad impression of Xiao Sect. However, Xiao Nan was obviously completely different from Xiao Kuangyun. He looked determined and was very courteous. Even though he faced an “extremely weak” opponent, he still viewed him with caution and did not appear to underestimate him by any means. Yun Che nodded and took out his Overlord’s Colossal Sword: “Blue Wind Profound

Palace's disciple Yun Che... Please guide me... Elder Ling, no need to wait sixty breaths, we can start immediately."

"Good!" Ling Wugou nodded: "Round of 32, 1st Match —— Begin!"

Once Ling Wugou finished speaking, the originally noisy arena suddenly became silent as everyone focused on the Sword Discourse Arena. However, they were not looking at Xiao Sect's Xiao Nan but instead, at Yun Che. The difference in profound

strength between the two parties in this matchup were rather exceptional but no one jeered, nor did anyone look down upon Yun Che. No one could say for certain that he would definitely lose. Every time someone said that during one of Yun Che's matches, Yun Che would leave them embarrassed until their ears were red and amazed at the end.

Now, even more people wanted to know whether Yun Che, who was able to breakthrough to the top thirty-two with only a profound strength at the True Profound Realm, was able to

create another miracle and beat this disciple from the Xiao Sect.

Hoping to see a dramatic finale, in certain aspects, was a part of human nature.

On the Sword Discourse Arena, after Ling Wugou finished speaking, a fierce storm was released from Xiao Nan and the Wind Spirit Sword's bodies. The storm surrounded his body and revolved around him. Although the storm was not strong, it was extremely sharp. It was as though there were numerous



swords dancing around him. Even those seated far away from the center of the Sword Discourse Arena could feel an unexplainable form of scary sharpness in the air.

Despite the audience's reactions, Yun Che however, was unfazed when he looked at Xiao Nan. Neither he nor his sword moved and it did not seem as if he had any intention to attack first.

“Receive my attack... Extreme Wind Slash!!”

The sword in Xiao Nan's hands pointed forward, and instantly, all the storm that had been surrounding him turned into the silhouette of several swords, causing wind, so sharp that it even frightened the audience, to blow towards Yun Che. Wherever the wind went, it tore apart the sturdy Sword Discourse Arena into pieces.

The might of the sword caused everyone in the arena to be cry out in surprise.

“Uwaahh... Such, such scary swordsmanship!” Xia Yuanba said in surprise, his face full of fear. Even an Elementary Profound Realm practitioner like him could clearly see the might of that sword.

“One of the advantages of the Four Major Sects is that their profound arts and techniques are very powerful! With one slash, an opponent of the same level who does not belong to one of the Four Major Sects would not be able to receive the attack!” Qin Wushang said in a dignified manner.

“Quick, dodge!” Cang Yue shouted in a nervous manner.

The storm and the sword silhouettes attacked simultaneously but Yun Che still remained still as though he had already been scared silly. Only when the storm and the sword silhouettes approached, blew up his hair and shirt violently, did he finally move... One second ago, he seemed as immovable as a mountain. One second later, he suddenly seemed like a volcano that had just exploded.

All fifty four profound entrances opened and his berserk profound strength loudly exploded in an instant. The Overlord's Colossal Sword in his hand welcomed the storm of sword silhouettes with a sweep. Bringing along a huge maelstrom of power, it heavily clashed onto the storm of sword silhouettes.

BANGBANGBANGBANG...

The violent clash was so loud that it made one wish to be deaf.

One swing from the heavy sword seemed like it had released a malevolent dragon. With its incomparably strong body and claws, it attacked the storm of sword silhouettes. As it collided, the storm of sword silhouettes released by Xiao Nan were shattered layer by layer, and eventually disappeared completely... However, the heavy sword's power did not disperse continued onwards, bringing along raging winds which struck Xiao Nan's body, causing him to almost fall back due to the suffocating attack.

Wh... WHAT!?

Xiao Nan's two hands and soul trembled at the same time as his face revealed a strong sense of disbelief.

When facing Yun Che, he had not underestimated him. Although the strike just now was not his finishing move, it was already one of his strongest sword skills. When he executed the skill, he did not believe that Yun Che could face it head on. He thought that he could only avoid with all his might. With that belief, he clutched his sword's hilt firmly and stared at

Yun Che, waiting to chase after him, lightning quick, once he tried to avoid the strike. After catching him unprepared, he would then attack him relentlessly in order to gain an advantage and finish him off quickly.

Never did he expect that Yun Che did not avoid the strike, but take it head on... And with only a single swing, he completely took down his attack!

“He actually... received it!”



“Is this Yun Che really only in the True Profound Realm? This swing of Xiao Nan, even if it was me, I cannot take it head on!”

The surrounding people were all nearly numb with shock. Yun Che seemed like a monster to them. Time and time again, he displayed the impossible in front of their eyes. Especially the members of the Xiao Sect who knew that strike. Their faces all turned pale.

Yun Che stepped forward, called upon all the profound

strength within him, and swept the heavy sword forward. After a split second, an extremely frightening storm brew atop the Sword Discourse Arena. Within the storm, Xiao Nan could neither breathe, nor could he even open his eyes. The sword that he had originally swept out was quickly withdrawn... Because all of his instincts told him that Yun Che's strike possessed the ability to crush mountains and crack the earth. If he were to take the attack head on, he might be severely injured or worse, lose his life.

Before he could comprehend

how a True Profound Realm profound practitioner was able to execute such a scary attack, he gathered his profound strength onto his feet and jumped several tens of meters into the air to avoid the storm. He stopped at the highest point in midair, and suddenly, rounds and rounds of ripple-like water surrounded him. Behind him, a giant green colored eagle silhouette appeared and proudly spread its wings to fly.

Xiao Nan flew down. As he was flying, his whole body merged with the silhouette of the giant green eagle, and he seemed like

descending mighty eagle. He pointed his sword forward. While bringing along an incomparably sharp aura, he thrusted towards Yun Che's chest. The sword was extremely sharp, and the air seemed to have been split apart like waves.

The sword that came from above was extremely sharp, and from several tens of meters away, Yun Che felt the scary sensation of his chest had been pierced. However, the him who wielded a heavy sword, definitely would not back down against a normal sword. He remained unfazed and swung

both his arms towards the sword above him.

The might of the heavy sword could move mountains and turn oceans. Wherever the heavy sword pointed, slight distortions appeared within the empty air. Yun Che's first strike was instantly avoided by Xiao Nan. But this time, he was in midair. Even if he wanted to avoid it, it was not possible. But when facing Yun Che's berserk strike head on, he did not look the least bit nervous as a cold determined radiance flashed past his eyes.

The giant eagle silhouette at his rear suddenly spread its wings as a light green glow emitted from the Wind Spirit Sword.

RIIIIIIP!!

The storm brought about by Yun Che was cut apart by Xiao Nan under a distinct ripping sound. It seemed as if a stream had been directly split into two and scattered to both sides.

The Wind Spirit Sword that had cut the storm brought along a sharp aura that continued onwards, piercing straight towards Yun Che's left shoulder.

“Ah!!!” Cang Yue cried out in alarm, and her complexion instantly paled.

“What? What... What kind of sword technique is that? He... He cut apart his profound energy!” Qin Wushang's expression paled as well.

“Although there were some scares, it still went according to plan. Victory has already been decided.” Looking at the sword that pierced Yun Che, Xiao Sect’s Xiao Kuangyu faintly laughed.



# Chapter 216 – Complete Victory

---

With a slash of his sword, he sliced apart Yun Che's force blast. Then, as he stabbed towards Yun Che's shoulder, the corner of Xiao Nan's lips curved slightly upwards... The sharpness of this sword was enough to penetrate through fine steel. He was ten thousand percent sure that the moment this blow landed, Yun Che's shoulder would be easily skewered.

He felt his Wind Spirit Sword

slice apart the force produced by Yun Che, slice apart the profound energy protecting his body and his clothes, and then, he stabbed onto his body. The curve of his lips slowly grew larger, but in an instant later, his expression stiffened completely.

As his Wind Spirit Sword stabbed into his flesh, blood scattered from Yun Che's left shoulder. However, the Wind Spirit Sword was also fixed in that position, and was no longer able to pierce half an inch deeper, as though that half-a-finger width of flesh, was basically an indestructible ten

thousand year old profound  
iron!

Wha... What!? Xiao Nan was  
utterly shocked, as if he was  
unable to believe his own  
perception.

And Yun Che's explosive  
counter-attack also came at this  
moment. As his heavy sword  
moved, the surrounding air  
within the space of thirty meters  
was stirred by the strong  
horizontal swing. The violent  
airflow caused the hairs on Xiao  
Nan's entire body to stand on

end. Without even thinking, he pulled his sword out with his quickest speed, and leapt back with all his strength, retreating a distance of about thirty meters. Then, he heavily panted, as he looked at Yun Che's shoulder with an expression filled with shock.

On Yun Che's left shoulder, a small stain of blood was slowly spreading on his clothes, but this spread had stopped just a few seconds later. From the bloodstain, his injury did not look serious, and the wound had already stopped bleeding completely... The corner of Xiao

Nan's eyes constantly twitched. He had almost put in his all in that one attack, and an Earth Profound Weapon had even been used to coordinate with that strike. The incomparably sharp Wind Spirit Sword, when used to pierce head-on, even a giant rock, or steel, would be easily penetrated like a piece of tofu. However, this same sword did not penetrate through his body, and even his bone was left untouched... His attack had only caused a simple flesh wound.

It was not just him; even the entire audience, including the Ling Wugou who had seen the

entire exchange the most clearly, had an expression filled with disbelief. All of them had personally witnessed Xiao Nan's full-powered strike piercing onto Yun Che's body. As for the sharpness of the sword, even if the target were to protect himself with a profound energy defense at the peak of the Spirit Profound Realm, there was still a possibility of being penetrated through. But, Yun Che, who simply had only had the strength at the True Profound Realm, had evidently received a mere flesh wound.

“What's going on?” The smile

on Xiao Kuangyun's face fell, and asked with a frown.

“... It's definitely because Yun Che's wearing some sort of armor! That's the only explanation possible!” Xiao Kuanglei said.

Naturally, Yun Che was not wearing any sort of armor on his body, and had only a single thin layer of clothes. Although his protective profound energy defense was only at the True Profound Realm, his body had the protection of the second

stage of the Great Way of the Buddha, and earlier, he had even refined the Dragon God's blood within his body —— That was not just blood from any ordinary dragon, but the blood of an actual Dragon God! Currently, Yun Che possessed a part of a dragon's bloodline power and physical body strength, and was already completely not inferior to an actual True Dragon... And, could an Earth Profound sword wielded with the profound energy at the Spirit Profound Realm, be able to penetrate through the body of a True Dragon?



Of course not!

Forget about Yun Che using his True Profound Realm's profound energy to protect his body, even if he did not have that layer of profound energy, and was simply standing defenseless while allowing Xiao Nan to attack him, Xiao Nan should throw away the thought of using his Wind Spirit Sword to penetrate Yun Che's body.

“Not a bad sword.” Yun Che glanced at the wound on his left shoulder with a calm

expression, and said with a praising tone. This strike, had given him a sound warning as well. One main reasons why the Four Major Sects were large and strong, was because of the strong profound arts in their sects. Although this Xiao Nan before him was considered to be at the bottom in terms of strength among the participating disciples from the Four Major Sects, he should definitely not be careless. If not for the tyrannical defenses his body had, if it was someone else, that person would have already suffered really terribly from that strike.

With nothing more to say, Yun Che stepped forward, and slashed his sword.

Following the trails of the slashing heavy sword, as though the airwaves produced were given actual forms, the space slightly distorted as the airwaves charged towards Xiao Nan. Xiao Nan quickly regained his senses from the shock earlier, stared head-on at the approaching waves, and slashed out his Wind Spirit Sword consecutively, producing a heavy storm of sword silhouettes to quickly scatter the incoming blasts of air... But, Xiao Nan had to slash

a total of more than twenty times to completely disperse the force created by one of Yun Che's simple slashes. This truth, once again tightened Xiao Nan's heart.

In the earlier two rounds of small group matches, he had once paid attention to Yun Che's matches, and had simply given a snort of contempt to each and every one of those sect disciples who was easily defeated by Yun Che.

And now, only after personally

exchanging blows with him, did he clearly understand why those people would always be defeated so quickly... Because he had now understood that a terrifying might was hidden in every single one of Yun Che's simple sword strikes.

He had only exchanged a few blows with Yun Che, but the consecutive shocks he had received was already causing the mental barrier in his mind to soon collapse. He once again looked at Yun Che and the gigantic pitch-black sword in his hands as a terrifying seed of “victory was basically

impossible” sort of thinking quickly grew in his heart.

“Hawk of the Storm!!”

Xiao Nan took a deep breath, and sword energy began to surge towards the top of the Wind Spirit Sword; every single thread of that energy like a sharp steel needle capable of piercing deep into one’s bones. He gave a long howl, leapt high in the air, and thrust towards Yun Che’s head with his sword. Yun Che, however, did not even attempt to dodge or avoid the attack, and

simply took the incoming Wind Spirit Sword head-on with a swing of his sword...

Boom!

The airwave brought about the heavy sword actually brought along a dull explosive sound. Even though Xiao Nan had already personally experienced that terror of Yun Che's airwaves, he was still greatly frightened. A green light flashed on his body, and with a quick spin of his body, he shifted his direction of attack to Yun Che's

feet. However, like a fluidless shadow, Yun Che's heavy sword quickly slashed down, forcing Xiao Nan to have no other choice but to retreat with full force, and barely escape the danger.

Xiao Nan was very definite that if he had been swept by the windstorm caused by his opponent's heavy sword, getting away with heavy injuries would have been the least that could've happened!

From the heavy sword's terrifying strike, Xiao Nan was



able to imagine how heavy that heavy sword was. And, when wielding such a big sword, the movements of the user would be correspondingly slow, and both openings and energy consumption would be especially large. So then, the best tactic against it would naturally be using speed to pin the opponent down, and find an opening to undergo a sure-kill attack.

Xiao Nan's profound energy attributes were that of "Wind" and "Lightning", and among the two, he trained in "Wind" the most. "Heavenly Eagle Art" was

a type of mysterious profound art capable of allowing the user to gain a large boost in his physical speed. Initially, Xiao Nan had used a speeding-increasing profound movement skill, and a light and swift sword technique to deal with Yun Che. However, he quickly realized that even when Yun Che was wielding such a heavy sword, his speed was not even the least inferior than his, even when he had activated his profound movement skill... This was still fine, but even the speed of his sword-wielding was completely above his. Even though he was incapable of producing several numbers of slashes in an instant, from idling to completely

releasing his sword and from releasing to pulling his sword back, all of these happened in the shortest moment, causing people to feel that there was basically not the slightest hint of heaviness in the sword.

Xiao Nan attacked dozens of times, and all of them were forced back by one of Yun Che's casual swings. Not only were the attacks ineffective, Xiao Nan had to tiredly retreat time and time again, so as to prevent any dangers from falling upon him.

Although the might of heavy swords was enormous, there should still be a large weakness as well, right!? Why did this person not have a single opening even when he is using such a heavy sword... Xiao Nan's forehead was drenched with sweat. Then, he secretly smiled with gritted teeth.

“Heavenly Eagle Limitless Strike!”

Xiao Nan leapt high in the air, the silhouette of an eagle appeared behind him, and with

an aerial strike, he pierced towards Yun Che's chest... This was the strike he used earlier to scatter Yun Che's force blast. In his heart, he knew very clearly, the reason why he managed to deal a blow to Yun Che the first time was due to the element of surprise, and the second time would hardly be effective as the first. However, the longer he faced Yun Che, the more he felt a deep sense of powerlessness in his heart. What he could rely on, was only this strike.

RIIIP~~~~~

The Wind Spirit Sword sliced apart air and sliced apart space, bringing about an ear-piercing screech as it fell. This was a strike capable of even slicing apart a blast of energy. Since he had experienced it previously, Yun Che should dodge it immediately, and counter-attack from the side. However, Yun Che still stood at his original position without any intentions of moving away. He fiercely lifted up the Overlord's Colossal Sword, and said indifferently. "Why don't you try slicing apart this blow of mine!!"

In this strike, Yun Che used

sixty percent of his strength. If we were to call that earlier strike a fierce gale, then, this strike was an absolute hurricane. With Xiao Nan's strength, he was capable of cutting through the fierce gale. However, when faced with a hurricane, being shredded into pieces was the only possible conclusion.

The Wind Spirit Sword's sword energy and force were completely dissipated cleanly in an instant, and a trembling buzzing sound was produced by the sword's blade. Xiao Nan's expression paled. His down-swooping body suddenly spun

and turned as he wildly poured out all of the profound energy in his body, but he was still unable to completely defend himself against the force brought about by Yun Che's strike. His profound defenses weakened bit by bit, and in the end, they finally collapsed completely. The force of energy that had yet to be dissipated, blasted onto his body, and caused his entire body to violently tremble.

Xiao Nan landed onto the ground thirty meters away. His face was entirely pale, and a mouthful of blood was discharged outwards as it slowly



slid down the corners of his lips.

At that moment, the entire arena was in complete silence, and all six people from the Xiao Sect stood up with horrified faces.

Yun Che did not take the opportunity to deal another blow, and simply stood at his original position... And at this moment, everyone was shocked to realize that, during this entire match, his two feet had been at the same position the entire time, and had not moved a

single bit!!

Xiao Nan's expression was frightening as he heavily panted. However, on the other side, Yun Che's breathing was steady, and his calm expression was unbroken. He completely did not look fatigued at all. The corner of Xiao Nan's lips moved, and in the end, his hand still drooped down onto the ground...

“You're much stronger than I had imagined... I admit defeat.”  
Xiao Nan said dejectedly.

“You’re a little stronger than I had imagined as well.” Yun Che smiled slightly, glancing at the wound on his left shoulder.

Hearing Yun Che’s words, Xiao Nan actually had a faint feeling of satisfaction in his heart, and even the dejectedness from his tragic loss had lightened quite a bit. He raised his head, and gave Yun Che a smile.

“Xiao Nan surrenders. Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins... He will enter the elimination round’s Round of 16

tomorrow!”

When this result came out, the Sword Discourse Arena which was silent for a period of time, was once again replaced by hustle and bustle. Every single pair of eyes watched Yun Che, who was safely walking down the stage, until their eyes became vertical... That's right! This person, who had the weakest profound strength out of all the participating disciples there, had once again easily defeated a Xiao Sect disciple, and charged into the top sixteen!

“Little brother Nan, don’t be dejected. If he had not worn a high-grade armor, you would have won with your second strike. Unfortunately, I belong to Group Two, otherwise, I might have been able to exact vengeance for you.” Xiao Kuanglei patted on Xiao Nan’s shoulders, and consoled him.

“No.” Xiao Nan shook his head. “He was not wearing any sort of armor at all. He had basically blocked that strike completely with his own body. His body, was as though it was made of steel!”

“What!?” Xiao Kuanglei frowned. He made eye contact with Xiao Kuangyu, and both of them revealed shocked expressions.

“Junior Brother Yun, are you alright? Is your injury heavy?” The moment Yun Che came down, Cang Yue went over to greet him with an expression filled with worry and anxiousness. In her hands, she was holding onto a large amount of medicine and Profound Recovery Pellets, which she had prepared long beforehand.

“I’m fine.” Yun Che laughed without a care. “It’s just a flesh wound, and it has already stopped bleeding. It doesn’t need to be treated with any medicine, it will be fully recovered before the sun sets.”

These words were definitely not Yun Che’s exaggeration. Since he had reached the second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha, a light wound like this would recover to a sufficient degree in just a few minutes.

However, Cang Yue would naturally not be relieved from her worry so easily. In the end, Yun Che was still dragged by her to a side. She carefully applied some medicine on his wound and wrapped a roll of bandage around it.

On the Sword Discourse Arena, the second match had already begun.

The two competitors were respectively, Ling Jie from the Heavenly Sword Villa and Mu Xiongyi from the Heavenly



Spear Thunderfire Fortress. The former was at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, while the latter was at the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Based on profound levels alone, the latter was the strongest disciple outside of the Four Major Sects!

## Chapter 217 – Bullying To An Intolerable Extent

---

Outside of the Four Major Sects, if there was a need to choose a fifth sect, then the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, whose name shook throughout the North, had the most right among the various sects. The Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress had two supreme techniques —— one was the “Heavenly Spear” and the other was the “Thunderfire”. This time, the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress had also lived up to its reputation with two disciples in the final thirty-

two rankings, and both disciples were also at the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Their average strength was far greater than the general level of the ranking tournament and out of all the competing sects, it was only weaker than the Four Major Sects.

His first opponent in the Round of 32 was a member of the Four Major Sects, so there was originally a tight feeling in Mu Xiongyi's heart. However, looking at Ling Jie, who was only sixteen and only at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, he let out a large sigh of

relief and laughed in a pleased way: “Hehe, this Ling Jie is clearly here to gain experience for the next ranking tournament. This match is mine to win.”

“It’s better to be cautious. The strength of Heavenly Sword Villa’s disciples cannot be judged simply by their level of profound strength.” Mu Xiongyan, who had also entered the top thirty-two ranks, said in a low voice.

“Haha! Relax big brother. If I can’t even defeat a child at the

sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, I may as well kill myself with a stab of the spear... I'm going now!"

Mu Xiongyi jumped up onto the Sword Discourse Arena with a loud shout. With a swing of his stout right arm, a bronze longspear that was nine foot long came dancing out and pointed at Ling Jie: "Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress of the North's Mu Xiongyi. Please guide me!"

"Good speech, good speech."

Ling Jie did not display any of the nervousness one might have when facing a strong opponent, but rather replied with a face full of laughter. Then, he slowly withdrew his weapon —— Space Splitting Sword. This sword was a high-grade Earth Profound Weapon that he just obtained from the Sword Management Terrace a month ago. Even though it could not compare to the incomparably rare Sky Profound Sword, among Earth Profound Weapons, it was definitely one of the best of weapons with a might that inspired awe.

“Elder Ling, we can start now.”  
Ling Jie said.

“Good!” Ling Wugou nodded :  
“Heavenly Sword Villa’s disciple  
Ling Jie —— versus ——  
Heavenly Spear Thunderfire  
Fortress’ Mu Xiongyi, match  
start!”

Mu Xiongyi attacked first.  
Without any restraint in his  
movements, a spear shot out in a  
straightforward manner. With a  
sharp swish sound in the air, the  
spear point pressed towards  
Ling Jie’s throat like a suddenly

striking snake. Ling Jie's eyes narrowed. The Space Splitting Sword directly struck out towards the long spear in a piercing movement. The bursts of clattering and banging sounds of the profound energy collisions reverberated through the air. The shadow of the sword and the tip of the spear struck together tens of times within a few breaths as a sound like thunder jolted the ears of those present.

The sword was like a fierce tiger. The spear was like a poisonous dragon. The struggle between dragon and tiger grew



ever more intense. There were a few hundred strikes in the blink of an eye, and in the deadlock, neither side could prevail over the other.

“This Ling Jie is really outstanding. To think that he can compete against an opponent whose profound strength is higher than his by two levels for so long without going into a disadvantageous position.” Cang Yue could not resist praising.

Yun Che’s gaze left the Sword

Discourse Arena and said in a calm manner: “Senior Sister, it’s actually the opposite of what you said. It should be said that Mu Xiongyi is very outstanding. He can actually face so many of Ling Jie’s sword strikes. However, the critical point is that Ling Jie is being lenient. Otherwise Mu Xiongyi would have lost long ago.”

“Ah?” Cang Yue blinked her beautiful eyes, as her entire face filled with surprise.

Yun Che had fought against

Ling Jie before. Even though it was only for the short extent of three sword strikes, it was enough for him to generally have a rough idea about Ling Jie's true strength. He slowly said: "Heavenly Sword Villa's sword is strong at "sword intent", not simply just the sword forms activated by profound strength. Right now, Ling Jie is only relying on sword forms and can fight on par with Mu Xiongyi who is two levels higher than him in profound strength... If Ling Jie unleashes his sword intent, Mu Xiongyi will inevitably lose very quickly."

Yun Che's words were quickly fulfilled. After the sword clashed with the spear a few hundred times, Ling Jie appeared to have lost his patience. The gaze in his eyes changed ever so slightly, and the sword shadows he struck became more fleeting. In the end, the sword shadows could not really be seen any more, and there was only a faint glimpse of the small afterimages that were neither here nor there.

If a third party saw this change, they would only feel surprised, but Mu Xiongyi felt as if his opponent had suddenly changed

into someone else. Everytime he struck his spear out with his full strength, it made a swishing sound. However, when it struck Ling Jie's sword, it no longer made a loud reverberating sound as before; it only made a soft "ding" sound and then the force he put into his spear disappeared with no hope of it ever returning. He could not guard against the way his force had just disappeared. The empty feeling in his thrust made him very uncomfortable. Even more shocking was the fact that his eyesight could no longer grasp the whereabouts of Ling Jie's sword shadows. Even the swish of the sword could no longer be heard, as if the sword in Ling

Jie's hands had mysteriously disappeared.

Mu Xiongyi did not panic and no longer paid any attention to Ling Jie's sword shadows. He released all his profound strength reserves. His spear force became even fiercer. As fast as a light beam, the nine foot long spear was like an angry flood dragon, flying and wriggling at the same time.

However, against his expectations, Ling Jie was not forced to retreat by his spear

force that had grown stronger by several folds. With a flick of his wrists, the Space Splitting Sword was like an agile snake that could twist and turn. It penetrated the fierce profound energy storm, piercing through several layers of spear shadows and directly pierced Mu Xiongyi.

Riiip... Riiip...

Mu Xiongyi's profound energy defense was easily torn apart. Accompanied by an extreme pain were two more wounds across the front of his chest

which were deep enough to see bone... and Mu Xiongyi was completely unable to comprehend when Ling Jie was close enough to attack his chest.

Mu Xiongyi's heart was greatly shocked. With a loud roar, he struck a blow strong enough to annihilate a thousand soldiers and forced Ling Jie to dodge far away. He jumped forward high in the air. Strength filled his right arm, and he fiercely tossed the spear. The long spear momentarily transformed into a comet that was as fast as lightning. It shot towards Ling Jie with a shockwave that



alarmed the audience.

“It... It’s the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress’ ultimate technique... Heaven Raising Spear!”

Separated by a distance of several tens of meters, the spectators could clearly feel the awesome power of this spear strike. Anyone hit by this spear strike, even if they were at the peak of the Spirit Profound Realm, would probably have to throw half their life away.

Ling Jie quickly retreated but did not fully evade. Under the gasps of countless people, he struck out against the incoming longspears with a single sword maneuver...

Ding!!

There was no loud clashing sound. When the Space Splitting Sword met the longspears, only the faintest of humming sounds could barely be heard.

“A good performance of the

Redirection Arts!” Ling Yuefeng nodded in praise as a rare content expression filled his face.

“Little Jie is not only far more talented than I was, his courage is also not bad. When I was at his age, I absolutely would not have dared to do that.” Ling Yun said while grinning.

A torrential amount of sword intent flooded out, firmly sucking in the longspear that was filled with explosive profound energy. Following

that, the Space Splitting Sword led the long spear in a huge semi circular arc in front of Ling Jie. This time the spear point of the Heaven Raising Spear technique reversed in direction and shot towards the dumbstruck Mu Xiongyi.

Bang!!!

Scattered stone chips and dust flying about the Sword Discourse Arena. The long spear was fiercely nailed below Mu Xiongyi's feet. The entire body of the spear burrowed into the

stage, causing a tear that was several feet in length.

Mu Xiongyi retreated two steps back and sat on the floor on his butt as cold sweat seeped from his forehead. If the previous spear's direction had just been aimed a bit more forward, then his body would have an additional hole.

“I... I admit defeat.” Mu Xiongyi no longer had the will to do battle. His chest heaved up and down as he trembled with fear.

“Hehe, you let me win.” Ling Jie withdrew his sword. He was very pleased with himself.

“Heavenly Sword Villa’s Ling Jie wins, and will enter tomorrow’s Round of 16!

This result was out of many people’s expectations, but even more people felt that it was only natural. Yun Che stroked his chin and said to himself in a low voice: “Likewise from the Four Major Sects and also of the same level of profound strength, but

yet their true strength has such a huge gap... well deserving of the Heavenly Sword Villa.”

The two people he was talking about were naturally Xiao Nan from the Xiao Sect and Ling Jie from the Heavenly Sword Villa. Both of them were at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm and yet the gap between their true strength was unnaturally large.

The Round of 32 continued to proceed. In one morning, the matches in Group One were

completed. In the afternoon, the matches Group Two began. If one does a direct comparison, the matches in Group Two was much more intense and exciting than the matches in Group One. This was because the overall strength of Group Two was much higher than the overall strength of Group One.

It was evening when the Round of 32 came to a complete close. The sixteen participants for the following day's elimination round had all been decided. Of the Four Major Sects, other than Xiao Nan, who had been defeated by Yun Che, the other



eleven disciples all entered into the top sixteen, fully occupying two thirds of the top sixteen.

The arrangements for the following day's Round of 16 was also displayed on the profound stone in the middle of the Sword Discourse Arena after the end of today's competition.

The opponent Yun Che would face the following day came from the same Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress in the North as the opponent Ling Jie had faced today —— Mu

Xiongyan.

“From today’s competition, you could see that Mu Xiongyan’s specialty is completely different from Mu Xiongyi. Mu Xiongyi specializes in the ‘Heavenly Spear’ while Mu Xiongyan specializes in ‘Thunderfire’. Thunderfire is much harder to cultivate than the Heavenly Spear but its power also far exceeds that of the Heavenly Spear. The ranking tournament allows the usage of any weapons, including firearms! Mu Xiongyan whose body carries the Thunderfire, hides tens of different firearms and bombs on

his person. His attacks come in innumerable succession, and even break apart defenses that are completely prepared... Tomorrow, you must be sure to be careful!”

In today's match, Yun Che had once again scored a huge victory, undoubtedly causing Qin Wushang to be over the moon with happiness. However, upon seeing that the next day's opponent was Mu Xiongyan, he could not help but be concerned... Compared to Mu Xiongyan, he would, on the contrary, prefer that the opponent was someone from the

Four Major Sects, because this Mu Xiongyan's attack methods was just too frightening. Just being slightly inattentive might lead to becoming a cripple. In the off chance that that happened, this star that shone so brightly for the Blue Wind Profound Palace would inevitably be dimmed.

“Rest assured Palace Chief Qin, I will not be injured so easily. Also,” His eyes flashed as he grinned: “Tomorrow, I will win as always. Just you watch!”

“Haha, good!” Qin Wushang laughed. Yun Che still had not finished the next match and he noticed that he had once again underestimated Yun Che. He now no longer thought that it was certain for Yun Che to stop at this step, but was instead full of hope and expectation. He wished to see how far he could go... Could he enter the top eight... Or maybe even break the Four Major Sect’s “monopoly” and obtain the shocking glory of entering the top four!

At the end of today’s competition, the four from the Blue Wind Profound Palace

returned to their courtyard. There were already three people awaiting them here. More accurately, they were waiting for Yun Che alone.

Of the three, one was a middle aged man with an imposing manner. The other two were youths who had appeared in today's competition venue. One was the Mu Xiongyi who had been defeated by Ling Jie. The other had defeated his opponent and entered the next day's Round of 16. He was Yun Che's match for the next day, Mu Xiongyan.

Having seen Yun Che, that middle aged man straightforwardly walked as quick as a comet in big steps and said to Yun Che: "I am Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress' current Fort Master Mu Tianbei. At the risk of being presumptuous, I have an important matter to discuss with the honorable Young Master Yun."

Mu Tianbei had a boorish appearance. There was a naturally deep arrogance about him. After all, in the stretches of

the frozen north, the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress was indubitably the dominant power. As its Fort Master, it could be said that he could even cover the sky with one hand there, and no one could disobey him. Within the boundaries of the entire Blue Wind Empire, the reputation of the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress was basically only second to that of the Four Major Sects.

He came up and directly asked Yun Che. As for Qin Wushang who was by his side and even Princess Cang Yue, he did not even give them a single glance.



He was the kind of arrogant person who believed himself to be beyond the laws and even beyond Heaven. A frown appeared on Qin Wushang's forehead but he did not say a thing. Yun Che moved forward and asked: "So it is the reputable Fort Master Mu. What does Fort Master Mu have to discuss with this Junior?"

"It is very simple," Mu Tianbei looked directly at Yun Che: "I have witnessed Young Master Yun's performance in the ranking tournament for a few days and my heart sighs in admiration. Regarding Young

Master Yun's natural talent and strength, even if it was among the Four Major Sects, there are few disciples who can match up. To remain with just a trifling Blue Wind Profound Palace is simply like burying a pearl. How about joining my Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress?"

As soon as these words came out, even if Qin Wushang had an even better self restraint, he would still be agitated to a great fury. It was one thing to undermine your foundations, but this Mu Tianbei went as far as to do this in his and Princess Cang Yue's presence. He did not

even disguise his contempt for the Blue Wind Profound Palace and did not even give any regard for the Blue Wind Profound Palace or the Imperial Family. It was simply bullying to an intolerable extent.

## Chapter 218 – A Quick And Decisive Battle

---

Even though Mu Tianbei was “inviting”, his tone of voice was filled with arrogance and coercion, with a great deal of implication that him inviting you to join the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress was because he was thinking better about you and you should gratefully accept with tears down your face. The disdain toward Blue Wind Profound Palace was more so extremely heavy. Yun Che felt the rage steaming up from Qin Wushang who was beside him, and replied

with a slight smile: "I'm grateful that Fort Master Mu thinks highly of me, but I believe that Fort Master Mu already knows, that I, Yun Che, am a disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace. I do not have the thought of leaving for the time being, so toward Fort Master Mu's gracious invitation, I can only refuse."

Mu Tianbei answered without any change in expression: "Young Master Yun, it is of course a good thing for you to have such persistence. But before you make the decision, you ought to think it through;

Blue Wind Profound Palace is all but a mere profound cultivating ground for the ordinary, and amongst the great profound practicing forces in the empire, it can't even be ranked as average. If not for the Imperial Family's prestige, they simply aren't even worthy to be called the bottom. When it comes to heritage, resources, and arts, the difference between my Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress and them is as great as difference between heaven and earth! Not to mention that it would be impossible for a bright pearl like you to improve much within the mere Blue Wind Profound Palace, in the end, you will perhaps also be reduced to mere

ordinary beings like them.”

“Mu Tianbei! Watch your words!” Qin Wushang spoke with a furious tone.

“But Palace Chief Qin, were any of my words mistaken?” Mu Tianbei finally bothered to take a glance at Qin Wushang, and spoke with a contemptuous laugh: “After all these years, had Blue Wind Profound Palace ever nurtured up a memorable top-rated disciple? As for Junior Yun, he ought to have come from elsewhere, no? Junior

Yun's performance is truly stunning, but too bad, he isn't something that your Blue Wind Profound Palace is qualified to keep! It would instead ruin and bury this genius who has the potential to rise into prominence in the future! But it would be different if he came to my Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress. We'll provide him with the best resources and the finest inherited arts. After three years, I, Mu Tianbei have enough confidence to make him reach top three ranks in Ranking Tournament, and make him famous in this world. Young Master Yun, a person ultimately lives his life for himself. Don't obstruct your own prospects and



future for the so-called 'personal loyalty'. Such an insignificant Blue Wind Profound Palace, isn't worthy of a place for you to stay in at all.

Qin Wushang's fury wildly grew. He wished that he could just ignore his manners and break into a cussing fight with Mu Tianbei. But at the same time, the inside of his heart was also wildly thumping, afraid that Yun Che would really be poached away by them like this. Because he could not deny that the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress' power far surpassed Blue Wind Profound Palace. To

put it more bluntly, the two's power and conditions are not in the same level at all. If Yun Che really went to the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, it was unknown just how many times better his profound cultivating conditions would be.

However, Cang Yue did not have this kind of worry at all. She slightly smiled and said: "Even though Yun Che is a disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, the original intent of the Blue Wind Profound Palace's establishment is to provide a cultivation ground for countless young

profound practitioners in the empire, and does not interfere with the disciple's freedom to leave or stay. Fort Master Mu's words are already clear enough; if Yun Che's heart is to be moved by this, and he is willing to leave the Blue Wind Profound Palace to join your Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, we definitely will not interfere."

"Hahahaha!" Mu Tianbei laughed loudly: "Good! As expected of the legendary Blue Moon Princess. Not only are you as noble as the rumors, you are also quite bold as well! Young Master Yun, you have heard that

clearly, right? It doesn't matter if they don't agree to it. As long as you are willing to join our Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, I wouldn't care what happens, even if the entire Blue Wind Profound Palace all storm in to stop it."

"Ha, there is absolutely no need for Fort Master Mu to think of it like that." Yun Che laughed faintly as his gaze scoured over him: "The Blue Wind Profound Palace only allows disciples to stay until the age of twenty so I'd have to leave sooner or later. But even if the Blue Wind Profound Palace expels me right now, I

still would never join your Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress. It is not because I think your Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress is weak in power. But with a Fort Master that doesn't even know what respect is and doesn't even understand human speech leading the sect, even if its strength was even more powerful, it would still be a merely third-rate place full of hot air. It is better for me to not go."

Once those words came out, the atmosphere instantly froze.

When Qin Wushang, who was originally filled with fury, heard that, instead of not being angry anymore and feeling carefree, he was rather frightened. Never would he have thought that Yun Che would dare to speak out in this sort of way when facing Mu Tianbei, who was renown throughout the country. As for Cang Yue, she was only slightly surprised because she understood Yun Che... who would never be afraid of offending anyone! Truthfully speaking, with how fast this satisfaction came, there was no need to silently endure this. He would never submit to

humiliation.

Mu Tianbei had thought that there was a chance Yun Che would reject him, but he never would have thought that this little junior would have the impertinence to speak such insolence, and even bring along such humiliation in his words. He creased both his brows as his complexion darkened: “Young Master Yun, what did you say earlier? It seems as if I did not hear that correctly...”

“I said, with a Fort Master that

doesn't even know what respect is and doesn't even understand human speech leading the sect, even if its strength was even more powerful, it would still be a merely third-rate place full of hot air. It is better for me to not go." Yun Che confronted Mu Tianbei's oppressive gaze with a face full of smiles as he took his sweet time to repeat his words once more: "I'm sure that this time, Fort Master Mu has heard me correctly?"

As if there was a lump of air in his chest that had just exploded, Mu Tianbei's fury surged to its peak as his facial muscles



convulsed. Even though Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress could not measure up to the Four Major Sects, there was still no one who would dare provoke them and most couldn't even wait to suck up to them. But now, a little junior had actually mocked him, the grand Fort Master, in front of him without restraint nor any changes in expression! He said in a low voice with a ferocious gaze: "Good... Very good..."

"The feeling is mutual." Yun Che was incomparably tranquil: "You look down on my Blue Wind Profound Palace, and I

also hold your Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress in contempt. This just happens to make us even. If Fort Master Mu has nothing else to discuss, you may go back now. The matter of me joining Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, you mustn't bring it up in the future. In my eyes, Blue Wind Profound Palace is ten million times better than Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress. Don't even mention you, the Fort Master, personally asking me, even if the entire sect kneeled in front of me, I would still never agree to your offer."

There was no trace of politeness in Yun Che's succinct few words as he returned the contempt and mockery Mu Tianbei had towards the Blue Wind Profound Palace back at him. When it comes to Yun Che's feelings towards the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he actually did not really have such strong feelings for it. Even if he was expelled, he still would not think much about it. It was not because of Blue Wind Profound Palace that he had fearlessly counterattacked, but rather, Cang Yue.

If this wasn't Heavenly Sword

Villa, a place where one could not willfully attack however they want, Mu Tianbei would definitely have immediately killed Yun Che. Too angry to smile, he firmly fixed his gaze at Yun Che: “What a good little arrogant junior. You truly have opened my eyes! I had originally taken pity on you because of your talent and was thinking of asking Yan’er to go easy on you tomorrow. But it looks like you do not care about your life at all!! When tomorrow comes, I’d like to see if you still have the strength to be arrogant in front of me... Let’s go!!”

Mu Tianbei snorted loudly before flipping his sleeve to turn and leave. Mu Xiongyi and Mu Xiongyan followed right behind him. Right when they were about to leave the courtyard, Mu Xiongyan turned around to glance at Yun Che, and revealed a sinister smile.

Yun Che's counter mockery naturally negated some of Qin Wushang's great pleasure. He was extremely moved by Yun Che but he was even more worried than before. He sighed softly: "Yun Che, you were too impulsive earlier. You can straightforwardly refuse him,

but there was absolutely no need for you to offend him. Since this happened, tomorrow's match, sigh..."

"Rest assured Palace Chief Qin," Yun Che indifferently laughed: "In this ranking tournament, I only have one true opponent. There is no way that I would lose before meeting this true opponent. As for tomorrow's Mu Xiongyan, forget about him endangering me, he doesn't even have the qualifications to make me use my true strength."

---

After night had passed, a new day had begun. New matches were also imminent. It was early morning, but the entire Sword Discourse Arena was already jammed packed with people waiting for the Round of 16 to begin. As of now, this Blue Wind Ranking Tournament's match progression still conformed with the norm. If one must speak of anything unusual that had happened, it would be Yun Che, the super dark horse.

As for the ranking tournament's final results, that was already predestined inside everyone's heart long ago, during the first day's Profound Assessment Ceremony... First place would inevitably belong to Ling Yun. Second, third, and fourth place, would still be a fight between Frozen Cloud Asgard, the Xiao Sect, and Burning Heaven Clan. Any other sects simply did not have the qualifications to enter the rivalry.

The Round of 16 was destined to be much more exciting and tense than yesterday's Round of



Round of 16, first match: Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che ——— versus ——— Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress' Mu Xiongyan.

Before Mu Xiongyan went up on stage, Mu Tianbei ordered him in a low voice: "Cripple him Yan'er!" One night had passed but his fury still had not dissipated. After becoming Fort Master, Yun Che was the first person who dared to insult him out loud, and that made the

grudge he bore be bone-deep.

“Rest assured Father. I won’t even let him think about standing up ever again.” Mu Xiongyan grinned as he casually said that.

On the Sword Discourse Arena, Yun Che and Mu Xiongyan stood on opposing sides. Mu Xiongyan slightly narrowed his eyes and sneered with a light casual stance, as if the Yun Che in front of him was a mere prey that was already in the clutches of his hands. Yun Che however, was a

field of tranquility.

Last night, Qin Wushang had spoke to him in detail that the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress was divided into the Heavenly Spear Sect and the Thunderfire Sect. The Thunderfire Sect was capable of transforming profound energy into thunderfire, while simultaneously detonating it, bringing out an extremely tremendous lethality. At the same time, the Thunderfire Sect had also always passed on various different kinds of manufactured high-grade firearms and controlling

capabilities. More than a dozen different types of dangerous firearms were concealed on the bodies of every Thunderfire Sect disciple, even so much that there were probably more than several tens of incomparably dangerous types that one could not completely defend against.

In regards to transforming profound energy into thunderfire, Yun Che didn't really care about that at all. But he was incapable of estimating how powerful the firearms on Mu Xiongyan's body really were. His countless life and death experiences told him that if

anything was unable to be discerned, especially one of dangerous origins, the safest move he could make when facing Mu Xiongyan would be to completely strangle something that could become dangerous in the shortest time possible.

So to him, this match was destined to be a match in which the outcome would be decided within the blink of an eye.

“Match start!!”

As soon as Ling Wugou's voice fell, Mu Xiongyan raised both his hands and spread open all ten fingers. Ten purplish-red colored lightning balls instantly condensed atop his fingertips. The sound of its crackling discharge would make one shudder with fright. He looked at Yun Che with a ferocious smile: "Yun Che, prepare to howl a good one under my Thunderfire!! I'll let you remember the price of insulting my Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress for your entire lifetime!!"

Yun Che did not reply. While

tightly holding onto the heavy sword, his silhouette flashed. Like a strong blast of wind, he charged straight at Mu Xiongyan.

Mu Xiongyan moved both his hands. The ten Thunderfire balls of condensed profound energy flew at Yun Che with different trajectories. Yun Che nevertheless did not dodge or flee, and directly forged onwards. This action caused Mu Xiongyan to sneer:

“Then die... Explode!!”

BOOM BOOM BOOM...

Ten Thunderfire balls simultaneously exploded, and the devastating Thunderfire's radiance momentarily drowned out Yun Che's silhouette. Before Mu Xiongyan had even begun to laugh, he unexpectedly discovered that in the instant the Thunderfire balls exploded, Yun Che's silhouette had disappeared from that spot.

Afterimage!?



Right after that, he suddenly detected the flash of a shadow from the corner of his eye. Yun Che had suddenly appeared at his side, and was not even two steps away from him. If another person were to switch places with him, even if they could react quickly to guard against it, they would inevitably fumble. However, not only did Mu Xiongyan not panic, he instead, laughed grimly. He did not move at all as he suddenly instigated his profound energy. Three purplish-red colored arrows suddenly shot out from his shoulder, flying straight at Yun Che's face.

“Ah——”

The entire Sword Discourse Arena erupted in cries of alarm. Cang Yue was even more nervous as she shrieked. It was at such a close distance, and was also a head-on collision that was completely unexpected which shot out three Thunderfire arrows. Even if one was an immortal, it was not definite as to whether or not it was possible to dodge past it.

Whoosh!!

While still in the radiance of the Thunderfire balls, three Thunderfire arrows had already launched straight at Yun Che, and completely passed through his face...

It was another afterimage!!

Mu Xiongyan immediately opened his eyes wide. Before he had yet to recover from his astonishment, an incomparably hot heatwave attacked from overhead...

“Empyrean Dance of the  
Phoenix Wing!!!”

Boom!!

Like a fierce hawk, Yun Che swooped down from the sky and ruthlessly attacked his back with a scorching berserk strike. A huge lump of flame exploded within the loud noise, blotting out the sky while covering the earth...

Up until now, this was the first time Yun Che had executed Star God's Broken Shadow. The second stage's triple shadow chaining could be said to be as unfathomable as ghosts and gods. Likewise, it was also the first time he had used a Phoenix Flame technique... They were all used to finish the battle in the shortest time possible to avoid any possible unstable factors.

Inside the blaze that soared to the sky, Mu Xiongyan's protective profound energy was shattered as if thin ice. He spurted out a large mouthful of fresh blood and fiercely flew

outwards. Then, he knocked against the profound energy barrier and rebounded back to the floor. The fire on his body did not die out. Instead, it continued to rage and burn, burning his clothes, flesh, and the various tens of hidden firearms on his body...

BANG BANG BANG BOOM  
BOOM BOOM...

When the firearms caught on fire, they all crazily exploded on Mu Xiongyan's body, splitting his skin open and flesh apart,

making his mutilated flesh hard to discern. His wretched scream was like the mournful shrill of a banshee. Yun Che withdrew his heavy sword and looked at him with a pitiful gaze as he secretly muttered to himself: These firearms that were supposed to be used against me, you should just go enjoy them yourself!

# Chapter 219 – I’m An Expert In The Same Field

---

“Yan’er!!”

Mu Tianbei’s expression paled as he flew straight down towards the Sword Discourse Arena. Ling Wugou quickly stepped forward as well, extinguishing all the flames on Mu Xiongyan with his profound energy.

With the extinguishment of the flames, Mu Xiongyan’s tragic



state was displayed to everyone's eyes. His entire body was charred black, a large portion of his flesh erupted apart with blood splattering everywhere, his white bones were even revealed on his pair of shoulders and knees. A large half of his hair was burnt, and his face was even blurred from the blood and exposed flesh... 'Tragic' was not even a suitable word to describe his current state.

But since the firearms on Mu Xiongyan's body self-destructed because they were ignited by flames, and not by profound energy, the power of the

explosions were not really large. Although Mu Xiongyan suffered extremely serious external injuries, his internal injuries were actually quite light, at least, he would not be crippled. However, to fully recover his serious external injuries, it would probably take a very long time. And, there would be countless of ugly scars left around his entire body... including his face.

Mu Tianbei charged through the profound energy barrier, arriving in front of Mu Xiongyan's body. After inspecting his wounds, he

heaved a sigh of relief, and then, glared at Yun Che with extreme hatred. However, he did not utter a single word. Carrying Mu Xiongyan, whose entire body was dripping with fresh blood, he walked down the Sword Discourse Arena. Mu Xiongyan's current tragic state, was basically caused by the hidden firearms on his body. Under everyone's attentive eyes, if he were to cause Yun Che any trouble, he would simply be looked down upon by everyone on-site. And, Ling Wugou was on the stage as well, so he could not possibly do anything to Yun Che. Without a choice, his heart filled with silent rage and hatred as he went down the stage.

However, the killing intent directed at Yun Che, was as cold as the freezing abyss.

“Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins! He shall advance to tomorrow’s Quarterfinals!”

After Mu Xiongyan was brought down the stage by Mu Tianbei, Ling Wugou loudly announced the outcome of the match.

According to the progression of the previous Blue Wind Ranking

Tournaments, the further the progression of matches, the stronger the participating disciples were. Every battle would become even more intense, and the time taken for each match would naturally be longer as well. This was the first match of the Round of 16. Everyone wished to find out if this ultimate dark horse, Yun Che, could actually once again turn out victorious in this match, and dreamily enter the Quarterfinals. There were many people willing to believe that he would have the possibility of obtaining victory once again, however, they absolutely would not think that, he would actually win so quickly, and so easily.

This duel ended the moment it just began. It was so quick, they did not have the time to even react. Only after Ling Wugou announced the results, did they accept this unbelievable reality in the midst of their astonishment.

After defeating Xiao Nan, who was at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, the previous day, Yun Che had once again defeated Mu Xiongyan, who had strength of the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, in just a few seconds the

following day. Although Mu Xiongyan's tragic state was due to the explosion of the firearms on his body, people who were wise enough were able to clearly see that even without the explosion of the firearms, Mu Xiongyan had already been thoroughly defeated.

Those two strange and unpredictable afterimages, and that surprising and overwhelming fire blast attack... The strong experts on-site, in their astonishment, had once again realized that they had completely and utterly underestimated Yun Che. Back

then, when Yun Che was obtaining his consecutive level-skipping victories, he had actually been hiding his true abilities, and only until this match, did he reveal a tip of the iceberg, so as to obtain a quick and decisive victory.

“There’s actually such an individual within our Blue Wind Empire, who even I can’t clearly fathom the limits of. Every single time I thought he had already reached his limits, he would always once again astonish me.” Ling Yuefeng stood up with shock revealed on his calm face. “To actually be



able to unleash such power while just being at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, forget about the Blue Wind Empire, I have never heard of someone capable of doing this in the entire Profound Sky Continent. Just what kind of monster is he!? And just which supreme individual is his master? That master of his is actually capable of bringing up such a disciple!”

Ling Yuefeng’s exclamation, naturally gave Yun Che an extremely high evaluation. Ling Yun slightly frowned, and suddenly asked. “Father, the

movement skill he used earlier, just how did he accomplish it? When one uses profound energy to move his body, it will not only bring about obvious ripples of profound energy, there will be obvious differences between the afterimage and the actual body as well. However, he formed three images, yet, I did not even feel a hint of any profound energy ripple, and, these three images were completely identical, and it was basically impossible to distinguish them from the real one. I have never seen such a strange profound movement skill.”

Ling Yun's words caused Ling Yuefeng to momentarily enter a state of silence, and then, he shook his head. "Your father was not able to clearly distinguish them as well."

"What!?" Ling Yun's eyes turned towards Ling Yuefeng as a hint of shock flashed past his face.

"That guy actually won again, and he's actually capable of manipulating fire! Big bro, were you able to distinguish what kind of flames he was playing

with?” With a sway of his left hand, a ball of flames burned at top of Fen Juebi’s palm. Looking at the ball of flames, he slowly asked.

“Hmph, it’s nothing but the lowest level of profound flames. To actually play with fire in front of us, the Burning Heaven Clan, he’s basically underestimating us.” Fen Juecheng’s expression sank, saying with disdain.

Fen Juebi blew at his palm, directly extinguishing the ball of

flames. He then said with a beaming smile. “Big bro, there’s no need to be angry. In contrast, this is actually a very good thing.”

“A good thing?” Fen Juecheng frowned.

“Did big bro forget? After claiming his victory in this match, who do you think is his opponent tomorrow?” Fen Juebi’s voice was low, and his smile had begun to grow even more sinister.

Fen Juecheng's eyes turned, and then, his expression slightly changed. "It's you!"

"That's right, hahahaha." Fen Juebi began to laugh wildly. "I didn't expect that. I was not able to encounter him in the small group matches, but I'm actually going to encounter him in the elimination rounds. This world is simply too marvelous, it's basically a present bestowed by the heavens to me and big bro. Let me personally end this so-called genius. I shall forever leave my shadow in the heart of the person who dares to offend big bro."

The Round of 16 started off with a duel that exceeded everyone's expectations, and immediately after, the second match was also one that shocked the audience. Ling Jie easily defeated an opponent who was two levels above him with just a few strikes, similarly ending the match with lightning speed. There were merely four to five exchanges of blows during the entire process.

Third Match: Fen Juebi easily obtained victory.

Fourth Match: Ling Fengyu won.

Fifth Match: The opponent surrendered, Ling Yun instantly obtained victory.

Sixth Match: Shui Wushuang fought with Wu Xuexin of the same sect, after an exciting battle, Shui Wushuang won by a slight margin.

Seventh Match: Xia Qingyue



won.

Eighth Match: Xiao Kuanglei fought with Xiao Zhen of the same sect, and won by a slight margin.

Thus, the Round of 16 concluded, and the top eight in this Ranking Tournament were determined. The Quarterfinals' match arrangements tomorrow were also revealed on the center of the profound stone after the conclusion of the Round of 16.

First match: Blue Wind  
Imperial Family's Yun Che vs  
Burning Heaven Clan's Fen  
Juebi.

Second match: Heavenly Sword  
Villa's Ling Jie vs Heavenly  
Sword Villa's Ling Feiyu.

Third match: Heavenly Sword  
Villa's Ling Yun vs Frozen Cloud  
Asgard's Shui Wushuang.

Fourth match: Frozen Cloud  
Asgard's Xia Qingyue vs Xiao  
Sect's Xiao Kuanglei.

As the Ranking Tournament progressed, the eight people who were determined, represented the strongest powerhouses of the current young generation of the Blue Wind Empire. Among these eight, there were a total of seven disciples from the Four Major Sects. Yun Che, the only one who did not belong to the Four Major Sects, was evidently particularly dazzling.

The history of the finale of the Ranking Tournament turning into a power struggle between the Four Major Sects had once

again recurred, while Yun Che had undoubtedly become the most unnatural existence in this Ranking Tournament. The moment he entered the top thirty-two, his name was destined to be spread far and wide after the Ranking Tournament. And the Blue Wind Profound Palace was finally able to vent out their frustration because of him, allowing them to regain their honor, and drew more practitioners to join them.

“Entering the top eight also means that we have secured our qualifications to enter the Heaven Basin Secret Realm after

the Ranking Tournament. This simply feels like a dream.” Returning to the courtyard, Qin Wushang looked towards the sky, and sighed continuously. This was indeed an outcome which he had never even dreamed of.

“Heaven Basin Secret Realm? What’s that?” Xia Yuanba asked curiously.

“It is rumored to be an independent space opened up by a mysterious expert from the Ancient Era. Countless of

opportunities and treasures are hidden inside. It opens up once every three years, and people who enter the Secret Realm will always obtain great rewards.” Cang Yue said with great yearning. “Palace Chief Qin, after the Ranking Tournament concludes, you will be able to enter the Heaven Basin Secret Realm with Yun Che. That’s great.”

“That’s right.” Qin Wushang smiled. “Unfortunately, good fortune did not fall on Palace Chief Dongfang, he actually did not follow us here this time. He had always dreamed of being

able to investigate the legendary Heaven Basin Secret Realm at least once. But, speaking of which, even I didn't think that Yun Che would actually be able to get this far..."

He deeply looked at Yun Che, and said. "Challenging someone with a higher level of profound strength is not uncommon, but defeating someone with strength at the late stage Spirit Profound Realm with just the strength at the True Profound Realm, I have never heard of such a thing. I don't know what method you used to accomplish this; it might be your talent, or it

might be the opportunities you have gotten, but what I can confirm is that after this Ranking Tournament, your name will spread throughout the entire Blue Wind Empire, or even, the entire Profound Sky Continent. Are you prepared for this?”

“It can’t be that exaggerated, right?” Yun Che said casually.

“No! It will only be more exaggerated than what I described. If you obtained victory with oppressing



profound strength, then that will simply be some new news to know about. However, obtaining consecutive victories with just the strength at the True Profound Realm, this has completely broken history, and has even exceeded everyone's understanding. Currently, all of the sects, including the Four Major Sects, are already targeting you, investigating your personal history, looking for all the information regarding your life. After the tournament, there will definitely be many people inviting you to join their sects, like what Mu Tianbei did. I possess no authority to intervene in your decision to stay or leave, but, I hope that

you can remember this. No matter who you're facing, do not offend that person like how you did yesterday, because every person you offend, may bring about a danger to yourself that can explode at any time. Yesterday, you made it difficult for Mu Tianbei, and today, you even seriously injured his son, Mu Xiongyan, he will definitely not simply leave this matter at it is. Within this Heavenly Sword Villa, he does not possess the guts to act against you, but after the tournament, Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress might possess the qualifications to enter the Heaven Basin Secret Realm as well. When that time comes, I doubt they will not take

the opportunity to exact vengeance.”

“I completely understand what Palace Chief Qin is trying to say. Although I have never been afraid of offending others, I have never casually offended others as well. If Mu Tianbei did not ridicule our Blue Wind Profound Palace nor mock the Blue Wind Imperial Family yesterday, I would not have made things difficult for him either. Seriously injuring Mu Xiongyan was intentional as well. But, since I have already done it, I will not regret it. If he wishes to exact vengeance, then I will take

responsibility for it.” The corner of Yun Che’s lips moved, curving up to a dangerously cold smile. “Who shall suffer under whose hands has yet to be determined.”

Knowing that he was unable to persuade Yun Che, Qin Wushang simply sighed, and said. “You must definitely be cautious in tomorrow’s match. Although Fen Juebi’s level of profound strength is the same as Mu Xiongyan’s, he is someone who has inherited the profound arts of the Burning Heaven Clan, his abilities can be said to be a few levels above Mu Xiongyan’s. And, this person, Fen Juebi, is

ruthless, brutal, and likes to humiliate his opponents. The reason why Fen Juechen left the Burning Heaven Clan and was so focused on exacting vengeance on Fen Juebi, was due to the huge shame he received after being defeated by him. When you're exchanging blows with him, you must definitely, definitely, be careful."

Fen Juecheng's expression, which was filled with killing intent, flashed past in Yun Che's mind. Smiling coldly, with a voice which only he could hear, he muttered to himself. "Hmm... Humiliating

opponents... I'm an expert in  
that field too..."

# Chapter 220 – Yun Che VS Fen Juebi

---

Today's Sword Discourse Arena was filled with a peculiar kind of atmosphere. Especially members of the Burning Heaven Clan; their complexions were all quite unsightly.

The first match of the Quarterfinals was Yun Che versus Fen Juebi. Although Yun Che had surprised people time and time again in every one of his previous matches, to the majority of the audience, this competition was still not

suspenseful at all. It wasn't because they still held Yun Che in contempt after being shocked again and again, rather, it was because the image of the Four Major Sects prime positions had long since been deeply ingrained.

“You must win this match no matter what! Yuange was defeated by Frozen Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue, and Jin'er had the misfortune of going up against Ling Yun. Out of all of us, the one remaining that entered the Quarterfinals, is only you! Looks like, in this session, the fact that we are still



ranked fourth out of the Four Major Sects has essentially been decided. But, if you lose to this Yun Che brat, then we would not even be able to enter the top four and can only rank fifth! For our Burning Heaven Clan, this is an absolutely unacceptable humiliation... You understand?"

Fen Moli said with a heavy expression. In yesterday's Round of 16, Burning Heaven Clan's core disciple, his last grandson, Fen Jin, had the misfortune of going against Ling Yun, so he had to leave the stage prematurely. This made him suddenly feel extremely

pressured. He could accept being at the bottom of the Four Major Sects' rankings, after all, it had basically been that way for all these years. But if they placed outside of fourth place... This was a matter that had not happened for several hundreds of years! It was enough to bring shame to the entire Burning Heaven Clan, so he was absolutely positively unwilling to accept that.

And the first match of the Quarterfinals just happened to be the battle that decided that outcome! If they defeat Yun Che, Burning Heaven Clan would

enter the top four, and even placing in the top three would become a possibility. But if they lose...

“Rest assured Great Elder. Coming across anyone of the six people outside of Yun Che and I, would have to make me carefully consider the match. But this Yun Che...” Fen Juebi laughed with extreme disdain: “Trash that completely relied on luck to get here doesn’t even have the qualifications to go against me. If I can’t even defeat him, then I seriously do not even have the face to continue living.”

Fen Moli nodded his head slowly. Even though the strength that Yun Che had displayed was more shocking than the next, he still had never believed that Fen Juebi could lose. However, his complexion was still as tense as before as he spoke in a low voice: "For you to have such self-confidence is naturally good. You can be confident in yourself but you must not, by any means, be too arrogant! Because that will deceive your eyes. Also, when going against Yun Che, you must not underestimate him. Yesterday, he suddenly revealed a bizarre and unpredictable

movement skill that even I did not see through clearly. Not only that, he can also control fire as well, and it cannot be certain that he does not have the ability to restrain our Burning Heaven Fire. The most important thing worthy of careful attention, is that it does not seem like he has completely revealed his true strength... You must be careful!”

“Great Elder is overthinking it. His movement skill is merely a simple instantaneous displacement. How could it possibly compare to our Burning Heaven Clan’s ‘Burning Phantom Illusion’. Besides, even

if his profound movement skill is a hundred times more delicately fine, it is useless within a Sword Discourse Arena entirely enveloped in the Burning Heaven Fire that has no blind spots. As for his control over fire, hahahaha... The fire he released yesterday was clearly the lowest level of profound fire, so how could it possibly compare to our Burning Heaven Fire? If you're saying that he could possibly restrain my power, you might as well say that I could completely control his power."

Fen Juebi's expression was filled with complete disdain. His

words made Fen Moli crease his brows as he said in a somewhat grave voice: "Juebi, there is one thing that I must remind you about. If you lose this match, then the entire Burning Heaven Clan would be humiliated. You must not become our Burning Heaven Clan's sinner. If that happens, it is not certain if Clan Master would forgive you."

Fen Moli's last words finally made Fen Juebi retract his sloppy attitude and made him nod quite seriously: "Great Elder's instructions are, that in this match, even if the opponent is many times weaker, I still

should not hold back... To only win, and not lose.”

Fen Juebi closed in next to Fen Juecheng's ear and softly said with half-narrowed eyes: “Big bro, the match is about to start soon. Do you want to cripple both his legs, burn his face off, or turn him into an eunuch?”

“Burn his face off!” Fen Juecheng's eyebrows sunk as he answered without the slightest hesitation. Because during a match, this kind of matter could completely be regarded as an



“unexpected accident”.

“I won’t let big bro down.” Fen Juebi stuck out his tongue and licked the corner of his lips. He quietly laughed sinisterly: “To me, instead of saying that this is a competition, I’d rather say that this is a... Mn, incomparably wonderful game.”

Time was approaching in the blink of an eye. Yun Che and Fen Juebi leapt to the center of the Sword Discourse Arena at almost the same time with a distance of more than thirty

meters between them.

Yun Che's expression was completely tranquil. But in the eyes of the Fen Juebi in front of him, he saw a distinct disdain and mockery, as well as a close to perverted cruelty mixed within. The corner of Yun Che's mouth twitched, as a hint of a sneer flitted by.

In Fen Juebi's eyes, Yun Che was a mere dish that he could flatten or make round.

But in Yun Che's eyes, Fen Juebi was not even considered a dish. He was not even as threatening as yesterday's Mu Xiongyan. Mu Xiongyan's various unknown firearms had at least, scared him enough to choose to win by a surprise move in the shortest time possible. This Fen Juebi however, could be said to not even be a threat since the very beginning... Because this guy only played with fire.

“Say, do you think it's possible for Yun Che to defeat Fen Juebi?”

“Isn’t this fundamentally impossible? While Fen Juebi’s profound strength is the same as yesterday’s Mu Xiongyan, his true strength is in a different level. He’s Fen Duanhun’s second son!”

“If Fen Juebi actually loses, Burning Heaven Clan would be kicked out of the top four and that would surely be fun to watch.”

“How could that kind of thing even happen...”

“Quick, look at what’s in Fen Juebi’s hands... That must be the legendary Sky Profound Weapon —— the Demon Flame Blade! It looks like that Fen Juebi’s not going to give Yun Che any chances whatsoever.”

“That’s only natural. To the Burning Heaven Clan, they have no other choice but to win and not lose this match. Even if the opponent is a mere grasshopper, they definitely cannot hold back.”

Even though the two on the

Sword Discourse Arena had not exchanged words, the atmosphere was filled with a strangeness that was difficult to describe. Seeing that the two were already prepared, Ling Wugou did not wait any longer and waved his hand: "The first showdown of the Quarterfinals... Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che versus Burning Heaven Clan's Fen Juebi, battle start!"

"Heh!" Fen Juebi laughed sinisterly: "If you had chosen to not get on stage and directly surrender, I seriously would not have known what to do. Luckily,

you did not disappoint me and obediently came up here. It is already too late if you wish to surrender right now. Today, is going to be the most unforgettable day of your life.”

“Tch.” Yun Che curled his lips in disdain: “I never expected that not only are you ugly, you also say this much rubbish. No wonder Burning Heaven Clan could only stand at the bottom of the Four Major Sects, it’s actually made up of these piles of trash.”

With his poisonous tongue, Yun Che was indeed an expert in the same field. Fen Juebi immediately went into a violent rage once those words of his came out: “Die!!”

Scarlet flame ignited atop Fen Juebi's body. Then, it all concentrated onto the Demon Flame Blade. The flame's dazzling light reflected upon the surrounding profound energy barrier and revealed its shape, while bringing along an incomparably shocking high temperature. In the wake of Fen Juebi's blade thrust, the flame on the blade's body immediately



swirled into a huge flaming tornado. Like a ferocious flame beast, it came at Yun Che with opened deadly fangs.

This power behind this strike made several tens of meters of audience cry out in alarm. Yun Che slightly lowered his brows as he instantaneously retreated backwards. The Overlord's Colossal Sword immediately came out with a wave, and was then swung outwards, conjuring up a tyrannical profound energy tornado that collided with Fen Juebi's flaming tornado. In a split second, Yun Che's heavy sword energy was burnt out by

Burning Heaven Fire. In turn, the Burning Heaven was extinguished by the heavy sword energy layer after layer. At the location of the two force's collision, fire and space began to violently distort.

Boom!!

Following the loud explosion, the heavy sword energy and the flaming tornado were simultaneously exterminated. The two were pushed into the distance by the tremendous windstorm. Fen Juebi stood in

place as his expression became even more dangerous: “Heh. You have truly surprised me. To have actually received a strike containing sixty percent of my strength, it looks like you did not entirely rely on luck to reach this place. Oh, but what a pity. In front of me, you are still merely trash.”

He pointed the Demon Flame Blade forward with slightly narrowed eyes and a proud posture, as if he was issuing Yun Che his life’s trial: “I was just greeting earlier. I’ll let you properly see and experience our Burning Heaven Clan’s Burning

Heaven Fire next. Believe me, it is something that you will remember for a whole lifetime. Even until death, you would probably never forget its exquisite scenery. Hahahaha!!”

In the midst of his wild laughter, Fen Juebi suddenly dashed forward at a great speed as fire ignited once more on his body and the Demon Flame Blade. Bringing along a strand of fiery silhouettes, he immediately attacked Yun Che. Before he was even fifteen meters away from Yun Che, the flames on his body suddenly changed from scarlet to blue.

Orange colored flame was known as “ordinary fire”, and was the weakest level fire. Above orange fire, was scarlet colored fire. Middle-low level profound flame was also scarlet in color, and above scarlet, from the lowest level to the highest, was Blue Flame, Purple Flame, White Flame, Gold Flame, as well as the rumored Star Scorching Flame and Primordial Flame of legends.

When transforming profound energy into fire, its power could more or less be determined by

the color of the flame. But as for the special flames of the Phoenix, Vermilion Bird, and Golden Crow, they were not ordinary profound fire, rather, they were the Divine Beast's personal "Divine Fire" that possessed their own properties and color, which did not follow that sort of procedure.

Blue Flame, was profound fire that surpasses the Scarlet Flame by one level!

To everyone's knowledge, only those who have reached the

Earth Profound Realm were capable of releasing such high level profound flame!

Once this blue colored flame came out, it undoubtedly made the entire audience cry out in surprise.

“Blue... Blue Flame!!”

“It has been said that one needed to have profound strength in at least the Earth Profound Realm to have the capability of igniting blue

colored profound flame... Fen Juebi's innate talent for flames was actually this high! To actually have the capability of igniting blue colored profound flames at only the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm."

"As expected of the son of Burning Heaven Clan's Clan Master, looks like Fen Juebi's true strength needs to be evaluated once more. With him igniting blue colored profound flames, it seems like Yun Che does not even have a little bit of hope left."



At the Burning Heaven Clan's seating area, Fen Moli faintly laughed as he thought out loud: "Looks like this Great Elder's words had frightened him. To have actually revealed his trump card so early, it is simply making a big deal out of a small matter, and using a butcher knife for oxes to kill chicken."

"Come, let me hear the sounds of you crying, begging, and struggling!"

Fen Juebi laughed wildly as he closed in on Yun Che. The blue

colored flames on his body suddenly exploded, dispersing into more than a dozen different sized flaming tornados. The flaming tornados quickly combusted in the air, spreading directly towards Yun Che as well as every nook and cranny within the profound energy barrier. It was as if it wanted to completely cover the space within the profound energy barrier and change the surroundings into a sea of blue colored fire without any blind spots...

## Chapter 221 – Extinguished

---

The difference between blue colored profound flames and scarlet colored profound flames was not merely power, but also their different levels of plane. The profound defense at the Spirit Profound Realm could mostly defend against high powered scarlet flames, but would usually be burnt down like a thin sheet of paper against low level blue flames.

Along with the quickly expanding blue flame tornado,

Yun Che also continually retreated, and was forced back to the arena's border step by step. With a loud laugh, Fen Juebi's body suddenly became illusory and a great amount of his figures suddenly appeared within the soaring blue colored profound flames, as if an innumerable amount of his clones were born from this blue sea of fire.

Of course, these "clones" were merely illusions he produced using blue colored profound flames. But because they were extremely similar to his original body, they were hard to

differentiate from his true body and was enough to confuse the opponent's eyesight, dazzling them and rendering them unable to choose and attack. The "clones" went from a few to a dozen, then grew from a dozen into a few dozens. They all shifted around chaotically in the blue colored sea of fire, bringing up countless strings of blue colored light mirages. Under the protection and interference of these clones, the true body slashed toward Yun Che from different directions, and made it perilous for Yun Che as he retreated step by step.

“So this is the Burning Heaven Clan’s core movement profound skill ‘Burning Phantom Illusion’? It really is too frightening! Especially under the condition of a constrained area for battle, it simply makes one despair.”

“As expected of the Burning Heaven Clan. This kind of shockingly excellent profound technique is something these sects of ours could never match.”

Looking at the current situation beneath his eyes, Yun Che was

basically forced into a hopeless corner and probably could not endure for a few breaths of time either, which meant that Fen Juebi's easy and perfect victory was already a forgone conclusion. Fen Juecheng smiled faintly: "Tsk, Second Younger Brother's Burning Phantom Illusion actually had already reached such a level, shocking even the older brother me."

"The reason why Juebi's profound strength had not increased in these past three months, was because he was training his profound flames and Burning Phantom Illusion.

Otherwise, he would have definitely reached the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. When Clan Master told me this before we left, I hadn't even taken it to heart. However, I never thought that he had actually reached such a realm; I'm afraid that even Jin'er may not be his match. I, too, have misjudged him. Seems like I was worrying for nothing earlier."

Fen Moli nodded with satisfaction, and the expression on his face became extremely relaxed. For Feng Juebi, who could release blue colored profound flames and could also



use the Burning Phantom Illusion to such a degree, it was already simply impossible to lose this battle.

Bang!

With a slight sound, Yun Che's back touched the transparent profound energy barrier. To have reached here, meant that he no longer had anywhere to retreat to. The blue colored profound flames were only less than three meters away from him. That terrifying high temperature even gradually

melted the stage's stone below his feet.

“Ayaya, this stage is really too small. This game of a cat toying with mice had just started for such a short time and is already about to be over, it really is somewhat boring. What's more boring, is that you actually haven't screamed out a single time; you really are too uncooperative.”

Within the blue colored sea of fire, several tens of flame mirages shifted and flashed, and

it was unknown which one's mouth the mocking voice was coming from: "Since you don't want to scream out yourself, then let me give you a helping hand. Scream out of despair as much as you like, HAHAAHA..."

"Burning Heaven Slash!!"

The blue colored flames that were already fiercely burning, instantly went berserk. As the Demon Flame Blade in Fen Juebi's hand swung, a huge wave of fire over ten meters formed

and blanketed down toward the Yun Che who had been forced into a corner.

Fen Juebi was laughing wildly, as if he had already saw the sight of Yun Che's entire body being being swallowed by the blue colored Burning Heaven Flames in the next second. Especially that porcelain face of his that would be 'specially cared for' by the blue flames and be burnt into black char beyond recognition.

Everything was within his

expectation and guidance; everything was so perfect. If a certain flaw had to be stated, it could be that from the start until now, he had never found a single hint of fear on Yun Che's face. Even when he was forced into a dead end, his expression was still oddly calm; this slightly discounted his "sense of achievement".

But just as the blue flames were about to swallow Yun Che, his expression had finally swayed away from calmness. However, the expression he revealed was not at all the shock and despair that Fen Juebi wanted to see, but

instead was... a hint of a mocking sneer.

“This is indeed a game of cat toying with mice. However, it seems like you’re mistaken about who’s the real mouse!”

The voice of scorn pierced through the scorching airwave and flowed into Fen Juebi’s ears. At this same moment, Yun Che suddenly took a step forward, lifted the heavy sword, and fiercely swung outwards.

RIIIP!!

Accompanying the heavy sword's swing, space slightly twisted as the air crazily rampaged. With a burst of sound as if cotton being torn, that dreadful profound flame was actually directly slashed into pieces by the heavy sword, and quickly dissipated like a broken illusion.

The Yun Che who had retreated step after step earlier carried a cold smile on his face, and started to move forward step by

step as the heavy sword continuously danced. Following the bursts of ringing profound energy, those blue colored profound flames that clearly looked extremely terrifying was actually being blown out wave after wave like fragile soap bubbles; they didn't even have the slightest ability to struggle and resist. Wherever Yun Che treaded, the blue flames there would be blown into pieces and dissipate.

“Wh... Wh... What!!”



The entire audience was struck dumb. Burning Heaven Clan's six members all stood up from their seats with widened eyes and faces full of incredibility, as if they had seen a ghost.

“Th... This isn't possible!”

Fen Juebi's wild laugh, as well as the contemptuous arrogance on his face, simultaneously disappeared. What replaced it was a face brimming with shock and a slight fear. The blue colored profound flames that he took pride in, that he treated as

his trump card, had actually been extinguished by Yun Che so easily, as if he was just walking and waving his hands. What he extinguished wasn't only Feng Juebi's strength, but more so his pride, dignity, as well as his self confidence that was originally bloated beyond compare.

“The reason why they were extinguished by him must be because my blue flames were only in their elementary stage, and haven't been fully mastered yet. It must be... It must be so!”

Feng Juebi consoled himself with all his might. Then, a nasty grin emerged onto his face once again. However, the grin this time was more or less a bit stiff and difficult: “Yun Che, you think that you could beat me just because you’re able to destroy my Burning Heaven Flames? Hahahaha, these Burning Heaven Flames, are merely the lowest rank in power of the profound flames I possess...”

“If you have the guts... then try breaking through my Burning Heaven Dragon Flame!”

Fen Juebi bit his tongue. Then, he sprayed out several drops of blood essence and showered it onto the Demon Flame Blade in his hand. The blue flames on the Demon Flame Blade instantly flourished. Fen Juebi raised the Demon Flame Blade up high with both hands, and ferociously roared. Instantaneously, a blue colored pillar of fire suddenly burst out from his body. Even the surrounding blue flames that still burned were forcefully sucked back and gathered onto his body. Not only did the blue flames on his body stop rising after that, it quickly lowered back down and shrunk.

However, that profound energy aura had actually changed to become much more frightening.

“He actually took the expense of losing his blood essence to activate the dragon flame! And it also seems to be activated with full power.” Fen Juecheng knitted his brows as his expression fully darkened.

“This is also a choice that he had to inevitably make. I really had not thought that Yun Che had always been acting weak earlier on purpose. Juebi’s

flames has already reached the blue colored realm, yet it actually could not be even the slightest of threat to him. Just what kind of abnormality is he... However, once the Dragon Flame is unleashed, his death is basically certain. Even if he doesn't die, he'll definitely end up being gravely injured. Perhaps, Juebi would be kicked out of this ranking tournament because of this." Fen Moli said with a solemn expression.

"Hmph! Being kicked out of the tournament, is at least better than losing this battle!" Fen Juecheng said as he gritted his

teeth. Right now, he immensely desired for Yun Che to die this instant. Before, he only had the thought of killing Yun Che, but did not treat him as his enemy at all, because in his eyes, Yun Che was not the least bit qualified. But as Yun Che displayed greater strength time and time again, at this moment in time, he could not help but to be stricken with terror. Yun Che was already like this at the mere age of seventeen. After he fully matured into his prime, it was unknown how shocking of a height he would reach.

Fen Moli opened his mouth, but

did not refute. That's right, under this kind of situation, being kicked out of the ranking tournament from killing Yun Che, and even being punished by the Mighty Heaven Sword Region was far better than losing. Because the only one who would be punished was Fen Juebi himself, and Burning Heaven Clan would only need to make some sort of reimbursement at most. But if the battle were to be lost, then it would shame the entire Burning Heaven Clan.

“Crap!” Ling Yuefeng stood up with a “whoosh”. He understood



very clearly what Fen Juebi was about to do, and was even clearer about how terrifying of a power Burning Heaven Clan's "Dragon Flame" possessed. He grimly sound transmitted to Ling Wogou: "Be prepared to save Yun Che right away! You must not let him die beneath the dragon flame."

On the Sword Discourse Arena, Ling Wugou's complexion darkened heavily as he nodded his head so slightly that it was indiscernible. He activated his profound energy and his clothes fluttered as he went on standby.

“Yun Che... die!!”

Fen Juebi was clearer than anyone about what kind of outcome would possibly be triggered once this attack landed, so his conspicuous roar was particularly fierce. Following the sudden wave of both his arms, the blue flames on his entire body transformed into a purple colored fire dragon that was a foot thick and several tens of meters long. It flew out from the Demon Flame Blade, bringing along an incomparably terrifying high heatwave, and

charged at Yun Che.

“Flame Dragon... It’s the ultimate forbidden skill — Heaven Burning Dragon!”

“I heard that this move requires blood essence to activate. Every time it is mobilized, profound strength would drop by at least half a level! But it’s strong enough to kill immortals and slaughter gods!”

“Has Fen Juebi gone crazy! To

actually damage his own blood essence to use this move. With the power of this one move, it is very likely that Yun Che will immediately die on that stage.”

“It is not strange at all for Fen Juebi to use this move, because Burning Heaven Clan cannot afford to lose this match... Sigh, with how gifted Yun Che is, it will truly be quite a pity if he falls here. We can only hope that Elder Ling will save Yun Che in time.”

The sounds of the surrounding

commentaries turned Cang Yue's complexion pale. Covering her lips with both hands as her beautiful eyes widened, she was unable to produce any sound within her extreme terror and worry.

The soaring Heaven Burning Flame Dragon came right at him, and rang Yun Che's alarm... He did not fear fire at all, but the ferocious impacting power that this flame dragon carried was absolutely not something that could be looked down on. Furrowing his brows, he quickly retreated a step, gathered up his profound power, and swung out

the heavy sword with all his might.

Boom!!

The windstorm of power and the flame dragon collided in midair. The flame dragon instantly appeared to be stalled for a moment, then once again rushed toward him as a wave of enormous imposing aura tightly wrapped around his entire body.

It's unexpectedly this difficult to deal with... Yun Che's

suddenly had a thought, and the heavy sword that had been swung outwards, quickly and swiftly, swept back up as the profound strength in his entire body rushed toward Yun Che's arms like a flood.

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!!”

Boom!!!!

With an enormous sound, flames were swept all over the sky as the stone stage in the surrounding few dozens of

meters instantly turned into fragments. Even the profound energy barrier slightly trembled. Under this incomparably powerful and ferocious strike, the flame dragon was smashed, tumbling far away as the blue flames on its body also quickly dissipated. In the blink of an eye, the flame dragon that was originally a foot thick, had now already become half a foot thick... But in the next instant, the flame dragon whose power had dissipated to a large degree once again shot toward Yun Che. It was as fast as lightning, and before Yun Che even had time to retract the heavy sword, the flame dragon had already arrived before his chest.



To be able to smash away more than half of the power from the dreadfully powerful flame dragon in one strike, for everyone present and especially people of the Burning Heaven Clan, the impact of this scene was nothing less than a thunder strike during a clear day. But even so, the residue power of the flame dragon had already neared Yun Che's chest, and it was impossible for Yun Che to resist again.

Everyone held their breaths. Ling Wugou tensed his entire

body and was just about to rush into the profound energy barrier, yet he found that Yun Che's hands had suddenly left the Overlord's Colossal Sword and suddenly closed, grabbing toward the "neck" part of the flame dragon.

Ling Wugou immediately turned pale with fright as he roared loudly: "Let go!! Do you not want your hand anymore!!"

The terrifyingly high temperature and fire power that the blue colored dragon flame

carried was simply unimaginable. It was fundamentally impossible to break through head on using only brute force; to directly touch it with the body, was really no different than seeking one's own death.

Yun Che turned a deaf ear as both of his hands firmly grabbed onto the flame dragon's neck. Profound energy under "Evil Soul", the fire controlling power from the Evil God's seed, the Phoenix's flame power, the power of the Dragon God, the overbearing power of the physical body granted by the

Great Way of the Buddha, all surged up in that instant...

There were no flames exploding, no flame dragon exploding, and no scenery of Yun Che's hands being instantly scorched black by the flame dragon... The scenery, suddenly became static at this moment. Just like that, the soaring flame dragon was frozen there within Yun Che's hand.

At this time, the flame dragon suddenly started to painfully twist and turn like a poisonous

snake that had been choked at seven inches from its heart. But no matter how hard it struggled and turned, it couldn't escape Yun Che hands that were tightly shut with all his strength. Amidst its struggling, the flame dragon's power quickly dissipated, and became smaller and smaller. From a flame dragon, it quickly shrunk down to a small flame snake, and in the end into a tiny earthworm... Then, it completely dissipated within Yun Che's hands, leaving not the slightest trace of its existence.

Yun Che's forehead was full of

sweat, but his expression was incomparably calm. He slowly opened his grip. Regardless of whether it was his palm or wrist, there wasn't the slightest hint of a burn mark at all.

It was unknown when everyone in the Sword Discourse Arena had stood up. Every single person's gaze was stupefied, and were silent for a long while, as if the sound of this world had already been completely sucked out.

## Chapter 222 – Unforeseen Event

---

The forbidden skill ‘Heaven Burning Dragon’ unleashed by Fen Juebi was actually blocked by Yun Che, and he simply used his two hands to do so. Using his two palms, he extinguished that terrifying Heaven Burning Dragon completely.

“Heaven Burning Dragon” was Burning Heaven Clan’s forbidden skill, which required blood essence to activate. The frequency in which this skill appeared was extremely low,

and a large number of Burning Heaven Clan disciples might not even activate it even once in their entire lives. There were obviously preceding cases of opponents blocking the “Heaven Burning Dragon”, but every time, the opponents would definitely block the forbidden skill with extreme difficulty, and blocking it in a fashion like this... had never happened before!

In Yun Che’s eyes, the “Heaven Burning Dragon” was just a young snake which had overestimated its own abilities, and had simply been killed using



both his hands. During the entire process, not a hint of harm was done to Yun Che.

Along with a “plop” sound, Fen Juebi knelt on the ground. His face was as pale as paper, his two eyes were widened to an extreme degree, and looked as though his soul had left his body from the shock. The six other people from the Burning Heaven Clan, including Fen Moli who was nearing a hundred years old, basically had the same reaction as well. They simply could not believe their eyes. Seeing their strongest Heaven Burning Dragon to have actually

been blocked with a method like that was even more unacceptable. And his opponent was able to block it completely and while staying completely unscathed... This was something an expert at the early stages of the Earth Profound Realm would probably not be able to achieve!

Those extremely dense blue profound flames, which were still in a berserk state, were capable of even instantly melting fine iron!

Ling Yuefeng's expression was filled with shock as well. Ling Wugou who had initially prepared to charge into the profound energy barrier was simply standing there in a daze. He even forgot to put down the profound energy he had raised, and was looking towards Yun Che with extremely astonished eyes... As though he was looking at a monster that came from beyond the heavens.

At that short moment, the shock created by Yun Che, greatly surpassed the sum of every other astonishment he caused.

Seeing Fen Juebi, whose beliefs had collapsed due to the extreme degree of shock and disbelief, fall to the ground, Yun Che coldly smiled. Stretching out both arms, he once again grabbed onto the Overlord's Colossal Sword, and fiercely swung it towards Fen Juebi.

Whoosh!!

The force brought about by the power of the heavy sword exploded outwards. In his current state, Fen Juebi no

longer had any power to resist. With a bang, he tumbled few dozen times from the impact, and then sprawled on the ground like a dead dog. His body spasmed, and even after a long while, there was no sign of him getting up.

Ling Wugou then finally regained his senses. Retracting his profound energy, he regulated his breathing, and then, calmly shouted. “Fen Juebi did not get off the ground for more than ten breaths of time, Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che wins! He shall enter tomorrow’s Semifinals!”

Ling Wugou's voice woke the dazed audience as well, and in an instant, noise filled the entire Sword Discourse Arena.

Ever since the beginning of the ranking tournament, Yun Che created miracle after miracle, and just when almost everyone believed it was basically impossible for Yun Che to progress any further, an even more exaggerated miracle, which brought about a gigantic impact towards their souls, was demonstrated right in front of them.

Yun Che gained victory over Fen Juebi, and it was even a complete victory!

Fen Moli sat directly back onto his seat, and the old skin on his face shivered. Fen Juebi was defeated, and he was even thoroughly defeated, which meant that, in this Ranking Tournament, Burning Heaven Clan was destined to fall from the first four placings for the first time. If Shui Wushuang and Xia Qingyue from the Frozen Cloud Asgard were to both lose in this round of matches, or Xiao

Kuanglei from the Xiao Sect were to lose in this round of matches, they might have the chance to fight for the fourth place. But, no matter was it Shui Wushuang or Xiao Kuanglei, they were basically opponents who Fen Juebi could never win against, and Fen Moli knew of this point without a doubt.

Adding that Fen Juebi did not hesitate to burn his blood essence, he received a large drop in profound strength. All hope was thus lost.



This could be said to be Burning Heaven Clan's first disgrace in these few hundred years.

But, this could not be fully blamed on Fen Juebi alone. Just by how Yun Che extinguished the Heaven Burning Dragon with his bare hands at the end, even if Fen Jin was the one who went up against him, he would not be able to defeat Yun Che.

“He... Just how did he do it?”

“I don’t know... He must have forcefully dispersed the power of the flame dragon with his profound energy.”

“But that was Burning Heaven Clan’s forbidden skill! To completely disperse an attack like that, I’m afraid even an early stage Earth Profound Realm practitioner may not be able to do it either.”

“Evidently, this Yun Che has been hiding his true abilities, and it’s not even known how much of his abilities he’s

hiding... Tenth level of the True Profound Realm... Just from thinking about it, really drives me crazy.”

“Fen Juebi has been defeated and it’s been determined that the Burning Heaven Clan will place below the top four, while the Blue Wind Imperial Family actually smashed into the Semifinals! From now on, will the Burning Heaven Clan be dethroned from their position as one of the Four Major Sects, and be replaced with the Blue Wind Imperial Family?”

“This time, because of Yun Che, it’s basically impossible for the Blue Wind Imperial Family to not shake the world, and regain their former glory! I really wonder where the Blue Wind Imperial Family managed to find such a freak. Haah, why is there no such disciple like that born in our sect!”

The sounds of discussions that filled the entire arena continued without pause. Yun Che had once again become the talking point of the entire audience. In contrast, the grand and mighty Burning Heaven Clan turned out to be the loser, and what they

were enduring were no longer admiration and praise, but sympathy in the midst of all the compassionate eyes directed toward them...

Under everyone's attention, Yun Che did not immediately leave the Sword Discourse Arena. Rather, he gave a slight bow to Lin Wugou. "Elder Ling, thank you very much."

Ling Wugou was startled for a moment, and then, he slightly nodded while praising Yun Che in his heart... Earlier, in that

sort of situation, he was still able to put his focus away and feel that I was about to “save” him. Unless, when he was facing the “Heaven Burning Dragon” earlier, he was still keeping some strength in reserve?

Yun Che turned, preparing to leave the center of the Sword Discourse Arena. At this moment, Fen Juebi, who his back was currently facing, suddenly leaped up from the ground. With eyes emitting out a glow of hatred, and a hideous expression, he charged towards Yun Che like a demon that had fallen into despair. His Demon

Flame Blade raged with blue flames as he thrust it towards Yun Che's back.

“I will kill you!!”

Fen Juebi was definitely not a person so mentally weak to not accept defeat, but the loss he suffered in this match was different. Because, he lost to an opponent who, in his eyes, was someone he could take down with a single blow before the match. And, the match he lost, was a match concerning the honor of the Burning Heaven

Clan, a match he definitely could not lose. The words Fen Moli had said to him earlier, and the consequences and shame due to his loss, were like needles that furiously stabbed into his nerves and soul, causing him to lose all reason. He only had the crazed impulse to cut Yun Che down into thousand of pieces...

Fen Juebi's actions immediately brought about scornful jeers from the entire audience. Yun Che stopped, muttered softly to himself "you're courting death", he furiously turned back, and threw his heavy sword down towards Fen Juebi without any



mercy.

If it was a head-on clash, Fen Juebi was basically not a match for Yun Che. Furthermore, his blood essence was gravely injured and he was currently extremely weakened. The power Fen Juebi wielded was easily exterminated by the strength of Yun Che's heavy sword, and right after, he felt as though a one hundred fifty ton sledgehammer had smashed onto his chest.

Boom!!

Fen Juebi's vision was completely blurred, a large amount of blood splurged out from his mouth, his chest was no longer distinguishable from the exposed blood and flesh, and his entire body was like a grocery bag being blown away by a fierce wind, as he was sent flying out...

“Juebi!! Junior, you dare!”

An extremely furious roar shook the entire audience. Fen Moli rose to the sky, and he

crossed a distance of a couple hundred of meters in a mere second, and instantly barged into the profound energy barrier, landing in front of Fen Juebi. After checking his injuries, he furiously turned, and looked at Yun Che with anger. “Junior! Your heart is actually this malicious! The duel has already concluded, and you still intentionally heavily injure the son of our Burning Heaven Clan Master!!”

The name of Burning Heaven Clan’s Great Elder was widely known, and the might of his name did not seem to be any

lower than the Burning Heaven Clan Master Fen Duanhun. It could be said that there was no one in the audience who did not fear him, and with that roar of his, even if his target was a Sect Master of one of the great sects, that person would still tremble in fear. But Yun Che was definitely one of the exceptions. He coldly laughed. "Are you blind? Evidently, he was the one who tried to sneak an attack on me first. Rather than retaliating, do I have to simply stand here and wait for him to attack me?"

"Junior, you're courting death!" Under Fen Moli's

explosive rage, even his beard rose. It had been a few decades since someone dared to talk to him in this way, moreover, the person speaking to him right now was just a junior. Adding that the Burning Heaven Clan's loss and the shame that they would definitely suffer right after, all originated from the person in front of him, his anger exploded like the eruption of a volcano... He wanted to vent his hatred by killing Yun Che more than Fen Juebi.

Moving his hands away from Fen Juebi's body, Fen Moli suddenly flew into the air. Like

an eagle's talon, his right hand stretched towards Yun Che's head.

The entire audience exclaimed from this sudden unforeseen event. Fen Moli flying into the Sword Discourse Arena to check on Fen Juebi injuries was not unexpected, and was within reason. However, no one would have thought that he would actually suddenly act against Yun Che... And the way he was acting, was evidently a blow enough to send Yun Che to his death!!

An elder nearing his hundreds, a Great Elder in the Burning Heaven Clan, a peak-level expert with the strength half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm, actually acted against a mere seventeen year old junior. It was even within the Heavenly Sword Villa, and was also in the presence of an elder from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Fen Moli's action was evidently due to the loss of reason from his explosive rage, an act tantamount to madness.

“Elder Fen, stop!” Ling Wugou's expression paled from shock. He quickly stepped forward with

the intent to stop Fen Moli. But, the difference between a late stage Sky Profound Realm and one half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm was still too great. Before he could even approach him, he was forcefully blown aside by the outburst of profound energy Fen Moli unleashed. He could only look on as Fen Moli's hand neared Yun Che... That claw of his, was enough to directly shatter Yun Che's entire skull.

Yun Che also would never have thought that Fen Moli would actually shamelessly act against him. Yun Che had once felt the



strength of half-step into Emperor Profound Realm from Chu Yuechan, and Fen Moli had already stayed in the realm of half a step into the Emperor Profound for thirty years so his profound energy was much denser than Chu Yuechan's. When that claw attack approached him, the terrifying pressure brought about by his profound energy caused Yun Che to clearly feel like he was being enveloped by a firmament. That tyrannically boundless suppressive pressure, forget about dodging it, he was unable to move a single finger.

Although Yun Che was shocked, he did not fluster. Taking a deep breath, he activated the power of Star God's Broken Shadow...

RIIIP!!

That terrifying sound was as though even the space grabbed by Fen Moli was teared apart. Fen Moli's right hand grabbed towards Yun Che's head, but what he caught was just a dissipating afterimage.

Fen Moli's movements stopped for a moment, and then, he was even more enraged... He, a mighty expert with strength half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm, attacked a junior in surprise... and actually still struck empty air! And he completely did not realize when Yun Che had moved away.

But he did not have the leisure to be astonished by Yun Che's strange and unpredictable profound movement skill. Igniting flames of fury, he once again locked onto Yun Che's position. With a growl, a large amount of purple profound

flames suddenly erupted from his body. The purple profound flames transformed into dozens of purple flame dragons that hideously charged towards Yun Che. The might of each flame dragon, was several times stronger than the Heaven Burning Dragon Fen Juebi unleashed.

“Stop!”

“Stop!!!!”

Everything happened in a flash,

and it was only now that everyone finally reacted. Two loud roars sounded from two different directions, one from Qin Wushang, and the other came from Ling Yuefeng. They stood up at the same time, and were about to charge towards the Sword Discourse Arena. However, at this moment, an icy blue figure that brought about a bone-piercing coldness flew towards the Sword Discourse Arena before they could...

CRA-CRA-CRA-CRA-CRACK....

The sounds of ice forming in the air rang, and in just a short moment, the purple flames that filled the sky were all frozen in ice. The terrifying high temperature was also rapidly decreasing, and speedily became ice-cold. At this moment, an absolutely beautiful, blue fairy-like figure descended from the skies. She floated in front of Yun Che, her feet just above the ground. With her descent, the surrounding crystallized ice shattered, disappearing along with the purple flames.

Ling Yuefeng, who was about to fly out, abruptly stopped in his

tracks. He looked towards the beautiful figure at the Sword Discourse Arena with a dazed expression. “Why is it... her...”

“Little...” Yun Che excitedly said with pleasant surprise, but immediately, the word he uttered afterwards became really soft. “... Fairy.”

Fen Moli’s earlier attack did indeed frighten Yun Che quite a bit. It was basically impossible for him to block against the strength of one half a step into Emperor Profound Realm. The

moment it touched him, he would instantly be exterminated with nothing left of him. If not for her appearance, he would be forced to use Jasmine's strength. But, if that were to happen, he would undoubtedly expose his ultimate final trump card in front of everyone's eyes.

Chu Yuechan, whose back was facing him, seemed to not have heard his voice, for she did not react at all. A pair ice-crystal eyes coldly looked towards Fen Moli.



Chu Yueli stood up. Her beautiful eyes were filled with astonishment. Fen Moli acting against Yun Che, was naturally shameless and despicable. She believed that many experts who could not stand to watch the scene would step in, especially those from Heavenly Sword Villa. Even she herself, had the impulse to step in. However, she originally, firmly believed that if there was ever someone who would not step in to stop him, it would definitely be her elder sister Chu Yuechan. Because her personality was extremely cold and indifferent, and she would definitely not care about the matters of anyone else.

But, what she completely did not expect was that Chu Yuechan, was actually the first person to step in!

Not only did she stop him, she was even shielding in front of Yun Che, and facing Fen Moli, the Great Elder of Burning Heaven Clan, head on!

# Chapter 223 – The Power Of A Throne

---

“Chu Yuechan, what is the meaning of this?”

Since the situation had already progressed to such a stage, Fen Moli allowed anger to take over him and practically ignored all consequences. Although he had only met Chu Yuechan once many years ago, he still recognized her at one glance. However, he could never have imagined that the legendary Fairy of Frozen Beauty would suddenly attack him.

Chu Yuechan replied coldly: “As a Great Elder of the Burning Heaven Clan, how shameless are you to attack a junior without reason.”

“Hmph!” Fen Moli remained frowning: “He severely injured a Burning Heaven Clan disciple. With just this reason, him dying ten thousand would still be insufficient! Chu Yuechan, this is a matter of our Burning Heaven Clan. It is out of place for a member of Frozen Cloud Asgard to intervene!”

“I’m going to intervene for sure!” Chu Yuechan held out her ice jade-like hand, and a flickering deep blue light appeared in her palm.

“Good~~” Fen Moli, knitted his brows tightly: “I have always heard that Fairy of the Frozen beauty has already reached half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm at a young age and even exceeded the skills of Xu Fairy, the Asgard Mistress, when she was that age. Among the ladies of Blue Wind Empire, you are without equal. Today, let me

experience the skill of Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies' number one!"

Facing Chu Yuechan, Fen Moli was fairly confident. Even though they were both half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm, Chu Yuechan had merely stepped into it for a few years while Fen Moli had already stayed in it for an entire thirty years. Even if he was unable to break into the Emperor Profound Realm, he was confident he would not lose against those who were half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm.

“Haa!!”

Fen Moli shouted loudly out as his whole body ignited with a surging purple profound flame. Raising both his hands, the purple flames in his hands forged together to form a sword that was more than thirty meters long. He suddenly slashed it towards Chu Yuechan... To their knowledge, the purple profound flame was known to all within Blue Wind Empire as the strongest flame, and generally, only people in the later stages of the Sky Profound

Realm were able to use it. Rumor had it that under the purple profound flames, anyone with profound strength below the later half of the Earth Profound Realm would be burn to ashes instantly, unable to put up any resistance. If the purple flame swept past a small lake, the water in the river would be completely evaporated in a short moment. It was very frightening.

The speed of Fen Moli's flame sword was not quick. However, Yun Che was not far behind Chu Yuechan. If she avoided the blow, the purple profound flame



would hit Yun Che. Even if Yun Che had wings, he would not be able to escape. If Chu Yuechan received the blow head on, Fen Moli was confident that this attack would at least make her sustain some injuries.

Chu Yuechan did not move her feet, as she did not have any intention of avoiding the attack. Instead, her palm flipped upwards and she clutched towards the flame sword with empty hands...

Clang!!

The huge flame sword that brought along a suffocating heat wave, was suddenly knocked aside by an invisible obstacle and stopped in midair. Following it, a deep blue light appeared at the tip of the sword. Soon, with the “crack crack crack” sounds of ice forming at an average speed, it quickly enveloped the entire flame sword. This caused the originally scorching hot purple flame to turn into freezing cold blue profound ice.

When the ice attribute profound strength had reached a

certain level, it could seal not only a body or object, but also various forms of profound strength!

Ping!!

Following the flipping of Chu Yuechan's jade palm, an exploding noise rang throughout the Sword Discourse Arena. The ice sealed flame sword exploded in midair, turning into many tiny pieces of blue ice crystals, as it scattered all around...

“Wh... What!?”

Fen Moli took two steps backwards in panic, quickly dispelling the layer of ice on his hands. His face was filled with shock and disbelief. At this point, he looked at Chu Yuechan, who had her palm stretched out in front of him as a blue light flashed past him...

A half a foot long icicle suddenly appeared in front of him out of thin air... That's right, it appeared in midair out of nowhere. Even though Fen

Moli was half step to the Emperor Profound Realm, he still did not manage to see how it appeared and when it appeared. He merely just saw a seemingly normal icicle which had a frightening coldness that made his whole body shiver. Before he could take a good look at it, the deep blue icicle attacked his chest with an unimaginable speed...

Bang!!

The part of Fen Moli's body that had been struck by the

icicle instantly sunk and his back swelled out outrageously. A scream of pain with blood was spewed out from Fen Moli. He seemed like an arrow that had just shot out and flew out far away as he crashed onto the surface of the Sword Discourse Arena before being continually forced back for several tens of meters, leaving behind a deep gully on the surface of the hard discourse arena floor.

The arena was instantly a field of silence. Even the silent and expressionless Ling Kun from the Mighty Heaven Sword Region appeared to be surprised.

Ling Yufeng seemed as though he was struck by lightning and jump up and said in a quivering voice: “Space compression... This... This is... an Emperor Profound power!!”

Once the three words “Emperor Profound power” came out, they were like thunderclaps on a clear day as they sounded in everyone’s ears.

“Emperor... Emperor Profound? This, this... This can’t be possible, right?”

“How is that impossible! Villa Master Ling personally shouted it out himself! And if it’s not the true Emperor Profound Realm, how could Fen Moli be so fatigued after only taking one of her blows?”

“Oh my god, another Throne actually appeared in our Blue Wind Empire, and it’s actually such a young Throne. Even if she had just stepped into the Emperor Profound Realm this year, she has done it much earlier than Villa Master Ling... She’s the fastest person to reach the Emperor Profound Realm in these hundreds of years!”



“Then, other than the legendary Xu Fairy Mistress, another Throne has appeared in the Frozen Cloud Asgard! And it is rumored that the Grandmistress of Frozen Cloud Asgard is actually still in the Frozen Cloud Asgard, and has yet to pass away. If this rumor is also true, then doesn't it mean that Frozen Cloud Asgard has three Thrones!? Even Burning Heaven Clan and Xiao Sect only has one Throne each!”

Everyone was astonished at the news of Chu Yuechan becoming

a Throne. She was the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, who stood high up at the top and was like a descended immortal. Currently, in everyone's eyes, she had undoubtedly stepped high above the clouds, as though she had turned into a real fairy which they could not even hope to look up to. In the Blue Wind Empire, Thrones were legendary existences, and even more so, unbeatable existences. There was a very important reason why there were only Four Major Sects in the Blue Wind Empire, and not "Five Major Sects". Only the Four Major Sects possessed these unparalleled "Thrones".

The expressions of everyone in Burning Heaven Clan and Xiao Sect changed. Another Throne appearing in the Frozen Cloud Asgard undoubtedly meant that they now fell behind by a large margin in terms of strength. Xiao Sect's Sect Master Xiao Juetian slowly stood up, looked blankly at Chu Yuechan's back figure for a moment, curled his lips, and then, slowly sat back onto his seat... Twenty years passed and she was still as entrancing. Even her back figure, was so beautiful, as though she was just a mere illusion. However, her current shine was so blinding that even he, the Sect Master of Xiao Sect, could only feel deeply ashamed.

Back then, after seeing Chu Yuechan for the first time in the Ranking Tournament, he was deeply entranced by her again, and had constantly dreamed about her. However, he was not as wild as Ling Yuefeng. Even more so, he did not embarrass himself like Ling Yuefeng who had unhesitatingly headed towards Frozen Cloud Asgard time and time again, only to return with empty hands. But, at the very least, he still felt that he was worthy enough for her...

But currently, he seemed to not

even have the courage to look directly in her eyes any longer. Such a young Throne... Forget about now, even in the entire history of the Blue Wind Empire, such a person had never appeared before. It was as though the heavens were overly spoiling their beloved pet and had given her too many halos that were dazzling bright. And under these halos, he was not able to think of anyone in this Blue Wind Empire who was worthy for her...

At least, he personally admitted that he, the Sect Master of Xiao Sect himself, was not worthy.

In these several hundred years, many practitioners at half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm had appeared in the Four Major Sects, but, among the experts who had reached this level, in the end, less a tenth of them had entered the Emperor Profound Realm. Fen Moli had stopped at half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm for thirty odd years, and he could not help but accept the fact that it would be impossible for him to be called a true Throne in his entire life. Although there was only half a step difference between half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm and

the Emperor Profound Realm, this half a step, was as though one had crossed into the heavens with just half a step from the earth. The difference in strength was overwhelming.

In front of a true Throne, a practitioner half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm was no different than a weak little infant; there were basically no threats to speak of. Fen Moli was simply inviting humiliation by taking the initiative to act against Chu Yuechan.

In the seats of the Burning Heaven Clan, Fen Juecheng rushed out at lightning speed. He held Fen Moli, who had fainted due to being severely injured or perhaps being angered, in his arms. He checked his injuries quickly before turning in Ling Yuefeng's direction and bowing towards him: "Villa Master Ling, Elder Ling. Our disciple was severely injured and Elder Fen Moli was so anxious that he made such an impulsive action. Seeing that he had actually not caused much damage, and has already been taught a lesson by the Fairy of the Frozen Beauty, could you be magnanimous and forgive Elder Fen Moli. After the ranking



tournament, I will personally bring him along to apologize to Villa Master Ling and Elder Ling.”

“Hmph!” Ling Yuefeng looked enraged: “As an esteemed elder of your clan, Fen Moli does not know how to act his age. He did not consider the severity of the issue and ignored the rules of the tournament. He even tried to severely injure a contestant that had just won. According to the rules of the tournament, not only Fen Moli, the entire Burning Heaven Clan has to be stripped of their participation right!”

After saying this, Ling Yuefeng appear to calm down a little: “Considering the fact that Fen Moli was anxious and had already been taught a lesson by the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, I will treat it as he has been punished. The matter will rest like this. The right to explore the ‘Heaven Basin Secret Realm’ shall also be retained. However, if such a thing happens again, not only will your right to explore the Heaven Basin Secret Realm be removed, I’m afraid that Burning Heaven Clan’s right to participate in the next ranking tournament will also be removed.”

Burning Heaven Clan was undoubtedly different from other clans. Ling Yuefeng did not want to offend them. Despite his harsh words, he had already take a big step back and gave them ample face. Fen Juecheg let out a huge sigh of relief as he bowed to Ling Yuefeng with a junior's courtesy before bringing Fen Moli away from the Sword Discourse Arena.

All eyes fell back on Chu Yuechan. Yun Che took a step forward with a slight smile:

“Fairy of the Frozen Beauty,  
thank you for saving...”

Before he had finished speaking, the ice spirit in front of him shook as the beauty and cool figure disappeared from the Sword Discourse Arena and returned back to her seat.

Yun Che silently laughed. As to the meaning behind his laugh, only he himself understood.

“This Chu Yuechan really isn’t simple. She is already a Throne

at such a young age, it's no wonder you were so mesmerized by her when you were young." Xuanyuan Yufeng said without facing Ling Yuefeng.

Ling Yuefeng smiled slightly and replied: "Honey, what you said is wrong. When I was younger, I was not mesmerized by her talent, but by her looks. Little did I expect that she was not only beautiful but also this talented. This was indeed quite shocking."

Seeing him smile so calmly,

Xuanyuan Yufeng was suddenly relieved and shifted half her body onto Ling Yuefeng's.

Second match of the Quarterfinals: Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Jie —— VS —— Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Feiyu.

Even though they both belonged to Heavenly Sword Villa, one was in the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm while the other was in the ninth. No matter how one looked at it, the result of the battle was

obvious.

Ling Jie went on stage first and crossed his hands over his chest. He drew back the corners of his mouth slightly and looked completely unafraid. After quite some time, Ling Feiyu finally went onto stage and stood in front of Ling Jie. He looked somewhat conflicted.

“The two of you have been sparring so often. This time, are you both sure that you want to compete?” Ling Wugou emotionlessly asked as he stood

outside the profound energy barrier. As an elder, he was very clear about the skill levels of the Villa's young disciples.

Hearing his question, the people below the stage completely understood what it meant. The difference in strength between these two people must be very large. In their usual spars, they would always end up with one side completely suppressing the other. Even if they were to compete again, it would be impossible for a second outcome to happen, and they would merely be wasting their time.



Hearing Lin Wugou's words, Ling Jie actually did not have that big of a reaction. However, the corner of Ling Feiyu's lips moved, a slight struggle appeared in his eyes, and then, he finally sighed, and said. "Fine, I surrender."

WHOOA——

The people below the stage instantly widened their eyes one after another...

The one who took the initiative to surrender was not Ling Jie who possessed merely the strength at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm...

But, Ling Feiyu, who had easily smashed his way through into the Quarterfinals with his strength at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm!!

# Chapter 224 – Xia Qingyue VS Xiao Kuanglei

---

“The one who took the initiative to back out was not Ling Jie but actually Ling Feiyu...” Yun Che was also astonished. In his previous matches, the strength that Ling Feiyu revealed was incomparably shocking. The practitioners in Group One were far from the level of those in Group Two, and Ling Feiyu was the publicly acknowledged strongest practitioner in Group One. Regardless of whether it was the Round of 32 or the

Round of 16, he always had easily defeated his opponent in five exchanges. In this match against Ling Jie, everyone believed that Ling Jie would lose, or take the initiative to surrender. No one expected that the one who took the initiative to surrender would actually be Ling Feiyu!

“Does this mean, that Junior Brother Yun’s opponent for tomorrow is Ling Jie?” This result actually caused Cang Yue to subconsciously let out a small breath of relief. After all, no matter how you think about it, the sixth level of the Spirit

Profound Realm sounds less menacing than the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm.

“Could it be that since Ling Jie is the Villa Master’s son, Ling Feiyu doesn’t dare to defeat him on stage, so he surrendered first?” Xia Yuanba scratched his head as he asked in confusion.

“No! If Heavenly Sword Villa was such a pompous place, it would never be able to become Blue Wind Empire’s number one power.” Yun Che slightly lowered his brows and took new

look at the Ling Jie who happily laughed down the Sword Discourse Arena: “There is only one possibility, and it is that Ling Jie’s strength surpasses Ling Feiyu’s. Not only that, it probably far surpasses his... Looks like tomorrow would be a hard battle.”

He shifted his gaze towards Heavenly Sword Villa’s seating area, discovering tranquility in both Ling Yuefeng and Ling Yun’s expressions, as if what this outcome revealed was not the slightest bit unexpected.

The speed and results of the second match was completely unexpected as it came to a close. The third match came shortly after, with Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Yun and Frozen Cloud Asgard's Shui Wushuang on opposite ends.

This was a showdown between Heavenly Sword Villa's core disciple and Frozen Cloud Asgard's core disciple. This kind of duel usually appeared as the final battle in the past, but this year's group divisions had brought about an imbalance in average strength, making what ought to be the final battle of the

tournament shift to an earlier date, the Quarterfinals.

And the speed of how this confrontation ended, was even faster than the second match.

“Wushuang, you can surrender this match if you want.” Chu Yueli suddenly said as Shui Wushuang was about to leap up onto the Sword Discourse Arena.

Shui Wushuang went silent for a moment, but did not dispute it.



Instead, she softly said: “Yes.”

“Three years ago, your Senior Sister Mu’s strength had far surpassed the current you, yet suffered a crushing defeat to Ling Yun. Three years had passed since then and Ling Yun’s strength has enormously leapt again. You are simply not his match. As long as you’re even a little serious about it, you will be injured all over and lose in less than five moves. Since it’s like that, it’s better off to simply back out.”

While letting what others saw as their “core disciple” abandon the match, Chu Yueli had actually said that with a particular calmness. Her peerlessly beautiful eyes did not reveal the slightest hint of unwillingness and regret. Perhaps, this was merely a simple insignificant decision.

“Yes, Junior Master, Disciple understands.” Shui Wushuang slowly nodded, and then returned to her seat.

Ling Wugou then declared:

“Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Shui Wushuang forfeits the match, Heavenly Sword Villa’s Ling Yun wins with a no match, and will be entering tomorrow’s Semifinals!”

Even though this result lead to much discussion among the crowd, it still wasn’t that unexpected. After all, Ling Yun’s strength was truly too terrifying. Even if Shui Wushuang was Frozen Cloud Asgard’s current core disciple, she simply did not have the power to win that matchup. Immediate forfeit was the most sensible of selections. But on one

hand, Frozen Cloud Asgard still had one disciple remaining, which was Xia Qingyue, who had the lowest profound strength out of the three participating disciples. Her opponent also just happened to be Xiao Sect's core disciple whose profound strength surpassed hers — Xiao Kuanglei. If she lost, Frozen Cloud Asgard would have no chance to enter the Semifinals, and could only settle for fourth place.

Up until now, the only match that had officially been carried out was only Yun Che's match

against Fen Juebi, yet three out of the four appearing in tomorrow's Semifinals had already been decided. It was Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling brothers, Ling Yun and Ling Jie, as well as Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che.

Two of Heavenly Sword Villa's members entering the top four was not outside of anyone's expectations. But the fact that the top four had an additional disciple that did not belong to any of the Four Major Sects, who was only from the Blue Wind Imperial Family that had always placed in the middle to lower

rankings, had made the entire ranking tournament become exceptionally unusual. The Blue Wind Imperial Family that had always received shame and never received glory in the ranking tournament had actually relied on a nobody, a mere seventeen year old disciple, to continuously make everyone get taken aback. His performance had allowed him to make his way into the individual top four placings. In this ranking tournament, Blue Wind Imperial Family's power rankings was now also a guaranteed minimum of top three!!

As long as one was not blind, they could clearly see that after Yun Che had defeated Fen Juebi, the previously calm Qin Wushang laughed so hard that he had grimaced in pain. Even his incisors looked as if they were about to fall out.

“Fourth match of the Quarterfinals —— Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Xia Qingyue versus Xiao Sect’s Xiao Kuanglei! May the two contestants enter the Sword Discourse Arena within thirty breaths of time. If otherwise, it would be deemed as renouncing the match!”

Following Ling Wugou's loud declaration, the numerous sounds of discussion in the Sword Discourse Arena stopped as it became a field of silence.

Xia Qingyue and Xiao Kuanglei were respectively Frozen Cloud Asgard and Xiao Sect's remaining disciples. Whoever loses, would have no chance of entering the top four.

“Even though the talent of Frozen Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue is shockingly enough to



enter the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm at the age of seventeen, and is only one level short of the Ling Yun in the past, Frozen Cloud Asgard is still Frozen Cloud Asgard. It is impossible for them to nurture a true 'Ling Yun'. She is too young. She is not old or experienced enough. For her profound strength to reach the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm so quickly, it is bound to be extremely unstable. As long as nothing completely unexpected happens, you will win this match very easily. But, you still must never underestimate your opponent. In all the previous ranking tournaments, it is not known

how many so-called geniuses had fallen to the three words ‘underestimating the opponent’. Understand?” Xiao Juetian reminded Xiao Kuanglei.

“Third brother, good luck. Burning Heaven Clan has already suffered a crushing defeat. As long as you win this match, our overall ranking will be a guaranteed minimum of top three. Moreover, there is more than a ninety nine percent chance that we would rank second. This will be our Xiao Sect’s historical breakthrough!” Xiao Kuangyu said as he patted Xiao Kuanglei’s shoulder with a

serious expression on his face.

“Don’t worry. In this match, I will only win, and never lose! Don’t forget, I still have not taken out my Earth Shocking Sword. If I reveal the Earth Shocking Sword, forget about the Xia Qingyue at only the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, even if it’s someone at the peak of the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, it is still impossible for me to lose.” Xiao Kuanglei said with complete confidence.

“In the case of weaponry, we may not necessarily be at an advantage.” Xiao Wuji’s brows sank: “We have the Earth Shocking Sword, but don’t forget, Frozen Cloud Asgard has the ‘Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon’. Shui Wushuang had already surrendered so in this match, Frozen Cloud Asgard has an even larger reason than us to not lose. This time, Frozen Cloud Asgard will inevitably give Xia Qingyue the Sky Profound Weapon.”

“Hmph. You are completely overthinking it. One must be in at least the Earth Profound

Realm to master the ‘Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon’. Even if it is in Xia Qingyue’s hands, it would at most display only thirty percent of its power. Besides, so what if it could actually exhibit all of its power? With the same Sky Profound Weapon in hand, Kuanglei’s experience and profound strength would far surpass Xia Qingyue’s. Don’t tell me that even that is not enough to defeat her?” Xiao Boyun said in a happy mood.

Regarding his own grandson, Xiao Zhen’s, loss against Xiao Kuanglei, Xiao Boyun was naturally irritated about that.

But what was currently happening was related to the entire Xiao Sect's reputation and honor. He obviously did not want to see Xiao Kuanglei lose.

“Everyone, be at ease. If I lose this match, I would not have the face to return to Xiao Sect.” Xiao Kuanglei nodded once, and then suddenly jumped more than one hundred meters in the air before gently landing on the ground. He leapt over a hundred meters again and then steadily landed in the center of the Sword Discourse Arena. Before he landed, a longsword had already been taken out in the midst of

the sound of its unsheathing. No matter the sword's imposing aura or the user's imposing aura, both were incomparably shocking and drew gasps of admiration.

“I’ve heard that Xiao Kuanglei’s innate talent is not the least inferior to his eldest brother Xiao Kuangfeng and second brother Xiao Kuangyu. I’m afraid that this match would not be the least bit suspenseful.”

“So what if his innate talent’s high. Isn’t he born from a

concubine? In the future, he would at most become an elder.”

“That may not be so. Only Xiao Juetian’s youngest son, Xiao Kuangyun is born from his official wife, but everyone is aware of Xiao Kuangyun’s playboy tendencies. He is around the same age as Xiao Kuanglei and I heard Xiao Juetian had used up innumerable resources on his body, but it seems as if he could not even reach the Spirit Profound Realm. If Xiao Kuangyun inherits Xiao Sect in the future, I’d reckon that it would be thoroughly destroyed.



Xiao Sect would never make such a mistake. The future successor for the sect will inevitably be one person among Xiao Kuangfeng, Xiao Kuangyu, and Xiao Kuanglei. I'm afraid that when that time comes, there will once again be another rivalry with both open and secret means. If isn't handled properly, they might even commit fratricide..."

As Xiao Kuanglei got up on stage, the discussions' focal point was actually not on the battle itself, but instead Xiao Kuanglei himself. This was because a great majority believed

that the following match would not be suspenseful at all.

“Hold back your strength as much as possible. Don’t reveal too much, so as to avoid making tomorrow’s opponent to be on guard.” Chu Yueli only had a few words of advice.

“Yes, Master.”

Xia Qingyue respectfully saluted and turned her delicate body around. As her beautiful figure’s gracefully moved, she

lightly landed in front of Xiao Kuanglei. Both her light movements and body were incomparably alluring. A completely transparent ice sword silently appeared within her hands. An ice sword, had basically become a Frozen Cloud Asgard disciple's signature weapon. Frozen Cloud Asgard's main weapon of choice was also the sword, but their swords were made of ice, and all emitted different degrees of cold air. Chu Yuechan's sword was like so, and Xia Qingyue's sword was also the same. However, the grade of Xia Qingyue's ice sword could not compare the sword Chu Yuechan had used during her life and death battle against

the pair of flood dragons in the Wasteland of Death.

“Good!” Ling Wuhou nodded, and then raised his right hand: “Last match of the Quarterfinals, Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Xia Qingyue versus Xiao Sect’s Xiao Kuanglei. Match start!”

“This humble one is Xiao Kuanglei, and is here to ask to experience Xia Fairy’s Frozen Cloud Arts!” Xiao Kuanglei split into a smile as his longsword pointed frontwards. He rapidly

spun his body around, conjuring up a jade green cyclone. The image of an especially tyrannical eagle was behind his body as the imposing aura on his entire body grew stronger at this moment, shooting to a level that would make one gasp in admiration.

Frozen Cloud Asgard was a gathering of beautiful women. Even though Xia Qingyue's face was covered by a white veil, just seeing her figure, eyes, and exposed snowy skin was enough to determine that she was a young lady who possessed a peerless beauty that could bring cities into ruin. And in front of

any beautiful women, a man with even an above average strength would have the mindset of showing off. If he were to gain the other party's good opinion or even admiration, then that would naturally satisfy his vanity by a large margin.

Xia Qingyue's movements were much more nimbler than his. She straightforwardly thrust her sword at him as a magnificent ice lotus blossomed atop the ice sword's sharp tip.

# Chapter 225 – Glazed Glass Heart, Exquisite Body

---

Before the two swords closed in, the sword wind had already collided with the ice lotus. With a “Clang” sound, the ice lotus was grinded into pieces in the violent sword wind. However, it did not falter just like this, but instead transformed into countless solid chunks of ice, and rained down toward Xiao Kuanglei against the storm. In an instant, the storm carrying the shattered ice lotus swirled around the two, as if sweeping up a tornado of ice and snow.

Clang clang clang clang....

Amidst the string of colliding and breaking sounds, the dispersed ice flakes were blown away by Xiao Kuanglei. However, the cold energy that these ice flakes contained was heavier he had imagined; after he blew away all of the ice flakes, both of his hands were already thoroughly flushed red from the cold, and only fully recovered after two breaths of time. He moved back half a step, and said with a slight smile: "I had already heard that Frozen Cloud



Asgard's Frozen Cloud Art was unparalleled under the heavens, and as expected it deserves its reputation. Next, I'll be more serious. Goddess should be careful now."

Xiao Kuanglei's reminder out of "good will" that was full of arrogance did not gather any hint of reply from Xia Qingyue. Her clear and cold eyes was like tranquil water without any ripples, while also as beautiful as the bright moon. It made Xiao Kuanglei's heartbeat speed up uncontrollably after he took two more glances. He immediately fiercely took in a breath as all of

his profound strength surged up. The storm that swirled around him became even faster, and the image of the hawk behind him also became more and more clear, and felt like as if it had substantialized into the real thing near the end.

“Extreme Wind Sword!”

Xiao Kuanglei's eyes flashed. The storm surged on his body as he suddenly rushed toward Xia Qingyue. His speed was really as fast as a storm; profound practitioners below the Earth

Profound Realm could only see a wisp of afterimage flashing through like a bolt of lightning —— Among the Four Major Sects, Xiao Sect's speed was second to none!

“Haha, looks like Third Younger Brother has gotten serious, to actually display his fastest speed right away. Seems like, this match will be over before long.” Xiao Kuangyu said with a leisure smile.

Xiao Juetian also slowly nodded: “Seems like Lei'er did

not ignore our advice. He did not underestimate the enemy, and did not hold back either. Very good. After this battle is won, he will be facing Ling Yun. Since the battle with Ling Yun is impossible to win, let's heartily display the true power of our Xiao Sect in this battle!

“Hmph!” Xiao Zhen, who was beside Xiao Boyun, looked at the match in the arena with cold eyes and snorted in a quiet voice.

Under the storm-like high speed movement, Xiao

Kuanglei's sword also swiftly swept out. The storm engulfed the sword's body, and as the sword's brilliance danced magnificently, four lines of sword gust that could smash through mountains and rocks shot toward Xia Qingyue at the same time.

Clang Clang Clang Clang!

Four ice lotus flowers bloomed in front of Xia Qingyue, and blocked all four sword gusts as they shattered. Xiao Kuanglei had also successfully closed in

on Xia Qingyue at this moment, and his chain of sword combos assaulted at Xia Qingyue like a relentless storm of rain. Xia Qingyue retreated with leisure and uniform steps, and with every step retreated, a beautiful ice lotus would bloom below her feet...

“How astonishing, this Xia Qingyue is only at the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, but not only did her Frozen Cloud Art already reach the fourth stage of the Ice Lotus Realm, she could also handle it with so little effort. Mu Lingxue of the previous tournament was

at the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, but could only glimpse at the entrance of the Ice Lotus Realm. Seems like, Xia Qingyue must be the disciple with the highest aptitude in these few tens of years, without any doubt.”

“But it seems that Xia Qingyue is clearly at a disadvantage. All of her moves are defending and warding without any spare strength to retaliate. That can’t be helped; the disadvantage in age and profound strength exists right there.”

The hawk's image behind Xiao Kuanglei's back spread its wings high, and his sword moves came one after another. That one longsword was swung by him into sword mirages that blotted out the sky; together with his speed, the illusory human mirage and the sword's mirage overlapped, making one dazzled and unable to follow with their eyes. The crossing strikes of the sword, as well as the collisions of storm and ice lotus, brought up a series of explosive sounds that made one's eardrums buzz.

The cyan colored sword gust, along and the ice lotus's broken



shards, continually shot out from the profound storm, caging them. Facing the Xiao Kuanglei's astonishing speed, Xia Qingyue's movements was instead as light as smoke, as if she was a goddess elegantly descending into the mortal world, yet she was not constrained by Xiao Kuanglei's speed in the slightest. With every movement of their footsteps, many traces of sword marks as well as pit marks caused by colliding profound energy would emerge on the ground.

The entire audience was silent,

and only the wave after waves of ear-piercing explosive sounds could be heard. Every single pair of eyes all firmly focused onto the two figures on the Sword Discourse Arena. They had thought that this was a match that would quickly end, and perhaps would even be over from the start; no one had expected that it would actually be this intense to such a degree. For the two who were three years apart in age and one rank apart in profound strength, their currently situation was actually without any doubt, evenly matched.

The complexions of the Xiao Sect's people gradually became unsightly. Xiao Juetian's brows sunk bit by bit, and said with a low voice: "Seems like, we have underestimated Xia Qingyue. Her strength, may perhaps, not be weaker than Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin at all."

"No problem. Ao what if she could stalemate with Third Younger Brother? If Third Younger Brother uses the Earth Shocking Sword, the outcome of the match would be decided right away." Xiao Kuangyu said without worry.

“Using the Earth Shocking Sword, would definitely be somewhat unethical and inelegant. The two right now looks evenly matched, but if it continues like this, the advantage still belongs to Lei’er’s side. After all, the richness of Lei’er’s profound strength, would no matter what, surpasses that of the little girl who’s only seventeen years of age.” Xiao Juetian remarked.

“Go Big Sis, go!” Xia Yuanba’s hands were gripping with sweat. His eyes stared wide as he

shouted non-stop. He could not clearly distinguish the situation on the arena, and could only see that Xia Qingyue seemed to be retreating all this time. His heart also became more and more anxious.

“Don’t worry, your Big Sis won’t lose that easily.” Yun Che casually comforted him.

“Won’t lose that easily?” Within Yun Che’s mind, he heard Jasmine’s snorting sound: “This woman, simply doesn’t have any possibility of losing. If

she uses her full strength, the person on the other side won't even have the chance to last five rounds. The current situation, is merely done by her in deliberation for the purpose of hiding her true strength."

"Oh?" A burst of surprise emerged within Yun Che's heart: "To not have the chance to even last five rounds? That's impossible right?"

"Hmph! Half of the reason why you can challenge other an entire realm above you is

because of your aptitude and comprehensive ability, the other half is your divine profound veins, divine bloodline and divine profound arts. But in the field of aptitude, comprehensive ability as well as constitutional, I've finally found someone that completely surpassed you, and that is this woman. Not only does she possess the 'Heavenly God's Spiritual Veins' with all fifty-four profound entrances open, she also possesses the 'Heart of Snow Glazed Glass' that's even ten thousand more times rarer than the Heavenly God's Spiritual Veins. Her constitution, even at the Realm of the G... the place I was born from, could only produce one

with the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’ once every ten thousand years... After tomorrow, whether your opponent would be Ling Yun or not, really is still unknown.”

Yun Che: “!!!!”

Whether the previous life or the current life, it was still the first time that Yun Che who was extremely familiar with the medicinal ways and constitution of the world had heard these two names of “Heart of Snow Glazed Glass” and “Nine



Profound Exquisite Body”, and thus could not completely comprehend the true meaning behind these two names. However, from Jasmine’s words, he heard a hint of extremely clear tint of shock. Something that would shock even Jasmine, how could it possibly be ordinary?

And Jasmine’s last sentence, thoroughly shocked Yun Che. Because that sentence of Jasmine’s was clearly hinting... that Xia Qingyue, may even have the capability to defeat Ling Yun!!

The battle on the Sword Discourse Arena had already become white-hot. The hawk image behind Xiao Kuanglei spread its wings again. With a slight whistling sound, his body had already vaulted high into the air. Like boiling water, the profound storm that surrounded his body also started to rampage at this moment. Circles after circles of light cyan colored profound energy ripples slowly proliferated outwards, and forcefully pushed away all of the surrounding atmosphere. Immediately after, Xiao Kuanglei's longsword pointed downwards with a slope, and all

of his profound energy concentrated onto the sword's tip. Instantly, the long sword's tip greatly surged with a green light, and a ball of storm howled and swiftly whirled around the sword's tip with an extremely frightening speed.

At this time, a wave of oppressive aura had also shrouded the entire Sword Discourse Arena, and made the audience at the arena's borders feel a strong sense of suffocation just by looking at the sword tip that was currently encircled by green light.

After a long battle with no results, Xiao Kuanglei finally lost his patience, but did not take out the Earth Shocking Sword. The reason was just as Xiao Juetian had said; not only would it be inelegant to use the number one sword of Xiao Sect when facing someone that was both younger and lower in profound strength, it may also garner mockery from others. He decisively used his strongest ultimate move.

“Fleeting Strike!!”

Xiao Kuanglei cried out loudly, and his entire body plummeted downwards within the surging storm. His entire being was as if a descended sword god, and the extremely sharp sword force overwhelmingly closed in on Xia Qingyue....

“Oh! I didn’t expect that Third Younger Brother could actually cultivate the ‘Fleeting Strike’ to this degree... It ought to be around forty percent attained?” Xiao Kuangyu said with surprise.

“This is a breakthrough he had only recently acquired. Seems like the match is about to be over.” A victorious smile has already emerged onto Xiao Juetian’s face.

Along with the extremely swift downfall of Xiao Kuanglei’s sword force, a line of fissure crazily extended outwards on the ground. Yet when facing this incomparably terrifying strike from the air, Xia Qingyue appeared extremely relaxed. She lifted her white hand, and slowly pointed the ice sword above her. On top of the sword tip, a ice lotus flower bloomed in

silence. But this ice lotus was no longer crystal clear, and instead carried the sky's light-blue color.

Boom!!

Xiao Kuanglei's Fleeting Strike and Xia Qingyue's ice lotus collided in midair. Then, a thundering noise resounded throughout the entire arena. The cyan colored profound energy storm completely shrouded the surrounding space, and the ice lotus also completely exploded, raining down ice crystals and mist that

covered the sky. All of a sudden, the two's bodies were completely shrouded by cyan colored and light-blue colored profound energy, making one unable to see even a hint of their figure. They could only hear the two waves of exploded profound energy crazily colliding...

It was only after an entire ten breaths of time, did the cyan light and blue light finally disperse completely. The swords of the two had also finished their last collision, and they respectively retreated backwards under collision's impact.



There was not the slightest hint of change in Xia Qingyue's expression, and her pair of charming eyes were still as clear and silent as water. Let alone injuries, not even her white colored long dress was tainted by a single speck of dust. The ice spirits that floated around her body were also not disordered in the slightest.

It was also the same for Xiao Kuanglei who was on the opposite side. Other than his hair that appeared slightly disordered, there weren't any

wounds at all on his entire body. During that intense collision of ultimate skills earlier, miraculously, neither of the two actually received any hint of injuries.

But just by judging from the expression, Xiao Kuanglei clearly wasn't as calm as Xia Qingyue. He totally did not expect that such a result would happen. He used his ultimate move that had just achieved an initial success, but during that collision earlier, all of his sword force and gust were blocked by the opponent one after another, and didn't even touch a single

hair on her head. This made him secretly shocked in his heart, and at the same time made him feel greatly ashamed.

In this situation, he understood that if he was to win, he would have to take out the Earth Shocking Sword.

“As expected of a goddess from Frozen Cloud Asgard, you really are unable to be underestimated by others. When I was the same age as goddess, I definitely wasn’t a match for goddess. But this match, I must win no

matter what. If I have offended goddess in anyway because of this, I'll be sure to apologize toward goddess after the match."

As he finished speaking, Xiao Kuanglei's sword had already been put away. His right hand pressed onto the spatial ring, and was just about to take out the Earth Shocking Sword. But just as his right hand touched his left, his expression suddenly froze, and his actions stopped right then. Right after, his complexion became whiter and whiter with an astonishing speed... Then, as if a statue

carved from ice, his entire being stiffly fell down onto the ground while facing upwards.

As he fell, Xia Qingyue's gaze did not appear to quiver in the slightest, and wasn't surprised at all.

It was also at this time that several tens of wounds of varied sizes suddenly bursted open on Xiao Kuanglei's body, and waves after waves of blood spurted out... These wounds all came from Xia Qingyue's ice sword, but under the Frozen Cloud Art,

which encompassed the energy of extreme cold, these wounds were instantly sealed by ice after they were stabbed open. Not only did they not bleed, not even pain would be felt. Just like this, Xiao Kuanglei intensely fought with Xia Qingyue while being unaware, and did not notice at all that under the shrouding cyan light, his body was had already been consecutively slashed more than thirty times ten breaths ago... And if any of these wounds were to be slightly offset, they would be able to damage the life veins... Which is to say, if not for Xia Qingyue showing mercy, within that ten breaths of time, he had already died over thirty times.

# Chapter 226 – The Heaven Blessed Xia Qingyue

---

Ling Wugou was startled at first. Then, he quickly advanced forward and examined Xiao Kuanglei's current condition. After a simple investigation, he breathed a sigh of relief. With a flip of his palm, every wound on Xiao Kuanglei's body was completely sealed. Soon afterwards, he immediately declared: "Xiao Kuanglei has temporarily lost the ability to move, Frozen Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue wins! She shall advance into tomorrow's Semifinals!"

All six of Xiao Sect's members had already stood up. Each and every one of them had expressions of horror. Like an angry eagle, Xiao Juetian quickly flew up towards the Sword Discourse Arena. After examining Xiao Kuanglei's injuries with a brush of his profound energy, his expression changed again.

There were more than thirty cuts on his body, but none of them were deep. He was very clear on the reason why more than thirty cuts suddenly burst



forth from Xiao Kuanglei earlier. This type of thing happening in front of a Frozen Cloud Asgard disciple could not be even more normal. What had shocked him was that from Xiao Kuanglei's appearance earlier, it was as if he did not sense at all. To him, what was even more shocking than that, were not these cuts, but what was beneath the injuries: cold energy that had sealed off a large majority of Xiao Kuanglei's meridians. It was also unknown as to when this cold energy had entered Xiao Kuanglei's meridians before suddenly exploding just a moment ago. If it had been detected, under profound energy suppression, it was

unlikely for Xiao Kuanglei to be in a state in which his blood spurted out like that from his injuries.

Xiao Juetian deeply looked at Xia Qingyue and said in a low voice: "I had originally thought that in this Ranking Tournament, Frozen Cloud Asgard would not have another excessively showy performance. It looks like I have erred. To have let this much cold energy into Lei'er's body and have done so without him knowing or feeling it, your Frozen Cloud Arts must be in at least the fifth stage... Good thing that Lei'er

had not taken out the Earth Shocking Sword, or else he would've lost even more miserably!"

Xiao Juetian's voice was very low, and was low enough that only Xia Qingyue could hear it. After finished speaking, he carried away the completely immobilized Xiao Kuanglei and left the Sword Discourse Arena.

Today's competition, was one unexpected match after another. The last match of the Quarterfinals was another

unforeseen conclusion.

“... What the hell happened? Why did Xiao Kuanglei suddenly collapse? I was blinded by the profound energy light earlier so I didn’t see anything.”

“Xiao Kuanglei probably got hit by Xia Qingyue’s ultimate move. The impact of its force must have been too fierce. With the addition of the fact that Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Frozen Cloud Arts could instantly freeze wounds, this was probably why Xiao Kuanglei did not realize

that he had received this many injuries... It should be like that?"

The audience was in much debate. They could still explain Xiao Kuanglei's wounds suddenly opening, but him suddenly falling over in a stiff manner made them baffled. On the main seats, Ling Yuefeng slightly knitted his brows, and said: "Seems like, this seventeen year old young girl is far from as simple as she appears on the surface. Yun'er, you should be glad that she is only seventeen this year. If she were to be the same age as you, she would be a

strong opponent that could go shoulder to shoulder with you.”

Ling Yun was silent.

With the conclusion of the Quarterfinals, tomorrow's Semifinals' arrangements quickly appeared on the center of the profound stone.

Match Number One: Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che —— versus —— Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Jie.

Match Number Two: Heavenly  
Sword Villa's Ling Yun ——  
versus —— Frozen Cloud  
Asgard's Xia Qingyue.

“Uwaaah! Both brother-in-law  
and big sis actually entered the  
top four! It's t-t-t... too  
wonderful!” Seeing the names  
on the profound stone, Xia  
Yuanba was excitedly to the  
point of being somewhat  
incoherent. Him joyously  
following Yun Che to Heavenly  
Sword Villa this time, was only  
out of yearning toward the  
ranking tournament like the rest

of profound practitioners; he absolutely did not expect that his sister and brother-in-law would actually become two of the main characters in this ranking tournament. The two people who were closest to him had reached the top four in the highest level of Blue Wind Empire's young profound practitioners, that kind of joy, proudness, and glory, was so intense that it was indescribable.

“Ah? Brother-in-Law, why do you keep wearing a stiff face? Are you not happy?” Seeing that not only was Yun Che not excited, but instead had a silent



and solemn expression, Xia Yuanba asked in confusion.

Yun Che shook his head, and said with a faint smile: “Nothing, I just didn’t expect that she, Qingyue, would actually be this strong.”

“Hehe, I didn’t expect it either.” Xia Yuanba clenched his fist, and said with sparking eyes: “If father hears that Big Sis has already become so amazing, he would definitely be incredibly happy. If mother hears of it...” As he spoke the word “mother”,

Xia Yuanba's voice lagged for a bit. His gaze uncontrollably darkened a little as he muttered with a low voice: "She would definitely also be very pleased."

Yun Che did not notice the abnormality in the last half of the sentence Xia Yuanba spoke. He settled his heart, and asked in his mind: "Jasmine, the 'Heart of Snow Glazed Glass' and 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body' you spoke about earlier, what exactly are they? And how could you tell?"

“....I had not noticed it originally, but when she used twenty percent of her true strength earlier, it no longer escaped my eyes. However, in a place with such low levels of strength, they shouldn't know of the concept of 'Heart of Snow Glazed Glass' and 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body', including her self. She at most would know that herself is different with others in some places.”

Yun Che: “...”

“Since you wish to know, I will tell you.” Jasmine’s voice was as tender and ethereal as flowing water from a spring, but she deliberately displayed a kind of high up and elderly tone with utmost effort: “‘Heart of Snow Glazed Glass’, is a special type of mind. One with this kind of mind possesses an extremely pure and clear disposition, as if ice and snow. With growth, one would have incomparable comprehensive ability and a strength of the soul that would grow stronger and stronger. With her current age, the Heart of Snow Glazed Glass’ abilities are only revealed initially, and will exhibit extremely high comprehensive abilities as well

as memory. Everything she have observed would be memorized just with a glance and be firmly engraved in her mind, no matter what level of detail, and will not be forgotten throughout her entire life. As the ability of the Heart of Snow Glazed Glass gradually reveals, she would be able to sense good and evil as well as danger, and easily see through various mysteries, and even see into the heart of all living things.”

“Someone who possesses the Heart of Snow Glazed Glass, would all normally be supreme and most sacred existences that

transcends the world; even Divine Kings and Divine Sovereigns would certainly not dare to provoke. Because the legends say that someone with Heart of Snow Glazed Glass is blessed by the heavens, and whoever harms them, would suffer punishment of the heavens way.” Jasmine described lightly.

Yun Che’s brows consecutively spasmed for several times, then weakly asked: “Um... Are you really sure that there are really this kind of... uh, thing that’s blessed by the heavens on her body?”

“Hmph! This kind of thing that surpasses your cognition, you naturally wouldn’t believe it. I’m not going to bother explaining it to you. Her Heart of Snow Glazed Glass won’t be able to really mature in this kind of plane anyway. However, the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’ she possesses...” Jasmine’s tone suddenly became odd: “It’s best for it to not be noticed by anyone that knows the concept of ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’. Otherwise, heh... She ought to not expect a single peaceful day in her entire life.”

“Eh? Why is that?”

“The word ‘Exquisite’ in the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’, refers to a ‘Exquisite World’. Which is to say, that in her body there exists a ‘small world’! Do you understand what kind of notion that means? This means, that she could possess an unlimited and endless power! Power that the body of flesh cannot handle, can all be stored within the ‘Exquisite World’. Like this, no matter what profound art she cultivates, none of them would be restricted by her profound strength level and the endurance



of her body. For example, her sectoral profound art 'Frozen Cloud Art'; Chu Yuechan is half step into the Emperor Realm and her cultivation of the Frozen Cloud Art is at the sixth stage, and cannot continue further. It is highly likely that it's because the seventh stage needs at least the profound strength of the Emperor Profound Realm. But to someone who has the 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body', if she wishes, she could cultivate to the seventh stage even if she was at the Elementary Profound Realm! Together with the extremely high comprehensive ability brought by the 'Heart of Snow Glazed Glass', I wouldn't even be surprised at all if her

current cultivation of Frozen Cloud Art is higher than Chu Yuechan's."

From Jasmine, not only did Yun Che come in contact with type after type of inconceivable profound arts, he had also continually heard some concepts that were completely foreign and even seemed extremely far and illusory. The shock it brought to Yun Che this time was undoubtedly the greatest, and also the most direct... Because these concepts that completely broke common sense, precisely appeared on his wife in name.

“...Exquisite World? A human’s body, can actually have this kind of thing?” Yun Che absently muttered in a low voice. He had heard that when profound strength was great to a certain extremely high realm, one could open a small world that belonged to oneself. But he had never heard that a small world could also exist within a one’s body.

“If she really does possesses the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’ that you speak of, then it’s a special aptitude that belongs to

her and has nothing to do with anyone else. But why do you say that if it's discovered by others, it is possible for her to never be at peace throughout her entire lifetime?" Yun Che questioned.

“Because, someone who possesses the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’, is the greatest of the greatest of profound cultivating incubators in this world. Especially for someone who obtains her vital virginity; they will generate an Exquisite World within their dantian that belongs to himself during the intercourse of Yin and Yang...”

---

The Xia family that Xia Qingyue and Xia Yuanba belonged to were merchants for generations after generations, and their father Xia Hongyi was more so an honest businessman who valued integrity and loyalty. So why would the pair of son and daughter he birthed... Xia Yuanba have the ‘Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins’, while Xia Qingyue also had the even more mysterious “Glazed Glass Heart” and “Exquisite Body” that Jasmine spoke of....

If Jasmine's judgement was not wrong, then this Xia Hongyi really was blessed by the heavens to an extreme. In Jasmine's mouth, no matter Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins or Glaze Glass Heart and Exquisite Body, were all extremely rare existences.

And their mother...

Yun Che didn't have any notion about Xia Yuanba and Xia Qingyue's mother. It was because he had never met her,

and it seemed that she had passed away since they were young.

Yun Che walked along the path in Heavenly Sword Villa and silently thought about things. The curtains of the night had already started to fall. There were not many people outside, and occasionally he would encounter a few sect's disciples. They would all stop in their steps and look at him afar with a gaze of awe. Within these people, most had wantonly mocked him during the Profound Strength Assessment on the first day of the Ranking

Tournament. But now, they looked at him with a kind of revering gaze... To reach the top four of the Ranking Tournament, this was a height that they did not even dare dream about.

Yun Che came to the front of Frozen Cloud Asgard's courtyard. The courtyard's gate was wide open, but it seemed as if the inside and the outside of the courtyard were two different worlds. Gentle and warm wind blew on the outside, yet a bone-chilling cold aura floated within the courtyard, and rushed at him as it followed the air



current.

Yun Che did not step into the courtyard. After taking in a breath of air, he said: “Blue Wind Profound Palace’s disciple, Yun Che, requests to see the Fairy of Frozen Beauty and hopes to personally thank her kind rescue today.”

# Chapter 227 – The Danger Planted In Silence

---

Usually, there would be quite a number of people looking around in front of Frozen Cloud Asgard's courtyard. All of them wished to have a glimpse at the beauty of the Frozen Cloud fairies, but there was basically not a single one who dared to make conversation with them. No matter how much authority, power, fame or potential a young practitioner possessed in his territory, when the practitioner arrived before a disciple of the Frozen Cloud

Asgard, he would always turn timid, and a feeling of shame would also grow uncontrollably within.

As for those who dared to directly request an audience with Chu Yuechan, there were absolutely none.

Ice particles fluttered, and very quickly, a graceful fairy-like figure appeared before him, and she was actually Xia Qingyue. Her beautiful eyes quietly stopped at Yun Che's face, and said. "Sir Yun, if you wish to see

Frozen Beauty Senior Master, it's best that you take your leave. Frozen Beauty Senior Master has always like peace and quiet, and has never been willing to interact with people outside Frozen Cloud Asgard. Your intentions, I believe Frozen Beauty Senior Master has heard it."

Yun Che looked at her, and said sternly. "Qingyue my wife, I give you two choices. One, call me husband, or two, call me by my name... You're my legally married wife, where would you find a wife calling her husband 'Sir'!?"

In regards to Yun Che's words, Xia Qingyue was not the least bit angry, as she slightly nodded. "Alright, then, Qingyue will refer to you as Yun Che from now on."

The left corner of Yun Che's lips twitched for a bit. He let out a light sigh, and said helplessly. "I rather wish that you were like before. Back then, you would always look at me coldly, but when I intentionally 'offend' you with my words, you would still express some anger... But now, you're always so dull, it looked

as though you have turned into someone else.”

The light in Xia Qingyue’s eyes slightly turned, as she softly said. “My Asgard’s Ice Heart Art allows one’s heart to be calm and collected, and removes one from her desires. In regards to your words earlier, Qingyue shall take them as compliments.”

“Removes one from her desires... Then, would that person still be human?” Yun Che shook his head, and changed the topic. “Qingyue my wife,

congratulations on entering the top four. After this Ranking Tournament, your name shall spread throughout the world.”

“Words like that, I should be the one saying them to you.” Xia Qingyue’s expression turned slightly complicated. “I completely did not expect that you would reach such a level in just a short span of two years. You have given those who have ridiculed you, underestimated you, and even chased you out of your home, the most powerful retaliation.”

“I wish to see the Fairy of Frozen Beauty. Qingyue my wife, please help me convey my request to her. She might possibly be willing to see me.” Yun Che said.

Xia Qingyue shook her head gently. “That’s impossible. Frozen Beauty Senior Master will definitely not meet you. Please return, the Ranking Tournament tomorrow...”

“Qingyue, allow him to come in my room.”



At this moment, a voice, that was as vague as mist and as cold as ice, resounded from an unknown direction, gradually falling into the ears of the two people. A deep astonishment flashed across Xia Qingyue's beautiful eyes, as she immediately said. "Yes, Senior Master... Yun Che, follow me."

The furnishment of the courtyard was exactly the same as Yun Che's, and coincidentally, the position of the room Chu Yuechan chose, was exactly the same as Yun Che's. With Xia Qingyue leading him, Yun Che reached in front of her room's

unlatched door. After a slight hesitation, he pushed the door open and entered.

A chilling atmosphere instantly enveloped him. In front of Yun Che, was the beautiful back figure of a fairy. She stood before the window, bathing herself in the bright moonlight spilling in from the window. Her white robe shone under the moonlight. Fluorescent light shimmered along the exposed snowy flesh on her neck, and was even more beautiful than moonlit snow.

Suddenly, Yun Che felt as though he was looking at a deity who had descended onto the mortal realm from the Moon Palace, and could not help but be dazed. For a moment, he forgot the things he had wanted to say. Chu Yuechan did not look back at him, and her voice coldly sounded. "Do you know why I want to meet you?"

"I know." Yun Che regained his senses, and faintly replied. "Because you wish to see me, just like how I long to see you again after separating from you back then."

“... Nonsense!” Deep anger could be felt within Chu Yuechan’s voice. “The reason why I’m willing to see you, is to tell you this personally. The scores between us, have already been settled the moment I left the Wasteland of Death. We no longer owe each other, and we will never have any form of connection between us again! You’d best forget everything about the interactions between us. After today, we will be complete strangers!”

However, Chu Yuechan’s words

caused Yun Che to laugh. “If you’re really that determined to cut all scores between us, then why did you personally come to the Heavenly Sword Villa? Earlier today, when I was in trouble, why were you the first one to step out and help me? This is something the rumored Fairy of Frozen Beauty who has a cold personality would definitely not do.”

“The reason why I came to the Heavenly Sword Villa was to simply come in place of our Asgard Mistress. As to why I saved you, it was because I could not stand Fen Moli’s shameless

actions. It had nothing to do with you.” Chu Yuechan coldly said.

“You can fool me, but can you fool yourself?” Yun Che smiled. “If your heart is really that determined, why would there be a need to explain all that to me? Ask yourself, within this period of time, do you not always have the uncontrollable urge to think about me? The urge to think about the half a year we spent together... The true reason why you came to Heavenly Sword Villa this time, is it really not to see me? As for the other reasons, they are simply excuses that you

came up for yourself...”

While Yun Che was saying this, he walked towards Chu Yuechan. “I initially thought that, before I have become strong enough, I would not have the chance to see you. But when I found out that you have actually came to the Heavenly Sword Villa as well, do you know how happy I was? Because, I was absolutely confident that, you came here because of me. Because you knew that I will represent the Blue Wind Imperial Family and participate in this Ranking Tournament.”

“Shut your mouth... Don’t come over!” Yun Che’s words utterly confused Chu Yuechan’s heart, and when she felt Yun Che approach her, a hint of panic actually flashed across the face of this grand expert who had stepped into the Emperor Profound Realm. When she was about to turn her body, a pair of arms had already gently and firmly, embraced her waist, hugging her from behind.

Chu Yuechan’s mind momentarily blanked out, and her entire body instantly



stiffened. Beside her ear, Yun Che's gentle voice sounded. "I know, it's impossible for you to abandon Frozen Cloud Asgard, and it's even more impossible for you to accept yourself. I don't have the rights to force you, but I just wish that, before I gain the power to bring you out and break through all that obstructs us, you will not forget that, not only are you Chu Yuechan of Frozen Cloud Asgard, you have the identity called Little Fairy... You're the Little Fairy who only belongs to me... Even if you wish to forget your identity as Little Fairy, then... then... then... you were the one who took my virginity! You can't be thinking of not taking responsibility for it

and prepare to completely forget about it after finishing your meal, right...”

Chu Yuechan's recent actions were honestly bizarre. Meeting a disciple that did not belong to her sect in the night, if it was in the past, it was something that basically would not happen. Xia Qingyue, who had brought Yun Che to Che Yuechan's room, looked at the swaying candlelight in the room with a heart was filled with suspicion.

At this moment, the unlatched

door suddenly opened... to be exact, it was forced open. Yun Che's body was sent flying out upside down by a cold pressure. Although he barely managed to stabilize his footing after landing, he still looked rather fatigued, and the door that was forced opened shut tight with a "bang" sound the moment he landed.

"You angered Senior Master?" Xia Qingyue's beautiful eyes turned, looking amusingly at his fatigued expression.

“How can that be possible? Even if I were to possess ten thousand times more guts, I would not dare to anger her.” Yun Che said seriously. “The Fairy of Frozen Beauty simply sent me off kindly after accepting my thanks... Mn, that’s how it was.”

“Is that so...” Xia Qingyue’s eyes momentarily stopped at his face. Evidently, she did not believe his words. She then said gently. “You have achieved your objective. If you have nothing else to do here, please return. In tomorrow’s Ranking Tournament, you will be facing

Ling Jie. Master has told me that, although Ling Jie is young, does not look to be the least bit shrewd, and expresses his feelings freely, he's actually an absolute genius whose talent even surpasses Ling Yun. In tomorrow's duel, you have to be careful."

"Alright, thank you for the reminder. In contrast, your opponent tomorrow is more troublesome than mine." Yun Che's voice paused, and then, he suddenly continued. "Qingyue my wife, have you ever heard of the 'Heart of Snow Glazed Glass' and 'Nine Profound Exquisite

Body’?”

“‘Heart of Snow Glazed Glass’, ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’?” Xia Qingyue’s brows slightly curled out of suspicion, and then, she shook her head. “Qingyue has never heard of it.”

Seeing Xia Qingyue’s reaction, it was evident that she was clueless about the Heart of Snow Glazed Glass and Nine Profound Exquisite Body. Yun Che immediately said. “Oh, it’s nothing much. I will take my leave then.”

Just when he turned and was preparing to leave, Yun Che's steps suddenly stopped again. He turned back, and said. "In your duel tomorrow with Ling Yun, I hope that, the one who turns out victorious is not Ling Yun, but you. In that case, in the final match, your opponent... will be me!"

Even though he left just those few words, they were filled with arrogance and doubtless confidence, as though, in his eyes, the outcome of his duel with Ling Jie tomorrow had

already been determined. Looking at Yun Che's leaving figure, Xia Qingyue sank into a moment of silence, and then, she softly muttered to herself. "In a span of less than two years, just what in the world did he experience..."

At the same time, at another place in the Heavenly Sword Villa.

Ling Kun, as one of the executives of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, his status could only be considered



as the low-middle class in the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. However, in the Blue Wind Empire, his status, and his strength, was enough to frighten and be revered by all the large sects. None of them would dare to offend or disobey him in the slightest.

In the eyes of the Four Great Sacred Lands, these small empires, were simply nothing but third-rate places that they would not even bother to step into.

The courtyard Heavenly Sword Villa had prepared for Ling Kun was also extremely extravagant. Just by the number of servants attending to him alone were more than a dozen, and currently, all of these people who attended to him were sent away by him. In the room lighted up by the pale candlelight, he took out a treasure jade that was entirely bluish purple in color. This was a piece of an extremely rare and unique sound transmission jade.

With the insertion of profound energy, the bluish purple sound transmission jade emitted out a

pale glow, and the sound transmission formation hidden within began to quickly spin.

“Young Hall Master, how have you been? Do you still remember this trivial old man?” Ling Kun narrowed his eyelids, and softly spoke to the sound transmission jade.

“Senior Ling? Ling Kun of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region? Now this sure is rare. It seems like, you should have something interesting to discuss with this young master?”

“That’s right.” Ling Kun slowly said. “This old man wish to make a trade with Young Hall Master. I believe Young Hall Master will definitely be interested in this trade.”

“Oh? Go on.”

“Hoho, I heard that Young Hall Master have been looking for a girl who possesses the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’ in these recent years. And a mystical girl like that, this old man has actually encountered

one. I wonder if Young Hall Master is interested?”

“What?” The voice which was initially calm instantly became hurried, and then, his voice once again sank. “This young master naturally will not suspect Senior Ling’s eyes. But since it’s the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’ that would rarely appear in ten thousand years, why isn’t Senior Ling using for himself, or presenting it to your Holy Master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region?”

“This old man knows of his own status, I really do not have the sufficient guts to enjoy this Nine Profound Exquisite Body. If I were to offer it to the Holy Master, I will only be able to exchange it for the so-called ‘merits’, but if I were to offer it to Young Hall Master... Heh, I believe, with Young Hall Master’s boldness and wit, this old man will definitely receive even more benefits.”

“Hahahaha! Senior Ling sure is a smart man. This young master likes to talk with smart people. Looks like back then, when this young master left the sound

transmission jade to Senior Ling, it was really the most wise decision on my part. Whatever benefits Senior Ling wish to have, please feel free to express them. If it's the real Nine Profound Exquisite Body, no matter what Senior Ling wishes to have, it would never be too much."

"As I thought, Young Hall Master is straightforward." Ling Kun laughed. "This old man only wants one thing... A thousand five hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine Crystals."

“... A thousand five hundred grams. This request of Senior Ling’s, sure is big.”

“Hahahaha, to others, forget about a thousand five hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine Crystals, it would be difficult for them to even obtain a thousand five hundred grams of Purple Veined Heaven Crystals. But, to Young Hall Master, I believe obtaining a thousand five hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine Crystals isn’t really a hard task. And, when comparing the Nine Profound Exquisite Body to a thousand five hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine



Crystals, it basically isn't worth mentioning."

"Fine! Within two years, this young master will personally prepare a thousand five hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine Crystals. I hope when that time comes, Senior Ling will definitely not disappoint me."

"Young Hall Master, please be at ease. Unless this old man is tired of living, otherwise, I definitely would not dare to fool Young Hall Master in the slightest. Then, this old man

will shall quietly wait for Young Hall Master's good news..."

The light in the sound transmission jade disappeared. Ling Kun raised his head, quietly smiled, and muttered softly to himself. "The characteristic of that girl's profound aura, is exactly the same as the records of the Nine Profound Exquisite Body in the Secret Tome... Heh, I did not expect that such a divine body would be born in this trivial land. Heaven is basically on my side!"

# Chapter 228 – Celestial Yang Sword

---

Today, was the tenth day of the ranking tournament.

It was early morning and the sky had not yet completely brightened. The fifth to eighth place ranking matches were already underway on the Sword Discourse Arena. Although the ones participating in those matches were the losers of yesterday's Quarterfinals: Ling Feiyu, Shui Wushuang, Xiao Kuanglei, and Fen Juebi, entering the Quarterfinals had

already made them completely worthy of being the younger generation's peak talents.

Even though Xiao Kuanglei had been cut thirty three times by Xia Qingyue, they were all shallow injuries. At that time, his meridians had merely been frozen over, so he was completely fine today. As for Fen Juebi, because of his self-destruction blood essence and the heavy injuries he suffered after mounting a sneak attack on Yun Che, he did not participate in today's fight over fifth to eighth place. Also, even if he were to be unscathed, he was

basically not the other three's match. Whether or not he participated did not have the slightest influence towards the end result but it did at least, preserve the last traces of face he possessed.

Due to Fen Juebi's absence, the original four matches became three. In the first match, Shui Wushuang defeated Xiao Kuanglei. In the second match, Shui Wushuang defeated Ling Feiyu with difficulty. In the third match, Ling Feiyu defeated Xiao Kuanglei.

And thus, Shui Wushuang's individual ranking was fifth place, Ling Feiyu's individual ranking was sixth, Xiao Kuanglei's individual ranking was seventh and Fen Juebi's individual ranking was eighth. It was the first time that Xiao Sect and the Burning Heaven Clan's power rankings had been decided this early... Xiao Sect placed fourth and Burning Heaven Clan placed fifth, making it the first time they fell out of the top four in several hundred years.

The primary cause was Yun Che, the ultimate dark horse's

birth into the world.

The white clouds in the sky lightly floated. The matches deciding fifth to eighth place had finally come to a close, and it was only nine in the morning. The morning sunlight was somewhat lacking in power but the mood of the audience around the Sword Discourse Arena was at an even greater high because the ranking tournament's Semifinals, was finally getting closer.

Before the ranking tournament

had gone underway, there were already many who had long predicted the final placings. The name Ling Yun had long since shook the country and it was universally accepted that first place was his. There were numerous different versions of guesses taking place, but they all still simply fastened around a few individuals... Frozen Cloud Asgard's Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin, Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Feiyu, Burning Heaven Clan's Fen Jin, Xiao Sect's Xiao Kuanglei...

But out of the four who had entered the top four, aside from



Ling Yun, the other three had not been anticipated nor were any of them core disciples of sects that they had heard of, so much that there weren't even a few who knew their names. Even Ling Jie, only had the title of Heavenly Sword Villa Master's son. No one expected that he possessed enough strength to make Ling Feiyu surrender and not fight... After all, he was way too young. Everyone thought that the reason why he came to participate was merely to gain experience.

What was even more shocking

was that, excluding Ling Yun, the oldest of the other three was only seventeen years old.

In all of ranking tournament history, this was the unprecedented of firsts!

In the second match of the Semifinals, the conclusion of the match between Ling Yun and Xia Qingyue had already been decided in everyone's eyes. Even if Xia Qingyue was even more talented of a genius, it was still impossible for her to bring about a second conclusion. As a result,

what the crowd paid close attention to was the first match of exchanges between Yun Che and Ling Jie.

One had shot into the top four with profound strength at the True Profound Realm and the other was a sixteen year old who had shot into the top four. No matter which one became the victory, any one of them would bring about an incomparably shocking precedent. It was not exaggerated in the least if one were to say that the two, were super geniuses that were rarely seen even once in several hundred years.

After seeing Yun Che's battle with Fen Juebi yesterday, no one dared to easily decide that he would lose to Ling Jie. In his match with Fen Juebi, even though it was the first time he had revealed his terrifying true strength, it appeared as if it was still not his full strength. As for Ling Jie, to have made Ling Feiyu immediately surrender, was proof that he had never even exhibited his true strength at all.

This historical showdown was undoubtedly going to be a match

brimming with suspense —— a duel between the lowest profound strength in all of ranking tournament history and the youngest participant of all time!

Yun Che had long since stood on top of the Sword Discourse Arena. Soon after, Ling Jie slowly made his way up as well. Standing sixty meters away from Yun Che, he greeted him with a cheeky smile: “Hehe. Boss, good morning.”

Ling Jie’s voice was not at all

loud, but it was loud enough to be heard by Ling Wugou. Just as he was about to announce the names of the two parties and their affiliation, he suddenly heard the way Ling Jie addressed Yun Che. Both his legs went limp and he nearly kneeled on the floor.

“Oh! You actually knew that you ought to call me boss. I thought that you wouldn’t acknowledge your debt.” Yun Che put both his hands on his chest as he smiled with glee.

Ling Jie stuck his nose up and said with great enthusiasm: "I, Ling Jie, am a true man. Every word I say carries an enormous amount of weight so there's no way I would go back on a deal. Only cowards would go back on their word."

"Really?" Yun Che looked at him with great contempt: "I've lived in the Villa for more than ten days but you, the little brother, actually had never come to visit me once. You're not really good at being a little brother, are you?"

“Err...” Ling Jie opened his eyes wide as his voice also became lower. He whispered in a low voice: “I... I actually wanted to go, but Big Bro said that it wouldn’t look good. It’s really not my fault.”

Knowing that he was in the wrong, he quickly changed topics as he lifted his head: “But Boss, you indeed did not disappoint me. When those people were all jeering at you before, I knew that you would definitely make them regret it. Hehe, as expected, it was not outside of my expectations. How could someone who would make



me have no choice but to surrender and become a little brother be any ordinary person? But I never expected that Boss would actually storm into the Semifinals and even be up against me... Hohohoho, this is a super great opportunity!

“Eh? Opportunity?”

“Yeah, yeah!” Ling Jie drew back the corners of his mouth as he laughed: “Even though I wouldn’t renege on a debt and call you Boss, I am still a little unsatisfied. After all, you only

received three of my strikes that time and didn't even defeat me. To be boss, you ought to be stronger than the little brother, right?"

"And so?" Yun Che fingered his chin and began to faintly smile.

Ling Jie held out his hand and swiped his spatial ring, bringing out a sword case sculpted entirely in white jade... That's right, it was a white jade sword case, and was the Earth Profound Weapon he had always been using in every one of his

previous matches. As his hand stroked the bright and clean sword case, Ling Jie's smiling expression began to have a difficult to look at sharp edge: "Even if I enter tomorrow's match, there's absolutely no way that I would beat big bro, so I'll use all my power this match! And let everyone in the world remember my, Ling Jie's charm! To make me, Ling Jie, perfectly willing to be your little brother, you must completely defeat me while I'm using my full strength on this Sword Discourse Arena! If you defeat me, you'll be my boss. If you lose... Mn, I'll consider letting you be my little brother!"

“Okay!” Yun Che immediately nodded. His expression also became focused and serious: “If I can’t even defeat you, I obviously do not have the qualifications to be your boss. Since that is the case, bring out your sword. I’ll let you see true strength!”

Ling Jie’s hands softly stroked once and the white jade sword case opened. Along with a flickering orange colored radiance, an entirely golden orange thin sword that was approximately five foot and five

inches flew into Ling Jie's hands.

Dooongh...

Once the orange sword met the ground, it suddenly released a lingering sword cry and its sword force also quietly filled the air. The sword force was not fierce, nor was it aggressive, but it brought along an incomparably piercing strength. It completely covered the entire Sword Discourse Arena within two breaths of time. Even those who sat on the very edges of the

Sword Discourse Arena all sensed a calm sword force quietly envelop them. It mysteriously drew the attentions of their hearts and gazes and they could not help but centralize their focus onto the body of the orange colored sword. If one were to carefully examine the sword, they would discover that a small width of space around the orange sword was slowly distorting.

“What kind of sword force is this! I’ve never heard of this before... Wait! Orange colored sword, could it be...”

“Celestial Yang Sword!!”

“Right! It really is indeed the Celestial Yang Sword, one of Heavenly Sword Villa’s Sky Profound Divine Swords! It’s been said that Ling Yun subdued the Celestial Yuan Sword at the age of seventeen. He is only sixteen, yet had actually subdued the Celestial Yang Sword!”

“Heavenly Sword Villa does indeed produce geniuses after geniuses. Ling Yun is already an

absolutely stunning genius but I didn't expect that Ling Jie was an even better one! For Ling Yuefeng to have two sons like that, is enough for him to live a comfortable life."

"In this battle, it looks like it is simply impossible for Yun Che to be victorious against Ling Jie, who has mastered the Celestial Yang Sword."

Yun Che had never heard of the Celestial Yang Sword. However, once the Celestial Yang Sword was revealed, Yun Che sensed its



abnormal shocking sword force. The surroundings that filled with the sounds of numerous discussions which contained deep surprise also allowed him to clearly understand that this sword was by no means ordinary. This sword was undoubtedly a world shaking Sky Profound Sword!

For the first time in this year's ranking tournament, a Sky Profound Weapon had finally appeared!

With the Celestial Yang Sword

in hand, the atmosphere around Ling Jie's entire person had suddenly changed. His entire person had become a sword as a dignified sword aura moved along his entire body. His eyes were no longer filled with any speck of laughter and carelessness. Instead, it emitted a sharp sword's piercing cold light.

Yun Che took half a step back. As he waved his hand, a thick Overlord's Colossal Sword without a sharp tip suddenly fell from the sky. It landed in front of him with a boom as half of its body deeply submerged into the

ground. Yun Che grabbed the sword hilt with both hands. With a slight force, the Overlord's Colossal Sword whistled amidst the crushed stone that swirled in the air as its sword force directly lunged at Ling Jie with a mountain's massively overbearing momentum.

However, the Overlord's Colossal Sword was still merely an Earth Profound Weapon and was an entire realm's level inferior to that of the Celestial Yang Sword. Its absolutely overbearing aura did not really stifle much of the Celestial Yang

Sword's grandeur; instead, it was split apart by the Celestial Yang Sword's calm sword energy.

The difference between a Sky Profound Weapon and an Earth Profound Weapon was like the difference between fine steel and straw. In terms of weapons, Yun Che was at an absolute disadvantage. However, his imposing manner did not weaken in the slightest. With a wave of his heavy sword, the wind screeched with a deafening howl: "Come."

“First match of the Semifinals: Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che versus Heavenly Sword Villa’s Ling Jie... Match start!”

“Not only did Jie’er immediately reveal the Celestial Yang Sword, his aura also does not have the least bit of complacency. It looks like he really values this battle with Yun Che.” Ling Yuefeng slowly said as he looked at the two people on the Sword Discourse Arena.

“Mn,” Ling Yun nodded: “After all, Yun Che is the only person

Little Jie truly submitted to in this world aside from me. Half a year ago, Yun Che had forcibly blocked three of Little Jie's strikes with a profound strength at the third level of the True Profound Realm. He impressed him so much that he continuously talked about it for a long time. At that time, Yun Che's overall strength was several miles away from Little Jie. In this half a year, Little Jie's strength had increased by leaps and bounds so if he were to be defeated by Yun Che this time, he probably would sincerely and completely submit to him... Perhaps to an even greater extent than his submissiveness towards me."

Ling Yun's words caused Ling Yuefeng's brows to twitch. After he pondered in silence for a while, he suddenly said: "If it's like that, then we definitely cannot let Yun Che win. Yun'er, if Jie'er is by any chance at a disadvantage, help him with the Celestial Yuan Sword!"

Ling Yuefeng's words startled Ling Yun for a bit. Then, as if he understood something, he nodded his head lightly: "I understand."

# Chapter 229 – Yuan Yang Combination

---

“RIIIPP~~~”

Space was split apart by the incomparably deafening sound. As the sword energy of the Celestial Yang Sword in Ling Jie’s hands swept across the air, it cleaved the air, and even the hard surface of the Sword Discourse Arena was directly cut open like tofu. Three hundred meters away, a sharp imposing force came at the entire audience, infiltrated to the bottom of their hearts, and sent



a chill down almost everyone's back. It was as if that extremely cold orange sword light and sword intent was pressed against their backs.

Once Ling Jie took action, it was indeed with full strength. Facing the sword energy that was sweeping towards him, Yun Che used both hands to sweep his sword. When he activated the fundamental stage of Prison God Sirius' Tome, the profound energy in his entire body exploded. Along with a low and deep exploding sound, Overlord's Colossal Sword welcomed the Celestial Yang

Sword's sword energy with a strike of its own.

“Boom!!”

The sharp and tyrannical forces loudly came together with a loud bang. A frightening windstorm of profound energy disclosed without restraint. The profound energy barrier suddenly trembled. Like spiderwebs, cracks instantly rushed out on the arena's stone floor below feet of the two opposing members.

The faint orange colored sword energy was unceasingly destroying, creating cracks, as the heavy sword's powerful windstorm also quickly tore the ground. Throughout the frenzied intermingling of the forces, the two people's gazes struck the other... One was as peerlessly sharp as the edge of a sword while the other had a mountain's majesty and tranquility.

Once their strikes collided, both their hearts were simultaneously shocked. The audience at edges of the Sword Discourse Arena were even more

inexplicably horrified as they widened their eyes one after the other.

“So... So strong! Even from this far away, I could feel that terrifying sword energy!” A sect disciple who placed in the top hundred exclaimed with a trembling voice.

“I also felt it! Ling Jie’s actually this strong. In the previous matches, he basically had never gone all out. No! He didn’t even use half his strength. If this strike was aimed at me, I simply

would not be capable of resisting in the slightest. Is... Is he really only at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm?”

“As expected, people from Heavenly Sword Villa are all monsters! But... But this kind of strike, Yun Che actually received it!!”

With the sword force and sword intent released by Ling Jie with all his strength as well as the Celestial Yang Sword’s Sky Profound                    might,                    the magnificence of this one strike,

transcended everything that happened in yesterday's Quarterfinals! Not only was it those young profound practitioners, even the elders watching this scene were dramatically moved.

“Not only has he subdued the Celestial Yang Sword, he even released at least sixty percent of the Celestial Yang Sword's power.” A deep tremor was visibly heard in Xiao Juetian's voice: “This one's future accomplishments, would definitely far surpass Ling Yun's.”

Xiao Juetian's gaze spun towards Yun Che. Ling Jie's strike completely stunned him. And the Yun Che, who had completely received Ling Jie's strike made by the Celestial Yang Sword with only an Earth Profound Sword, left him at a complete loss. He did not know what words he could possibly use to evaluate him.

Bang!!

The two forces simultaneously exploded, and the two people

were also sent backwards from the impact. Ling Jie stepped off the ground with his back foot. As fast as a flitting phantom, his entire person suddenly dashed forward, and the Celestial Yang Sword in his hands had lost its presence... as if it had vanished into thin air.

“So fast!” Yun Che was slightly shocked. Whether it was Ling Jie’s movement speed or sword speed, they both far exceeded his expectations, to such an extent that even his eyes could not catch up.



Yun Che did not attempt to catch Ling Jie's sword mirage anymore. With a surge of profound strength, the Overlord's Colossal Sword was wildly swung outwards. Following the heavy sword's swinging arc, lines and lines of sword rays exploded and broke in succession. The heavy sword swept towards Ling Jie's figure, yet it could only touch a faded afterimage... At the same time, an ice-cold chill was felt from the nape of his neck.

RIIIP!!

The orange-yellow sword energy pierced down like lightning, drawing a black scar through the air as it also sliced the remains of Yun Che's afterimage into two. Yun Che's real body reappeared ten meters away, and he came smashing back with a counterattack. The heavy sword's berserk windstorm and Ling Jie's sword energy tightly concentrated and crashed.

There were many disadvantages in choosing the heavy sword as one's main weapon of choice; the most notable disadvantage was the

difficulty level in mastering it, as well as the fact that the heavy sword's excessive weight would implicate one's movement speed by a substantial amount. But Prison God Sirius' Tome allowed Yun Che's mastery of the heavy sword to a close to perfect level. Even if for Dragon Fault, a Sky Profound heavy sword, Yun Che only used a few days to completely master it. As for the heavy sword's burden on one's movement speed, the unpredictable profound movement skill, "Star God's Broken Shadow", made up for that deficiency.

The existence of both Prison God Sirius' Tome and Star God's Broken Shadow perfectly offsetted the two major flaws of the heavy sword, and also made Yun Che the person most suitable to use the heavy sword. In comparison, the powerful arm strength bestowed by the Great Way of the Buddha was actually secondary... because as long as one's profound strength level was high enough, no matter how heavy it was, they could still pick up a heavy sword. However, the heavy sword mastery's difficulty level, as well as the burden of the weight itself, was not something that profound strength could interfere with by any means.

And since these two major flaws were no longer there, then the power that the heavy sword released was one in which other weapons would never be able to reach. Its power was violent enough to make both ghosts and gods shiver.

The heavy sword did not have a sharp tip. With its great swings and body, each strike shattered a few, or even a dozen different lines of frenzied yet dazzling sword light. The profound energy barrier shook violently. The windstorm conjured by the

heavy sword brought about an unceasingly long tornado in the center of the Sword Discourse Arena. The gullies and cracks beneath their feet grew aplenty. The smashed pieces of the broken arena were lifted up by the windstorm, shooting out in all directions like arrows and darts.

It was not known how many times the heavy sword had been swung, and it was also not know how many orange yellow sword lights had been smashed apart, but under Ling Jie's shocking speed, not a single corner of his clothes had been touched.

It appeared as if the two were in deadlock. Even though Ling Jie appeared to be on the offense, he was actually constantly complaining in his head. In his eyes, the speed at which Yun Che swung his heavy sword was not that quick. The time he took to swing once, was enough for him to swing a dozen or so times. But even these dozen strikes, could be completely thwarted by one strike from Yun Che. The power from Yun Che's one offensive strike could only be cancelled by a dozen of his... which he could only do after rapidly retreating back a certain distance. If he had

not moved away from his original spot during his counterattack, he wasn't completely certain that he could block it... even when he was wielding the Celestial Yang Sword.

Every time he thought that he had at last seized an opening, what pierced was always Yun Che's afterimage, and Yun Che's subsequent counterattack would always make him feel that he was surrounded by danger.

He definitely did not dare to



directly attack Yun Che. If it was a head-on collision, even though he was confident that he would poke a hole through Yun Che, if he was touched by Yun Che's strike, losing half his life would be considered as getting off lightly.

In the past, whenever he could get close to an opponent, Ling Jie's sword was usually able to easily force his opponent into checkmate. But right now, Yun Che was like a demon god that could not be neared. It made Ling Jie's attacks appear uninhibited and dazzling on the surface, but the truth was that

he felt extremely bound up and was startled with every single attack he made.

This never before felt feeling, made Ling Jie extremely uncomfortable. Because before Yun Che, he had never met an opponent who used the heavy sword.

Clang!

In the brief moment the Celestial Yang Sword and the Overlord's Colossal Sword

touched, following the Overlord's Colossal Sword's impact, Ling Jie leapt very far away. When he landed, the Celestial Yang Sword pointed upwards in the air as a loud shout came out from Ling Jie's mouth: "Heaven's Might Sword Formation —— Heavenly Star Frenzy!"

The Celestial Yang Sword flew up. During its flight, it glowed even more radiantly. Then, as if an illusion, its light quickly dispersed, scattering to make more than a dozen Celestial Yang Swords that looked exactly the same. Soon after, it became

several tens of copies until it became more than a hundred copies. The hundred or more Celestial Yang Swords were like chaotic meteorites with different trajectories as they flew at Yun Che from every direction. These Celestial Yang Swords were no mere illusions; because each and every sword carried an incomparably sharp sword aura.

This kind of outrageously bizarre sword formation made many young profound practitioners pale on the spot. Yun Che's brows slightly creased yet he did not show any signs of

fear. His heavy sword swept upwards as the profound energy in his entire body wildly erupted above

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!”

The pitch-black heavy sword conjured a giant black moon. Just like a bottomless black hole, the frenzied meteor engulfed everything in its path.

BANG BANG BANG BANG  
BANG BANG BANG BANG...

Under the violent storm's force, the lines and lines of sword silhouette containing a Sky Profound sword's power were like fragile icicles as they easily shattered one after the other. After their diffusion, they were smashed once again by the storm's force, and then turned into powdery particles. But in the blink of an eye, before the mighty and terrifying frenzied sword formation had even touched a single hair on Yun Che's head, they had all been torn to shreds. In less than two breaths of time, every sword silhouette had completely disappeared, only leaving the Celestial Yang Sword that blasted off back into Ling Jie's

hands.

“Wh... at!!” Ling Yun’s brow suddenly sank as his face filled with surprise: “Heavenly Star Frenzy had actually been broken that easily!?”

“Because that is a heavy sword!”

Ling Kun, who had practically never spoken during these past ten or so days suddenly started to talk. His hawk like eyes silently fixated at Yun Che as he

indifferently said: “He has completely brought out the heavy sword’s might. As for the heavy sword’s disadvantages, on his body, they have been suppressed to their limits. This one’s master, is definitely an incomparably extraordinary being.”

“Heaven’s Might Sword Formation possesses a power that can smite the heavens and there is no man who does not fear it. In this world, the only thing that can restrain Heaven’s Might Sword Formation to such an extent is the heavy sword!”



The surrounding audience had already become stupefied, after seeing such a frightening sword formation... get completely broken like that!?

Atop the Sword Discourse Arena, Ling Jie had already leapt high in the air, and caught the falling Celestial Yang Sword. In midair, he turned around as his sword flickered with light. His entire body seemed as if it had completely merged with the sword light as he flashed in front of Yun Che.

Heavenly Sword Villa's ultimate instantaneous sword technique——Sword Brilliance of Extreme Lightning!

The Heavenly Star Frenzy that was executed just a moment ago was only half a pretense. This was Ling Jie's genuine finishing move that he had been accumulating power for!

Ling Jie's instantaneous movement exceeded the scope of Yun Che's reaction time. Sword light flashed and the Celestial

Yang Sword had already arrived in front of Yun Che in its thrust, making him completely incapable of swinging his sword in time to block it, and also did not give him enough time to activate Star God's Broken Shadow.

In a split second, Yun Che immediately threw away all thoughts of retreat and defense. The heavy sword in his hands did not have the slightest retracting intent that it should have. Instead, it struck forward without hesitation.

RIIIP!!

Along with a light echo, the Celestial Yang Sword easily split apart Yun Che's protective profound energy defense and pierced his left shoulder as a bloody arrow spurted outwards. Ling Jie's finishing blow was a success so he ought to be happy, yet his complexion suddenly changed right at this moment, because his Celestial Yang Sword pierced through the protective profound energy defense, passed through flesh, penetrated into the bone... then stabbed onto an incomparable hard ten thousand year old

profound iron, and then was incapable of even advancing an inch forward.

Forget about stabbing a hole through Yun Che's body... he could not even pierce through a tiny half an inch.

This was not a strike that any average Joe could randomly execute. Instead, it came from Ling Jie, after completely pouring in his surging sword intent, and was a strike dealt by the Celestial Yang Sword, a Sky Profound Weapon! Even if it was

a monolith or profound metal, they could both be pierced through as easily as tofu!

The shock that Ling Jie was in was no small matter. At this time, Yun Che's heavy sword also swung towards him. Wherever the heavy sword went, a berserk air current blasted open. Ling Jie quickly used all his strength to receive the sword explosions while retreating. At the same time, he continually swung out numerous waves of sword energy in resistance. But even though he did that, he was still swept by the heavy sword's wind

force. The wild force suffocated his heart as his inner organs violently quaked.

Ling Jie staggered backwards as he landed and had to take several steps back before barely managing to stabilize his balance. A line of blood slowly trickled down the corner of his mouth. At the Heavenly Sword Villa's seating area, Ling Yun creased his eyebrows greatly. Then, he suddenly stood up and shouted: "Little Jie, take this!!"

In the midst of Ling Yun's roar,

a thin sword completely suffused with a bizarre cyan light flew out from his hands. Like a shooting star, it crossed a distance of over three hundred meters in a flash. Without even being slightly obstructed when it passed through the profound energy barrier, it was then caught in the hands of a somewhat stupefied Ling Jie.

Once the cyan sword was in hand, as if they had suddenly developed intelligence, the two swords simultaneously emitted an excited sword cry. As the orange and cyan colored glows added to each other's beauty and



radiance, they became more and more intense. What intensified along with it, were two waves of sword energy that stirred and surged out, while also merging into one amidst the stirring.

“This is... Big brother’s Celestial Yuan Sword!” Ling Jie clenched the cyan sword with one hand, and the orange sword with the other. The two swords at this time seemed to have let go of all their proud air, and even gave him a feeling that they were connected through blood.

As he wielded both swords in his hands, Ling Jie slowly lifted his head. There wasn't the slightest hint of childness that belonged to a sixteen year old in his eyes. There was not any color of excitement, and even the sharpness from earlier had all died down.

“Hm?” Yun Che's brows slightly knitted as vigilance suddenly birthed in his heart. Because the Ling Jie in front of his eyes, had suddenly went through a great transformation in his aura. This kind of transformation did not come from himself, but instead came from... the two swords in

his hands!

# Chapter 230 – Overlord's Fury (1)

---

For Heavenly Sword Villa, swords were not merely weapons, but a way of life. Three Sky Profound Swords that were renown throughout the Blue Wind Empire — The Limitless Sword, the Celestial Yuan Sword, and the Celestial Yang Sword were treated by Heavenly Sword Villa as if they were existences equivalent to sacred treasures. Even though the Celestial Yuan Sword and Celestial Yang Sword were both weaker than The Limitless Sword but these two swords

were from the very beginning both meant for the same master. The strengths of the two swords complemented each other and could display a strength rivaling that of The Limitless Sword when wielded together. It was just that in these few hundred years, nobody had been able to simultaneously subdue both the Celestial Yang Sword and the Celestial Yuan Sword.

The Limitless Sword was held by Ling Yuefeng. The Celestial Yuan Sword was subdued by Ling Yun three years ago. The Celestial Yang Sword was subdued by Ling Jie. But now

the Celestial Yuan Sword, mainly under Ling Yun's spiritual prompting, was temporarily under Ling Jie's control, allowing Ling Jie to use both the Celestial Yuan Sword and Celestial Yang Sword in his hands in the Yuan Yang Combination.

With the Celestial Yuan Sword in his left hand, and the Celestial Yang Sword in his right, the two swords, one cyan and one orange, were joined together in a cross in front of Ling Jie's body. The surrounding space rippled like water with waves of sword force. A cold

stare filled Ling Jie's eyes. He said in a low voice: "Boss, you are even more powerful than I imagined. I finally understand why your previous foes were in such a wretched state after being defeated by a few simple sword strokes. It turns out that the heavy sword which most people regard as trash is actually quite fearsome... I am holding two Sky Profound Swords. In terms of weapons, I am holding a huge advantage. Even if I win against you, there will be no glory. However, if I do not borrow the strength of my big brother's Celestial Yuan Sword, there is no way for me to win against you."

Earlier, when he pierced Yun Che with a single sword strike, any third party viewing would have thought that he was forced to withdraw his sword quickly to avoid Yun Che's heavy sword blow, and thus left only a small scratch that was not even painful or itchy. Only Ling Jie himself knew in his heart that it was not that he was forced to withdraw his sword, but that his Celestial Yang Sword could not even find a way to penetrate the opponent's body. He could simply not imagine how Yun Che's body was forged to become so strong to this extent.



The power of his heavy sword was incomparably shocking. However, his defensive ability was in no way inferior to his offensive ability.

“Weapons are a part of your overall strength. Being able to subdue a strong weapon is in itself a form of strength. You are not taking advantage of me. Even being able to dual wield swords is harder by far than only wielding a single sword. If not performed properly, than dual wielding might end up weaker than simply using a single sword. If you can let the full strength of both swords

shine at the same time, then that is also your ability... Come, let me see the full extent of your real strength!”

Yun Che words gave off a relaxed attitude from his words, but the light in his eyes were grave, because the strength currently emanating from Ling Jie was much stronger than what it was before by several folds. After combining the two Sky Profound Swords which had complementary strengths, the sword force emanating out was stronger by multiple times.

Ling Jie slightly flicked his wrists. Just such a slight movement brought out two sharp sword forces, causing a slight tremble in the surrounding air. The Ling Jie who had released the full extent of his profound strength and sword intent was as if he was standing on the peak of a mountain that reached into the clouds and the tip of the sword force was extraordinary enough to sweep the world.

RIIIP!!

The Celestial Yang Sword flew from Ling Jie's hand and flowed like liquid light towards Yun Che. At the same time, Ling Jie's body became a mirage. The sword light in his hands became a fine line and then disappeared as if it was hidden in the gaps of the surrounding air.

Two swords, one in the front and one behind, one left and right, pierced towards Yun Che. When they were still thirty meters away, Yun Che already felt like the tip was at his throat, and within his range of vision, he simply could not see even the shadow of the Sky Profound

Swords. He could only feel two formless cold sword tips that were frightening beyond compare. This time, he did not use the heavy sword's strength to repel them because the two swords were so sharp that they had a great possibility to easily slice open the sword wave produced by his heavy sword.

The Yuan Yang Combination could not be underestimated. In terms of power, it was stronger than simply the Celestial Yang Sword by far too much.

Star God's Broken Shadow activated. Yun Che instantly sent out three clones, causing the Celestial Yuan Sword and Celestial Yang sword to simultaneously pierce empty air. Ling Jie gave a low roar and swiftly turned his body. The Celestial Yang sword instantaneously shot out thirty sword lights. It was like a falling star, the Celestial Yang swords fell towards Yun Che's back. Two Sky Profound Swords, one wielded by hand, another wielded by spiritual sword intent, seamlessly weaved together.

“Chi-chi-chi!”

With only the Celestial Yang sword in hand, Ling Jie's attack was completely repelled by the heavy sword. It could not even touch Yun Che's body. However, at that time, Yun Che could clearly hear the storm caused by his heavy sword being torn as if it was fine silk. The Overlord heavy sword was quickly withdrawn and shifted to defense. The tens of sword beams from the two swords penetrated the heavy sword's force field and then chopped down on the Overlord's Colossal Sword like a raging storm.

DingDingDingDingDingDing...

“Haa!!”

Yun Che sliced the heavy sword and once again the strength exploding from the heavy sword caused all of the sword beams to be deflected. At the same time, he quickly retreated. His gaze turned downwards and fell upon the Overlord Colossal Sword... At the moment, its inky black body was densely riddled with several tens of cuts and wounds of different sizes. The small ones



were merely the size of a grain whereas the large ones were two inches.

The power of the combination of two Sky Profound Swords was simply something an Earth Profound Weapon could not resist.

With the combination of the two swords, Ling Jie had a huge advantage in the previous few exchanges. He did not give Yun Che any time to breathe, the Celestial Yuan Sword in his left hand, both swords crossed in

front of his chest. The orange color and green color light covering the swords became extremely strong, almost dazzling....

“Heaven’s Might Absolute Sword... Moon Break! Haa!!”

Following a loud roar from Ling Jie, two different colored sword beams suddenly shot out from the combination of the the Yuan and Yang twin swords, transforming into a cross shaped sword tip formed by two intersecting orange and cyan

beams...

In the majority of sects that used swords, the main principle for swords was not about how sharp the sword strike was, but how fast it was. It was the same for Heavenly Sword Villa. A fast body coupled with a fast sword beam could easily control the situation and instantaneously kill the opponent. Heaven's Might Absolute Sword comprised seven forms. Half a year ago, Ling Jie had already mastered the "Sun Pierce" form. Heaven's Might Absolute Sword — Sun Pierce was Heavenly Sword Villa's most powerful

sword attack, and Ling Jie's Moon Break was the fastest.

Also it was a “Moon Break” performed with the Yuan Yang Combination!

Ling Jie had already been very close to Yun Che. Yun Che only saw the flash of a cyan-orange beam tip, and then there were two Sky Strength Sword Forces within two feet of him...

Bang!!!!

The tip of “Moon Break” struck against the Overlord’s Colossal Sword that Yun Che swiftly put in front of himself. With a loud sound, the storm of sword force violently exploded. Following the simultaneous explosions from both the cyan sword tip and orange sword tip, in a single instant, there were countless sword beams flying out like a storm towards Yun Che...

The Overlord’s Colossal Sword violently vibrated and Yun Che used his quickest speed to retreat. Raising his profound

force, he activated Star God's Broken Shadow and then instantaneously flashed to several tens of meters in the air above, before finally breaking free of the twisting attack of Moon Break's sword beam. However, his clothes had several tens of holes and there were many small wounds on his body. There was a horizontal slash across his forehead, and a thread of fresh blood slowly dripped out, then immediately stopped flowing.

As expected of... Heavenly Sword Villa...

There was an alarmed cry in Yun Che's heart. He slowly dropped down to the ground. When both his feet had touched the ground, his hands suddenly moved... Half of the Overlord Colossal Sword had broken off. It fell with a huge bang sound upon the ground, forming a huge pit which radiated fractures in the floor.

There was absolute silence throughout the Sword Discourse Arena. Everyone's eyes were opened wide, and their throats could not force out a sound for a

long time. Especially for the young profound practitioners, they could feel a cold wind hissing through their spines, their four limbs, and even the gaps between their teeth.

This battle had let them, with their two eyes, begin to truly understand what it meant to be Heavenly Sword Villa, what it mean to be Blue Wind Empire's number one sect.

That formless sword beam, the sword forms that had left the audience that were three



hundred meters away, cold and breathless. The boundless sword intent that should have been from an expert above the Spirit Profound Realm and the unimaginable fearsome sword techniques which surpassed any expected power. Not one of these things failed to deeply destroy their previous conception of swords. Their greatness swept aside all other swords. In front of this kind of sword display, other sword forms were as dim as fireflies when compared to the light of the brightest moon.

“This is... Heavenly Sword

Villa.” An elderly person sighed deeply.

“The sword intent in his hands is already at such a fearsome level at only the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. If I did not see it with my own eyes, I would not dare to believe it.”

“Too frightening... That Yun Che is also frighteningly strong. To think that he could endure for so long under Ling Jie’s sword assault. If I were in his place, I probably could not even last for two exchanges.”

“However, his heavy sword has already been broken. Victory or defeat should already have been decided.”

“Mn, not bad. To be able to use Moon Break with such power, this level is enough to make me pleasantly surprised.” Ling Yuefeng nodded as his face relaxed by just a few degrees.

“To be honest, if he did not use the Yuan Yang Combination, Little Jie might not be his match.” Ling Yun spoke out.

Ling Yuefeng assented in silence. There was no way for him to deny that.

“Junior Brother Yun...” The moment that the Overlord’s Colossal Sword broke, Cang Yue’s heart, which had been suspended with worry, just sank in seemingly one shot. The Overlord’s Colossal Sword had been Yun Che’s weapon in what seemed like an eternity, almost like one of Yun Che’s arms. Now that the Overlord’s Colossal Sword had broken, there would be no possibility for Yun Che to

oppose Ling Jie. She put her hand on her chest and softly said: "It's alright Junior Brother Yun. You are already very outstanding. I will give you the glory. The Blue Wind Imperial Family will also give you the glory."

"To be able to enter the top four, he has already exceeded my expectations by countless times. For the Blue Wind Profound Palace to have such a disciple is a fortune that only comes once every hundred years. Princess Cang Yue, this person that you brought back from New Moon City will certainly become a

Throne that will impact the whole world.” Qin Wushang nevertheless laughed in an exceptionally calm manner. For Yun Che to have made it this far, he was already just too satisfied.

“Yeah, Brother-in-law is already very outstanding. The opponent is from Heavenly Sword Villa. A loss is a loss. Brother-in-law entered the top four, that’s enough to be proud for a long time.” Xia Yuanba gripped his fists and said with a bit of effort as his voice still tinged with regret... He naturally did not hope to see Yun Che lose, but wished that he

could yet take another step and reach an even higher level. To let all those who ridiculed him and chased him away... to let all of them only be able to look up to him.

As the Overlord's Colossal Sword broke, Ling Jie was also stunned. He did not immediately follow up on an attack but put down the twin swords and said in a voice full of regret: "I... I'm sorry, it was not on purpose... How about, how about... After the competition I will pay you back a sword. The Sword Management Terrace also has many good heavy swords."

Looking at the broken Overlord's Colossal Sword, Yun Che was momentarily dispirited. Upon hearing Ling Jie's words, he shook his head and said: "There is no need. You also have no need to apologize to me. It was my momentary carelessness that could not protect it."

Yun Che went forward and retrieved the broken half of the sword body and softly said: "My old friend, you have accompanied me throughout my growing phase, accompanied me through a long period of hard



fought battles. It is indeed time for you to have your well deserved rest. Be assured that I will not let your fracture be in vain. This battle, I will smoothly win it for you to see.”

As he said this, the broken half of the sword body was already kept by Yun Che within the Sky Poison Pearl. As he was preparing to also store the other broken half that was in his hands, there was suddenly a strong reaction from his hand. From the broken half of the sword, glowed a faint and thin layer of serene black light.

Yun Che was momentarily stunned... A majority of Sky Profound Swords had a low level spiritual conscious but Earth Profound Swords fundamentally could not have any spiritual conscious. And yet the current appearance of the Overlord Colossal Sword clearly showed the reaction of the sword's spiritual conscious!

Even though the Overlord's Colossal Sword was an Earth Profound Sword, it was different from other Earth Profound Swords because it was a sword

used by an Overlord. In years past, the Overlord held it and battled over five thousand kilometers, sweeping through thousands of troops countless times. Who knows how many enemies it had destroyed, how much fresh blood it had drunk. Under the countless times of being tainted by killing intent, maliciousness, domineering aura, heroism, and the scent of blood within the battlefield, it gradually gained a spiritual consciousness bit by bit.

It was the sword of an Overlord, a king who swept ten thousand troops on the

battlefield. How could it accept defeat and destruction!

Feeling the vibration coming from the Overlord's Colossal Sword, Yun Che's expression changed from alarm to calmness, and began to grin accordingly: "Good! I understand now. You are a protecting sword, but even more so, you are an Overlord's sword. There is only death, and never escape! Even if the sword breaks, it is not willing to retreat..."

Yun Che hoisted the half of the

Overlord's Colossal Sword in his hands and pointed the broken sword blade towards Ling Jie: "This battle, I will finish it together with you! The revenge of being broken, you will obtain it yourself!"

## Chapter 231 – Overlord's Fury (2)

---

Ling Jie stared at Yun Che's stance, and the Yuan Yang dual swords which he had initially placed down was once again held horizontally in front of his chest. "As expected of the person who subdued me. That's the spirit you're supposed to have! Even if you lose, you will have to fight until the very end! Alright, I will give you, my future little brother, the most respectable defeat!"

"Heh!" The corner of Yun Che's

lips slightly curved up, and a dangerous light flashed in his eyes. “Little friend, you seemed to have completely misunderstood something. The reason why I raise this half-destroyed heavy sword, is not to receive a respectable defeat, but to defeat you.”

“Defeat me? Eh... Are you sure?” Ling Jie’s staring eyes widened even more.

Yun Che calmly said. “To be honest, during our exchanges earlier, I did not use all of my

strength. As a habit, when there isn't a need, I will always keep some of my strength in reserve, especially when I'm under everyone's attention. Because, my countless experiences have told me that, every bit of power you reveal in front of people, it's equal to exposing another trump card, and exposing oneself to another bit of danger. But, not only were you able to slightly injure me, you even slashed apart my heavy sword. This was seriously out of my expectations, and you indeed possess the qualifications for me to treat you seriously... With this half-destroyed heavy sword in my hand, I will allow you to personally witness what a heavy



sword really is!!”

Yun Che said those words calmly and lightly, however, those words greatly stimulated Ling Jie's self-esteem, causing him to be extremely unsatisfied, and at the same time, furious to a certain extent. He growled. “Fine! Then let me witness your full strength! If you're able to use that half-destroyed heavy sword to beat me, forget about calling you boss, I'm fine if you want me to call you father!”

Although they were separated

by about three hundred meters, with Ling Yuefeng's hearing ability, when Ling Jie uttered those rash and wrong words, Ling Yuefeng's face cramped.

“... Forget about calling me father! If people were to find out that I have such a big son, how am I going to pick up girls in the future!? Prepare yourself... to take this blow of mine!!

Ling Jie was about to speak, however, before he could voice anything out, he immediately swallowed them back. His

eyebrows tightened out of deep surprise.

Wielding the half-destroyed heavy sword in his hand, Yun Che's Prison God Sirius' Tome began to channel without restraints. In an instant, his connection with the heavy sword had already reached the realm of perfection. His aura and the broken Overlord's Colossal Sword were completely fused together. The Overlord Colossal Sword was no longer just a piece of weapon in his hands, but turned into a part of his body.

The feeling of the complete fusion of their auras was extremely mysterious, and to be able to reach this step, was definitely harder than stepping into heavens itself. After Ling Jie subdued Celestial Yang Sword, his final wish was to completely subdue Celestial Yang Sword, and fuse with its aura. Although his talent was extremely good, he knew that it would take him at least years, or even dozens of years to reach his ideal. And if it was someone else, it would be impossible for an extremely large number of them to succeed.

When Yun Che was wielding the heavy sword earlier, it felt extremely imposing and majestic, as though it was an unmovable mountain. But currently, Ling Jie could no longer feel the aura of the heavy sword. In his eyes, even though the half-destroyed sword was evidently in Yun Che's hands, his senses told him that the heavy sword no longer existed, and had already completely assimilated into Yun Che's power and soul... Seamlessly, and flawlessly!

This was Yun Che's biggest gain from hunting countless thousands of strong profound beasts within the Endless Plains in the Dragon God's Trial.

This sort of feeling, was exactly the perfect realm Ling Jie was prepared to chase after his entire life. Yet, currently, it was completely and flawlessly revealed before his eyes, causing his soul to violently stir.

“Take... this!”

This time, Yun Che took the initiative to attack. He made a low jump, waved the half-destroyed heavy sword in his two hands, and directed an extremely normal leap slash towards Ling Jie.

Ling Jie had faced Yun Che's heavy sword smash several times. However, this time, the moment the heavy sword was raised, he felt he was completely suffocated, and the moment Yun Che leaped upwards, it was as though he was looking at an unsurmountable mountain crashing down onto him from the skies.

Even though it was a heavy sword with only half of its blade left, the strength and might of this strike had surpassed every previous single strike!

Boom!!!

Although the heavy sword was broken, due to its complete form being overly gigantic, its half-broken state was still hundred and fifty centimeters in length, which was basically the same length as the Yuan Yang dual swords in Ling Jie's hands. Ling



Jie's figure blurred, avoiding the strike far away like the breeze. Yun Che's strike fell through the empty air, and the half-destroyed heavy sword fiercely smashed onto the ground, bringing about an earth-shattering boom. In an instant, shattered rocks wildly flew, sand and dust filled the air, and a large crater numerous meters deep appeared beneath Yun Che's feet.

The might of this one strike, caused Ling Jie, and everyone around the Sword Discourse Arena to forcefully take in a cold breath.

“Flowing Light Slash!”

Ling Jie took a deep breath. The Yuan Yang dual swords circling his body danced quickly in the air, bringing about numbers of sword silhouettes filled with sword intent capable of willfully tearing apart air and space. Facing the attack of two powerful Sky Profound Swords, Yun Che's expression was mysteriously calm. Without even looking at the two Sky Profound Swords, he locked onto Ling Jie's position, and waves after waves of the half-

destroyed Overlord's Colossal  
Sword were sent towards him.

Boom!

Boom!!

Boom!!!

Boom!!!!

.....

With every swing of Yun Che's sword, a deep crater would always form on the ground, accompanied by the ear-trembling booms and the shattered rocks and dust filling the air. It could be imagined how much near-catastrophic strength was hidden in every single strike. The ear-trembling and heart-shaking booms were as though a giant was currently walking towards them from afar. Even the incomparably firm profound barrier trembled severely with every single swing of Yun Che's heavy sword.

When Yun Che dealt his first strike, everyone was already shocked. With his every single strike, it was as though a sound of thunder was roaring in their ear and hearts. When his Overlord's Colossal Sword was slashed apart, nearly everyone believed the competition was over. However, with a half-destroyed heavy sword, he swung strikes after strikes which contained shocking strength... The might of these strikes, had even surpassed the strikes he dealt when was wielding the complete heavy sword earlier.

Earlier, Ling Jie was still able to slice apart the blasts of wind caused by the heavy sword with his Yuan Yang dual swords, however, the heavy sword's strength which had suddenly increased by several times easily blew away the Yuan Yang dual swords which were filled with sword intent time and time again. Forget about slicing them, the two swords could not even approach them. Even when he captured a weak point with his extremely high level profound movement skill and fast sword speed, Yun Che basically would not care about the Yuan Yang dual swords which had already approached close to his body. He would simply produce a single

smash, which would cause a terrifying blast of wind that completely covered a radius of several meters, forcing Ling Jie to have no choice but to retract his swords and dodge far away.

RIIIP~~

BOOM!

RIIIP~~

BOOM!!

.....

The mix of ear-piercing tearing sounds and ear-shattering booms fiercely smashed into everyone's eardrums and souls. In their exchanges, the two of them had moved a distance of numerous tens of steps, but beneath them, more than a hundred overlapping craters were created. The rows of cracks were even more packed, and there were so many of them that it was basically impossible to count their numbers. The entire center of the Sword Discourse



Arena was destroyed, with no resemblance of its original state.

Sand, dust and shattered rocks rose high in the air. Reaching a height of dozens of meters, it completely submerged the two figures within. Only their moving shadows and their speeding cyan and orange sword beams, which looked as though they were the blazing light of shooting stars, could be faintly seen.

“Is... Is... Is this real?”

“Yun Che’s heavy sword was evidently broken by those two Sky Profound Swords. But why did its might suddenly increase by so much when it’s only at a half-broken state? Unless...”

“Could it be that Yun Che did not use his full strength at all earlier... or maybe, he did not even bring out half of his true abilities?”

“Tenth level of the True Profound Realm... Oh my god, is this a genius, or a monster!?”

Boom!!

Yun Che smashed his sword onto the ground. Even though Ling Jie dodged it with an incomparable speed, he was still sent flying backwards by the wave created. Before landing onto the ground, a cold light flashed in Ling Jie's eyes, the Yuan Yang dual swords intersected before his chest as the cyan and orange glows became incomparably dense...

“Heaven's Might Absolute Sword... Moon Break!!”

This was the attack Ling Jie used to slash apart the Overlord's Colossal Sword earlier. No matter its speed or might, they were both extremely terrifying. However, Yun Che had suffered a big loss due to this strike of his, so how could he fall in the exact same place twice? When the sword silhouettes of the Yuan Yang dual swords flashed, Yun Che's vision had already condensed onto them. With his heightened mental concentration, the speed of the two lightning-fast sword beams were no longer that terrifying, as a clear trajectory of their slashes were perceived.

“Don’t think that only light swords can create sword beams, a heavy sword... can do the same as well!!”

Facing this terrifying attack which was even able to slash apart the Overlord’s Colossal Sword, with sufficient time to prepare this time, Yun Che, who could completely dodge the attack with his Star God’s Broken Shadow, did not choose to avoid it. Rather, he lifted his half-broken Overlord’s Colossal Sword as a layer of dim black profound glow suddenly

enveloped the heavy sword's blade.

“Huu!!”

Yun Che roared loudly, and he slashed down his heavy sword ruthlessly at the Moon Break sword beams flying towards him. Immediately after, a whistling that was close to tearing a person's eardrums sounded, and a gigantic deep black sword beam was explosively shot out under everyone's contracted pupils, crashing against the cyan and

orange sword beams.

“Wh... What!!?” Ling Yuefeng immediately stood up, exclaiming uncontrollably.

If we were to describe Ling Jie’s cyan and orange sword beams as two crescent moons, then the sword beam that came from Yun Che, was a gigantic deep black full moon.

Boom!!

The three sword beams clashed in mid air. The might of the three swords exploded at the same time and they crashed against, interweaved and engulfed one another, producing a fantasy-like a colorful mix of light. Within the light, countless of sword intent wildly poured out, but when these sword intents clashed against the deep-black full moon, they would shatter completely and disappear without a trace in a blink of an eye. Gradually, the cyan and orange colors decreased within the light, and in the end, they completely disappeared, leaving a deep black full moon, which was not even depleted by a half, that



fiercely flew straight towards Ling Jie.

Ling Jie moved a large distance away, dodging the attack by a hair's breath while being incomparably fatigued. Before he could even steady himself, an earth-shaking boom sounded behind him. With a twisted expression, he looked at Yun Che, and simply dazed there for a moment.

Heaven's Might Absolute Sword — Moon Break, was actually destroyed by Yun Che in a direct

confrontation.

And, the weapon he used to do it, was a destroyed heavy sword, with half of its blade slashed apart!

“So... So strong, so strong...”  
Ling Jie unconsciously chanted softly. Only then did he completely understand, that the words “did not use my entire strength” Yun Che said earlier, were not a tough act on his part. Facing the current Yun Che, he felt as though he was unable to breathe.

In that short of moment of silence, other than the whistle of the gentle wind, only Ling Jie's heavy panting could be heard. After a good while, his breath and emotions had finally calmed down. After standing straight up and looking straight at Yun Che in the eye, suddenly, with a tap of his feet, his entire body shot upwards, jumping straight up to the height of thirty-odd meters.

Yun Che's sudden outburst of strength shocked every single person, including Ling Yuefeng. His evaluation on Yun Che rose

time and time again, however, Yun Che would time and time again prove to Ling Yuefeng that he had still been underestimating him by far too much. When Yun Che unleashed that unbelievable heavy sword beam, which completely extinguished the Moon Break sword beams, he understood that it was already impossible for Ling Jie to win in this battle.

“He’s going to use that move now.” Ling Yun raised his head. Looking at Little Jie, who leaped high into the skies, he softly said.

“... This might be his last hope.” Ling Yuefeng lightly sighed. “I didn’t expect that. I really didn’t expect that Yun Che could actually unleash the might of a heavy sword to such an extent. I’m completely unable to see through the depths of this young man... Just who was the person who actually brought up such a peerless monster...”

Yun Che raised his head and looked towards Ling Jie in the high skies, as Ling Jie’s cautious voice sounded in his ears. “Boss, this move, you have to definitely

block it. Because, if you're unable to do so, you might really die from it... I believe you have the ability to block it... If you succeed in blocking this strike of mine, I will become your little brother willingly! And I will definitely not regret it!"

As he said that, the Celestial Yuan and Celestial Yang swords had already flew out of Ling Jie's hands, with each sword floating on his left and right. On the swords' blades, an incomparably strong glowing light beam was being emitted. This was a form of sword beam that broke through limits and common

sense. As the sword beam expanded, the glows became even more piercing to the eye. From afar, it looked as though there were two more suns, one cyan and one orange, in the sky.

An extremely sharp sword intent covered the sky and the earth, faintly painting a gigantic sword formation, and Yun Che's current position, was the center of this particular formation. Yun Che's raised head lowered. His two hands slowly gripped onto the broken Overlord's Colossal Sword as prepared himself to unleash Fallen Moon Sinking Star. But at this moment, the

Overlord's Colossal Sword suddenly shook, and a black glow faintly flashed. And at the same time, from an unknown origin, a few segments of a soul were suddenly added into Yun Che's mind.

These segments, recorded the majesty of a war hero, an Overlord who shook the era he lived in. Within thousands and thousands of troops and horses, with just a swing of his sword, it brought about a catastrophical airwave, and countless hundreds of ferocious enemies were blown apart by that one strike, turning into the many corpses on the



battlefield. His every swing were as though they were capable of shaking the sky and earth. The enemy troops were vast and mighty, and their numbers looked endless from one's eyes, yet not a single person was able to get within thirty meters from him. Within the large army of enemy troops, his tyrannical brandishes with his heavy sword were unstoppable.

And the weapon he wielded, was exactly the Overlord's Colossal Sword in Yun Che's hands.

These segments of the soul, were the sparse images that the tiny spiritual conscience of Overlord's Colossal Sword had recorded. It was also the glory it would never forget as an Overlord's sword.

The power of Fallen Moon Sinking Star dispersed. Yun Che closed his eyes. Following the Overlord's stance within the soul fragment, he raised the half-destroyed Overlord's Colossal Sword, and an incomparably tyrannical sword force, slowly gathered onto the heavy sword.

“Old partner, thank you for bestowing me such a treasured gift at the end. This strike, shall be named —— Overlord’s Fury!!”

# Chapter 232 – Overlord's Finale

---

“Heaven’s      Might      Absolute  
Sword, Final Form —— Radiant  
Sky!!”

Ling Jie shouted out loud. The cyan and orange light beams suddenly exploded at the same time in midair, emitting sword beams that covered the skies and shielded the day. The brightness and power of the sword beams nearly outshone the shine of the sun in the sky. Within the terrifying sword beams, the two Sky Profound Swords released

countless spiraling sword intent, which finally formed a gigantic cyan and orange sword of about thirty meters in length, and it began to descend from the skies.

Bang!!

The entire profound barrier broke under the pressure of the sword force that was as majestic as a tsunami. Several cracks formed and spread wildly atop the Sword Discourse Arena, and the longest crack that formed spread all the way to the borders of the stage. Yun Che stood at

center of the Sword Discourse Arena, where the ground was starting to sink quickly.

Such a formation had made several disciples gather their profound strength for defense out of fear. Just the sword stance of Ling Jie's one move, was already so frightening. Its power was simply unimaginable. However, Yun Che who was standing at the center had stood through all of this as he showed no signs of wanting to tear apart his stance. His expression was also indifferent, showing no signs of fear or solemnity... Obviously, he wanted to face this

attack head on.

Ling Yuefeng stood up and looked at Yun Che's stance, while muttering to himself: "If you are able to receive this attack, forget about Jie'er, even I, would admire you!"

Looking at Yun Che who showed no intention to avoid his attack, Ling Jie's eyes also gave off a strong glint. He gathered all his profound strength, sword intent, and even all of his determination for this attack. This resulted in the biggest

Radiant Sky Sword he had ever created in his life... Even though he had always wanted to defeat his big brother Ling Yun, he had never gone as all out as today before.

If you can't receive it, I win! If you do receive it, you acquire the right to have me, Ling Jie as your little brother!!

The Radiant Sky Sword struck down like a flaming star falling. Under the strong pressure, Yun Che's hair and clothes were stuck down onto his skin but his



body had not moved at all. Although his feet sunk deep into the ground, it was as if he was nailed to the ground and did not shift at all. The half a segment of colossal sword in his hands gave off an overbearing aura. The aura not only did not shrink under the pressure but instead grew even more intensively.

As the Radiant Sky Sword approached, from the time it fell for less than a breath of time, the center of the Sword Discourse Arena had already sunk by at least one foot. On the surface of the stage, countless

new cracks had appeared. Half of Yun Che's body had already been forced below the ground, and his clothes had been cut into countless strips by the blinding sword aura.

Thirty meters... Fifteen meters... Ten meters... Three meters... One meter...

“Overlord's... Fury!!!”

Just when the gigantic Radiant Sky Sword's point was no less than a meter from the top of his

head, the previously silent Yun Che seemed like an angry dragon that had suddenly awakened, as all of his profound strength exploded in an instant. In his cry, the half a segment of Overlord's Colossal Sword that was surrounded with hostility swung to match the falling Radiant Sky Sword without any fear. The overbearing howl of the sword was like the roar of an arrogant dark devil.

Less than a meter above Yun Che's head, the Overlord's Colossal Sword violently crashed into the sharp end of the Radiant Sky Sword above it...

BOOM!!!!!!!!!!

A loud noise that seemed as though a thunderbolt had struck earth rang throughout the Sword Discourse Arena. It even rang through half the Heavenly Sword Villa. At that time, it caused everyone's heart to tremor.

During the noise, two energies that seemed like volcanoes erupting exploded at the same time. The energy seemed to be dispelled frantically during the

impact and a scary storm brew within the Sword Discourse Arena. The storm blew from the center of the stage to where the corners where the audience sat. An extremely strong profound radiance shone on the bodies of Yun Che and Ling Jie, which even completely overshadowed the Radiant Sky Sword. Looking from afar, it was as though ball of fire had exploded on the ground. Within this fire, there were numerous cyan and orange lights which looked like dragons that flew about.

The entire Sword Discourse Arena started to tremble and the

wide cracks started to spread. The longest one had split the entire Sword Discourse Arena into two halves.

Other than Yun Che, Ling Wugou was the nearest to the falling point of the Radiant Sky Sword. With his strength in the late stages of the Sky Profound Realm, such an energy would definitely not injure him. However, he was not careless and did not bother to fix the profound barrier. Instead, he jumped far away and with a slight roar, and released his profound energy to block off all the sword aura coming his way.

At the same time, several other places in the Sword Discourse Arena also had a relatively strong Heavenly Sword Villa disciple to seal up the sword aura, and prevented those around with lower profound strengths to get hurt.

The power of the Radiant Sky Sword far exceeded what Yun Che had expected. However, the prowess of the attack Yun Che executed swinging out his half a segment of colossal sword shocked Ling Jie. The Radiant Sky Sword that was filled with Ling Jie's strength and sword intent was stopped in midair

when it collided with the Overlord's Colossal Sword. The two energies exploded and the gigantic Radiant Sky Sword could fall no further. More than ten breaths later, a tiny crack appeared on the tip of the Radiant Sky Sword and it soon spread throughout the sword until it reached the hilt...

BOOOM!!!!

Another loud sound came, which scattered a few clouds in the sky. This time, it was the sound of the Radiant Sky Sword



shattering from its center...

The Yuan Yang dual swords broke the Overlord's Colossal Sword.

However, the broken Overlord's Colossal Sword, in a more ruthless fashion, shattered the Radiant Sky Sword that was formed by the Yuan Yang dual swords.

There was the rage of the Overlord and his revenge. It was the pride and arrogance of an

# Overlord!

The breaking of the Radiant Sky Sword was not horizontally, but vertically from the tip to the hilt. The wild sword aura that were like storms had also been dispelled quickly as its main body had been shattered.

The tremor on the Sword Discourse Arena gradually subsided, and the violent storm in the sky stopped roaring as well. Within the disappearing energy light, Ling Jie's figure fell from the sky. Following the

torrents of the wind, he drifted countless of meters away, and landed powerlessly on the ground. When his two feet made contact with the ground, his body violently swayed, as he seemed to have a hard time trying to stand steadily. The Celestial Yang Sword and the Celestial Yuan Sword were still held firmly in his hands, but the current Yuan Yang dual swords had already lost their glows of energy, lacking their former luster. His expression, though, was so pale that there was not even a hint of red on his face.

The storm of sand and

profound energy enveloping Yun Che dispersed with the wind, and Yun che's figure was finally revealed. In his immediate surroundings was a giant crater of about hundred and fifty meters in length, and six meters in depth. He was standing right at the center of the crater. It was such gigantic crater, yet, it looked as smooth as a mirror, with not single pothole in sight. It could be imagined how terrifyingly sharp the sword intent was earlier.

Currently, the entire Sword Discourse Arena could only be described as too tragic to look at.

If one did not personally witness it, no matter who it was, that person would probably not believe that such a scene, was actually caused by a fierce fight between a Spirit Profound Realm and a True Profound Realm practitioner.

Yun Che's hair was currently extremely disheveled. His entire face was covered in dust, and his clothes was even torn to the extreme. Basically, they could no longer be termed as clothes, but a messy continuous strand of cloth. The good thing was that his key parts were still covered, no doubt barely, otherwise, even

if he had skin as thick as a city wall, he would not be able to maintain his demeanor.

On his much exposed body, countless small wounds could be seen. But they were simply extremely thin wounds, and to a practitioner, they were basically not a problem. Forget about heavy injuries, there was not even a single proper wound on his body.

Ling Jie, who was closest to him, looked at Yun Che's condition, and his eyeballs had

almost popped out from their sockets. Earlier, Ling Jie had even warned Yun Che that if he was unable to block it, he might possibly die. However, he was confident that Yun Che would be capable of blocking it, though, it would be inevitable for him to be extremely fatigued after that. However, even if he were to die, he would not have thought that the strike which he had poured his entire sword intent and profound energy into... would actually only tear his clothes into pieces, and cause a few small wounds that were no different than itches to him!

Clang!

The cherished sword which he would usually treat as though it was his life, was directly thrown onto the ground. He fell flat on his butt, and shouted out as though he had been broken. “I’m not fighting anymore... I quit, I quit, I quit! I surrender! Aaaaaahh... I, Ling Jie, will never, ever, ever, ever... ever fight with a monster like you ever again!!”

After saying the two words “I surrender”,                      Ling                      Jie



momentarily felt his body relaxing, as though the heavy boulder that had been pressing on his body had been removed. In this battle, he had used his full strength, and yet, he still lost. He should have felt a great sense of gratification and satisfaction, but to that earlier battle, Ling Jie's strongest feeling was nothing but "unbearable".

He had never felt this unbearable in all the fights he had fought. Usually, when he sparred with the senior brothers Heavenly Sword Villa, even if his opponents were to overpower

him by a large margin, he would not be undaunted, and would clash against them fiercely like a young tiger. Even if he were to be injured in those battles, he would not feel any hint of fear or have the thought of retreating. But, when he exchanged blows with Yun Che, he was constantly nervous and cautious. When slashed or pierced by a light sword, as long as he could prevent it from hitting his fatal points, it would at most give him a scar. But if he were to make contact with a heavy sword, it would not be exaggerated for his entire body to get smashed. His strikes were nimble and ever-changing, his speed was as fast as the wind, and he kept his

intentions unpredictable. Yet, in front of Yun Che's heavy sword, all of those had basically turned into mere ornaments: No matter how fast the speed of your sword, no matter how many sword beams you make, no matter how tricky the angles are, I will simply smash my sword towards it. Either I blow away all of your sword beams, or I force you to retract your sword and retreat far, far away.

During the exchange, most of the time, it could be said that no matter how close or how far away Ling Jie was, he was always on guard against every

single one of Yun Che's strikes. He was over-cautious, his mind strained throughout the entire battle, and he did not dare to slack off even a single bit. No matter if it was his heart or body, it was as though a gigantic boulder was pressing on them, and he could hardly breathe.

This feeling of being tightly suppressed, was basically unbearable to the point that he wanted to puke blood.

With that one sentence "I surrender", that feeling of

relaxation allowed Ling Jie to heave a long sigh of relief, and then, he took a big breath. The words he spoke of about not wanting to fight with Yun Che ever again, was completely from the bottom of his heart. It was definitely not something he said out of impulse.

A long, long time ago, Heavenly Sword Villa once had a heavy sword style. But, this style declined at an extremely quick speed. Many years ago, the last Elder of the heavy sword style went to test himself in the Wasteland of Death, and then, he never returned. Hence, the

heavy sword style was completely severed in the Heavenly Sword Villa, and the few heavy swords that were stored in the Sword Management Terrace, became the final remnants of the heavy sword style in Heavenly Sword Villa.

Ling Yuefeng had once told him that heavy swords were only suitable on the battlefield, and they did not suit practitioners. Even Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, which prided themselves for their swords, and possessed every single type of sword styles, had long lost their

heavy sword style. He had even said that practitioners who trained in the way of the heavy sword, were all total retards. But now, when he personally experienced the terror of heavy swords, Ling Jie really wished to personally shout a single sentence at his father, Ling Yuefeng: Your sister!

# Chapter 233 – Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's Offer

---

Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Jie surrenders. Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che wins! He will advance to tomorrow's Grand Finals!"

Ling Wugou was stunned for an entire three breaths before he glimpsed at Ling Yuefeng and announced the results in an extremely awkward tone.



Clapclap... Clapclapclapclap...

Applause rang out from the edges of the Sword Discourse Arena. It initially started out with a few, before spreading to a small area... to a larger area... Eventually, nearly everyone including a few sect elders stood up and praised with loud applause.

In the history of the Ranking Tournament, applause following an exciting battle was common. However, such passionate applause that rang throughout

the whole arena was rare. This was indeed a match worthy of such an applause. Many of the sects did not achieve results that were too satisfactory, but after witnessing this battle, they all felt 'lucky and relieved' to be here. This was because they were able to witness with their own eyes, the elegance of a celestial sword and the prowess of a heavy sword. They also witnessed the first battle between two youths who would no doubt become Blue Wind Empire's future elites.

Thinking back, they were only sixteen and seventeen. Their

profound strengths were also only in the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm and the tenth level of the True Profound Realm. This caused the hearts of the people there to uncontrollably tremor.

After Ling Wugou announced the results of the match, and cheers rang throughout the arena, Yun Che's face did not reveal any excitement. Instead, he silently stared at the half of his Overlord's Colossal Sword in his hands. The half that was in his hands was already filled with cracks. A cool breeze gently blew, blowing his hair up, along

with the broken pieces of the Overlord's Colossal Sword...

Pieces of black shards fell from the sword and dropped near Yun Che's feet. In the end, only the hilt of the colossal sword was left in his hands.

The great sword that had shown its might throughout the battles, showcasing why it was called Overlord's Colossal Sword, had finally reached its demise today in Yun Che's hands.

Yun Che knelt down and carefully collected all the broken pieces, not allowing any to be left behind. In the end, he kept everything in the Sky Poison Pearl. Seeing Yun Che's empty hand and the unexplainable expression on his face, Ling Jie, who was slowly approaching him had a face full of distress. As a sword user himself, he was the clearest what it meant to love a sword. The existence of a sword was like family. After controlling himself for sometime, he weakly said: "Ugh, ahhhhh, B... Boss, there are several heavy swords over at the Sword Management Terrace. There are three to four of them that are of Earth Profound grade. Let... Let me

compensate you, it's alright even if you want to take all of them."

Once he had finished saying that, Ling Jie was determined. Even if Yun Che wanted to take away all the Earth Profound heavy swords and his father was against it, he would do all that he could to let Yun Che have his way.

"No need," Yun Che smiled casually: "I had already said, being able to destroy it is your capability. There's no need to feel guilty. So, are you satisfied

now?”

Seeing that he laughed without any hard feelings, Ling Jie finally relaxed. The unease in his heart turned into a warm feeling: “Heh, I’m satisfied, completely satisfied. Every part of me is satisfied. In the future, you are I, Ling Jie’s, boss! Ahhh, ahhh... Boss! How exactly did you do it? You are only in the tenth level of the True Profound Realm but are already so powerful! Half a year ago, your strength was still far below me. Yet now, you are able to defeat me! And your body, how did you train it? It seems to be harder

than rock... Also, boss, my father said that the heavy sword is a weapon without a future, how can you be so strong with it? After that fight with you, even I feel like training with a heavy sword...”

The few calls of “Boss” by Ling Jie were completely willing and smooth. When he looked at Yun Che, his eyes glowed, and his questions came out one after another. He was extremely anticipative of the answers to his questions. However, Yun Che only answered his last question: “The heavy sword is the weapon that suits me most, but they do



not suit most people. Don't get any weird ideas about going to practice the heavy sword."

"Hehe..." Ling Jie laughed sillily. He was of course just casually speaking.

Ling Jie had overused his profound strength and had to be supported by Yun Che down the Sword Discourse Arena. At that point, Ling Kun, who usually was very silent, stood up from his seat and looked at Yun Che. Although his actions could be considered inconspicuous on the

gigantic Sword Discourse Arena, everyone present turned to him as if attracted by an unknown aura and subconsciously watched him. His sudden action seemed to make everyone's hearts thump.

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, a place that was sacred and distant, and perhaps even legendary to them. The applause stopped immediately and the entire Sword Discourse Arena turned so silent that even the sound of a needle dropping could be heard. Everyone held their breaths as they waited to see what this mighty elder that

came from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region wanted to do.

“Young man, you are called Yun Che?” Ling Kun looked at Yun Che as he asked cheerfully. His voice was very peaceful.

Yun Che’s footsteps stopped for a moment, as he was visibly shocked by the question. He nodded and replied humbly: “Yes, I am Yun Che. I wonder if Senior Ling wishes to say anything to me.”

“You are currently a disciple of the Profound Palace set up by the Blue Wind Empire’s Imperial Family, right?” Ling Kun asked.

“Yes.”

Ling Kun nodded slowly before saying something earth shattering: “Well, are you interested to join our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region?”

This one question of Ling Kun’s, echoed through the ears of everyone, causing great

shock. Qin Wushang was stunned, and so was Cang Yue. Even Ling Yuefeng was shocked motionless. Every person in the audience revealed an expression of deep astonishment.

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. One of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, an almighty existence in the Profound Sky Continent. If one was able to enter the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, he must be one of the top profound practitioners currently in existence. Without exaggeration, if a servant in the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region came to Blue Wind Empire, he

could become a renowned master of a faction. In terms of status, he would easily be more respectable than a country's emperor! Many of the young profound practitioners could be considered to be of a genius level, but not one of them dared to dream of entering one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Not even Ling Yun had dared think of it before.

Among the seven countries in Profound Sky Continent, Blue Wind Empire was the smallest and weakest one. It was also the one that was the furthest from the Four Great Sacred Grounds.

They had only heard the names of the Four Great Sacred Grounds in legends. Most of the people would not interact with it in any form throughout their lives. Today however, one of the legendary Sacred Grounds had taken the initiative to invite a seventeen year old youth to join them.

Everyone's eyes fell onto Yun Che... Shock, envy, amazement, jealousy and disbelief... On Burning Heaven Clan's seating area, Fen Juecheng's face turned extremely ugly. Severely injuring Fen Juebi, causing shame to the Burning Heaven Clan, and

touching on his sensitive spot had caused him to be extremely angry and disgraced... Yun Che had long since been on his hit list. However, if Yun Che really became a member of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, not just him, even his father Fen Duanhun would have to show some respect and treat Yun Che courteously if he saw him. No one in the entire Blue Wind Empire would dare offend him. Even if he had the absolute confidence to kill Yun Che, he would never ever dare do it... Killing a member of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would be pulling the entire Burning Heaven Clan to die with him!



“Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... That is a place even I do not dare to dream of.” Qin Wushang exclaimed in a shocked manner: “Even Mighty Heavenly Sword Region has invited him. Even I, cannot fathom his future anymore. With his talent, he isn’t something a little Blue Wind Profound Palace is worthy of having. Maybe the Four Great Sacred Grounds are the ones that are truly worthy of keeping him. In the times to come, knowing him would probably be something that would make me proud for the rest of my life. Hahahaha.”

Qin Wushang laughed warmly, but Cang Yue was feeling complicated... Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's invitation could easily make all the profound practitioners in the world envious and jealous. She felt elated for Yun Che, but at the same time felt lost and insecure... He was only seventeen and had already obtained the right to enter such a dream-like place. His future was completely unfathomable. The difference between him and her would be worlds apart. She wondered if she was a match for him... If he went to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, would

he still return to a small little place like the Blue Wind Empire...

Ling Jie, who was beside Yun Che had his mouth agape. With an excited face, he told Yun Che: “Boss, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! The Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! That’s a Sacred Ground! You’re so great. Boss is really too great!”

Yun Che’s brows moved slightly. He did not have the elation and excitement everyone expected him to have. His face

was shockingly, only a field of calmness. He took a step forward and replied courteously: "Many thanks to Senior Ling for thinking so highly of this junior. However, this junior is currently still a disciple of the Blue Wind Profound Palace and has no thoughts of leaving yet. Furthermore, this junior still has plenty of unfinished business here. Even though my heart longs for it, I am unable to bring myself to leave... I can only thank Senior Ling for the love and kind intentions."

Yun Che's answer was completely out of everyone's

expectation. Everyone stared at him and wondered if he had gone mad... Being invited by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was something that people did not even dare to dream about, and he actually rejected it! Instead, he was willing to stay in a small Blue Wind Profound Palace! This was a reply only an idiot or lunatic would make.

Ling Kun, however, was not angry, and instead laughed peacefully: “Hahahaha, good! Even though you are young, you are not arrogant, nor are you impatient. You are not flustered, nor are you rash. This is indeed

rare. The reason I want to bring you into Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is not because of the talent you displayed. Although your talent is considered shocking in this country, in the Sacred Grounds, it might not even be considered average. The reason I want to bring you in is because of the beautiful way you handle the heavy sword... Mighty Heavenly Sword Region used to have a Heavy Sword department. However, it eventually died out. From you, I can see hopes of reforming that department. It is inappropriate for me to ask who your master is, but I hope that when you do join Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, you are able to reform

the Heavy Sword department. If you could do it, becoming an elder-ranked figure of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is not unlikely.”

Ssssss.....

“Elder-ranked figure of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region”. These few words made many people shudder. That was a figure that even Heavenly Sword Villa’s Villa Master Ling Yuefeng was unqualified to meet.

Yun Che still remained very calm and replied without hesitation: "Senior Ling's graciousness, this junior will remember it well. When this junior is done with his unfinished business, he will definitely think about it deeply."

"Good!" Ling Kun still did not become angry, and instead commended him with a nod: "I admire your personality. If that is the case, I shall not force you. Here, take this!"

Ling Kun flicked his finger and



a piece of a deep purple colored jade stone the size of a fist horizontally flew out and was caught by Yun Che.

Ling Kun withdrew his palm and said coolly: “This is a special Sound Transmission Stone that is able to communicate with me as long as we are within a distance of a hundred fifty kilometers. If you eventually decide to join our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, drop me a message. I will guide you to us and bring you to meet the Venerable Sword Master. I believe the Venerable Sword Master would be immensely

interested in how you handle the heavy sword.”

Despite being rejected twice by Yun Che, Ling Kun did not become angry. Instead, he left him a Sound Transmission Jade. Such treatment was undoubtedly an extremely favorable one which left many people envying till they nearly cried blood tears. However, Ling Kun also had absolute confidence that Yun Che would initiate contact with him in the near future... The invitation to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was a ‘temptation’ that any young profound practitioner

could not possibly reject.

# Chapter 234 – Qingyue VS Ling Yun

---

As Yun Che returned to Blue Wind Profound Palace's seats, Cang Yue came toward him in a swift pace carrying bottles and vases full of ointments. Taking up a gauze, she gently started wiping the wounds on his forehead: "Junior Brother Yun, do you have any injuries that are very severe? Did you receive any internal injuries?"

"Don't worry about it, it's all a bunch of light wounds that don't hurt or itch. It would be healed

fine if I just sleep it off.” Yun Che said with a relaxed expression.

Yun Che’s complexion was rosy, and his breathing was calm; there was not even any hurriedness after an intense battle. The wounds under the broken clothes were basically some red marks, and even the traces of blood could not be found in many places. Cang Yue felt relieved, assessed him with a glance, and suddenly laughed with a ‘Pfft’: “Look at your appearance right now, it’s as if you are a barbarian who had just climbed out from the deep mountains.”

A gust of wind blew past. Yun Che instantly felt his entire body chill, as if he wasn't wearing any clothings at all. He hastily took out a set of somewhat loose attire from the Sky Poison Pearl and covered himself with it. From the side of his ears, he heard Qin Wushang speaking with a meaningful tone: "Yun Che, why would you surrender the chance of entering the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region? To even refuse such a land of dreams, you must have some extremely important reasons, right?"

“Mn, I suppose so.” Yun Che nodded: “The Mighty Heavenly Sword Region indeed is immensely alluring to me. But for me, there are many things that are hundreds and thousands times more important than Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.” As he finished speaking, he turned a glance toward Cang Yue and faintly smiled.

Cang Yue slightly froze, and then also gently started smiling as a hint of moisture swelled up within her eyes... It's enough... Just with that sentence of his, with that expression in his eyes

and his gentle smile, I am already content for life...

“It really doesn’t sound like something said by a young man of your age.” Qin Wushang’s face was filled with praise. He then slightly squinted his eyes, and said with a smile: “Then, about tomorrow’s finals, how confident are you to win?”

The matches before, Qin Wushang had once and once again thought that they were the finish line for Yun Che in the Ranking Tournament, and he



couldn't advance any further. Yet Yun Che won perfect victories match after match; it once and once again made him realize that he had completely underestimated this youth. And now, facing the Ling Yun who could not be defeated no matter how one thought of it, Qin Wushang did not assert that he did not have any possibility of winning, and instead asked how confident he was in winning with an extremely serious and expectant tone.

Yun Che didn't think, and directly shook his head: "No confidence at all. Tomorrow's

opponent, is really too strong.”

“Even if you lose, it’s fine. After all, Ling Yun had already surpassed the level that a young profound practitioner could reach.” Qin Wushang laughed heartily: “Also, you’ve already made the biggest limelight in this Ranking Tournament. I believe that in most people’s eyes, you are already the greatest victor in this Ranking Tournament.”

As they spoke, Yun Che felt a hint of malicious feeling

sweeping across his back. He turned around, took a glance at the Burning Heaven Clan's location, and smiled coldly.

Yun Che's unexpectant refusal of joining the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region made Fen Juecheng feel extremely relieved, and at the same time, his intent to kill Yun Che rose by several folds. He was absolutely certain that Yun Che wouldn't really be able to resist the extremely great temptation of joining the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. If he didn't join now, he would voluntarily go find Ling Kun not long after.

After all, in his hands, there was still the Sound Transmission Jade personally given by Ling Kun.

Then, if he were to kill Yun Che, he had to speed it up... It must be done before he becomes a member of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!

Then, the greatest chance would be....

Fen Juecheng's gaze swept through, and fell upon the

Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress' seats. He saw Mu Tianbei, whose expression was as unsightly as if he had just swallowed feces. Even though he was far away, the maliciousness and killing intent within Mu Tianbei's eagle eyes could be faintly felt.

“Seems like, there is a good blade to use.” Fen Juecheng's hand supported his chin as he started to laugh silently and ghastly.

After quite a while, the Sword

Discourse Arena that was full of wounds finally became somewhat flat with emergency repair. Ling Wugou came to the center of the Sword Discourse Arena once again, and announced the starting of the second match.

“Go!” Ling Yuefeng gave Ling Yun a sweeping gesture with his hand.

Ling Yun nodded. Without seeing any motion or profound energy fluctuation under his feet, his entire body had already

vaulted up. As he was in midair, he grabbed at the nothingness with his palm, and the Celestial Yuan Sword that was in Ling Jie's hands, flew up by itself into his hands. In the next instant, he had already landed in the middle of the Sword Discourse Arena and stood there magnificently. The edge of his clothing fluttered, his otherworldly handsome face was like jade, his gaze as if the autumn water. It instantly made the eyes of many young girls bloom like peach blossoms as they lose control of their beating heart.

“Qingyue, go. If you win against Ling Yun, then we’ve already obtained first place in this Ranking Tournament ahead of time.” Chu Yueli spoke with a very certain tone.

Along with a wave of fluttering ice spirits and a slightly drifting cold energy, Xia Qingyue also silently landed in front of Ling Yun. She was still in white attire with blue spirits, and an ice gauze covered her face. Only a pair of eyes like the starry sky flashed with an extremely beautiful brilliance.



Looking at this pair of eyes close up, Ling Yun's calm gaze actually became inattentive for an instant. Because this was the most beautiful pair of eyes he had ever seen in his entire life. This kind of beauty could not be described and explained. He clearly felt that as he was looking at this pair of charming eyes, his consciousness and soul were both being deeply attracted, and almost made him unable to divert his gaze.

What beautiful eyes... Below the face veil, should be a girl as beautiful as a goddess, right....

Ling Yun thought silently in his heart, and at the same time birthed an urge of wanting to see her true face. With a swing of the Celestial Yuan Sword, he made a simple sword courtesy toward Xia Qingyue: “Heavenly Sword Villa’s Disciple, Ling Yun, asks for Xia Fairy’s guidance.”

Xia Qingyue did not answer, and was as silent as a statue made of ice.

Seeing the two had already finished preparing, Ling Wugou

did not delay either and said with a loud voice: “Second match of the Semifinals, Heavenly Sword Villa’s Ling Yun, against Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Xia Qingyue, battle start!!”

With the duel between Yun Che and Ling Jie that brimmed with astonishment as appetizer, no one had much expectations for this match. This was a match with an already decided outcome, because one of the them was Ling Yun... And battles with Ling Yun, would unquestionably be a single-sided oppression. Just like what Qin

Wushang had said, Ling Yun's strength had already surpassed the level of the younger generation. Within the same generation, it was simply impossible to find anyone that could be his match.

If not for Jasmine's words, Yun Che's thoughts would not be much different from the others.

But Jasmine's evaluation of Xia Qingyue, filled Yun Che with odd expectations toward this match. The focus of his attention, also moved from Ling

Yun to Xia Qingyue. No matter who wins this match, it was destined to be an extremely difficult and bitter battle tomorrow... If Ling Yun wins; while Ling Jie was already that powerful at the sixth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, one could just imagine how strong Ling Yun, who was at the third level of the Earth Profound Realm, was. But if by any chance... that Xia Qingyue wins, then the Xia Qingyue, who could even defeat Ling Yun, would undoubtedly be an even more terrifying opponent.

Xia Qingyue... Is it really

possible for her to defeat Ling Yun who had already took first place in the Ranking Tournament when he was seventeen?

Ling Yun stood whilst wielding his sword as the sword energy fluctuated around him. Yet he did not move; the opponent was a girl, and in addition to that, her age and profound energy were all much lower than his. Thus, he naturally wouldn't take action first. Xia Qingyue raised her jade hand, and amidst the flashing of cold light, a crystal clear longsword of ice had already appeared in her hand.

With the channeling of Frozen Cloud Arts, the surrounding ice spirits floated around her. Stepping on a lotus, the starting stance of “Frozen Cloud Thirteen Sword Styles”, “Silent Moon of Snow”, lightly and swiftly pierced out. Seemingly without any destructive force, it was a feast for the eyes for everyone; however, only Ling Yun deeply felt a wave of bone-chilling coldness that came toward him.

Ling Yun’s left hand folded behind his back, and only moved with simple interweaving steps without any movement

profound skills. He lifted his Celestial Yuan Sword, did not swing any kind of sword skills either, and calmly engaged...

Clang    Clang    Clang    Clang  
Clang....

Along with Ling Yun's casual swinging of the sword, the Celestial Yuan Sword and the ice crystal sword collided several tens of times in the blink of an eye. A great amount of light blue colored ice auroras and ice shards that dispersed as ice lotuses shattered, and then



drifted around them. In the match before, the moves between Yun Che and Ling Jie earlier were fierce and thrilling, and targeted at the opponent. Yet the battle between Ling Yun and Xia Qingyue, was as though a pair of handsome man and woman were gracefully dancing; it was breathtaking.

“Haha, seems like, Yun’er wants to leave a little face for the other side.” Ling Yuefeng said while laughing.

“That’s natural, Yun’er’s

disposition is kind. This is the Semifinals, the opponent is also just a girl, of course he wouldn't thwart the opponent in a lift of the hand like before."

Xia Qingyue's sword gestures were as if a blue butterfly dancing, and Ling Yun was as if strolling in a quiet courtyard. Along with several tens of ice lotus blossoming and wilting, the two's swords had also collided several hundreds of times, letting out a harmonious scene of being evenly matched. Yet flames of rage surged in Yun Che's eyes as he watched... You motherf\*cking Ling Yun! Even

this daddy here hasn't danced with swords with Qingyue my wife, and you're actually god damn enjoying it! If my opponent tomorrow is you, see if I wouldn't smash you down deep into the ground with one strike!!

Clang!!

As the two swords clashed, an ice lotus splendidly exploded at the point of collision. With a somersault, Ling Yun's body landed around fifteen meters away. He lifted the Celestial Yuan Sword horizontally. His

gaze concentrated as the sword force also went through a great change. The sword intent that surrounded his body and his sword, also exploded as if a flood that broke through a dam.

“Xia Fairy... I apologize!!”

As his voice fell, Ling Yun's palm flipped. As the profound energy and sword intent flowed, the Celestial Yuan Sword suddenly transformed into a dash of light and flew toward Xia Qingyue. During the flight, the sword brilliance of the Celestial

Yuan Sword quickly dispersed; from one sword it turned to ten, and then several tens... several hundreds... In the end, it turned into a sword formation field that blanketed the heavens and earth, and enveloped Xia Qingyue as if a meteor shower.

“Wah!!” A great amount of astonishing cries sounded in the Sword Discourse Arena.

This move, they had personally seen during the fight between Ling Jie and Yun Che. It was precisely this move, Heaven’s

Might Sword Formation ——  
Heavenly Star Frenzy. But this  
Heavenly Star Frenzy of Ling  
Yun's, was more than ten times  
greater, in terms of formation,  
than the one Ling Jie had  
displayed. Ling Jie had only  
dispersed a hundred sword  
lights, yet Ling Yun had  
dispersed over one thousand  
lines of sword beams. Moreover,  
each and every one of the sword  
beams were glaring to the point  
of making one unable to look at  
it straight; in terms of power, it  
simply couldn't be compared in  
the same way with the one by  
Ling Jie.

From this move, Ling Yun's terrifying strength could be evidently seen.

“Looks like the match is already over.” Almost everyone had thought like this in their hearts. This kind of formation even startled a few seniors of some sects. Within the younger generation, it was simply impossible for anyone to receive it. It would be impossible for Ling Jie or Yun Che, and it was even more so for Xia Qingyue.

## Chapter 235 – Otherworldly Beauty

---

Xia Qingyue was completely trapped within the sword formation. Her front, back, left, right and above, were all filled with extremely sharp sword light. If it were someone else, when facing such a scary formation that should not have been used by such a youth, that person would probably shudder in fear. However, in her crystal clear eyes, there was no hint of hesitation. Her petite figure floated as though she was as light as clouds, and as she waved her ice crystal sword, several ice



lotuses blossomed around her. Each lotus was several times bigger than the previous one, and the coldness released from the lotus coagulated the air. The surrounding temperature dropped at a frightening pace.

“Eh?” Ling Yuefeng original calm face suddenly changed. More than ten gigantic ice lotuses exploded out at the same time. This was definitely not something capable of someone in the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm... Ling Yun did not release all his strength previously, but obviously, Xia Qingyue hadn't either!

Dingdingdingdingdingdingdingdingdingding

The numerous sword beams gathered together and attacked the ice lotus. Some of the sword beams shattered immediately while the others were sealed with ice within the petals of the lotus flower, unable to proceed on any further. Previously, Ling Yun could shatter the ice lotus with the wave of his sword. Now however, the gigantic ice lotuses had already been attacked by thousands of sword beams, yet not one flower withered. In the blink of an eye, each ice lotus

was stabbed full with ice sealed sword beams and the sword beams that had not been touched by the ice lotuses all gathered and stopped around Xia Qingyue.

One could imagine how frightening the coldness of the ice lotuses were when seeing them sealed Ling Yun's sword beams that was transformed from his profound strength and sword intent.

This was a scene no one had expected. Ling Yun was even

more shocked by this. Previously, he had exchanged several hundred moves with Xia Qingyue. However, he did not want to let her lose too quickly and become embarrassed, hence, he did not use his full strength. Originally , he was fully confident that he could end the battle quickly. Never did he expect his move to be completely blocked by his opponent, as not one sword beams touched her body.

Ling Yun's reaction was extremely fast. Seeing his sword beams being sealed in ice, his eyes flashed with sword light,

and his body rushed out like lightning. He grabbed the air and instantly, the Celestial Yuan Sword returned into his hands. In that instant, a cyan light flashed from the Celestial Yuan Sword as he instantaneously vanished from everyone's line of sight...

A stream of cyan light flashed past. Seemed like a shooting star that fell from heavens, it immediately disappeared from the Sword Discourse Arena... The shooting star slashed all the ice lotuses in half and also streaked past Xia Qingyue's body.....

Pingpingpingpingping.....

The ice lotuses and their sealed sword beams all shattered at the same time, filling the sky with ice crystals. It seemed as if it was currently hailing in the center of the Sword Discourse Arena. Ling Yun's body also appeared about thirty meters behind Xia Qingyue... When everyone had finally refocused onto Ling Yun's new location, everyone was overwhelmed with shock. Other than a few strong elders, no one could clearly figure out how he had gotten to that location. All

they could see was a cyan light suddenly flashing past their eyes.

No words could explain the astonishment from this one move.

“So... fast.” Yun Che spoke in a speechless manner. He could feel that the speed of the flash was not a profound movement skill. Instead, it came from the Celestial Yuan Sword! For normal people, the person moves the sword. But the previous move of Ling Yun’s,

was the massive sword intent moving the sword with the person! It was not the person controlling the sword!

The hand the was held horizontally in front of him was lowered slowly as Ling Yun whispered: "Please give up. Even though you are several times stronger than expected, you still aren't a match for me. I do not want to injure you, fairy..."

As he spoke, he slowly turned around. Just as he completely turned to face Xia Qingyue, his



voice was suddenly stuck in his throat and he was unable to say another word. His originally calm expression was suddenly stunned. Even his mind turned blank, as his vision and mind was left with an illusion of a sky that seemed to be from an imaginary world...

Following a long cut, Xia Qingyue's right sleeve drooped, and it revealed half of her snow white jade arm. But Ling Yun's sword did not only cut off half her sleeve.

In the wake of a cold breeze, Xia Qingyue's snow white face veil slowly floated down, and her originally covered face was revealed to everyone present.

The entire Sword Discourse Arena instantly turned silent as everyone present became breathless.

Xia Qingyue's skin was exceptionally white but it wasn't the pale white that would make people uncomfortable. It was as white as pure snow with a flawless and glowing whiteness.

Although the light from the sun was not glaring, the luster of her snowy skin was so flawless that it made people awestruck. Her skin looked like it was snow during a winter day with plenty of sunshine. Her half revealed arm due to her slashed sleeve, was as flawless as clear jade. It was suffocatingly beautiful.

Ignoring everything else, her snow white flawless skin alone was able to capture the souls of even man in this world!

On her snow white skin were

eyebrows which were thin and long that seemed like the crescent moon. She also had deep clear watery eyes and her sweet cheeks were whiter than snow. Her dimples were beautiful like those described in poems and paintings. Her tender lips, which were a lovely pink rouge that seemed as though god himself personally drew it with utmost care, were astonishingly beautiful.

All of these gathering on one girl, displayed a beauty that made the heavens and earth, stars and moon, all pale in comparison.

The moment Xia Qingyue's face was revealed, an absolute brilliance seemed to have obstructed every other color. Everyone's breathing stopped and it was as though their hearts had stopped beating. In their hearts, they echoed a similar phrase...

Was she a goddess that descended from heaven... How could there be such an absolute beauty in this world.....

The ones that had the largest

reactions were no doubt the young profound practitioners. They had been completely transfixed and their souls seemed as if they had unknowingly flew outwards. Even those clan heirs, who usually did not lack beauties around them were also mesmerized as their eyes and mind could not leave Xia Qingyue's beauty. All of them could no longer feel their own existence. Even those middle-aged men and the elders, whose hair and beard had already turned white, were awestruck and mesmerized.

Xiao Clan's Xiao Kuanglei, Xiao Zheng and Xiao Nan all had the same expression; they stared at her as though they had lost their souls. Burning Heaven Clan's Fen Juecheng had unknowingly stood up from his seat and his eyes were filled with an unprecedented obsession... If they already had such big reaction, obviously the others also had a huge reaction.

The calmest person in the whole arena was also the one with the weakest profound strength, Xia Yuanba.

“Woah. As expected, big sis got prettier.” Xia Yuanba uttered in a soft voice. The atmosphere around the arena had suddenly become strange, causing him to look left and right, before looking at Yun Che. He muttered in confusion: “Everyone looks so weird... Even Brother-in-law too.”

When he had initially saw her during their wedding, Yun Che was already pleasantly surprised. Today, he was deeply shocked. A mere eighteen months could bring such a huge change to a girl's looks. Sixteen year old Xia Qingyue was already



beautiful beyond the likes of any normal girl. Now, she was seventeen and a half. With the nourishment from Frozen Cloud Asgard's ice and snow, she could only be described as beautiful beyond the mortal world, which had made even him, stare blankly.

This was also one of the reasons why she was wearing a face veil.

Not only men, even a woman like Cang Yue was deeply amazed by her beauty. Even

though she also possessed an absolute beauty with a very noble status to match, in front of a goddess that should not be in the human realm, she felt ashamed of her looks for the first time. Even though she knew she should not have such a feeling, she had a sense of inferiority. Looking at Xia Qingyue's demeanor, such a feeling uncontrollably came over. As she turned to look at Yun Che's dazed expression, she extended her arm and tightly grabbed onto his sleeve...

Some of the elders who had attended the ranking

tournament thirty years ago would realize that this scene was very similar to when Chu Yuechan's face veil dropped at that time... At that time, the same scene had replayed itself on the same stage thirty years later. Similarly, it was caused by a disciple from Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Silently looking at the reactions of the crowd and remembering the heartache from that time, caused tears to well up in Ling Yuefeng's eyes. In his reminiscences, he did not realise that Xuanyuan Yufeng was staring at him. His reaction

made her slowly frown. After that, she turned and looked at her son Ling Yun... He was the closest to Xia Qingyue. From his eyes, he revealed a unprecedented dreamy look. Such a look did not even appear when he conquered the Celestial Yuan Sword at the young age of seventeen.

Xuanyuan Yufeng's chest rose drastically, as she spoke in a low voice: "Frozen Cloud Asgard... You harmed my husband in the past... Now... You're going to harm my son... Do you want to make him follow his father's footsteps..."

She spoke in a very soft manner which only she herself could hear. In her voice, one could sense a feeling similar to hatred, but it was more of jealousy! A woman's jealousy, did not only occur between similarly aged people. Looks were always the most important thing woman cared about. Xuanyuan Yufeng was already fifty one, but as a profound practitioner in the later half of the Sky Profound Realm, she looked no older than thirty. If she dressed up younger, she could definitely pull off as Ling Yun's younger sister. Her looks, were also above average. However, one would

have to consider what she was comparing with... Compared to most other girls, she was a true beauty. However, when compared with Xia Qingyue...

To put it bluntly, it would be like comparing mud and the most colorful of clouds.

Ling Yun's attack could be said to be world-shocking. The face veil dropping was also something that Xia Qingyue did not expect. Seeing the crowd's reaction, she faintly sighed. Lifting her snowy hand, she

brought out a new ice veil to cover her face, once more covering up the absolute beauty that made the heavens and earth pale in color while dulling the sun and moon.

The most beautiful image in the world being mercilessly covered brought countless people back to their senses.

“Is... Is... Is she a goddess...” A disciple of one of the sects muttered stupidly while in a daze.

“Woman... Can actually this beautiful to such an extent? I felt my soul leave my body just now... The legendary Princess Snow... Could at most be this much...”

“Princess Snow? Who’s Princess Snow?”

“What? You don’t even know the top beauty of Profound Sky Continent, Princess Snow? She is the sole daughter of the current emperor of Divine Phoenix Empire. When she was thirteen, she was publicly



recognized as the top beauty in the continent and was labeled by her people as ‘the beloved child of heavens’, ‘the pearl of Divine Phoenix Empire’, ‘the treasure god gave to Divine Phoenix Empire’. Within the Divine Phoenix Empire, her existence is like a religion’s.”

“People from Divine Phoenix Empire might not know who their emperor is, might not know what the Divine Phoenix Sect is, but they all definitely know of Princess Snow! Rumor has it that several top painters wanted to paint a portrait of Princess Snow but no one was

able to do it. When the top painter in Divine Phoenix Empire had seen Princess Snow, he threw his paint brush immediately and claimed that even if all the painters in the world gathered, no one would be able to properly represent her charm...”

“Whoa! Only thirteen and named the top beauty in Profound Sky Continent, could it be an over exaggeration? Could she be more beautiful than Fairy Xia?”

“.... No idea... But it can't be possible? Fairy Xia is already beautiful beyond my dreams. I really cannot believe there can be anyone in this world more beautiful than her...”

# Chapter 236 – Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon

---

“I want her... I must have her!!”  
Xiao Kuangyu and Xiao Kuanglei’s chests rose up and down as they issued the exact same words from their minds. As the sons of Xiao Sect’s Sect Master, they were people fated to look down upon the world in the future. To them, women were merely a man’s accessory. They had never thought, and also had never believed that there would be a woman they would lose their hearts to. Yet now, this woman appeared.

They deeply felt that if they were to obtain this woman, it would truly mean that one did not live their life in vain and was the real peak of one's life! And if it were to be compared, the position of the future Xiao Sect Master did not look the least bit attractive.

And this, was also the thought of practically every man with enough qualifications. As for those without the qualifications, they could only feel ashamed of their inferiority after being endlessly stunned. What was left, was only a fantasy that was as far as the clouds on the

horizon reverberating in their minds.

“... She actually has gotten even more beautiful, and she is still only seventeen years old. Once a few more years pass, that wouldn't be any joking matter.” Yun Che muttered to himself in a low voice. When he saw the entire audience's reactions, it would be impossible for him to not feel a sliver of vanity, because that young girl who had struck the entire audience was his officially wedded wife... But he believed that if this fact were to be publicized, he would be pierced into a hornet's nest by

countless gazes of envy and hatred.

Xia Qingyue had always known about her own beauty, but she had never believed that it was a natural gift of any importance. Often times, she had even wished for her appearance to be a little more average. Coming to this ranking tournament with her face covered was the Asgard Mistress' personal order, and she herself, was not the least bit opposed to it. Chu Yueli had also told her before that she mustn't let the ice veil fall from her face. But Ling Yun's miraculous move that was comparable to flowing

light, had made this accident that she did not want to see, happen.

Ling Yun, was Ling Yun after all.

But this did not greatly influence Xia Qingyue's state of mind in the least. During the process in which the ice veil fell to when she covered up her face again, she had merely released a light sigh. However, it was different for the Ling Yun in front of her. The Ling Yun who had always guarded his mind



with sword intent, whose heart had not the smallest speck of dirt, was distinctly in disorder from his breathing. His eyes were no longer filled with a dignified tranquility and was instead suffused with with an unrest that could not settle down until a long while.

For Ling Yun, it was the first time this had happened since birth. The first time his mind had become such a mess in front of the dueling opponent he was up against.

Like the Ling Yuefeng who had seen Chu Yuechan's true appearance that year.

Ling Yun was undoubtedly strong. If he was not lenient enough that he only cut apart her sleeve and veil, and instead aimed at her throat, she would perhaps have lost her life. Even though she possessed incomparable innate talent, she had a fatal weak point, which was her lack of actual combat experience! This kind of thing was something someone with an even greater innate talent would have trouble making up for. On this point, she was miles away

from Yun Che.

However, this had also sounded an alarm in Xia Qingyue. Against such a frightening opponent like Ling Yun, she could no longer have any sort of reservations. She withdrew the ice crystal longsword in her hands. With a light wave of her right arm, a white radiance suddenly floated next to her, becoming a dancing white colored long ribbon. The long white ribbon was half a foot wide and twenty feet long. With a white body that was as lustrous as jade and as smooth as satin, its luster could reflect one's own

image. Its sheen complemented with the light that showered down from far above the sky, and was coated by a field of hazy shimmer, as mysterious and wispy ice spirits floated around its body.

The long ribbon possessed a spiritual consciousness, as it floated around Xia Qingyue's body, circling like an intelligent white snake. With the entanglement of her sprinkling ice spirits and her surrounding's ice aurora, it was too beautiful to absorb in all at once.

“That is...”

“It’s Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Sky  
Profound Weapon... the Ice  
Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon! As  
expected, after Shui Wushuang  
and Wu Xuexin had been  
eliminated, it had been handed  
over to Xia Qingyue.”

“But I have heard that the Ice  
Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was  
extremely hard to control. Not  
only does it take at least the  
Earth Profound Realm to bring  
out even a bit of its strength,  
one’s Frozen Cloud Arts has to

be higher than the fifth stage... Her opponent is Ling Yun. Ling Yun had already reached the pinnacle of mastery for the Celestial Yuan Sword. Even if she takes out the the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, it is still probably impossible for the situation to take a turn for the better. At best, there would only be a bit of a struggle.”

When Frozen Cloud Asgard’s sole Sky Profound Weapon appeared, it would naturally be the center of attention. And at this time, Xia Qingyue did something weird. Extending her snow white jade hand, she

grabbed at the average looking pendant on her neck and lightly pulled it down.

The instant the white jade pendant left her body, the profound energy aura that Xia Qingyue's body emitted suddenly increased sharply. In a short one breath of time, the original eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm stepped over to the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, then to the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm... Then broke through the Spirit Profound Realm domain to arrive at the first level of the Earth Profound

Realm... second level of the Earth Profound Realm...

Until finally, stopping at the third level of the Earth Profound Realm... the intensity of the profound strength aura, was evenly matched with Ling Yun's!!

This kind of change obviously could not be distinctively sensed by those young profound practitioners who did not have sufficient profound strength. However, those elders at the Earth Profound Realm or above,



all turned pale with shock and stood up from their seats in their astonishment.

“Wh... What!! This is impossible... how could this be possible!!”

In this ranking tournament, Ling Yuefeng had been shocked beyond his expectations many times, but all of that added together fell short of this surprise. Not only him, apart from the members of Frozen Cloud Asgard, everyone who had sensed the change in Xia

Qingyue's profound strength, which included Xiao Juetian, Fen Moli, Xiao Boyun, Qin Wushang, and others... all wore expressions of shock, as if they had personally seen a building from the Heavenly Palace in the sky.

“Palace Chief Qin, what’s wrong?” Yun Che and Cang Yue promptly asked when Qin Wushang’s face dramatically changed when he suddenly stood up.

Qin Wushang fiercely gasped in

a breath, and answered with difficulty in an extremely hoarse voice: “Actually is... is... third level of the Earth Profound Realm!”

“Ah!?!?” Cang Yue and Xia Yuanba were both so shocked that their mouths gaped open. Yun Che’s expression had also immediately stiffened in place as deep astonishment flashed in the depths of his eyes.

During the ranking tournament’s profound strength assessment, Ling Yun’s profound

strength was revealed to be in the third level of the Earth Profound Realm and shocked the entire audience, but even though they had been shocked, it wasn't as if they could not accept it. This was because Ling Yun was already at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm at the age of seventeen. With his astonishing innate talent, breaking through into the third level of the Earth Profound Realm at the age of twenty was not too ridiculous.

But, Xia Qingyue was only seventeen this year... Seventeen at the third level of the Earth

Profound Realm, what sort of concept was that?

This had crushed Ling Yun's publicly acknowledged "Number One of Blue Wind Empire's Younger Generation" title. Not only that, this innate talent had been thoroughly crushed by a landslide! Out of Blue Wind Empire's complete history, this had also never happened before!

It was entirely worthy and not at all discounted to say that this was the number one throughout all of history!!

“Hmph, as expected, her profound strength was concealed. Though I had never expected that it had anything to do with that necklace of hers!” Jasmine coldly snorted.

Yun Che: “...”

The necklace that Xia Qingyue had taken off was called the “Pearl of Frozen Deception”. It could perfectly suppress the wearer’s profound strength level at will! That’s right, not only could it suppress, it was also not

a concealment that could be easily detected. If one does not deliberately use profound energy to closely examine this unremarkable necklace, even a Throne would find it extremely difficult to discover. Back when she was in Floating Cloud City, Xia Qingyue's true profound strength had also been concealed by this Pearl of Frozen Deception.

In this ranking tournament, concealing her profound strength was a choice that Xia Qingyue had to make. Otherwise, if she had immediately revealed her true

profound strength, it was obvious as to how much of sensation and commotion that would trigger.

Earth Profound Realm at the age of seventeen was unprecedented. But reaching the third level of the Earth Profound Realm at the age of seventeen, this kind of innate gifted talent simply could not be described with any words by everyone present. Xiao Sect, Burning Heaven Clan, and even Heavenly Sword Villa would never believe that they themselves, could nurture and produce a disciple with such an ability.



A peerless face that stunned the entire audience, was then followed by the revealing of such a peerless innate talent in front of them... In the midst of their shock, those experts could not help but doubt whether or not this seventeen year old young lady was mortal; if she was a Princess of Heaven sent to the human world by the Jade Emperor of the Heavenly Palace, which was why she had received such an all out blessing from the heavens.

In everyone's eyes, this duel

was suppose to be a one-sided crush by Ling Yun. But now, the situation had changed greatly. Three years ago, at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, Ling Yun had easily defeated Mu Lingxue, who was at the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Without a doubt, he possessed strength powerful enough to challenge those of a higher level. As a result, from that one point, Ling Yun ought to be as dominant as before, even if it would not be a crushing victory this time.

Though in regards to aptitude, in front of Xia Qingyue, he had

already suffered a crushing defeat! He was not even on the same level... and in the entire Blue Wind Empire, another person who could be mentioned in the same breath as her, simply could not be found.

Ling Yun, who was the closest to Xia Qingyue, was the one who vividly sensed the change in her profound strength. His heart surged and swept as though it were the rolling waves of the sea that was difficult to calm. In his line of sight, Xia Qingyue slowly extended her arm. Along with that small movement, the trajectory of the Ice Phoenix

Snowflower      Ribbon      also changed to become even more quick and discernible, as though it was a playful little fairy that frolicked around a beautiful goddess. The half severed sleeve silently hung, exposing half a jade arm so fair in color that it was almost transparent. As if it had been carved out from the center of the world's most flawless jade, it was beautiful beyond compare.

“Sir Ling, many thanks for the leniency in your previous strike. Otherwise, Qingyue would have already lost. Qingyue will go all out now.”

A touching, faintly discernible voice that sounded like heaven's music came out from between her petal-like lips and lingered beside Ling Yun's ear, making him stare blankly without a reaction for a long while.

At this moment, Ling Yuefeng's cold beration was suddenly heard in his mind: "Yun'er, focus!"

Ling Yuefeng's spirit sound transmission was like a splash of cold water that poured on top of

his head, and immediately cleared his head in a flash. Using the quickest speed possible, he rapidly put aside all distractions and restrained his mind. As his sword intent returned, he did not speak, and used his sword force to reply.

Pointing the Celestial Yuan Sword forward with its sharp end outwards, a large distortion appeared in the air as an incomparable sword force was released. Like a surging, yet formless wave, it swept across the entire Sword Discourse Arena. In an instant, he seemed to have become the center of the

world. Even the watching audience that was the furthest away from him were able to vividly sense an oppressive, imposing aura. That kind of sensation felt as if one had been pointed with the sharp point of a blade between their brows. This chill made one tremble from head to toe! It was even more rich and powerful than Ling Jie's sword force when he was wielding the dual swords, by at least ten times!

The Celestial Yuan Sword even reverberated as it pierced out!

In an instant, Ling Yun's entire person vanished. The only thing the crowd could capture with their eyes was merely a cyan colored sword radiance and those distinctive ripples in the air... That's right! That was a spatial ripple brought up by genuinely and legitimately cutting through space, and not the small degree of spatial distortion was stirred up by Ling Jie's sword force. It was fundamentally impossible to compare the two in the same category!

The sharpness of Xia Qingyue's senses naturally increased



greatly as well when she had released all her profound strength. This sword strike was no longer possible to traced with her eyes. Her upper body moved slightly and the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon instantly danced. As the white sheen swam, it precisely touched onto the Celestial Yuan Sword that shot piercing toward her. In the next instant, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was as if an intelligent snake that had just woke up, as it wrapped along the sword's body as if lightning. At the same time, a wave of cold energy that was enough to freeze space itself suddenly exploded...

## Chapter 237 – Sword Spirit Doppelganger

---

Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was an extremely unique weapon; it was similar to a whip, yet it also differed greatly from a whip. Some of its special qualities were even more unique. Ling Yun had fought countless matches before, but it was still the first time he had ever encountered this “Ribbon” type of weapon. Though he could tell that “entangle” was one of its core method of attack, Ling Yun completely did not expect that its entangling speed was actually so quick and

overbearing. A burst of immense force that was almost not resistible suddenly traveled from his hand, and as he was caught off guard, the Celestial Yuan Sword was directly ensnared away out of his hands.

Even though Ling Yun was shocked, he did not panic. He retreated back as if lightning, dodged the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon's attack, and extended his palm as sword intent channeled. The Celestial Yuan Sword that was ensnared up quickly escaped after a while of intense struggle within the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon,

and flew back into his hands by itself.

“Heavenly Sword of Extreme Lightning!”

With a swing of the Celestial Yuan Sword, there was a burst of deafening thunderclaps and more than one hundred lines of sword light assaulted toward Xia Qingyue as if they were the brilliance of thunderbolts. The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon turned from offense to defense as it whirled around her body with great speed and intercepted

all of the lightning sword beams. However, Ling Yun's finishing strike also pierced at her at this moment like rolling thunder; the sword beam that seemingly hid itself within the cracks within space, directly went for the tiny opening the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon produced in its dance.

Facing this dangerous sword strike, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon that was as lithe as a snake, suddenly shot straight out, and directly collided with the Celestial Yuan Sword. Along with an ear-piercing "clang" sound, the Ice

Phoenix    Snowflower    Ribbon  
deadlocked tightly with Celestial  
Yuan Sword just like that... The  
long ribbon that was originally  
as soft as silk, seemed as if it had  
transformed into indomitable  
fine steel at this very moment,  
and completely blocked the  
sword strike that was filled to  
the brim with Ling Yun's sword  
intent.

“Bang!!”

As a ice lotus exploded, Xia  
Qingyue and Ling Yun were both  
blown            away            backwards

simultaneously. Xia Qingyue gracefully landed, but when Ling Yun landed, a thick layer of frost had covered both of his arms. His eyebrows twitched before he finally blew off the frost with a bit of effort. He then looked at that long and snow-white ribbon with an extremely astonished gaze.

That was clearly just a long ribbon, how could it actually turn as tough as a sword!

“To actually be able to wield this Ice Phoenix Snowflower

Ribbon that is the hardest to control, so freely... How is this possible!” Ling Yuefeng uncontrollably exclaimed in shock. If he knew that it had only been a single year since Xia Qingyue first came into contact with Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, it was uncertain whether or not he would directly faint from the shock.

“A part of an ice phoenix’s soul is sealed within the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, and it is extremely hard to control. The Asgard Mistress had used an entire thirty or so years, before she could display one hundred



percent of its power. Yet Qingyue only took one year, and could already exhibit nearly seventy percent of its strength. It would be practically impossible for another with this kind of comprehensive ability to appear in our Asgard, even after a millennia.” Chu Yueli watched as she praised.

The Celestial Yuan Sword was a Sky Profound Weapon, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was a Sky Profound Weapon as well. But there also were disparities between Sky Profound Weapons; the Limitless Sword of Heavenly Sword Villa was a high-grade

Sky Profound Weapon, and the Celestial Yuan Sword and Celestial Yang Sword were roughly mid-grade. However, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was a genuine high-grade Sky Profound Weapon. Just by looking at the wielding proficiency, Xia Qingyue didn't seem to lose against Ling Yun, who had received Celestial Yuan Sword three years ago either... Thus, in terms of weapons, Xia Qingyue had the absolute advantage!

After those few rounds of exchanges earlier, Ling Yun had also become vaguely aware of

this. However, he did not dread the disparity in the weapon at all. What truly shocked him, was the fact that Xia Qingyue's profound strength foundation was actually not inferior to him in the slightest.

“HAAH!!”

With a loud roar, the white in Ling Yun's eyes quickly retracted. Within the enlarged pupils, two sword silhouettes were shown. All of the sword intent in his body was conjured without restrain, and was

intense enough that it almost turned solid. In a glance, it was as if a cluster of transparent flames were burning around his body.

RIIIP!!

Ling Yun's sword struck out, bringing along a storm of sword silhouettes that blotted out the sky. The change in Lin Yun's sword force also made Xia Qingyue's thin brows move; the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon danced in the air, and a wave of bone-chilling cold aura

blanketed toward Ling Yun's sky covering sword mirages.

BANG!!!!

The profound energy barrier that Ling Wugou personally made directly cracked the instant their profound energy clashed. At this moment, these two superb experts of the Earth Profound Realm had finally and truly begun their full power duel.

The sword was like streaming

light and thunderbolt, but the ribbon was at times like the fog, at times as tough as profound ice, sometimes tangled, swept, pierced, and slashed... Yet all these transformations easily danced within Xia Qingyue's hands without the slightest awkwardness. If an ordinary person faced this kind of weapon for the first time, they would definitely be dazzled and would not be able to keep up. But Ling Yun was Ling Yun after all; even though his sword skills seemed like pressing attacks, in actuality, they were all feints. Defending while pretending to attack, he used his eyes and awareness to capture the different transformations of Ice

Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon in its entirety. After more than three hundred sword strikes, he had already adapted to it, and shifted from defense to offense; every single sword strike was aimed at the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon's openings.

RIIP!!

As the light on the sword flashed, over ten lines of deep marks appeared on the even ground.

BOOM!!

The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon gently caressed the ground. Yet it was precisely this seemingly soft and gentle caressing action that brought up an ear-shattering sound. A fissure extended with an astonishing cold aura at extreme speed, and only stopped when it reached Ling Wugou's feet, making him consecutively step backwards in panic.

Ling Yun vaulted up and moved in midair. Every single step he



took, a sword blade whirlwind would be brought up. When he had reached Xia Qingyue, over thirty sword blade whirlwinds swept toward Xia Qingyue from different directions, and within every single sword blade whirlwind, were several tens of hidden sword beams.

Ling Yun coming from the front, and several tens of sword blade whirlwinds coming from the surroundings, was a despairing situation that made one's gall feel cold. Xia Qingyue's expression was serene and unwavering. As the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon gracefully

danced, a gigantic light blue colored lotus blossomed below her feet with incomparable splendor.

“Ice Lotus Prison!!”

Twelve light blue colored flower petals competed to bloom, and displayed a dazzling brilliance like the starry sky. But this time, this enormous ice lotus was not used to attack nor defend, and instead, self-destructed...

# Shatter!!

The ice crystals that covered the sky densely flew about and crazily clashed with the sword beams. The ice crystals were grinding apart the sword beams, and the sword beams were also grinding apart the ice crystals. Within the chaotic storm of ice lotus and sword blades, the Celestial Yuan Sword and Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon also crossed strikes like a fierce rainstorm. Gradually, the crowd could no longer see the figures of the Celestial Yuan Sword and the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, and in the end, even

Ling Yun and Xia Qingyue could only see the two's afterimages that shifted with extreme speed... Only the intense sound of the collisions, as well as the ice crystals and sword beams that covered the sky, unceasingly remained.

More than half of the Sword Discourse Arena, an entire three hundred and thirty meters of area was completely shrouded by sword beams and ice crystals. Even Ling Wugou was forced back three hundred and thirty meters away. The surrounding audience had already become stupefied from watching, and

some seniors had already quickly constructed profound energy barriers in front of the seats to prevent the sudden berserk and dispersion of these energy injuring the young sectoral disciples. Seeing the intense battle on the Sword Discourse Arena, the shock in their hearts could not be described with words... Was this really a battle between two youths?

How could a battle of this extent, occur between two youths!!

On the Blue Wind Imperial Family's seats, Qin Wushang was also staring with wide eyes. Thinking back at his own strength when he was twenty, he sighed and muttered to himself: "These two, would certainly both be the pinnacle of Blue Wind Empire in the future... Especially this Xia Qingyue, will even more so, be unparalleled!"

Ling Yuefeng's expression became more and more solemn. He had originally thought that since he was similarly at the third level of Earth Profound Realm, Ling Yun should hold the absolute advantage; because

dominating others of the same rank was as easy as lifting an arm for him. However, he sat there and saw Ling Yun expend his full power little by little, yet was still incapable of getting the slightest advantage at all. All of a sudden, some anxiety birthed in his heart. Because from this kind of situation of the battle, it was impossible for him to not think about a possibility...

Which was the possibility of Ling Yun losing.

But if Ling Yun also lost, then

he would be stopped in the semifinals just like Ling Jie, and the two brothers would be respectively rank third and fourth place! Their power ranking, would also fall into third place!!

His Heavenly Sword Villa that was the number one force in the Blue Wind Empire, the number one supremacy that had never been shaken in history, would only be placed third in this Ranking Tournament! Not even keeping the second place! In all of Heavenly Sword Villa's history, that had never happened before! To Heavenly



Sword Villa's prestige and fame, this would be an unimaginably heavy strike.

Furthermore, the first place reward in this session of the Ranking Tournament —— the Dragonscale Armor, was a great gift that Ling Kun brought over from Mighty Heaven Sword Region to grant it to Heavenly Sword Villa. The reason why it was used as the first place treasure of this Ranking Tournament, was also just a feint. Because before the tournament, they, as well as everyone else were all completely certain that the first

place of this Ranking Tournament must belong to Ling Yun, with no exceptions of other people. Thus, not only would the Dragonscale Armor return to their Heavenly Sword Villa in the end, it would also display their “immense” wealth of his Heavenly Sword Villa.

If Ling Yun loses, this Dragonscale Armor would also fall into the hand of another.

No matter which outcome happens, they were all outcomes that Heavenly Sword Villa

absolutely could not accept.

Seeing Ling Yuefeng's reaction, Xuanyuan Yufeng comforted: "Yuefeng, do not worry. Don't forget, Ling'er still hasn't used the Sword Spirit Doppelganger. Once the Sword Spirit Doppelganger is used, Xia Qingyue definitely would not have any possibility of winning."

"Heaven's Might Absolute Sword —— Universe!!"

Cyan colored sword light

crazily surged atop the Celestial Yuan Sword, and extended all the way up to sixty meters away. Looking from afar, it was as if Ling Yun was holding an enormous colossal sword that was over sixty meters long and one and half meters wide. Both of Ling Yun's hands were held upwards, and the cyan colored sword light crashed toward Xia Qingyue like heaven's sword of judgement.

BOOM!!

Amidst the enormous noise, a

huge and bottomless chasm that was over three hundred meters long and five feet wide ruptured open in the Sword Discourse Arena, violently dividing the Sword Course Arena in half. But Xia Qingyue had already appeared far away in midair from who knows when. Ice spirits slowly floated around her body as flakes of snow gently fell from above. At first, the snowflakes were sparse, but right after, they increasingly grew in number. Ice cold wind had also slowly started to blow. In the end, the wind and snow melded together into a boundless blizzard and tormented down.

“This is... the sixth stage of the Frozen Cloud Arts, Realm of Heavenly Snow Invocation!!” Ling Yuefeng turned pale from shock! From his knowledge, the old Chu Yuechan who was half-step into the Emperor Profound Realm, had also only reached this stage! Even though Xia Qingyue’s aptitude was extremely astonishing, even if her aptitude was even greater, how was it possible for her to reach the sixth stage of the Frozen Cloud Arts with a profound strength at the third level of the Earth Profound Realm... This was unrelated to aptitude, and should instead be

restrained by the most  
fundamental laws of profound  
strength!

This kind of strength was  
already not like simple profound  
strength anymore, and was  
more like an undefiable force of  
nature. Those flakes of snow  
seemed to be soft and gentle, but  
a terrifying cold energy and  
destructive force hid within  
every single flake. Ling Yun  
quickly retreated backwards, but  
was still caged within the  
overwhelming blizzard. His  
sword lights moved like  
lightning and cut apart the  
blizzard with extreme speed as

he forcefully endured this attack that fundamentally should not belong to the Earth Profound Realm's level. And at this time, a line of white light suddenly arrived before his body. Even though he noticed, it was simply impossible for him, who was defending against the Heavenly Snow to take into consideration, and was lightly touched on his chest by the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon.

Bang!!!

Ling Yun sprayed out a



mouthful of fresh blood, which sprinkled onto the pure-white snowflakes. And at the same time, he also borrowed the force of this direct attack he received to escape backwards, far out of the overwhelming blizzard's attack. After tumbling for over ten times in the air, he heavily landed onto the ground on one knee with the Celestial Yuan Sword as support and heavily gasped from his mouth.

Ling Yuefeng stood up with a “whoosh”. With a grab of his palm, the Celestial Yang Sword within Ling Jie's hands was sucked into his, and was then

thrown flying toward Ling Yun:  
“Yun’er, catch the sword!!”

Ling Yun lifted up his head, and a painful struggle flashed through his eyes. However, he still extended his hands and caught the Celestial Yang Sword. His gaze, also once again recovered its resolution.

When Ling Jie was facing Yun Che before, a show of Ling Yun’s sword support was put on.

And now, the same scenario actually happened to Ling Yun.

The entire Sword Discourse Arena was silent, and no one voiced out any boos. Because anyone would understand that in this battle, Heavenly Sword Villa absolutely could not afford to lose. If they let the dignified number one force and supremacy in Blue Wind be reduced to the third, it would unquestionably be a shame that Heavenly Sword Villa could not wipe off for the generations to come.

Naturally, it was impossible for Ling Yun to not understand this.

Thus, even though using the dual swords would hurt his pride and dignity, he still did not refuse... Compared to the prestige of Heavenly Sword Villa, his own personal dignity was simply not important at all.

He had to win this battle.

With the Celestial Yuan Sword in his left hand, the Celestial Yang within his right, Ling Yun slowly stood up. His hand that grasped onto the Celestial Yang Sword also slowly unclenched, yet the Celestial Yang Sword that

lost its grasp oddly did not fall,  
and instead just floated there.

Both of Ling Yun's hands  
clasped in front of him, as a  
eccentric radiance that was as  
sharp as the sword beams stirred  
within his eyes. Around his  
body, there also swirled up a  
burst of light gray colored  
profound energy radiance.

“Sword...  
Doppelganger!”

Spirit...

# Chapter 238 – Conclusion Through Domain

---

An illusory shadow suddenly appeared behind the Celestial Yang Sword. Following Ling Yun's low mutterings, the profound energy on his entire body surged, and this shadow quickly congealed. Lastly, it actually turned into an image of a person which did not feel like an illusion at all. It wore the same clothes as Ling Yun, had the same build as Ling Yun, and even its appearance and gaze were completely the same. He reached his hand out to grasp at

the Celestial Yang Sword in front of him, and in that moment, a wave of sword energy that was undeniably and completely the same as Ling Yun's was released.

Two Ling Yuns stood together, and apart from the sword in his hands, there were no conceivable differences between them!

Yun Che's jaw dropped slightly, and his eyes revealed shock. This is... an illusion? Remnants of a shadow? Wrong! If it was an

illusion, for something like “sword energy” to exist was completely impossible, yet it was clearly releasing a sword energy that did not pale in comparison to Ling Yun’s in the slightest. It was just like another real Ling Yun!

Two Ling Yuns!?

The entire audience was stupefied, especially the younger practitioners, their eyes were opened wider than a cow’s. What skill was this? How could such an unimaginable skill like



this exist in the world... It was practically like a magic trick! Even practitioners of the lowest strength could feel that the sword energy from the “second Ling Yun” was not one bit inferior to the real Ling Yun’s.

“This is the Sword Spirit Doppelganger! It is a special sword intent skill that could only be achieved by those who have attained perfect comprehension of sword intent, and are at the pinnacle of this realm!” Qin Wushang said as his eyebrows sank, “This Sword Spirit Doppelganger is formed from Ling Yun’s sword intent.

Not only will it not discount from Ling Yun's own strength, it will also have the same profound energy and skills as Ling Yun, so it will count as a completely different entity which is completely the same as Ling Yun! However, the Sword Spirit Doppelganger will be very taxing on his mind. When the Sword Spirit Doppelganger disappears, Ling Yun will definitely become extremely exhausted... However, with Ling Yun's sword intent, this Sword Spirit Doppelganger will last for at least an eighth of an hour!

“Within that time frame, Xia

Qingyue will be facing an equivalent of two Ling Yuns. A single Ling Yun is already incomparably terrifying. Two of him... Let alone an eighth of an hour, it would be extremely hard for Xia Qingyue to even last for sixty breaths of time.”

While Qin Wushang was speaking. Ling Yun’s Celestial Yuan Sword had already pierced straight out in a graceful strike. It seemed to slice through space, and even if a mountain had been up ahead, the sword would have been enough to slash it into pieces.

Xia Qingyue's white ribbon fluttered and forged ahead to face the Celestial Yuan Sword. Following a loud explosion, the sword's shadow and a white shadow clashed into each other, and terrifying noises like that of thunder and lightning simultaneously rang out. At this, the other Ling Yun had already rounded behind Xia Qingyue, and the Celestial Yang Sword pierced over with a sword energy of the same ferocity...

Other than by using  
unconventional means, Xia

Qingyue's profound energy would only be barely enough to match evenly with Ling Yun. To use strength that transcends the norm would undoubtedly be immensely consuming, and was not something that can be frequently unleashed. Xia Qingyue could contend against a single Ling Yun, but was definitely not able to match up against two of him.

The ice lotus exploded, and Xia Qingyue had already quickly shifted, but both Ling Yuns followed her like shadows. Two Sky Profound Swords, one cyan and the other orange, wove

together to form two huge sword webs, locking Xia Qingyue firmly within. Originally, the power of both the Celestial Yuan Sword and the Celestial Yang Sword was already complementary. Now that both people and swords matched harmoniously, the might of this combination wasn't as simple as just being doubled.

Crack!!

The entire Sword Discourse Arena shook violently and the large spiderweb cracks began to

appear on the stone platform beneath. Many ice lotuses bloomed beside Xia Qingyue, but they would be crushed to dust instantly by the cyan and orange sword energies. Gradually, less offensive ice lotuses appeared as defensive ice lotuses increased, until at last, all the ice lotuses were concentrated on defending. The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon also went into a state of full defense and fluttered rapidly around Xia Qingyue, resisting the continuous sword energies from both swords.

Even so, she was still surrounded by danger, and was

forced back step by step by Ling Yun.

“I’d have never thought that Ling Yun could actually already be able to use the Sword Spirit Doppelganger... Elder sister, I remember that it was also because Ling Yuefeng had used this strange Sword Spirit Doppelganger trick to cause you to be defeated that year.” Chu Yueli lightly spoke slowly with a cool expression. Even though Xia Qingyue had already been forced into such an absolute disadvantage, she still did not seem to be anxious at all.



Chu Yuechan's face was cold as frost, and she did not reply.

Chu Yueli closed her eyes and activated spirit sound transmission, "Qingyue, it seems like there is no other choice. Activate 'Domain', I believe that once the Mistress knows that Ling Yun is capable of utilizing the Sword Spirit Doppelganger, she will not blame you for activating the Domain."

The movements of Xia

Qingyue, who had been doing her utmost to hold her own against both Ling Yuns, became sluggish. Suddenly, the ice spirits around her body floated, and a humongous “Ice Lotus Prison” exploded under her feet, causing both Ling Yuns to retreat at the same time.

The two Ling Yuns withdrew thirty meters away, then approached again at lightning speed. But at that moment, ice blue light was suddenly released from Xia Qingyue’s body. She closed both eyes, her expression as peaceful as snow. As she opened her arms slowly, her ink-

black long hair floated up without any wind, and a wave of biting cold wind suddenly whistled down from the blue dome of heaven...

“Frozen... Cloud... Domain....”

A low and gentle chant slowly escaped from her lips. In a split second, it was as if the world suddenly switched over. The air in the three hundred meters that surrounded her turned into a sheet of ice in a flash. In this huge ice-blue domain, the air was as frigid as purgatory. Ice

and frost filled the sky as they fell. Vapor in the air also rapidly solidified into countless ice crystals, forming a sheet of pure white that grew thicker by the second.

The movements of both Ling Yuns stopped simultaneously as layers of ice began to quickly solidify on their entire bodies. Deep shock was revealed on their faces.

“This is... This is... This is...”

“Domain!?” Without waiting for Ling Yufeng’s cry of shock, Xuanyuan Yufeng clutched Ling Yufeng’s hand and involuntarily shouted out.

Ling Kun’s complexion also changed in a split second. After the shock had passed, he quietly muttered to himself, “It’s truly worthy of being called... the Nine Profound Exquisite Body that holds no regard for regulations!”

“Do... Domain!?”

“It... It can’t be! It can’t possibly be! Domain.... Isn’t that a Throne’s power!”

“But this is clearly the strength of a Domain! And it’s a completely formed Domain!”

This time, not only the younger practitioners, but even the elders were all stunned. Domain, to the younger practitioners, was too far away for to reach, and to these elders, they clearly and deeply knew of the concept of Domain... And this sort of power was still the

ultimate goal they pursued throughout their entire lives!

“Domain... Domain...” Ling Wugou stared at the ice blue world in front of him, gobsmacked. In the midst of all the shock, his face became thoroughly stiff. As of today, he was at the eighth level of the Sky Profound Realm, and the possibility of ever charging into the Emperor Profound Realm in his lifetime was extremely slim. And to fully utilize a Domain, was proof of a Throne’s power. But for him, all this was only a dream that could not be reached... However, this dream

of his, had actually completely appeared on a mere seventeen year old girl's body.

The might of Xia Qingyue's Frozen Cloud Domain could definitely not compare to when it was first used by Chu Yuechan, but its completeness far surpassed that. After all, the most that Chu Yuechan, who was then half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm, could use would only be half an Frozen Cloud Domain, while Xia Qingyue's was fully complete!



Within the Frozen Cloud Domain, ice-cold flying snow, frost, mist, and wind... everything had been changed to become advantageous towards Xia Qingyue's element, and at the same time, it restricted Ling Yun to an enormous extent in all aspects. The frightful chill cut to the bone, and even caused Ling Yun's bones to tremble. The sky was filled with wind and snow, and the frosty mist obstructed his view... In the beginning, he was still able to withstand it with some effort, but gradually, his body began to harden, and be it his body's speed or his sword's speed, both dropped sharply, and even his sword's strength weakened as if it too,

had been frozen over.

Ding!

All of Ling Yun's sword beams had already been frozen in midair straight away, and thick layers of frost had even spread to the Celestial Yuan and Yang Swords. The world within the Frozen Cloud Domain was akin to a freezing hell, and if a person did not have a Domain of similar intensity to counteract it, they would have to bear the continuous pain of the ice prison... For Ling Yun, who was

in the third level of the Earth  
Profound Realm, let alone two of  
him, even if there were ten, or a  
hundred, he would still not be  
able to create a true Domain.

While he was dumbstruck and  
at a loss, thick layers of ice had  
already unknowingly crusted  
below his feet and on his chest.  
The Ice Phoenix Snowflower  
Ribbon came attacking from  
midair, but his hardened body  
no longer heeded what he  
wanted it do, and his  
movements were impossibly  
slow...

Ping!!

With a loud explosion, the layers of ice on his chest were smashed into pieces. Xia Qingyue did not hold back at all in this hit, causing Ling Yun to be sent flying far away, flying straight for thirty meters, before landing outside of the Frozen Cloud Domain.

Bang!!

Ling Yun fell harshly onto the ground. In the split second that

he had hit the ground, his Sword Spirit Doppelganger vanished, and the Celestial Yang Sword also fell powerlessly. While in the Frozen Cloud Domain, not only had his body been frozen, his profound strength had as well. So when he had taken that hit, his profound energy defense had been extremely frail. This one hit, had made him suffer profuse inner injuries. Adding to that, his soul energy was seriously damaged by the Sword Spirit Doppelganger's dissipation. The world in front of his eyes was a sea of disorder. His body struggled, yet he was ultimately unable to stand up.

“Y.... Young Villa Master!”

Ling Wugou rushed over quickly to help Ling Yun up. The moment he touched him, he found that his body was practically as cold as a block of ice.

“I... surrender...” Slowly opening his eyes, Ling Yun said these two words that he had thought he would never speak in his entire life with great difficulty. After which, his head sagged and he fainted dead away.

Initially, he had shared the limelight equally with Xia Qingyue, but after utilizing the Sword Spirit Doppelganger, he had gained the upper hand. However, the moment Xia Qingyue had unleashed Frozen Cloud Domain, he suffered a crushing defeat in the blink of an eye... Because that had surpassed the fundamental laws of profound energy. It was strength that should not have appeared in the Earth Profound Realm. He did not have the strength to contend against it at all.

Ling Yuefeng somberly went

back to his seat, and then took a long breath before silently closing his eyes. The moment Frozen Cloud Domain had appeared, he knew that Ling Yun had lost, and that Heavenly Sword Villa had lost... There was not even a shred of hope for a fluke.

“She is clearly only an Earth Profound Realm practitioner, how could she... how could she...” Ling Yuefeng muttered lowly and despondently. Even up to now, he still could not accept what everyone present had just seen with their own eyes.



“Ling Yun has conceded... Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Xia Qingyue is the winner, and will enter the final battle tomorrow!” Ling Wugou stood up, and with a voice filled with pain, announced the results of this battle that nobody would have ever expected to happen.

Ling Yun... had lost...

Unexpectedly, it was Ling Yun who lost!!

They couldn't imagine what a commotion it would cause in the Blue Wind Empire if news of this outcome were to circulate.

And if news that this practitioner who was only in the Earth Profound Realm could utilize Domain were to spread out, it would shock... Undoubtedly, it would shock the entire Profound Sky Continent!

Within the strong who were half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm, some who were especially endowed could

forcefully try to use an incomplete Domain, but never had anyone been able to utilize Domain in the Earth Profound Realm, and especially a complete Domain at that!

The ice-blue Domain had slowly vanished, and under everyone's deep shock and stares of disbelief, Xia Qingyue floated down from the sky. When she landed, her body gently shook and her towering chest also rose and fell fiercely. Even more so, her complexion was abnormally white... The result of unleashing something that belonged to the Emperor Profound Realm with

only strength at the Earth Profound Realm, anyone would know how immense the toll would be on her. At her peak, this gorgeous Frozen Cloud enchantment could barely last for a maximum of twenty breaths of time.

A profound stone was again erected in the center of the Sword Discourse Arena, and on it, the two people who would be competing in the finals tomorrow were displayed...

Blue Wind Imperial Family's

Yun Che —— versus —— Frozen  
Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue!

# **Chapter 239 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (1)**

---

No one had foreseen the results of the two battles in the semifinals. Yun Che's battle with Ling Jie, was a visual feast for the audience, and Xia Qinyue's duel with Ling Yun, had completely destroyed all of their prior perceptions. After the battles, those who had watched the entirety of the battle could not calm down for a long while.

In this ranking tournament, in

these battles of youths of under twenty, unexpectedly appeared a Domain!

“Sigh, it is truly Yangtze’s waves pushing the waves ahead. We have aged, the time for the younger generation to shine has already arrived! Ling Yun alone could make us speechless, but this Xia Qingyue... Hehe, in front of this young girl, I feel like I can’t even raise my head.” One of the elders of a major sect said while sighing.

(Author’s ps: Don’t ask me why “Yangtze” is here! I really don’t know!)

“It is still a good thing. It at least proves that our Blue Wind Empire’s profound realms can grow to an even higher level in the future.”

“I wonder where Frozen Cloud Asgard found such a disciple. After this ranking tournament, the name ‘Xia Qingyue’ will resound throughout Blue Wind Empire. The title strongest of the youths, will have to change hands.”

“Without a doubt, this young



girl must be the first in history to cause Heavenly Sword Villa to just be a side character. It must be hard for Heavenly Sword Villa to take.”

All the discussions were focused on Xia Qingyue, and few people brought up the the other participant of tomorrow’s battle, Yun Che. It was not surprising; even though Yun Che and Ling Jie’s battle was exciting, when compared to Ling Yun and Xia Qingyue’s battle, it was worse by a few levels. Yun Che also didn’t have it easy beating Ling Jie, and had his weapon broken. No matter what happens, he

wouldn't be able to beat Xia Qingyue, who overcame Ling Yun, and could even cast a Domain.

Once Xia Qingyue's Domain was released, perhaps in the entire Earth Profound Realm, there were none that could be her match. This type of ability that transcended realms, as well as the rules of profound strength, was a gift from the heavens.

The people of Heavenly Sword Villa were indeed feeling

unhappy.

Having his body and meridians frozen by the Domain, injured by Xia Qingyue's attack, and even suffering from the side effects of the Sword Spirit Doppelganger technique, Ling Yun had not awaken even after a whole 6 hours. The fainted Ling Yun was extremely pale, and his face unconsciously showed signs of suffering... It was hard to say whether it was because of the pain of his body, or whether he could not accept that he, who had always been unmatched among the youths, had lost, embarrassing Heavenly Sword

Villa.

“Yun’er still hasn’t awaken?”  
Ling Yuefeng walked over, with  
neither happiness nor sadness  
on his face.

“Not yet. The Sword Spirit  
Doppelganger wasn’t released  
voluntarily, but destroyed.  
Brother’s spirit should have  
taken quite a bit of damage, but  
he should awaken after another  
few hours.” Ling Jie said  
worriedly.

“Sigh...” Ling Yuefeng let out a long sigh, closing his eyes. “This two battles, you and your brother had both displayed all your skills completely, there’s nothing more to say about our loss. It seems like these years I have been too proud and ignorant... Our Heavenly Sword Villa’s era of reign, has to end from this point onwards...”

.....

Night fell with the waning moon hanging high in the sky, and the clear moonlight shining

downwards. Under the moonlight, Xia Qingyue sat silently beside the lotus pond, hands supporting her cheeks, as she quietly stared at the incomplete moon. Her eyes were like calm lakes without ripples. She was deep inside her own secret thoughts.

A cool breeze blew, and a snow white image appeared next to her without a sound. Xia Qingyue lowered her gaze, stood up, and then bowed. "Senior Master."

Chu Yuechan nodded faintly, then extended her jade like hand which held a pellet. The pellet was snow white, and exuded a light that was similar to the moon: “You used your Domain today, and slightly wounded your vitality. At this rate, you will only recover sixty percent of your energy by tomorrow, but after taking this pellet, you can completely recover.”

“Frozen Soul Heaven Returning Pellet...” Xia Qingyue was astounded, and did not receive it. “Frozen Soul Heaven Returning Pellet is a priceless treasure, it shouldn’t be wasted

on Qingyue.”

“You are Frozen Cloud Asgard’s future pillar and hope. The position of Asgard Mistress will also belong to you in the future. Any treasure that is used on you would never be a waste. Take it.”

Chu Yuechan’s position in Frozen Cloud Asgard was second only to the Mistress. Xia Qingyue did not refuse any longer as she received the pellet, and immediately placed it in her mouth.



“Thank you Senior Master.”

As the Frozen Soul Heaven Returning Pellet entered her body, the night breeze suddenly became extremely cold, and the energy of heaven and earth quickly entered Xia Qingyue's body, allowing her her injured vitality and profound energy to quickly recover.

Chu Yuechan watched Xia Qingyue for a short while with a complicated gaze before whispering: “Qingyue, for the battle tomorrow, do not

underestimate your opponent, and even more importantly, do not assume that victory is in your hands. With regards to his ability, though he is still hiding some secrets, even if he does utilize everything, he will still be far from you. With your Domain, it is true that under the Sky Profound Realm, there isn't anyone who can be your match. However, he has two things that you distantly fall short of."

Xia Qingyue glanced up with astonishment in her moon-like beautiful eyes: "Please advise me, Senior Master."

“The first, is his battle experience and extremely acute five senses. His decision making and decisiveness under dangerous circumstances coupled with his battle experience, forget about you, even I am far from his level... The second, is his perseverance and willpower. Even if he is pressured to the limit and has no ability to counter attack, do not assume that he has lost, but conversely, when he is in dire straits, he could become even more terrifying. Under extreme pressure, a normal person can bring out the last power from their body, but for him, he can

bring out power from his soul... This battle tomorrow, not only should you not relax, it could perhaps be a difficult battle. These are not empty words, but is my advice for you as your Senior Master.

“Even if you lose, I would not be too astonished.”

Hearing Chu Yuechan's words, Xia Qingyue's beautiful eyes were filled with astonishment.

Chu Yuechan's heart was like

profound ice, and with a cold personality, she usually hardly spoke. This was the first time that she has heard this Senior Master that she revered speak so much. And every word she said, was giving a young man an extremely good assessment... So high that it seemed like an impossible assessment.

If she had not heard it directly from Chu Yuechan, it would be impossible for her to believe that it had happened.

“Yes, I will remember Senior

Master's advice." Xia Qingyue said softly. Shortly after, even though she was hesitating, she asked: "Qingyue has a presumptuous question to ask Senior Master..."

"You would like to know why I understand him so?" Chu Yuechan slowly closed her eyes.

"Yes..."

Chu Yuechan turned around, and just when Xia Qingyue thought she was going to leave,

she suddenly said faintly: “Previously, I left the Asgard to hunt for three Sky Profound Cores so you can refine the Frozen Heart Liquid Jade. When I obtained the third profound core, I accidentally got poisoned. After that, I met him and he helped me cure the poison, and I ended up owing him a favor.”

Xia Qingyue’s lips parted as her gaze trembled.

“Two months after I returned to Asgard, I left again, and disappeared for five months.

Those five months were spent with him, because I wanted to repay the favor by protecting him, but in the end, he was the one who saved my life instead. It was also because of him that I could break into the Emperor Profound Realm.”

“...” Xia Qingyue did not make a sound for a long time, for she was unable to believe everything she had heard.

Even Chu Yuechan herself wasn't sure why she told these secrets, that she had planned to



keep to herself for the rest of her life, to Xia Qingyue. Perhaps, it was because deep within her heart, she felt a type of indescribable inferiority to her... After all, Xia Qingyue was his legal and proper wife, but she as Xia Qingyue's Senior Master, had...

“These words, cannot be repeated to anyone, including your master.”

“Yes.” Xia Qingyue nodded, her thoughts bewildered.

“As an exchange, can you answer a question?”

Today, Xia Qingyue had an unreal feeling, what with Chu Yuechan talking so much. She nodded: “Senior Master, please ask.”

Chu Yuechan glanced back, her cold voice carried some gentleness: “When I taught you Frozen Cloud Arts, I checked your awareness, and found out that you did not really like to train, but had a very strong desire to obtain greater power.

Can you tell me the reason?”

Xia Qingyue was startled, and a deep sadness appeared in her eyes fleetingly. Her eyes became misty, and even the ice spirits around her calmed down and became quiet.

“Because of... my Mother...”  
After Chu Yuechan’s open-hearted words, she did not choose to hide, but very naturally, with words that flowed like the mist, she said: “Father and mother’s meeting was very magical... When father

met mother outside of the city, she was in a coma and her entire body was covered with blood. After she woke up, she did not have any of her memories, and her body was extremely weak... Then, mother married father, and because her body was weak, giving birth to me was very difficult, and I narrowly escaped death...”

“When I was four years old, mother suddenly regained her memories... She left, like a fairy she flew away and left... When she left, she hugged me and my brother while crying pitifully, saying that if she didn’t leave,

she would bring calamity to the whole family. She said that where she was going, was a place called the Domain of the Gods. It was a place that we could never get to... After that, even though father stayed strong, I often see him shed tears quietly when he was alone. After more than ten years, he never remarried... Brother was so young and ignorant, but when growing up, the thing that he envied the most, was that others people had mothers...”

“Domain of the Gods?” Chu Yuechan’s eyebrows tightened, because even with her

experience, she had also never heard of this name, “Do you know what kind of place it is?”

Xia Qingyue absent-mindedly shook her head: “I don’t know. I have researched many ancient books, but I never encountered this name.”

“The reason you pursue profound power is so that you can reach a level high enough to learn this name, correct?”

“Mn...” Xia Qingyue nodded

slightly before raising her snow white face to look at the waning moon in the sky: “I only want a reunited family. Even though this goal is very far, I believe that as I climb higher and higher, I will inevitably be able to see the silhouette of my mother one day...”

At this moment, the sound of deliberately soft footsteps came from outside the courtyard. Soon, a clear voice drifted over from the main door of the courtyard: “This one is Xiao Sect’s Xiao Kuangyu. I would like to meet the Fairy of Frozen Moon, ‘Xia Qingyue’... This one

does not have any other intentions. It's just that I have an frozen jade hairpin which suits the Fairy of Frozen Moon. Only when matched with the Fairy of Frozen Moon, would this treasure not be wasted. And also..."

Before Xiao Kuangyu could finish speaking, Chu Yuechan extended her hand and pushed. A stream of solidifying cold energy suddenly rushed forth and sealed the courtyard's main entrance with a thick ice wall three meters in height. The stream of cold energy that rushed towards him caused Xiao



Kuangyu to pale in fright, and he speedily retreated. Even though his face was twitching with anger, he did not dare to say anything. He had no option but to forcefully clench his teeth as he angrily left with a flick of his sleeve.

In the entire Blue Wind Empire, perhaps only Frozen Cloud Asgard could thwart and embarrass this second young master of the Xiao Sect.

# **Chapter 240 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (2)**

---

Yun Che straightened his upper body. Bending his right leg forward, he closed his eyes, and both his hands assumed the sword-grasping form. After maintaining this motion for a long while, he suddenly opened his eyes and growled before chopping forward with both arms...

But these series of movements were mere movements without

any grandeur.

“What are you doing?” Jasmine finally could not restrain her curiosity as she asked out loud.

Yun Che retrieved both hands, heaved a sigh of relief, and said: “Jasmine, what do you think the probability of me winning the fight tomorrow is?”

“If any other person was substituted, with the exact same profound strength and profound techniques as you, the

probability of defeating Xia Qingyue would be completely zero! Even if this person had used all his strength, he shouldn't even think about exchanging more than ten moves. But for you... there's probably a tiny chance." Jasmine responded lightly: "Because, when you are about to lose, you'll become a madman who can't afford to lose!"

"Hehe, thanks for the praise." Yun Che smiled, quite pleased with himself.

“Praise? I was being sarcastic!” Jasmine corrected herself very earnestly: “I can feel that you aren’t that confident about defeating Xia Qingyue yourself, yet you also absolutely won’t permit yourself to lose. So, at that time, even I won’t be able to anticipate what kind of life-threatening actions you’ll make. However, I must warn you, it is best that you don’t try to forcefully activate the third realm of the Evil God. At the Dragon God Trial grounds, you forcefully activated the second realm of the Evil God. If it wasn’t for your Great Way of the Buddha suddenly making a breakthrough, you would have died there. You won’t have such

heavenly luck every time!”

“I’m not really a person who can’t afford to lose; if tomorrow’s opponent was Ling Yun, or even Xiao Jie, I wouldn’t think much about it if I lost, but only Xia Qingyue... I definitely cannot lose! This isn’t an issue of victory or defeat, but an issue of a man’s dignity!”

“A man’s dignity?”

“... This is a matter between adults, little kids won’t

understand it.” Yun Che answered with a grin.

“Little kid? Hmph! Everything I know, surpasses your knowledge ten million times!” Jasmine snorted in disdain: “You still haven’t answered my question. What are you gesticulating?”

“It’s not much. I’ve just been trying to get a feel for the Sirius’ Second Sword Style based off the fundamental stage of the Prison God Sirius’ Tome, but evidently, I’ve been a bit too quixotic.” Yun Che said

grudgingly. He had tried to do this numerous times, but each time, his efforts proved to be fruitless.

“Jasmine, do you really not have any impression at all of the Sirius’ Second Sword Style?” Yun Che suddenly asked. Currently, out of all of his attacking profound techniques, Sky Wolf Slash had the greatest power. And Sky Wolf Slash was only the first sword style of the Prison God Sirius’ Tome, yet it already had such formidable power; the godly might of the following sword styles must be even more frightening.



“During that time, I had only casually flipped through the Prison God Sirius’ Tome while Big Brother was training, so I only remember the fundamental stage and the first sword style...” Speaking to this point, Jasmine seemed to have thought of something, and after a slight pause, a string of scenes suddenly appeared in Yun Che’s mind... In the scenes, a young man with a handsome figure and unclear facial features was currently brandishing an enormous heavy sword even larger than his body. Every wave of the heavy sword caused the winds and clouds to rumble, and

the earth to quake...

“This... is...”

“This is a scene of Big Brother training. His heavy sword sword styles are mostly from the Prison God Sirius’ Tome, but there are only movements, and no profound arts. Furthermore, I can’t guarantee that these scenes won’t have mistakes and omissions. Whether or not you can get anything out of this, it’s all up to you.” Jasmine said irresponsibly.

Yun Che didn't say anymore. After calming his heart down, he began to silently observe the form of the figure wielding the heavy sword in his mind, over and over again...

The next day, Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Discourse Arena.

The sun had yet to rise, but the Sword Discourse Arena was already completely packed. This day was the concluding day of the Ranking Tournament, and the two parties in the final battle was an unprecedented pair of a

young man and woman who were merely seventeen years of age.

One was Yun Che, who had the lowest profound strength out of all the participating disciples, yet consecutively defeated opponents with profound strengths far surpassing his, and ultimately, miraculously charged into the final battle. In every one of his fights, he had brought about more or less legendary flair. He was the first ever disciple in the True Profound Realm to have participated in the Ranking Tournament, and furthermore, the first ever True

Profound Realm participant to have charged into the finals!

And the other one was Xia Qingyue, who had revealed her true strength yesterday, defeated Ling Yun, and astonished everyone present. After yesterday's battle, she had become the Blue Wind Empire's number one genius. Furthermore, she had replaced Ling Yun, and became the number one of the younger generation. In the future, she would definitely become a king class expert whose name would shake all of Blue Wind.

And Heavenly Sword Villa, which had always taken the leading role of this decisive battle in the past, had been reduced to mere spectators this time. Ling Yuefeng had arrived very early, but he just sat silently the entire time, and didn't say a word. Ling Yun, who had lost the fight yesterday, also appeared next to Ling Yuefeng. He was similarly silent, but his expression was very tranquil; at least on the surface, it seemed like he hadn't taken much of a blow from yesterday's loss.

Of course, it wasn't that he was too weak, but that his opponent was so powerful she completely exceeded everyone's expectations.

Today, there were originally two battles scheduled in the Sword Discourse Arena. The first battle was the fight for the third and fourth places, but this fight had directly concluded when Ling Jie conceded the match in advance. Ling Yun, who had originally been expected to take first place, thus ranked third. Before the Ranking Tournament, everyone had made a great deal of

predictions as to which competitors would become the top three, and the only unanimous prediction was that Ling Yun would take first place. If he hadn't gone through the fight with Xia Qingyue yesterday, no would ever think about or even believe this kind of conclusion.

“... The final battle of the ranking tournament: Blue Wind Imperial Family's Yun Che, versus Frozen Cloud Asgard's Xia Qingyue. May both contestants ascend the Sword Discourse Arena!”



Ling Wugou declared loudly at the center of the Sword Discourse Arena.

“Junior Brother Yun, good luck!”

“Brother-in-law, good luck!”

Yun Che stood up, and suddenly asked to his side: “Yuanba, do you hope that I’ll win, or hope that your sister will win?”

“Eh...” Xia Yuanba was stumped. He scratched his head, and said: “If Brother-in-law wins, I’ll certainly be happy, and if Big Sis wins, I’ll definitely be happy as well.” Having spoken to this point, Xia Yuanba’s eyes suddenly began to sparkle: “Waaah! Before, the Ranking Tournament could only appear in my dreams, but now Big Sis and Brother-in-law are competing for first place; it’s as if I’m still inside a dream. However, if I had to compare the two of you... I still hope Brother-in-law will win.”

“Oh? Why?” Yun Che asked with a faint smile.

“This, this... because Big Sis is still a girl y’know, and is also Brother-in-law’s wife. Being defeated by Brother-in-law seems a bit more reasonable.” Xia Yuanba answered in a somewhat confused manner.

“Hahahaha.” Yun Che began to laugh. He reached out and patted Xia Yuanba’s shoulder: “Yuanba, well spoken. As a man, it’s not much if I lose to other people, but I definitely can’t lose

to my own wife!! So what if she's a tigress or a phoenix, I must firmly... Mn, ride her!!”

Xia Yuanba stared wide and nodded blankly. Even though he hadn't completely digested Yun Che's words, he felt that they made a lot of sense.

This crooked reasoning by Yun Che made Cang Yue smile wryly, but she did not rebuke him. These words that were filled with arrogance and machismo ought to have sounded repulsive from a girl's perspective; but

coming from Yun Che's mouth, it didn't make her feel odd and repulsed. Instead, she had a fitting feeling that this belonged to a part of his disposition.

Under the gazes of several thousands of people, Yun Che walked to the center of the Sword Discourse Arena, and stood opposing Xia Qingyue.

The current Xia Qingyue had an ice veil covering her face, making him unable to see her features even though he was very close. However, that single

fleeting glance yesterday, was already enough for him to carve it deep into his heart. The two silently faced each other... Other than the limited few, no one present would have thought that these two people who seemed to be completely unrelated, were actually a genuine husband and wife pair.

Recalling the bridal greeting, wedding, and sleeping together back then... At that time, she was the publically acknowledged beloved daughter of the heavens, and what's more, she had been accepted as a disciple of the Frozen Cloud Asgard even

earlier. Yet, he was only a wastrel with crippled profound veins and no future who was looked down in contempt by everyone; the two's difference could be said to be as far as heaven and earth. But just with a short few days of interacting, Yun Che had already cracked a tiny little fissure in Xia Qingyue's cold and indifferent heart. However, the unforeseen event that came right after, made them go on their separate ways earlier than expectations... When they met again, the trajectory and height of the two's lives, both had already turned upside down.

The her before was a beloved daughter of the heavens, and the dotings of thousands upon thousands of people concentrated on that one body. The her right now, was even more blessed countless times by the heavens, and stood on an unreachable plane that made peers of the same age exclaim in shock.

And in Xia Qingyue's eyes, as if a miracle, that youth who was frail and weak yet had a resolute and profound gaze, and was even somewhat bold and audacious in front of her, actually grew into a enormous



tree that reached the heavens in less than two short years. The him that time could only be oppressed by others and was driven out of his family in the end; yet the him now, could stand on this profound strength stage of the highest level in the Blue Wind Empire with pride, and declare his name at all of Blue Wind Empire's peak experts.

It was like an inexplicable setup by fate; this pair of husband and wife that should by no means have crossed each other again, had nevertheless, simultaneously stood on this

stage that represented the pinnacle. The other party, was their last opponent.

“Qingyue, do you know why I participated in the Ranking Tournament this time?” Yun Che opened his mouth first while looking into Xia Qingyue’s eyes, and asked while smiling faintly.

Without waiting for Xia Qingyue to inquire, Yun Che followed up: “The first reason is to complete Senior Sister Xueruo’s dream. I have already

accomplished this. As for the second reason...”

Yun Che extended his right hand forward as a gray light flashed, and grasped onto the hilt of Dragon Fault. The tip of the sword, in which a fierce dragon was embedded, naturally drooped down, piercing the ground beneath him with a loud explosion. A gust of thick and domineering imposing force also surged and spread like waves in all directions.

“I’ll tell you after I defeat you!”

The instant Dragon Fault was taken out, not in the least unexpected, the might of the Sky Profound sword awed the entire arena. In the Blue Wind Empire, it was well known that only seven Sky Profound weapons existed; this heavy sword, was actually a Sky Profound Weapon that had never before been seen!

“This imposing force... is a Sky Profound Weapon! And a high-grade Sky Profound Weapon at that!

“Such a Sky Profound Weapon actually exists in Blue Wind Empire, why haven’t I ever heard of it? Could it be that the Blue Wind Imperial Family has been concealing it this entire time?”

“It looks as if it’s still a heavy sword... A Sky Profound heavy sword, I’m afraid even an expert at the Sky Profound Realm would find it difficult to control. Can he control it?”

“Sky... Sky Profound heavy

sword?” Ling Jie cried out in surprise, then clenched his teeth silently: “No wonder he didn’t want me to pay him for breaking that Earth Profound heavy sword. It turns out he actually has a Sky Profound heavy sword... In other words, he was still holding back in our fight yesterday, and didn’t use all his strength... Mn? Father, what happened? Ah? Big Bro, your expression has also become really strange.”

“Father, doesn’t it look like that sword?” Ling Yun suddenly asked.

Ling Yuefeng didn't respond, and rapidly withdrew an ancient book of historical records from his spatial ring. He flipped through the first several pages of the historical records, and after his gaze halted for a moment, he raised his hand, looked at the enormous sword in Yun Che's hands, and said in a low voice: "Based on the information we've received about Yun Che in the last few days, for some time before this, did he go to the Wasteland of Death, and spend an entire five months of time there before coming out?"

“That did indeed happen.” Ling Yun nodded.

“Looks like it can’t be wrong.” Ling Yuefeng closed the historical records and withdrew it into his spatial ring: “Without a doubt, that sword is indeed Dragon Fault.”



# Chapter 241 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (3)

---

“Dragon Fault?” Ling Jie felt that this name sounded somewhat familiar. He thought about it for a while before saying with astonishment: “Dragon Fault, wasn’t that the heavy sword recorded in our sect’s history? Don’t tell me...”

“Dragon Fault’s written accounts could be traced back to a thousand years ago. Heavenly Sword Villa had just been

recently established then, and the Villa even had a heavy sword department.” Ling Yuefeng explained slowly: “But it only took two generations for this department to decline. During the third generation, those who practiced the heavy sword dwindled to such a small number that did not even reach ten. At that time, in order to make a breakthrough and revive the heavy sword, the elder of that department left for the Wasteland of Death with Dragon Fault... Records say that the Dragon Fault Sword was forged by our ancestors using Ten Thousand Year Old Ardent Gray Stone. Sealed within the sword is the soul of a young Sky

Profound Dragon's soul, which was why it was named Dragon Fault. But ever since the Dragon Fault Sword had been born in this world, it had never once displayed its true Sky Profound might. After that heavy sword department elder entered the Wasteland of Death with Dragon Fault, he had never once come out. And from that point onwards, the Dragon Fault Sword vanished without a trace."

"According to the information that I've received, Yun Che had once gone deep into the Wasteland of Death before. The

Sky Profound sword in his hands is exactly the same as the Dragon Fault written in our records... Without doubt, that must be Dragon Fault.” Ling Yuefeng creased his brows as he said that. He deeply understood what kind of concept it was to have “gone deep into the Wasteland of Death.”

“Ah... Father, are you thinking... of demanding to have the Dragon Fault Sword back after the ranking tournament?” Ling Jie probed as he carefully assessed Ling Yuefeng’s reaction.

“No.” Ling Yuefeng shook his head: “At that time, Heavenly Sword Villa had searched for the Dragon Fault Sword for many years, yet ended up empty-handed. In the end, they gave up. Him obtaining Dragon Fault is due to his own ability and luck. Our Heavenly Sword Villa has no right to demand it... But this can also be regarded as fate between him and our Heavenly Sword Villa. After all, that is a heavy sword that our ancestors themselves, personally casted.”

“This is the last battle of this session’s ranking tournament. The victor, will become the new

leader of Blue Wind Empire's younger generation and also receive the 'Dragonscale Armor' bestowed by one of the Sacred Grounds, the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region..."

When he said the words "Dragonscale Armor", a pained expression of heartache clearly flashed past Ling Yuefeng's face. A Sky Profound protective armor was obviously even more rare and precious than a Sky Profound Weapon, and this Dragonscale Armor was also the highest of highest grade. It was originally suppose to belong to their Heavenly Sword Villa.

Never did they expect that “making feints” would become a “submissive hand over”. Not feeling brokenhearted would be weird.

“Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che against Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Xia Qingyue... Battle start!!”

Bang!!

Dragon Fault was pulled out by Yun Che from under his foot, bringing along small pieces of

broken rock that flew in the air as it released an unrestrained powerful yet dignified imposing aura. Both his hands firmly held onto Dragon Fault. In the blink of an eye, his aura had already become one with Dragon Fault's aura. While watching Xia Qingyue, he spoke lowly: "Do you still remember what I told you that night? If we become adversaries, I hope that you will use all our strength, without ever holding back!!"

"Burning Heart... Open!"



Yun Che suddenly roared in a loud voice, and Evil God's Second Gate —— Burning Heart, opened without the slightest hesitation! In an instant, the profound energy aura on his body suddenly increased explosively at an incomparably shocking rate. The aura's level was still of the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, but it was not known how many times the thickness of this aura exceeded the limits of the True Profound Realm. It was actually so strong that it quickly drew near to the intensity of Xia Qingyue's aura.

“AHHHHHHH!!”      Ling      Jie

leaned forward as his mouth gaped open and released a seemingly frightened yell. Originally, even when he had been defeated yesterday, he still felt that it was not an easy win for Yun Che. However, when he brought out Dragon Fault, his self-confidence immediately took a hit. And at this moment, the intensity of Yun Che's profound energy suddenly increased explosively. It was obviously not the same as yesterday's, and this fact ruthlessly hammered at Ling Jie's heart.

It turned out that in yesterday's

duel, not only did Yun Che go easy on him weapon-wise, in regards to profound energy, he did not even go all out.

If Yun Che had displayed such a profound strength and used Dragon Fault for a weapon, wanting to defeat him, would have been a completely easy task.

However, the situation was not as simple as what Ling Jie believed it to be. Yun Che's profound strength was just too low. Even with the support of

the second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha that he had broken through to, he could barely maintain the Burning Heart state. It was still “barely”, so if the battle lasted too long, it might perhaps leave a definite repercussion.

And the limit in which he could maintain the “Burning Heart” state, was approximately five minutes.

And these five minutes of the “Burning Heart” state, was the only thing he could rely on to

withstand Xia Qingyue! In other words, he had to defeat Xia Qingyue in less than half a quarter of an hour. Otherwise, after he becomes incapable of maintaining “Burning Heart”, he would not even have a sliver of hope.

Yun Che’s sudden dramatic rise of profound energy startled everyone, including Ling Yuefeng and Qin Wushang. From the start of the ranking tournament up until now, one after another of ridiculous and incredible situations emerged from Yun Che, but he had actually never revealed his true

strength. Through the progression of the ranking tournament, his opponents grew stronger and stronger, yet he had only released only a bit of his true strength... And at this moment, he had truly released all the strength he possessed without reservation.

Yun Che horizontally gripped Dragon Fault in front of him. With a loud shout, he suddenly smashed towards Xia Qingyue. Among the enemies in his past life, there were countless foes that far surpassed him. He was the most clear about what to do against an enemy that far

surpassed him in strength during a situation in which he could not escape. The most foolish way to handle it would be to contend, and attempt to control the other. The best way to handle it would be gather all his strength for a concentrated all out attack!

So once Yun Che approved, he mobilized his full strength without a trace of restraint! Atop the Dragon Fault that weighed more than four thousand kilos, surged the aura of a devil's berserk strength.

Boom!!

The oppressiveness of this strike made Xia Qingyue choose to not block it, and she floated far away. Following a booming sound, the pitiful Sword Discourse Arena suffered a large amount of destruction once again. Yun Che, who had hit empty air, did not stop at all. He suddenly leapt up as another strike shot straight for Xia Qingyue's chest. The heavy sword brought about a howling noise similar to that of an evil spirit's.



The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon had also surrounded Xia Qingyue's entire body at this time. Facing against Yun Che's oppressive strike, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon did not retreat one bit as it made Yun Che's strike miss again. Then, it suddenly scuttled along Dragon Fault and tightly wrapped around it...

The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon had once sent Ling Yun's Celestial Yuan Sword flying, but Yun Che and Dragon Fault were perfectly synchronized, as if it was Yun Che's own arm. Even if it was the Ice Phoenix

Snowflower Ribbon, sending it flying was a definite impossibility.

Right when the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon's tearing force was recently unleashed, Dragon Fault suddenly released a soul-shaking dragon roar. A tyrannical force suddenly exploded, and shook the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon open. Yun Che's gaze was as sharp as a sword as Dragon Fault abruptly smashed down. And when Dragon Fault was going down, he activated Star God's Broken Shadow at the same time, instantly conjuring three

figures that looked exactly the same. The third shadow appeared diagonally above Xia Qingyue and struck downwards...

“Overlord’s Fury!!”

The activation of Star God’s Broken Shadow was silent and formless. The broken false shadows and true shadow were entirely identical, and the scariest thing about it was that during its launch, there was no fluctuation in profound energy. One could only depend on the

profound energy aura that could be felt after the true shadow shifted to determine its position, but when that happens, it was oftentimes too late.

Xia Qingyue's Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon unfurled forward with the intent to meet Yun Che's overbearing strike. But weirdly enough, a dangerous aura suddenly came from the behind. Shock was revealed in her eyes as she realized that there was simply not enough time for the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon to defend her rear. She had no choice but to quickly use Frozen Cloud Arts

to construct a thick ice crystal barrier.

BOOM!

PING!!

The three layered ice crystal barrier was completely shattered consecutively in an instant. As though a storm, an enormous thrusting and explosive force rammed Xia Qingyue flying. Without waiting for Xia Qingyue to regain her balance, Yun Che had already roared. Along with

Dragon Fault, which followed his shadow, he immediately rushed towards Xia Qingyue...

“What!?” Chu Yueli stood up with wrinkled brows. She had never expected that once they had begun to fight, Yun Che was actually the one who took the initiative. The intensity level of that last strike’s profound energy fluctuation was enough to make Xia Qingyue receive internal injuries.

However, this obviously did not mean that Yun Che’s all out

strength topped Xia Qingyue. Rather, it was his approach. The crazed attack was like the sudden attack of a berserk beast that forced Xia Qingyue into a passive state.

One Overlord's Fury was like a heavy hammer that fell on her shoulder, and directly numbed Xia Qingyue's entire left arm. Her internal organs had also suffered light injuries under the profound energy assault but she did not panic. Instead, her expression had calmed down. With Chu Yuechan's word of advice from last night still beside her ears, the fact that she

had to use her entire strength echoed along with it. She slightly concentrated and instantly became as cold and pure as ice and snow. With a slight fluttering spin, she stabilized her balance. Like a streak of white lightning, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon charged at Yun Che.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!  
BOOM!!

Each and every strike from Yun Che all brought along an ear-splitting explosion. Directly



engaging against a heavy sword with a frontal attack was the most foolish of decisions. But when facing against Xia Qingyue, Yun Che's heavy sword had met its match...

The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was as soft and flexible as water, and as nimble as a snake. When exchanging attacks with Dragon Fault, its overbearing Frozen Cloud power actually did not collide with the heavy sword. Instead, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon used its nature to form a large pulling force, drawing each of the heavy sword's attacks

towards empty air every single time. At the same time, an increasingly cold energy silently enveloped towards Yun Che. Then, with a “crack” sound, a thick layer of ice solidified on both his shoulders.

The ice-cold energy bore into the heart with a bone-chilling coldness, as if countless numbers of knives had stabbed into one’s body. Yun Che’s gaze went cold. After a low growl, a cluster of scarlet colored flames suddenly combusted on his body, and rose to a height that was close to ten feet in the blink of an eye. Under the scarlet fire,

the ice-cold energy was rapidly dispersed. The layer of ice was also quickly melted.

Meanwhile, Dragon Fault had also been completely wrapped up in the scarlet phoenix flame, and became an enormous flame sword. It brought along dancing sparks as it directly assaulted forward once more.

“He actually is able to ignite such an intense flame! Looks like his fire attribute profound art is absolutely not as simple as the one he had displayed earlier.”

“It’s only the lowest level scarlet fire...” The young disciple who had said that suddenly opened his eyes wide at this moment, and continued with shock: “This... this... how is this possible!!”

An innumerable amount of ice crystals from all directions came flying to Xia Qingyue’s front, and condensed together to become a fantastical light blue ice lotus. The ice lotus slowly rotated, and then suddenly dispersed. Each flower petal had transformed into seven ice

crystals that flew at Yun Che. Each ice crystal was as thin as a cicada's wing, and was as clear as pure gems, yet it was also bone-piercingly cold!

“Star            Scorching            Demon  
Lotus!!”

With Yun Che's body at the core, a flame lotus that was at least ten times as large as Xia Qingyue's ice lotus blossomed from the soaring heat wave like a flame gigantic flame beast opening its mouth, and completely swallowed up the ice

crystals flying there. None of those ice crystal were able to approach Yun Che because they had already disappeared completely.

The surrounding audience were all stupefied... Even Ling Yun's sword beams could not shatter Xia Qingyue's ice lotus, so how could it be easy melted by an insignificant scarlet flame!?

“That’s...”

“Phoenix Flame!” Fen Moli said

with shock.

Ling Yuefeng's gaze immediately turned towards the Blue Wind Imperial Family's seats... Does this mean that the sect Yun Che was taught by, was actually the Divine Phoenix Sect!?

# **Chapter 242 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (4)**

---

Not only did the suddenly exploding Star Scorching Demon Lotus easily engulf Xia Qingyue's ice lotus, it enveloped Xia Qingyue within as well. The scorching heat that was far beyond her expectations caused Xia Qingyue's expression to slightly change. In an instant, the ice spirits around her body stirred violently, forming an extremely strong barrier of ice. Her Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon waved about quickly as well, sweeping away all of the



oncoming Phoenix flames, as she retreated at the same time.

When the Star Scorching Demon Lotus was completely extinguished, Xia Qingyue had already been forced back a distance of close to a hundred meters.

However, Yun Che did not continue to push his offensive like before. He looked at Xia Qingyue in the eye, and said with a frown. "I shall say this again. Use your full strength. What I wish to defeat, is the you,

at full strength. And not the current you!”

Yun Che’s speedy attacks, the might of his heavy sword, and the flames erupting from his body, caused Xia Qingyue to feel astonished and taken by surprise. In the few collisions they had, she was actually the one who was at a slight disadvantage. Looking at Yun Che’s current expression, what she could capture from it, was a sort of arrogance that was imprinted in his bones. And this arrogance was not the sort of natural arrogance one would usually have, but was simply

targeted at her!

His expression told her that if she were to not use her full strength, what she would be giving him would not be mercy, but humiliation!

Xia Qingyue's chest gently rose. She closed her eyes, and then slowly opened them as her cold voice flowed out from her lips. "As you wish..."

A cold wind blew from all four directions, and the ice spirits

surrounding Xia Qingyue fluttered erratically, as they gently brought her body up to the air. Her toes left the ground and quietly floated in the air, until only her long snow-dress was in light contact with the ground. Her arms gently spread open. Then, the long hair that was draped on her shoulders and the snow-dress she was wearing began to lightly flutter.

The fluttering of the ice spirits became even faster, and the surrounding temperature fell at an astonishing speed. Right at this moment, a blue glow suddenly radiated from Xia

Qingyue's body, and immediately after, a spiraling cold wind filled the entire Sword Discourse Arena.

“Ah!!”

“This... This... This is...”

That sudden flashing blue glow ruthlessly pierced into Yun Che's eyes, causing him to instinctively shut his eyes. He immediately opened them but the moment his eyes fell on Xia Qingyue, he suddenly stood

there lifelessly.

The cold wind had calmly dispersed, however, her snow-dress was still fluttering even without the wind. The veil on Xia Qingyue's face had already disappeared, as it seemed to have flown away somewhere after the windstorm of profound energy. What was revealed was a fairy-like appearance, which could eclipse the heavens and earth, and could even put the sun and moon to shame. However, her pair of eyes had underwent an earthshaking change... They were entirely ice-blue in color, like sapphires

which were flashing with a bright and cold light. Her deep black hair had disappeared, and what replaced it was an ice-blue hair which swayed even without any wind. Even her brows and eyelids had turned into flawless crystals, which flowed with an ice-cold blue color.

The ice spirits floating in her surroundings underwent great changes as well. Earlier, every ice spirit was as small as diamond, now, it was as though they had turned into twinkling stars. And Xia Qingyue, who was under these endless clusters of stars, seemed to have been born

from the ice and snow, a fairy in the snow who had not been tainted by the mortal world at all.

“F... Frozen Cloud Seventh Realm... Ice Body Jade Bones...”

The voice of the Heavenly Sword Villa Master, the current era's number one overlord of Blue Wind Empire, Ling Yuefeng, was currently stuttering a little. Looking at Xia Qingyue who had turned into a snow fairy, the astonishment in his heart had reached an



indescribable degree. He did not know just how many astonishments and shocks this seventeen-year old girl would give him before she would bring herself to stop...

Frozen Cloud Seventh Realm... That was an extremely high realm which only Gong Yuxian, the current Asgard Mistress of the Frozen Cloud Asgard, whose profound level had reached the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, could achieve!!

Genius, prodigy, monster,

freak... Currently, in Ling Yuefeng's heart, even when adding all these terms together, it would not be enough to explain Xia Qingyue.

The Ling Yun beside him was trembling even more so, he was shocked entirely speechless. In yesterday's match, even though he lost terribly, he believed that he lost due to the Domain that should not have appeared. If not for that Domain which broke the profound laws, by just the strength of their profound arts and combined abilities alone, he believed he was capable of suppressing Xia Qingyue... After

all, his Sword Spirit Doppelganger yesterday was completely able to suppress Xia Qingyue.

But now, in his astonishment, did he finally realize that Xia Qingyue basically did not reveal all of her profound arts yesterday. And the profound aura currently being released by Xia Qingyue, was much, much stronger than the peak moment yesterday. The current strength of her profound aura was to the point where, even if he were to unleash his Sword Spirit Doppelganger, it would still be hard for him to resist.

“Mn? What’s going on?” Chu Yueli’s elegant brows tightened, as she said puzzlingly. “Why did Qingyue expose her trump card? If she wants to defeat Yun Che, using the Fifth Realm of the Frozen Cloud Arts would have been completely sufficient.”

“Junior Sister Xia is not a rash person, she must have her reasons. But since she has brought out the Frozen Cloud Seventh Realm, this match should be ending pretty soon.” Shui Wushuang said with a quiet voice.

There were countless of Profound Arts in the world. The higher one reaches, the more one will find out the possible existences of extremely bizarre and knowledge-breaking Profound Arts. When those people who saw Ling Yun's "Sword Spirit Doppelganger" for the first time, they deeply felt that it was incredible. But the Frozen Cloud Seventh Realm Xia Qingyue used actually caused her entire body to undergo an immense change.

The change in her aura was

even more incomparably huge; it was more than twice as strong as before. An ice-cold pressure enveloped Yun Che's body and soul. It was so heavy that it was like a bone-piercing ice mountain, which had been frozen for ten thousand years.

“Hu...aaaah!!”

Yun Che roared loudly. The Phoenix flames on his body began to burn wildly, as scarlet red flames rose to a few meters in height, allowing him to break through the ice-cold pressure. In

his body, the three drops of the Phoenix blood burned wildly, as flames that contained the might of a Phoenix spread throughout his every meridian, and every drop of fresh blood.

Just by strength alone, Yun Che's Profound Fire was obviously incomparable to Xia Qingyue's Frozen Cloud, and the difference was not just by bits. However, Yun Che's flames were not just regular profound flames, but Phoenix flames originating from three drops of Phoenix Blood! By levels alone, it undoubtedly suppressed her Frozen Cloud. The Divine

Phoenix Sect was able to dominate the world with just the first four stages of the 《World Ode of the Phoenix》, allowing them to become the imperial family of a country, which also allowed them to become the number one powerhouse, excluding the Four Great Sacred Grounds, in the Profound Sky Continent. Naturally, it was not something Frozen Cloud Asgard's Frozen Cloud Art could compete with.

Hence, even if his strength fell far from Xia Qingyue's, it still possessed the qualification to barely resist against her!



The ice cold wind and searing wind constantly collided against each other, emitting out constant tearing shrieks. Bathed in flames, Yun Che's hair flew wildly, and his clothes fluttered. His gaze was as sharp as lightning, and his two hands held onto his dark grey heavy sword, which looked especially terrifying. He slowly pointed it to the front. Coordinating with his straight standing posture, he looked as though he was a towering mountain that overlooked the entire world. Even though he was facing Xia Qingyue, whose aura had surged, he did not have the

slightest intention of retreating.

Just his imposing manner and boldness, was enough to unconsciously cause everyone to have a feeling of being forced into submission.

Just by their imposing manners alone, what people saw in Ling Yun was a grandmaster whom would be worshipped by many people in the future, Xia Qingyue as a fairy who had descended from a surreal world, and Yun Che... as an earth-shaking supreme overlord!

And at this moment, a cold light flashed in Yun Che's eyes, and the rock beneath his legs suddenly burst apart...

“Omm!!”

Following the violent stir in the air, Yun Che struck out. The Dragon Fault slashed out a gigantic grey crescent, which pushed out layers of air ripples, and blasted towards Xia Qingyue, whose aura was unbelievably breathtaking.

However, when facing Yun Che's attack this time, Xia Qingyue did not choose to retreat. Gently reaching out her right hand, her palm looked as though it had turned into glistening white jade, causing people to not be able to believe that it was a palm of a young girl. And with that small movement of hers, Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon shot out as fast as lightning. Like the kiss of from the god of death, it struck directly onto Dragon Fault.

Boom!!

Like an explosive roar caused by lightning, the rocks beneath his feet were instantly pulverized into dust, and they were sent flying towards the sky by the wild torrents of profound energy. Within the surrounding ice crystals and blazing light, Yun Che was instantly sent flying back. His back dragged across the stage for dozens of meters, before he finally stabbed his Dragon Fault into the ground, and stopped his body. Xia Qingyue's body simply swayed gently, and even the starry ice spirits surrounding her did not have any hint of being disarrayed.

This was the first time in the Ranking Tournament that Yun Che was in a disadvantageous position after a direct clash with his heavy sword!

In his earlier match, what he used was not Dragon Fault, but the Overlord's Colossal Sword. He did not use his full strength in that match, and moreover, he did not activate Burning Heart and his Phoenix flames, yet Ling Jie totally did not dare to clash with him directly at all. However, facing Xia Qingyue, who had unleashed all of her

abilities, Yun Che, who had similarly unleashed all his abilities and went for a direct clash which he should have the most advantage in, was completely thrown into a disadvantageous position instead.

Tenth level of the True Profound Realm and the third level of the Earth Profound Realm... Between them, was a gap with the bottlenecks of two large realms!

“Why don’t you try to take my

strike again...”

With his powerful defense, even though he lost in that exchange, he basically did not suffer any injuries. He leapt off the ground, and with a loud roar, he rose high in the air. Dragon Fault, which was enveloped with Phoenix Flames once again struck down, and the strength of the airwaves that had been raised were even larger than earlier.

“Overlord’s Fury!!”



The majesty of this imposing sword strike, even made the audience who were far away feel as though an entire mountain was crashing down on Xia Qingyue. However, just when Dragon Fault was about to make contact with Xia Qingyue, Yun Che's body suddenly jerked, and his movements instantly slowed down... Streams of cold air, as though they were devastating and all-pervasive metal needles, pierced through the Phoenix flames, and struck onto the surface of Yun Che's body and his meridians, causing his entire body to feel a moment of numbness. Even though these streams of cold air had already been expelled by the Phoenix

flames in the next instant, just that single moment, was enough to cause fatal damage.

Bang!!!

Before Dragon Fault could land completely, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon had already flown out like an intelligent snake, and swept against Yun Che's waist with a thump, causing him to let out a low groan. Within the whirling storm, he was swept dozens of meters up high towards the sky...

“Haah. The difference is still too big. There’s already no need to continue watching this duel. Even with ten Yun Ches, it would not be possible to defeat Xia Qingyue.”

“Yun Che’s performance is already shocking enough. It’s not that Yun Che is weak, rather, Xia Qingyue is simply too frightening. I really wonder how Frozen Cloud Asgard actually managed to bring up such a disciple.”

Seeing that Yun Che's second active strike had still resulted to a terrible defeat, and that the Xia Qingyue in front of him still did not move a single inch, the surrounding audience let out a wave of sighs. And just at this moment, defying common sense, Yun Che who was supposed to have completely lost all balance after being sent flying up towards the sky by the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, was descending towards Xia Qingyue...

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!!”

A human, when sent flying by a strong force, has nowhere to apply force from, and it was almost impossible for him to bring about any force. To maintain one's balance was already an extremely difficult task itself, yet Yun Che actually initiated an attack while his balance was completely lost... And the speed he was descending at was extremely quick. In a mere instant, he had already charged right in front of Xia Qingyue, and heavily smashed onto Xia Qingyue's body, who was completely unprepared. Behind him, a pair of Phoenix wings formed out of

flames was searing mightily.

BOOM!!

A large fireball suddenly exploded. This unexpected attack finally shattered Xia Qingyue's ice crystal defenses, blasting her far away. Yun Che tumbled backwards, and forcefully swallowing down the blood that had rushed up to his throat. Before waiting for his body to stand firmly, Dragon Fault had already begun to release gigantic shadows of blaze one after another as it was

swung about...

“Phoenix Break!!”

Phoenix-shaped flames which carried the tyranny of a heavy sword continuously flew towards Xia Qingyue one after another. Xia Qingyue, who had yet to maintain her balance after being struck away by his Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing, was engulfed in the concentrated blasts of dozens of Phoenix Breaks. The blazing light that rose explosively from the chaos completely drowned

Xia Qingyue within...

However, these blazing rays of light did not last for long, and were suddenly extinguished completely by a flashing blue light within them. After the blue light, a gigantic ice crystal phoenix flew out aggressively, shattering the two oncoming Phoenix Breaks. Then, with an undiminished might, it struck heavily onto Yun Che's chest.

Pff...



Yun Che spat out a mouthful of blood in the air, and was sent flying thirty meters back. The Phoenix flames on his body were extinguished at the same time, and the clothes covering his chest had been completely torn, replaced by a thick layer of ice. And beneath the layer of ice, was an ice-sealed wound which did not have the time to burst out.

“Erghh...”

Yun Che rolled over, and with the support of his heavy sword, he stood up expressionlessly, a

streak of blood slowly flowed out from the corner of his lips... In front of him, Xia Qingyue's face was snow-white, her eyes were like blue crystals, and her snow-dress gently fluttered... Forget about injuries, there was not even a single speck of dust on her entire body.

# Chapter 243 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (5)

---

“He’s actually able to stand up after taking a strike from the Ice Phoenix. His defensive power is truly shocking.” Chu Yueli murmured, but right after, astonishment emerged on her face.

“G... ahh!”

The extinguished phoenix flames on Yun Che’s body ignited

once again. Whether it was Yun Che's aura or the intensity of the flames, none of them were weaker than before. He raised Dragon Fault. With a loud bellow, he slashed out a gigantic grey colored sword beam, and lashed towards Xia Qingyue shortly after.

“...Not only did he stand up, he didn't even weaken. How could this be?” Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin both let out cries of shock.

The inflamed Dragon Fault was

like a dancing fire dragon coiling in the air in the midst of its dragon roar. The Frozen Cloud profound energy imbued Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon was equivalent to a white snake, and charged at the dancing fire dragon while releasing an incomparably frightening Frozen Cloud power...

Sky Profound weapons were extremely difficult to subdue. Within Dragon Fault rests the soul of a young dragon, while within the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon rests the soul of an Ice Phoenix. Both were evenly matched in terms of

quality and strength.

Yun Che released profound skill after profound skill in a crazed, unrestrained manner. Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing, Overlord's Fury, Falling Moon Sinking Star, Phoenix Break... Each one of those skills could shake the heavens, but in front of the Xia Qingyue who had cultivated Frozen Cloud Arts to the seventh stage, they were easily knocked down one after another. Xia Qingyue's retaliation was even more terrifying. If Yun Che did not possess Star God's Broken Shadow, he wouldn't even be

qualified to be in a brief stalemate with Xia Qingyue.

Boom!

An ice lotus exploded on Yun Che's left shoulder, causing Yun Che to tumble onto the ground. His left shoulder was completely bloody and damaged, but he acted as if nothing happened and suddenly lept up from the ground. He once again reignited his phoenix flames and attacked. The heavy sword swung widely without the slightest weakening in power.

Bang!

His heavy sword was forcefully pushed aside, and the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon shot towards him, firmly wrapping around his body extremely quickly, and raised him into the air. In a blink of an eye, all of the phoenix flames on his body were extinguished and what replaced it was a thick layer of ice that bounded his entire body. Then, he was ruthlessly smashed onto the ground by the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon...



Bang!

The thick ice burst open and a huge hole had been smashed out on the ground. Yun Che had already disappeared from the surface of the stage and had been smashed who knows how deep beneath ground. This heavy strike had let the surrounding younger generation cry out in shock, but Xia Qingyue's light blue eyes were unshakeable in comparison... This kind of strike would have completely knocked out a profound practitioner at the

peak of the Spirit Profound Realm, cause severe internal damage, and scatter his profound energy. Yet Xia Qingyue had suddenly felt a tyrannical counter force from the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon. The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon's binding had actually been roughly broke apart!

Yun Che jumped up from within the crevice and fiercely sent an Overlord's Fury towards Xia Qingyue... Although his clothing was completely tattered, the fire within his eyes was raging furiously, yet was

calm. The profound energy he was emitting from his body had not even weakened by a bit compared to before.

Everyone simultaneously felt an unexplainable terror in their hearts.

In terms of profound strength, Xia Qingyue completely crushed Yun Che. In Yun Che and her exchanges, he was at a complete disadvantage and mostly ended with bruises. Having trained in the Great Way of the Buddha and having his body fortified by

the Dragon God's blood, aside from profound strength, his body's fierceness and intensity was by no means weaker than a True Dragon. Even though Xia Qingyue possessed an overwhelming strength that allowed her to successively wound him more than ten times, she had never caused any real damage to him.

Each time he had taken strikes from the Frozen Cloud techniques, Yun Che would always stand up. Even if his entire body was covered with injuries, both his aura and his momentum had never reduced.

The audience could only stare with shock.

Although Xia Qingyue's profound strength had reached the third level of the Earth Profound Realm, keeping up the Frozen Cloud Art's seventh stage with this kind of profound strength was unquestionably extremely taxing. The burden put upon Xia Qingyue's body in order to conjure the Frozen Cloud Seventh Realm was by no means less than Yun Che's Burning Heart. Yun Che was knocked down once and once again, but the strength of his aura did not weaken throughout

the match. It was instead Xia Qingyue, whose aura had always been gradually, and evenly, decreasing.

“Do not assume that victory is in your hands. When you pressure him to his limits, that is when he is at the most terrifying. He can bring out power from his soul...”

Looking at the Yun Che who stood up once again and imbued himself with phoenix flames, those words that Chu Yuechan spoke resounded by Xia

Qingyue's ears. And at this time, all of the ice spirits around her body had already started to become slightly fainter. Her breathing had also gotten slightly heavier.

The Yun Che before her was originally not supposed to pose any threat to her, yet she was now feeling a faint pressure from Yun Che. Deep within her heart, a voice was telling her that she had to quickly finish this duel. Otherwise, if this dragged on even longer, it was unknown just what unexpected events might occur.

“Let’s end this...”

Xia Qingyue’s lips slightly moved, and her snow white hands slowly clasped together before her body. In an instant, all of the surrounding cold energy within several kilos of radius swarmed in, and concentrated into a enormous whirlpool of frozen cloud before her.

Yun Che was just about to advance towards her, but suddenly stopped in his steps...



The aura force on Xia Qingyue's body sharpened surged up, and the frozen cloud whirlpool grew bigger and bigger. Then, it suddenly transformed and condensed into a gigantic Ice Crystal Phoenix. At the same time, a chilling cold pressure engulfed the entire arena, and made everyone's heart shudder.

The Ice Crystal Phoenix faced the heavens and let out a cry. Extending out its huge wings, it charged towards Yun Che with a cold energy that could freeze the surrounding fifty kilometers. Where ever it passed, it caused the air to condense by the inch.

“WAAAAHH... It’s over, it’s over! Be careful, Brother-in-law!”

Xia Yuanba clenched both of his fists tightly while shouting in panic. Even though Xia Qingyue had used all of her power, she had mostly been defending and counterattacking during their exchanges. She had never taken the initiative to attack. She understood Yun Che’s mindset very well and knew that if she had beaten him too quickly, she would severely hurt his pride. At the moment, after finally

deciding to attack, she had unleashed a frighteningly large Ice Phoenix imbued with Frozen Cloud power, capable of shaking the entire arena. Even the observing Xia Yuanba was able to feel how terrifying this Ice Phoenix was. At Heavenly Sword Villa's seats, Ling Yun was also equally shocked... Because blocking just the oppressive power of the cold energy contained within this Ice Pheonix would be extremely difficult even if he had used his Sword Spirit Doppelganger to transform into two Ling Yuns.

As a terrifying level of pressure

came charging towards him from the front, Yun Che retreated extremely quickly, his steps as fast as lightning. As the phoenix flames on his body burned and the Ice Phoenix approached, a flash of madness could be seen within Yun Che's eyes. He imbued all of his profound energy and phoenix flame into Dragon Fault and created a gigantic visage of a Fire Phoenix. Following his roar, with a swing of his hands, Dragon Fault flew towards the Ice Phoenix, carrying the visage of the enormous Fire Phoenix with it.

The Ice Phoenix and Fire Phoenix violently collided in midair, and both phoenix fire and frozen cloud profound energy exploded at the same time. The cries of both phoenixes resonated throughout the sky as they clashed.

The profound energy barrier shattered once more as the sky was completely enveloped by azure and scarlet light. Half of it was frozen, and the other half was burned into distortion. Without the obstruction of the profound energy barrier, the spectators on the eastern side felt like they had fallen into an

icy hole as their entire body stiffened. As for those in the west, they felt as if they were about to combust from being roasted by the fire. Only after they immediately started releasing profound energy, did they barely managed to protect themselves. The shock in their hearts had subsequently increased by several folds... Just the residue of their strength was already this shocking, so it was imaginable as to how truly terrifying Xia Qingyue's Frozen Cloud and Yun Che's flame had been.

Even though Xia Qingyue who

had such power from conjuring the seventh stage of the Frozen Cloud Art was astonishing, it was not too unexpected. Whereas Yun Che... he was actually able to contend against this kind of frozen cloud using flames supported by profound energy of the tenth level of the True Profound Realm!

However, this kind of balance did not maintain for a long time.

Ice and fire were both natural counters to each other. Fire could melt ice, while ice could

thwart fire. There were no natural advantages to either side. In terms of plane, Yun Che's power was completely superior to Xia Qingyue, but in terms of intensity, Xia Qingyue unquestionably suppressed Yun Che.

The fire phoenix and ice phoenix intensely clashed and rampaged in midair. The interweaving ice-blue and scarlet-red radiances interweaved and covered the entirety of the Sword Discourse Arena. After the chaotic radiances lasted for a few breaths of time, the radiance of



the ice phoenix slightly surpassed that of the fire phoenix. But if an advantage forms, it would become irreversible like a broken dam. In the blink of an eye, the fire phoenix became smaller and smaller. In the end, it was completely devoured by the ice phoenix, and all that was left was a frozen Dragon Fault in midair. The phoenix that only shrunk by one-third of its size fiercely rushed forward and dove at Yun Che amidst a cold and long cry.

As the pale blue visage of the ice phoenix quickly grew bigger

within his eyes, Yun Che heavily huffed as both his eyes stared straight at the ice phoenix mirage. He did not retreat, and only the sound of a low mutter could be heard in the air....

“Evil God Second Style...  
Sealing Cloud Locking Sun!”

BOOM!!!

The ice phoenix exploded, and its pale blue radiance completely swallowed Yun Che. The dispersing ice shards were like

razor sharp blades and deeply penetrated into the ground.

“It finally ended. Who knew it would drag out that long.” Shui Wushuang said.

“Although Junior Sister Xia used the seventh stage of the Frozen Cloud Arts, she had never attacked with full strength. Coupled with Yun Che’s unexpected tenacity... Mmn... AAAHHH!” Before Wu Xuexin had even finished speaking, she suddenly let out a surprised shriek.

From within the pale blue radiance left behind by the ice phoenix, Yun Che shot out like a bolt of lightning. His body was surrounded by a translucent spherical barrier that was almost hard to see with the naked eye. When he had completely left the ice phoenix's radiance, the barrier also completely vanished. Catching Dragon Fault with a grab, all of the profound energy within him instantly erupted as if gunpowder that had been lit. Behind him, the mirage of a blue wolf that howled towards the heavens emerged...

“Sky... Wolf... Slash!!!”

As the heavy sword slashed downwards, a gigantic illusory wolf pierced through the air as the ground shattered...

In order to maintain Frozen Body Jade Bones, Xia Qingyue had already expended quite a bit. Furthermore, in order to swiftly defeat Yun Che, she had exhausted even more profound energy to release the ice phoenix., She was now in a temporary power deficient

condition and had not recovered yet, and in addition to believing that this was a strike that could directly decide the match, she simply wasn't on guard at all.. No matter what, she had never expected that Yun Che would actually emerge unscathed from the the ice phoenix's diving attack...

What was even more impossible for her to expect, was that this was the chance Yun Che had been patiently waiting for all along!

Evil God's first style, "Falling Moon Sinking Star", was an berserking attack with ten times amplified profound energy, while Evil God's second style, "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" was a ten times amplified profound energy defense!

Only, executing Sealing Cloud Locking Sun consumed a lot of profound energy and the longer it was active, the higher the rate of consumption. So even if he was continuously struck by Xia Qingyue, Yun Che had chosen to not use Sealing Cloud Locking Sun. When Xia Qingyue was no longer able to genuinely defeat

him, he would at last release all of his profound energy to immediately execute “Sealing Cloud Locking Sun”. When the incredibly tough defense formed around his body, it forcibly blocked the ice phoenix’s assault. Then, he took the chance to swing out his most powerful attack toward Xia Qingyue, who would be caught off guard.

The howls from the sky wolf were deafening. They were even more terrifying than the piercing cries from the fire phoenix and ice phoenix from before. As the gigantic wolf



shadow rushed towards Xia Qingyue with an incomparable might, it easily crushed the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon's defense...

At this moment, Xia Qingyue, who had always been as calm as snow, lost all the color in her rosy face for the very first time. She had not expected Yun Che to be able to break free from the ice phoenix's charge, and even more, had not expected... that Yun Che's previous attacks were not even his limit. This strike was so powerful that it had put her in a situation where even her heart and soul had

subconsciously shuddered...

Just in the nick of time, a thick layer of ice rapidly appeared on her body, and quickly wrapped around her entire body...

Bang!

The shadow of the sky wolf engulfed Xia Qingyue, carried Xia Qingyue's ice body with it and directly shot straight out like an ice blue meteor! She flew all the way to the edge of the Sword Discourse Arena and the

terrifying impact smashed open a large portion of the ground. And the direction in which she had been thrown in, just happened to be where Frozen Cloud Asgard was seated, which was about to meet with disaster. Even though Chu Yueli and company's seating area was completely protected, everything else in front of them was completely wrecked.

The Sword Discourse Arena fell into dead silence. Everyone was speechless while looking at the massive ravine, which stretched from the center of the stage, all the way to its edge.

As the dust settled, Xia Qingyue stood up. Only, she was no longer able to maintain Frozen Body Jade Bones and its effects had already vanished. Her long hair and both her brows were no longer blue, but had returned to their original black. Her face was covered with a layer of a faint paleness and her the strength of her aura had immensely weakened. She covered her left shoulder with her right hand, and a touch of red slowly spread on the snow-white clothing of the shoulder.

Chu Yuechan's icy eyes were a field of calm. She did not feel that this sort of outcome was the least bit unexpected... She had even warned Xia Qingyue the night before to never assume that she had beaten Yun Che under any circumstances... Even though she bore that in mind, just a moment ago, she had still fully expected that the ice phoenix had defeated Yun Che... and had thereby suffered a great loss.

# **Chapter 244 – Burn!**

## **Phoenix Blood!**

---

Even though that one, earth-shaking “Sky Wolf Slash” only resulted in a not so heavy injury for Xia Qingyue, it still shattered her “Ice Body Jade Bones” form.

Her Frozen Cloud Arts also couldn’t be brought up to the seventh stage again in a short period of time. Yet this strike did not cause Yun Che to reach his limit. While Xia Qingyue’s aura had not yet calmed, Yun Che had already rushed up once again, and a Phoenix Break shot flying

out from several tens of meters away.

Chu Yueli abruptly stood up, and said to Xia Qingyue who was right in front of her: “Qingyue, do not hold back anymore, and defeat him by opening a Domain immediately! This fellow, can create unexpected events at any time!”

For this battle, originally, Chu Yueli wasn't worried at all; so much that there wasn't even a single trace of worry. The two's composite strength had indeed a

very big difference, and during the match, Xia Qingyue had always maintained an oppressive standpoint. But as the two's battle went on, Xia Qingyue's aura became weaker and weaker. Yet not only did the Yun Che, who was once and once again beaten down not receive any great injuries, his aura did not grew weak in the slightest. Now, he miraculously broke out from the strike that Xia Qingyue had intended to decide the match with, and moreover injured Xia Qingyue instead. This made Chu Yueli cannot help but to be stricken with fear.



This battle's victory or loss, was not that important to Xia Qingyue on a personal level. But as for Frozen Cloud Asgard, it was incomparably important; because if they won, it would be breaking the history, and push Frozen Cloud Asgard onto the pinnacle of Blue Wind Empire for the first time ever. Since Xia Qingyue had already beaten Ling Yun and reached this step, then she absolutely could not lose here.

With a swing of the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, all of the Yun Che's Phoenix Breaks were blocked. In the process of

defending, Xia Qingyue also felt that Yun Che's power had already greatly decreased... That Sky Wolf Slash, had indeed exhausted Yun Che to a great extent. In addition to the continuous activation of the Burning Heart state, the burden on Yun Che's profound veins and body was already incredibly heavy. He was entirely sustaining with his teeth clenched, but the distance to the critical point of collapsing, was also nearing by the second.

Yun Che dashed toward Xia Qingyue with quick steps. But before he even neared, a blue

light suddenly flashed before his eyes, and the surrounding world instantaneously transformed into an illusory blue color.

A wave of an incredibly ice-cold feeling suddenly assaulted him from every single direction, and made Yun Che's steps stall right away.

“Domain! It's that Domain from yesterday!”

“It's Domain again... this is simply just like cheating! Let

alone the younger generation, even if one looks through the entire Blue Wind Empire, the number of people that could use a Domain could be counted with two hands!”

“I really didn’t expect that Yun Che actually had such a terrifying strength. Feels like that he isn’t weaker than yesterday’s Ling Yun at all! At least he was able to injure Xia Qinyue... But what a pity, even if he was ten times stronger, against a Domain, it is fundamentally impossible for him to have the ability to counter it.”

“Sigh, we really have grown old. I had originally thought that Ling Yun was the limit that a youth could reach, but I hadn’t thought that this youth, who is only at the True Profound Realm would bring me such an astonishment that is not below Ling Yun at all; the aura of his explosive power earlier was also entirely not below him. If he reached Ling Yun’s age, he would definitely far surpass him. But as for this girl named Xia Qingyue... She has entirely flipped my common sense upside down.”

“To reach this point, Yun Che can already shake the entire world with his name, and astonish everyone. But unfortunately, other than him, there is also a Xia Qingyue in this world. The Domain she released that transcended the natural law, is simply impossible to resist against for anyone below the Sky Profound Realm.”

Cold wind blew from all directions. As an overwhelming amount of snowflakes floated from above, the ground was quickly covered with a layer of frost. Accompanied by “crackling” sounds, very thick

layer of ice rapidly condensed on Yun Che's body, and quickly covered over half of his body.

This Frozen Cloud Domain was somewhat smaller than the one yesterday. After all, Xia Qingyue had conjured the seventh stage of the Frozen Cloud Art earlier and took a Sky Wolf Slash from Yun Che as well; the expenditure was huge. The moment the Frozen Cloud Domain opened, Yun Che felt as if countless steel needles had stabbed into his entire body. His body, as well as his limbs, were all rapidly numbing under the extreme cold. Let alone dashing, even

merely taking steps had become exceptionally difficult.

At this moment, he truly understood why Ling Yun had become so unresisting under the Frozen Cloud Domain yesterday, and directly forfeited even without any last struggles after being smacked out of the Domain. This kind of strength called Domain, would frequently appear within battles above the Sky Profound Realm, but fundamentally should not appear at his and Xia Qingyue's level. Once it appeared, that kind of oppression, can't even be fully described as curb



stomping.

The cold energy crazily entered his body, and his entire body numbed to the point where his consciousness was even quickly fainting. Yun Che fiercely breathed in, wanting to ignite phoenix flames; but before the flames on his body even had the time to ignite, it was already extinguished from the roots by the terrifying coldness.

Unlike to Yun Che, the environment within the Frozen Cloud Domain was most

advantageous for Xia Qingyue. In here, all of her attacks would be maximized. It could said without any exaggeration that if one could not break through the Frozen Cloud Domain, then Xia Qingyue would be a complete ruler within the Domain, dictating the win or loss of this match. If she wished to, she could easily dictate Yun Che's life and death.

As the Frozen Cloud Domain opened, Xia Qingyue's body also slightly swayed a little. Only after staying in place for a while, did she finally manage to calm her breath. Seeing the Yun Che

who stood in place with clenched teeth, yet could not take a single step forward for a long time, she took up the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon and walked before him with slow steps. An extremely quiet voice came from her mouth: "Sorry..."

As her voice fell, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon weightlessly danced, and brushed toward Yun Che's shoulder.

Just as the Ice Phoenix

Snowflower Ribbon was about to touch Yun Che, the phoenix imprint that had always been hidden on Yun Che's forehead suddenly appeared, and emitted a golden radiance so intense that it was glaring to the eye...

This sudden change made Xia Qingyue's movement pause, and subconsciously retract the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon. And in the next moment, three drops of golden brilliant flames poured out from the place where the golden phoenix imprint flashed...

Those were three drops of Phoenix Blood Yun Che had released out of his body.

Looking at these three drops of golden colored blood, Yun Che tightly clenched his teeth, and an incomparably overcast voice sounded from his throat: “Phoenix Blood... For me... Burn to your heart’s content!!”

The phoenix flames he normally burned, used the Phoenix Blood as the source.

But this time, he forced out the Phoenix Blood, to directly burn these three drops of Phoenix Blood!

He understood very clearly the consequences of this action. After completely burning these three drops of Phoenix Blood's divine power to exhaustion, it was unknown just how long it would take for them to recover. Moreover, before their divine phoenix power recovers, he would only be able to ignite normal profound flames, and won't be able to use the Phoenix Flame again until then. However, this was the only

method he could think of that may break through the Frozen Cloud Domain.

As the three drops of Phoenix Blood came out, an incomparably enormous imposing air shrouded the entire Sword Discourse Arena, and even all of those experts of Sky Profound and Emperor Profound Realm that stood on the pinnacle felt a sort of heavy pressure... Even though it was just three drops of blood, it after all contained true divine power, and it's imposing air was one that came from the Phoenix Divine Beast. Xia Qingyue who

was the closest, also felt the heaviest pressure. At the same time, she more so felt a type of danger that was fatal. This kind of danger made her retreat backwards with her fastest speed possible without even taking the time think.

Rumble!!

Amidst Yun Che's low roar, the three drops of Phoenix Blood started to burn at the same time. From three dots of tiny luminescence, in just an instant, it expanded to become a



monstrous fire that was several tens of meters high. The Frozen Cloud Domain's cold aura was bone-piercing, but how could it defend against the intense burning of the divine beast's blood?

No matter what kind of flame, they would all need a medium to burn. The phoenix flames Yun che emitted, used profound energy as the medium to burn, yet the combustion medium for the Phoenix Blood's divine power... was precisely this Frozen Cloud Domain!

The attribute of the Frozen Cloud Domain was ice, and could be said as the most improbable thing to combust in the world. Yet under the Phoenix Blood's divine power, they burned and dispersed like the purest of kerosenes with an incredibly astonishing speed. Before everyone had even recovered from the shock when the flames appeared and could react, the entirely red blaze had already filled up every single corner of the Frozen Cloud Domain. The Domain that was azure in color, was burned into a scarlet colored purgatory of flames.

Even though these flames did not touch the surrounding audiences, the overly scorching heat wave had still affected them. It made them abruptly suffocate, and their entire bodies felt as if they would ignite from the torridness. And right after, the clothes on their body suddenly ignited along with their hair, driving them into chaos amidst their panicked shouts as they quickly fled. Only until over a dozen experts of the Heavenly Sword Villa jumped out and blocked in front of them, did the situation finally ease.

“Wh... wh... what is going on here...” Chu Yueli stood up, her pair of charming eyes was filled with deep shock.

“Don’t tell me... don’t tell me that this Domain was actually... broken by Yun Che’s fire?”

“Using fire... to burn down Frozen Cloud Domain? How is this possible...”

As the fire spread, the Frozen Cloud Domain disappeared... Even the last hint of blue light

and coldness was fully consumed by the flames. The phoenix flames that thoroughly burned out the Frozen Cloud Domain and lost its medium for combustion, also extinguished along with it... However, the three drops of phoenix blood that floated in front of Yun Che, had already lost their original golden color. They turned dim and muddle, as if they were fluid of ordinary profound beasts.

Plop....

Yun Che fell onto the ground

with one knee, and sweat rained down on his entire body as he started gasping roughly from his mouth. Controlling the burning of these three drops of Phoenix Blood, had almost exhausted every ounce of his remaining strength. The three drops of Phoenix Blood also flew toward the flame imprint on Yun Che's forehead by themselves at this time; they returned to his bloodline, and at the same time entered a long lasting slumber.

At least within the next three months, it would be impossible for Yun Che to ignite the phoenix flames again.

At the same time, it was also extremely likely for his phoenix blood to be exposed... Others may not notice, but amongst the people present, there was still a Ling Kun! This frightening person who hailed from the Sacred Grounds, the level of knowledge he had was such that none of the experts in the Blue Wind Empire could ever compare to.

He understood this kind of price very well. However, he absolutely did not regret it.

Frozen Cloud Domain  
vanished. It totally, and  
completely, disappeared...

The entire Sword Discourse  
Arena was deathly silent as  
though it was a ghost house, and  
only bursts of gasping and  
gulping sounds from the throat  
could be heard. Everyone had  
already stood up, and  
dumbfoundedly looked at the  
two on the arena. Extreme shock  
was clearly written on their  
distorted facial features.



“Phoenix Blood?” Ling Kun’s eyebrows sunk. A mutter came from his mouth as a surprised expression flashed across his face: “Phoenix Blood, wasn’t it already extinct from a long time ago. The phoenix bloodline now, are all inherited from their ancestors... His Phoenix Blood could actually separate from the bloodline, which proves that the Phoenix Blood is incomparably pure.”

“The phoenix flame skills he used, is also completely different from the Divine Phoenix Sect.”

“Hmph! How really interesting, I wonder what kind of reaction the Divine Phoenix Sect would have after they get a hold of this.”

Ling Kun’s indifferent gaze swept across the entire arena, and he slightly made a cold smile: “With so many people present, some are bound to leak these things to the Divine Phoenix Sect... This youth’s aptitude is extraordinary, and even if he comes to the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, he will be qualified to become the bottom of the barrel. He also seems to have had fortuitous

encounters before. But unfortunately... he is destined to be short-lived, and I'm afraid he won't live to see the day he joins my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region."

# Chapter 245 – The Last Strike

---

Chu Yueli was not just shocked; she was already completely speechless. The amount of astonishment she felt in her heart, even greatly exceeded that of what others felt. This was because she most clearly knew what Yun Che's condition was like eighteen months ago. Honestly speaking, the Yun Che back then was only a pile of mud that could never support a wall in her eyes. If not for Xia Qingyue's own insistence on marrying him, she would not have even taken a single straight

glance at him.

Meanwhile, Xia Qingyue's aptitude, comprehension ability, as well as her mentality, were completely unheard of in Chu Yueli's entire life. Her constitution that could cultivate profound arts disregarding profound strength requirements and could even directly open a Domain, made even the Asgard Mistress Gong Yuxian unable to hold back her amazement. She had taken Xia Qingyue as a disciple since she was twelve and had instructed her in Frozen Cloud Arts. She had even personally helped Xia Qingyue

tune her body using her own power of the Sky Profound Realm. During the time she was in Frozen Cloud Asgard, countless priceless treasures they had collected over their thousand year of heritage were all unrestrainedly used on her. Furthermore, Xia Qingyue not only had Chu Yueli as master; the two strongest beings in Frozen Cloud Asgard——Chu Yuechan and Gong Yuxian——had both spent a large amount of effort on her. To make her Frozen Cloud Energy reach extreme purity, Chu Yuechan had even gone to obtain three Sky Profound Realm beast cores despite facing immense risk...

Looking through the history of Frozen Cloud Asgard, they had never invested so much on any single disciple.

Only after all that, did the current Xia Qingyue come to be.

Yet right now, Chu Yueli had just stood there and watched as that youth who could only be considered trash originally, break down Xia Qingyue's Frozen Cloud Domain!

Xia Qingyue being able to open a Domain, had flipped everyone's knowledge of common sense upside down. But Yun Che actually being able to destroy the Domain, could only be described as an inexplicable miracle.

After destroying the Frozen Cloud Domain with the use of phoenix blood, Yun Che's strength was nearly depleted, and Xia Qingyue's condition was also no better off than his. Opening a Domain by utilizing a profound strength of the Earth Profound Realm, the expenditure was undoubtedly



extremely enormous. Just conjuring the Domain had already drained over seventy percent of Xia Qingyue's profound energy. Sustaining it for a few short breaths of time after, again depleted over sixty percent of her remaining strength. In addition to the various expenditures earlier, the current her did not even have five percent of her usual strength left. Moreover, when the Domain was destroyed, it also made her suffer a certain amount of backlash, which had damaged her profound veins quite a bit, causing her control over profound energy to start becoming awkward.

Xia Qingyue's face was already snow white to begin with, but right now, it was white to the extreme, to the extent where you could not even see the slightest hint of blood color. But at least, she looked a lot better than Yun Che who could not even stand steadily.

Both of them looked straight at the other across less than thirty meters of distance between them. Pain and strenuousness continuously flashed amidst the calm within Yun Che's eyes, while Xia Qingyue's eyes instead

turmoiled intensely, as if she had yet to recover from the shock she received just now.

“Ugh...” As he quietly groaned with pain, Yun Che slowly stood up using the Dragon Fault as support. He lightly clenched his teeth, looked at Xia Qingyue who was right in front of his eyes, and said in a low voice: “You actually... did not get injured by the flames just now... That’s fine too. The flames just now, even I was unable to fully control them. If you had been engulfed by them, perhaps... they would have severely injured you... If... your clothing were

burnt down... Heh, I don't want my wife, to be seen by others..."

Yun Che's words were spoken discontinuously, and every few words were accompanied by heavy gasping.

Xia Qingyue: "..."

Yun Che's hands were tightly gripped on the Dragon Fault, but he did not pull it out from the ground, as if he no longer had ample strength. Yun Che closed both of his eyes, and after a long

burst of intense gasping, his aura and voice suddenly started to gradually calm down: “My remaining strength, is only sufficient enough for me to swing out one more strike... If you’re able to receive this strike, then it means that you have won... However...however, I absolutely...absolutely will not lose to you... So this sword strike, no matter what you do, it will be impossible to receive!”

Poof!

The Dragon Fault was pulled

out of the ground. Over four thousand kilograms of weight, caused the two hands Yun Che gripped on it to slightly tremble: “Prepare to receive my sword... Qingyue. Keep the glory for your sect in mind, and also recall what I said to you before the fight; give me everything you’ve got! Otherwise, you will be letting the Frozen Cloud Asgard down, letting me down, and also letting yourself down!”

Xia Qingyue: “...”

The youth of the same age in

front of her seemingly appeared very distant; because compared to when his Profound Veins were crippled back then, the Yun Che in front of her eyes and the Xiao Che from before were in all ways people from two different worlds. But in the eyes of Xia Qingyue, the youth in front of her whose fate flipped upside-down was incomparably familiar. His gaze, the tone when he spoke, the pridefulness that was carved into his bones... Especially the stubbornness that could not be pulled away with even a hundred thousand bulls; they were all exactly the same as the Yun Che she had gotten to know after those short few days and nights with him.

Xia Qingyue did not say anything, but the ice spirits that had originally disappeared once again appeared and floated around her. Behind her, a gigantic ice lotus gradually bloomed. The Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon floated in front of her, and displayed a strange “S” shape. An extremely dangerous aura was released and emitted from every single centimeter and inch of the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, exerting an extremely heavy pressure towards Yun Che.



“This is... ‘Frozen Cloud Ultimate Skill: Ode of the Crescent Moon’s elementary style. Junior Sister Xia’s presence is extremely weak right now. Can she still execute this skill?” Looking at Xi Qingyue’s condition, Shui Wushuang worriedly said.

“It’s barely possible. Looks like, Qingyue is also going to give it her all. This move, is not something that’s possible for Yun Che defend against.” Chu Yueli said. But when she spoke those words, she more or less lacked confidence. Although the current Yun Che didn’t seem to

be able to even keep his balance, the various things he displayed from him before, especially the flames that burnt through even the Frozen Cloud Domain, made Chu Yueli no longer dare to look down on this seemingly unthreatening young man at all.

She already did not dare guess what earthshaking feat he would do next.

The Dragon Fault was gradually raised by Yun Che above his head. The fifty four Evil God's Profound Entrances speedily

expanded, madly gathering all of the remaining Profound Energy in his body. Suddenly, he let out a loud roar as the surface of the ground under his feet shattered. And just as he leapt from the ground, the heavy sword soared through the air and heavily slashed downwards...

“Overlord’s Fury!”

Although the power behind this sword strike was much weaker than the previous one at the start, it’s was still very frightening. Xia Qingyue also

jumped upwards, all of the ice spirits around her flashed with a chaotic brilliance. Her Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon turned softness into resilience, and folded into a snow white crescent moon. While being imbued with Frozen Cloud Energy, it glimmered with a blinding radiance of ice crystals and fiercely clashed in midair with the Dragon Fault.

With a loud sound, an enormous ring of spatial distortion rippled out far away from where Dragon Fault and Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon clashed. The incomparably cold

aura completely engulfed Yun Che, and the enormous power that came from the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon forcefully smashed the Dragon's Fault into a crescent moon shape.

Yue Che's eyes were widened abruptly. In that instant of collision, his hands became almost completely numb. He unyieldingly clenched his teeth, and channeled all of his power into the Dragon Fault. But his remaining power was too far-off from Xia Qingyue's strike of full strength. The power of the Overlord's Fury was completely blocked, and even the power's

residue were being rapidly engulfed, and a burst of icy cold power, which could thoroughly defeat him, pounced towards his face.

So there was no choice but to use that after all...

This kind of situation, did not surprise Yue Che in the slightest. After all, he understood his own current situation better than anyone else. Feeling that his own power being completely suppressed, he took a sudden breath, and let out a beast-like

howl from his mouth...

My profound veins and body...  
You must to hold on!

“Evil God’s Third Realm:  
Purgatory!!”

Following Yun Che’s internal  
silent chant, the Evil God’s  
Profound Vein’s third gate...  
Purgatory, opened for the first  
time.

In the instant “Purgatory” opened, a strange, demonic red light was suddenly released from the third gate, illuminating the entirety of the Profound Veins with crimson red as if they were dyed in fresh blood. The red light did not only exist within the Profound Veins, and also gushed out from the profound veins, forming a layer of blood red radiance around Yue Che’s body.

The whites in both of Yun Che’s eyes completely disappeared, and replacing them, were two pupils that turned completely blood-red. An wicked and



malicious aura akin to that coming from the purgatory, was also suddenly emanated from his body, causing Xia Qingyue to completely suffocate in an instant .

“Evil God’s Third Style:  
Destroying Sky Decimating  
Earth!”

BOOM!!!!!!

This was an explosive rumble as if the sky and earth had collapsed. The entire Sword

Discourse Arena trembled with incomparable intensity, and even the entire area of the ground started to sway, as if a terrifying natural disaster had suddenly descended. Within the huge explosive sound, some lower-leveled profound practitioner's ears immediately lost their ability to hear. And on the Sword Discourse Arena, the flying shattered rocks and sand flew to a height of nearly three hundred meters, and for a moment blotted out the sky and the sun, while also completely hiding Yue Che's and Xia Qingyue's figures.

Screams of fear resounded throughout the entire Sword Discourse Arena, and incomparable astonishment emerged onto every single person's face once again. No matter if it was Yue Che, or Xia Qingyue, they were both clearly near exhausted of their profound energy; yet the might of this strike surpassed their everything from before. It was entirely not inferior to that overwhelming flame wave, which even burnt down the Frozen Cloud Domain, in any way. It was difficult for even a powerful Earth Profound Realm expert to generate such a terrifying wave of air current and might, so how was it

possible for it to appear within the clash between two young profound practitioners who already had a large portion of their power depleted!

The dust filled the air, and no one could clearly see what exactly was happening. Even if they were to try to imagine, they were completely unable to imagine just what they used to create such an earthshaking collision.

The tremoring of the Sword Discourse Arena soon stopped,

and the dust also started to disperse. As their lines of sight became clear, everyone fiercely took in a gasp of cold air.

What appeared before their eyes, was a huge crater of at least two hundred meters in diameter!

The edges of the Sword Discourse Arena had also been completely destroyed, and not a single complete piece of the stage could be found.

In the center area of the huge pit, were two completely still silhouettes... Looking at them, everyone held their breaths. Their gazes froze, and they were unable to even make the slightest trace of sound from their throats.

Xia Qingyue silently stood there, her long black hair in a mess, and her entire body tainted by dirt. There was a type of indescribable “daze” within her clear eyes, as she stupefyingly looked at the Yun Che in front of her.

Yun Che had collapsed less than ten steps away from her. All of his clothing were in shreds and his entire body lied flat on the ground face down. From the corner of his mouth, forehead, limbs, back...on basically every single possible part of his body, streams of blood were flowing out. His left hand gripped the ground, the back of his right hand was already completely dyed red by the bloodstain, yet it still firmly grasped onto the Dragon Fault's handle.

“Finally... It's over.”

Although “Purgatory” had merely opened for no longer than three breaths of time, for Yun Che’s body that was almost entirely out of strength, it was without doubt a burden that was almost destructive. Furthermore, while under “Purgatory”, he also forcefully executed the complementary Evil God’s third style “Destroying Sky Decimating Earth”.... That was the ultimate strike he released using the strength from his willpower and his soul. It made even his soul withstand an immense amount of burden that wasn’t in the slightest short of the burden on his body. It was nothing short of a miracle that he was still able to



temporarily maintain his  
consciousness.

The surface of his body had innumerable wounds, and only his internal organs were not as badly damaged. Yun Che managed to widen the corner of his mouth with great difficulty and let out a relaxed, satisfied smile that also carried a deep joyousness. He closed his eyes, freely letting his consciousness plummet toward the darkness. The last bit of awareness, turned into a trace of voice that only Xia Qingyue could hear...

“The second reason I came to the Ranking Tournament... was to prove to you that... I... Yun Che... am qualified to be your husband... and not... your return of gratitude...

...and...char..ity...”

Xia Qingyue: “...”

Time slowly passed in dead silence... One breath, two breaths, three breaths, four breaths...

It was only until Yun Che fainted and there was no longer any movement, did the audience finally regain their senses.

This match, has finally ended...

Nine breaths, ten breaths...

Ling Wugou had always been the closest to the match from the start to finish, and was also the one who most vividly felt the earthshaking strike earlier. If someone came close to him right now, they would realise that his

forehead was fully and densely covered with cold sweat... That's right! A supreme expert of the Sky Profound Realm rank eight, who held an extremely high position even in the Heavenly Sword Villa, was actually startled to the point of coldly sweating from a battle between two youngsters.

After ten breaths of time passed, Ling Wugou finally regained his wits. He glanced at Yun Che with an extremely complex gaze, before quickly calming his state of mind and loudly declaring with a vigorous voice: "Yun Che has fallen for

ten breaths of time. The winner of this Ranking Tournament's final battle is...";

---

Translator Note: Author has permanently swapped Purgatory with Rumbling Heaven in the later chapters. We have decided to make the switch now instead of later. From now on, Purgatory is the Evil God's 3rd Realm while Rumbling Heaven is the 4th. alyschu has replaced all previous mentions of Rumbling Heaven being the third realm with Purgatory.

## Chapter 246 – Victor

---

Yun Che had fainted and had yet to get up for a long while. This also signified that the battle between him and Xia Qingyue had finally ended. The final battle of the Ranking Tournament had finally closed its curtains.

The tournament had ended, but nobody was able to suppress the amount of shock they had for quite a while. None of the two finalists had been from Heavenly Sword Villa. The crown of victory had fallen in

Frozen Cloud Asgard's hands in the end... But none of this was important at the moment. This match had been an eye-opener and had allowed every spectator to walk through the Fire and Ice of the Nine Heavens. Every scene had all ruthlessly rammed at their vision and spirit.

Both of the finalists were only seventeen years old, but they had fought a battle that was several classes above their own Profound Realms and had shattered any understanding anyone had in regards to battles. Yun Che in particular, even though he had ultimately been

defeated by Xia Qingyue, his profound strength was indeed only at the True Profound Realm, yet had allowed him to bring about a shock that was even more shocking than Xia Qingyue. In front of the glory of both of these youngsters, any glory Heavenly Sword Villa had was covered up. Even the publically recognized 'strongest of the young generation', Ling Yun had apparently been defeated without room for debate.

“Fairy of Frozen Glass, congratulations on obtaining first place.” The Sect Master



sitting on the right of Frozen Cloud Asgard's seats, said hurriedly. However, even as a Sect Master, he did not have the courage to dare to speak to Chu Yuechan.

The Sect Master sitting on the left immediately flattered: "The great Asgard being able to train such an outstanding talent is well deserving of first place. I imagine Frozen Cloud Asgard's fame will spread throughout the world..."

Chu Yueli slightly tightened her

eyebrows and did not reply. The final outcome had let her breathe a huge sigh of relief. This was her ideal ending. This would be the first time Frozen Cloud Asgard had broke tradition and the first time they had seized first place. Henceforth, the results of today's Ranking Tournament would spread and the recognition and fame Frozen Cloud Asgard would obtain, would also far surpass its former glory. However, the road to obtaining this perfect ending had been more difficult than she had expected. The biggest obstacle she had expected was actually not Ling Yun, but was instead, someone who she had

nearly forgotten... a boy who crippled profound veins eighteen months ago, who did not even have one good point about him, and had even been expelled from his clan!

Yun Che had lost consciousness, but Xia Qingyue looked completely fine. Chu Yuechan should have felt relieved. However, as Xia Qingyue's master, she had complete understanding of Xia Qingyue's abilities and knew that the earthshaking force released just now was definitely not released by Xia Qingyue. Although it had looked like Yun

Che had fallen and Xia Qingyue was unharmed, she was unable to calm down.

“Yun Che has fallen and has not gotten up within ten breaths’ time. The winner of the Ranking Tournament is Frozen Cloud Asgard’s...”

“Wait!”

Before Ling Wugou could utter “Xia Qingyue”, a cold voice interrupted him.

The one who said that, was shockingly, Xia Qingyue. As she spoke, she moved towards Yun Che and stopped by his side. She waved both her hands forward and a light blue ice spirit slowly descended upon Yun Che's body, enveloping him. After she silently looked at the ice spirit gradually freeze his wounds, she turned around and softly said: "The winner is not me. It's him. For this match... I admit defeat."

WHOOA~~~~

The Sword Discourse Arena went into an uproar. Everyone had looked at one another in amazement. Yun Che had passed out while Xia Qingyue was perfectly fine. It was obvious as to who was the victor and who had lost. Yet, Xia Qingyue one sentence had actually deliberately given the victory to another. Nobody was able to discern the reason as to why she would do this.

Chu Yueli stood up, astonished, and yelled: “Qingyue, what are you saying? Immediately retract what you’ve just said!”

Chu Yuechan suddenly coldly said: “Look up.”

Chu Yueli subconsciously raised her head and then froze. Her expression, too, had froze in place. She was speechless.

At this time, a long white ribbon slowly fell from the sky. It coincidentally landed on Xia Qingyue’s shoulder and she grabbed onto it. Ling Wugou was about to ask something, but as he watched the falling Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, the

words that were about to leave his mouth was swallowed down his throat.

Although Yun Che was unconscious, Dragon Fault had always been firmly gripped within his hands.

Even though Xia Qingyue appeared to be unharmed, nobody had realized she had lost her Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon.

It had taken until now for the



Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon to fall from the sky. One could only imagine how high it had been knocked up...

“He had unleashed his last strike upon my Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon... If he had chosen to do so on me, I would have probably died. He has rightfully won this. I’ve lost.”

Chu Yueli was startled for a while before letting off a long sigh. She closed eyes, and did not speak for a long while.

Even though the outcome had been flipped over due to Xia Qingyue's admittance of defeat,, the results of the match may have been unchanged even with that. After all, everyone present had witnessed Yun Che passing out. Even Ling Wugou, as the referee, may not accept the obvious victor's admittance of defeat.

However, from the descending Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon and what Xia Qingyue had said, everyone had understood who the true victor was.

Ling Wugou nodded, and did not try to question Xia Qingyue again. He raised his hands once again and loudly proclaimed: “Xia Qingyue has admitted defeat, the champion of the Ranking Tournament is...”

“Blue Wind Imperial Family’s Yun Che!!”

As he declared the conclusion of the finals, the ranking tournament was finally over. Shortly after, the atmosphere around Sword Discourse Arena became rowdy. Before the

Ranking Tournament, nobody had even expected it to end like this. It was impossible for them to expect this outcome. If someone had proclaimed that the overall winner would be from Blue Wind Imperial Family, everyone would regard that person as a crazy retard.

Blue Wind Imperial Family. Originally, this name should have carried majestic might, but it had been ridiculed and insulted in the profound cultivating world. Today, for the first time in history, it had been announced as the overall champion!

“...Even though we didn’t manage to obtain first place, at least we beat Ling Yun and suppressed Heavenly Sword Villa. At the very least, we’ve done what we had set out to do.” After a brief period of disappointment, Chu Yueli said while slightly smiling. Her expression had resumed its former tranquil state: “Unexpectedly, the biggest surprise this Ranking Tournament has brought me was Qingyue’s husband. Fate, is truly the most mysterious thing in this world.”

Chu Yuechan did not speak. With eyes like ice crystals, nobody could understand what she was thinking of.

“Too awesome, too great... as expected of my Boss! To be able to be the Boss of me, Ling Jie, you have to at least be able to do something like this!” Ling Jie clasped both his hands tightly while shouting. To Ling Jie, who had already bragged to others that he was Yun Che’s younger brother, he had felt considerably honored. He had long forgotten that Heavenly Sword Villa had met with defeat yesterday.

On the side of the Blue Wind Imperial Family, there were no shouts of joy. After Ling Wugou had announced the results, Cang Yue had loudly shouted “Junior Brother Yun”, disregarded everything else, and rushed towards at the Sword Discourse Arena in the quickest speed possible. Xia Yuanba was closely behind her with a face full of terror. While Qin Wushang had been somewhat slower to react, his speed was naturally quicker than both of them. He reached Yun Che’s side in a flash and quickly began examining his wounds.

“H... How is Junior Brother Yun?” Cang Yue stretched out both of her hands but she did not dare to touch Yun Che. Tears were already flowing on her face.

As Qin Wushang’s hands left Yun Che, his face revealed a relieved expression and said: “Rest assured, Princess. Although his wounds look terrible, they are all external wounds. If he recuperates for at most a month, he will be able to fully recover. He has only suffered light internal injuries



and the only cause of concern would be that he had overly stressed his profound veins. While that will take time to heal, that is not impossible to make a full recovery from. Only, sigh... I'm afraid he won't be able to explore the Heaven Basin Secret Realm in his current condition."

Hearing this, Cang Yue could finally calm down a little. She tightly gripped Yun Che's hand and refused to let go.

Cang Yue's care, tears and the

way she had spoke of Yun Che... were all seen by Xia Qingyue. She slowed down her steps and did not approach. She quietly kept the bottle of Snow-colored Pellets she had gotten from her teacher.

“Palace Chief Qin, ten thousand congratulations.” Ling Wugou said. Even though Heavenly Sword Villa had been defeated and lost the first position that has always belonged to them, Ling Wugou remained very calm and took the initiative to congratulate Qin Wushang. Without waiting for him to reply, he added: “Palace Chief

Qin need not reply. I'll lead you to the Heaven Returning Pavilion."

Qin Wushang nodded and carried Yun Che: "I'll count on Elder Ling to lead the way."

As the Ranking Tournament's final victor, Yun Che was actually unable to receive the cheers and attention of the audience. He had been carried away shortly after the match ended. Although he, the main character, had already left, the Sword Discourse Arena

remained rowdy for a very long time. The younger practitioners were completely shaken by the match. They had lost all of the arrogance that they once had. Before, they had all proudly proclaimed that they were talented individuals, but today, they had seen that before a truly talented individual, they were not worth anything.

This had been the most special Ranking Tournament yet. It had defied over thirty years of history. Its process and conclusion were filled with excitement and surprises. This ranking tournament was

expected to spread throughout the Blue Wind Empire like a giant wave and be discussed for a very long time.

Of course, there were also people who were upset about the conclusion.

A good example would be the Burning Heaven Clan. They had been badly beaten and even their Great Elder had lost control and had been shamed by Yun Che.

Another example would be the

Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress who had been rude towards Yun Che. Although, compared to the the Burning Heaven Sect, the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress were restless. Mu Tianbei had not expected that Yun Che's true power would be this terrifying. Even more so, he had not expected him to be the ranking tournament's champion.

A talent like this would definitely grow up to become one of the Blue Wind Empire's Thrones! In the hundreds of years of history of the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, they

had yet to produce a Throne,  
nor did they dare to invite a  
Throne.

Thinking of this, Mu Tianbei  
was unable to calm down. Cold  
sweat flowed down onto his back  
while his face was green with  
regret.

.....

Blue Wind Imperial Family, the  
Emperor's Chambers.

Even as the current Emperor of the Blue Wind Empire, Cang Wanhe's face was flushed red and the light in his eyes was faint, as if he was dreaming.

Even Cang Wanhe himself had thought he was dreaming.

He had received Qin Wushang's sound transmission: Blue Wind Imperial Family had obtained first place in the Ranking Tournament...

Immediately, he also received a



sound transmission from his daughter: Blue Wind Imperial Family had obtained first place in the Ranking Tournament...

While holding the Sound Transmission Jade, Cang Wanhe had been left in a muddled state. Even after half a day, he hadn't regained his wits. He trusted Qin Wushang, he trusted Cang Yue even more, but he didn't dare to believe what they had told him, even though it had been the same thing. Because that would be too fantastical, too unreal... as if these were the voices within his dreams about a fantasy.

Rapid footsteps resounded from outside. Very quickly, his personal eunuch had rushed into the chamber and kneeled before him, loudly shouting in a hoarse voice: “Congratulations, Your Majesty! Congratulations! The Ranking Tournament has finally ended today, and our Imperial Family... Imperial Family... has actually gotten first place! First place!”

Cang Wanhe’s mouth twitched, trembling while asking: “This news, are you sure this is true?”

“That is the news that Heavenly Sword Villa has released, it’s definitely true! Right now, the same message is being spread all over the Empire. Not a word is false!” The eunuch continued in extreme excitement: “Yun Che, who represented the Blue Wind Imperial Family had won all of his matches in the first group stage, had won all of his matches in the second group stage as well, had fought against the Xiao Sect, Burning Heaven Clan, Heavenly Sword Villa, and Frozen Cloud Asgard in the elimination stage, and completely beat all of them to obtain first place!! If even half of

this is false, may the heavens strike this servant with lightning!”

Cang Wanhe’s face became even redder as excitement rushed throughout the entirety of his body: “Good... Good... Good!! Haha... hahahaha... hahahahahahaha...”

Cang Wanhe started to heartily laugh with an incomparable jubilation. He had been in power for over ten years and this was the first time he had ever been this carefree. It was as if all the

pent up frustration and worries over the years had been released through this unreserved laugh: “This is the glory my Blue Wind Imperial Family deserves! This is what is truly means to look down upon the world from above! Send an imperial order to all related parties. Say... Say... From today onwards, for the next three years, the resources given to each Profound Palace will increase! Blue Wind Profound Palace’s reward will be proclaimed another day! From today onwards, we will prepare the greatest banquet in the Blue Wind Palace’s main hall, We want to personally receive Yun Che when they return... As for Yun Che’s reward, I will

proclaim it at a later date!”

“This servant has received the order...”

“Wait! Serve me some good wine immediately. I want to properly enjoy a drink, hahaha!”

Cang Wanhe usually had bad appetite, but because he was in a good mood today, his appetite was good. At the moment, he was extremely satisfied, and deeply felt that he wouldn't even regret anything even if he died

now.

## Chapter 247 – Waking Up

---

A room which was quiet and neatly arranged. Rays of light which were not too bright spilled through the half-open bamboo window, hence, the room was not overly dim.

Yun Che quietly laid on the soft bed, his entire body was smeared with medicine which did not have a heavy smell. He had already maintained this posture for three days, which also meant that he had been in a coma for entire three days.



In front of the bed, ice spirits floated, and then, gradually, a figure of a woman dressed entirely in a snow dress appeared. She raised her snow-ice like palm, and placed it on Yun Che's chest, sensing the recovery situation of his wounds and profound energy. A few moments later, the ice spirits around her body began to flutter quickly. Her palm was fully opened as well; as she held it in front of his chest, a pale, ice-blue glow silently enveloped his body...

This state lasted for an entire half a quarter of an hour. At this moment, footsteps that were intentionally made light could be heard from outside the door. The woman retracted her palm. With a gentle turn of her body, she disappeared from the spot, as though it was all but a dream.

And at this time, Yun Che's eyes showed a slight tremble, and then, they were slowly opened.

There was nowhere in his body where he could not feel any pain, but the pain was not that

unbearable, and there was even a trace of a cool feeling which made him especially comfortable. Yun Che tried to move his body, and he was pleasantly surprised by the outcome. Although his movements were sluggish, the mobility of his body did not seem to be stiff. At the very most, he would feel a little pain from over-exaggerated movements, but this was enough to prove that his body functions had basically fully recovered.

As expected, the recovery ability bestowed by the Second Realm of the Great Way of the

Buddha was not a joke!

The door to the room was pushed open. Cang Yue walked into the room with a bowl of soup in her hands, and following behind her was Qin Wushang. Currently, Princess Cang Yue looked really frail, as though she had not slept a wink for several days and nights. Yun Che slightly moved his body, and gently called out. "Senior sister, Palace Chief Qin."

"Ah!" Cang Yue let out a tender cry, and had almost thrown

aside the bowl of soup in her hands. She placed the bowl of soup on the table, and hastily arrived before Yun Che, saying surprisingly. “Junior brother Yun, you’re... you’re awake... This is great! Grandmother Jiumu said you might have to be in a coma for dozens of days, but I knew that you would definitely be safe and sound much sooner.”

The “Grandmother Jiumu” Cang Yue said out was referring to the number one genius doctor in Heavenly Sword Villa, who had lived in the Heaven Returning Pavilion for quite a while.

“I’m already fine. I’m sorry I had to cause Senior sister to worry.” Seeing Cang Yue’s expression, Yun Che answered with a pained heart. As he was speaking, he even raised out the right hand he could already freely move to grab onto Cang Yue’s small hand, to prove to her that he was really alright.

“Hoho, it’s good that you’re awake. This way, the Princess and I can finally feel at ease.” Qin Wushang nodded and laughed, as a relaxed expression revealed on his face. “Yun Che,

do you know? Currently, you're already famous throughout the world, and you're even titled as number one among the younger generation this year. And you are entirely worthy indeed of this title. But, I believe that with your character, you wouldn't overly care about such fame."

"Things like titles, though they sound nice, there are many a time they can be a form of burden." Yun Che smiled indifferently, and then, he asked. "Senior sister, how long have I been asleep for?"

“It’s already been three days.” Cang Yue replied. “Junior brother Yun, how do you feel right now? Do you feel especially uncomfortable anywhere?”

“Don’t worry, I feel that my body has already recovered to a certain extent... Three days...” Yun Che suddenly recalled something, and hurriedly asked. “When is the exploration of the Heaven Basin Secret Realm going to be conducted?”

“The Heaven Basin Secret Basin will open on the day after



tomorrow.” Qin Wushang sighed. “But, in your current state, you should be unable to participate in the exploration this time. But, don’t worry. You’re only seventeen this year. Even if you miss this out, you will still have another chance three years later.”

“The day after tomorrow...” Yun Che closed his eyes. Within his Sky Poison Pearl, there were a large amount of Great Heaven Returning Pellets which he had refined himself, and adding his extremely powerful self-recovery ability, the injuries on his body should be healed by

more than ninety-percent the day after tomorrow. However, it was impossible for the recovery of his profound energy to be as quick, and not even half of it could be recovered by then. Adding that he had burned the power source of the Phoenix blood, at the very least, he would not be able to make use of the power of the Phoenix flames for three months. His overall strength was thus greatly reduced.

Yun Che himself understood the condition of his body and its self-recovery ability. If he could recover about a half of his

strength, it was not that impossible for him to participate in the exploration of the Heaven Basin Secret Realm the day after tomorrow; the danger would just be raised by a lot.

After all, entering the Heaven Basin Domain, was equal to leaving the Heavenly Sword Villa's domain. People that did not dare to act rashly in the Heavenly Sword Villa, could finally act on their own free will.

“It might not have to be that pessimistic. My profound art

carries a very strong self-recovery ability, when that day comes, I will make my decision of entering the Heavenly Basin Secret Realm based on the state of my recovery. But, the matter of me waking up, please do not tell anyone as of yet.” Yun Che said.

Qin Wushang did not know what Yun Che’s “Profound Art” was, and in the end, no one else was able to find out either. He nodded, and no longer said anything else.

Cang Yue fed the medicinal soup to Yun Che, and left after keeping him company for a while longer, allowing him to rest quietly by himself.

“You sure are reckless. Aren’t you afraid of being crippled?” Jasmine said snappishly.

“I have countless of similar experiences, and I have considered most of the factors in my mind. No matter how reckless I am, I wouldn’t really cause myself to be crippled.” Yun Che took up a more comfortable

lying posture, took out a Great Heaven Returning Pellet from the Sky Poison Pearl and threw it into his mouth. Then, he slowly refined it with the little amount of profound energy he had recovered. “But in only three days, my injuries on the surface are actually healed to such great extent, and my internal injuries are completely healed. The second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha is extraordinary, as expected.”

“Hmph, do you really think that, by borrowing the strength of the second stage of the Great Way of the Buddha, could heal

you to such an extent?” Jasmine coldly snorted.

“... Could there be another reason?”

“In these three days, there’s someone who came by twice every day, and used a large amount of profound energy to heal your injuries. Otherwise, you would have been in coma for at least another two days, and it would have been impossible for your internal injuries to be completely healed this quickly.”

Yun Che was stunned, and then, he was suddenly agitated. “Could it be... Little Fairy?”

“This woman had always treated you coldly. Bluntly speaking, back then, she had even blasted you out of the room. But when you’re injured, she actually sneakily entered your room by herself, and treated your injuries without minding the large amount of profound energy she used. A woman’s way of thinking is really strange.” Jasmine said casually. However, no matter who it was, he would feel awkward when he realized the



last line was actually said by a girl who was only fourteen years old.

“Haha, when you grow up, and become a real woman, you might be able to understand.” Yun Che laughed loudly, and his mood instantly improved greatly. “When does she usually come?”

“Noon, and midnight. What? You want to wait for her?”

“Of course! She definitely

wouldn't have imagined that I have already woken up, so, she will definitely come again." Yun Che said very pleasantly.

“Dirty-minded!”

“Dirty...” Yun Che was angry now, as he growled. “Hey hey! Where the hell did a little brat like you learn this phrase? How can I be called dirty-minded? I really wish to see her out of very pure intentions, alright!? Even though you're much stronger than me, and you even have much more knowledge stuffed in

your brain than me, no matter the case, you're still only a thirteen or fourteen year old little girl. Of course you wouldn't understand the pure and beautiful feelings between us adults."

"You... an adult? Me... a little brat?" Jasmine smiled coldly. "You actually dare to disrespect your master! There had never been anyone who dared to call me a little brat!"

Jasmine's voice, evidently carried the thing called "killing

intent". Yun Che's neck suddenly cramped, and he said hurriedly. "I-I-I'm in the wrong... Aaah... Jasmine, I definitely, definitely, definitely did not call you a small brat, you must have heard wrong..."

.....

That night, it was exactly midnight, and everything was completely quiet and still.

The window in Yun Che's room gently opened, and following

after, a cool breeze blew. The figure of a woman, whose skin was snow-white like that of a dream's, quietly appeared in front of Yun Che's bed. Although the light was dim, it was still possible to see the blurred figure of her flawless and graceful curves. Yet, the aura emitted out of her body was cold and noble, imperceptibly carrying a resolute form of cold pride.

She raised out her hand, and gently placed it on Yun Che's chest. Just when she was about to investigate the conditions of Yun Che's injuries again, at this moment, Yun Che, who should

have been in a coma, suddenly stretched out his right hand, and grabbed onto her hand which was placed on his chest.

With Che Yuechan's current strength, there were not many in the Blue Wind Empire that could approach her. However, she was focused on Yun Che's injuries, and was currently concentrating all her thoughts on gathering the purest profound energy within her. And, adding that she completely did not think that Yun Che would actually be awake, her palm was thus instantly grabbed just like that.

Che Yuechan's hand was soft and cold, just like a piece of smooth, soft jade. However, her hand was not grabbed by Yun Che for that long of a time, as after that moment of pause, she abruptly broke away from his grasp. Chu Yuechan retreated quickly as well, and the aura emitted from her body turned bone-piercing cold.

“Little Fairy, I just knew that, you will definitely be worried about me...” Yun che straightened his upper body, and gently called out.

“So you were already awake.” Chu Yuechan’s cold voice did not have a single hint of emotion. She did not give Yun Che the opportunity to speak too much, and coldly said. “You don’t have to think too much about it. After all, you were injured because of Qingyue, as her Senior Master, I have that little bit of responsibility to heal your injuries. Since you’re well enough, then there’s no longer a need for me to act... And, do not call me Little Fairy. You can call me Chu Yuechan, or... Senior Chu!”



After saying that, Che Yuechan resolutely turned, and prepared to leave.

“Little Fairy...” Yun Che hurriedly shouted, and wanted to stand up in a rush. Suddenly, with an “Ah”, a large mouthful of blood suddenly splurged out of his mouth, and his entire body instantly fell towards the bed.

When Chu Yuechan, who was about to leave, saw that Yue Che had suddenly spit out blood, her entire body trembled, her snow-

like body quickly charged towards Yun Che to support him. Although the light was dim, Yun Che could clearly see the hint of franticness that flashed past her usually ice-cold face... A man that could cause the heart of the world-famous Fairy of Frozen Beauty to fluster, he believed that he was the first, and was also the only one.

The blood he spat out from his mouth, was actually the bad blood that was forced out from his internal organs after taking in the Great Heaven Returning Pellet. It should have been spat out much earlier, but he

desperately suppressed it, so as to prevent Chu Yuechan from leaving decisively after seeing that he had woken up. Evidently, this plan of his was completely effective. With the bad blood forced out, his organs momentarily relaxed. When Little Fairy held onto him, he followed up and embraced her cold, yet soft and tender waist... Although Chu Yuechan trembled slightly, facing this “heavily injured person” who had just spat out a large amount of blood earlier, she basically did not dare to break free. She simply allowed him to embrace her, and the embrace gradually became tighter.

## Chapter 248 – The Night Before Heaven Basin

---

“Are you alright?” Chu Yuechan said, trying to sound less cold. However, because she was being hugged, her heartbeat had gone out of control and she had to make use of the Frozen Cloud Arts to calm herself.

Over the past five months, she had constantly been embraced by him. She could not possibly be more familiar with his touch. Sometime within that period of time, she had unknowingly started to enjoy the feeling of

being embraced. However, a voice within told her that she had no choice but to be embraced because she was paralyzed and had to depend on him for protection. It was different now... She had already made a grave mistake by sleeping with him and she should not continue making more mistakes...

Yun Che pressed the entirety of his body weight onto Chu Yuechan, looking very feeble in a half-dead manner. He said in a very weak voice: "I... I'm okay. Little Fairy... don't leave me..."

“...” Chu Yuechan could not reply. Hearing Yun Che speak with such a weak voice had sent pain equivalent to needles piercing through her heart. She couldn't bear to push Yun Che aside. She could only quietly be embraced by him... She had actually tried to steel herself to push him aside, but she couldn't bear to do so in the end.

It's already very late. There's only the two of us here and there'll be nobody around to disturb us. He's also badly wounded... I'll give in this once.

It'll be the last time... This was what Chu Yuechan constantly repeated in her heart to console and convince herself.

It was only until Chu Yuechan had sent her profound energy into Yun Che's body to check Yun Che's current condition...

Bang!

The moment Yun Che had been pushed away by Chu Yuechan, his back hit the wall and he grimaced in pain and shouted:

“Ah, it hurts. It hurts!”

“You actually dare to deceive me in this manner!” Chu Yuechan coldly said, her face still as cold as ever but her eyes showing her sullen mood. Although on the surface she was angry, she had felt relief in her heart upon knowing that his wounds were taking a turn for the better. However, this sort of relieved feeling had caused her mind to go into disorder... She was not supposed to be able to feel this way.



Yun Che rubbed his back with his hands and said in a pitiful manner: “I thought my Little Fairy would have just left like that. Little Fairy, I know that for the past few days, you have always...”

“You’re not allowed to continue talking!”

Chu Yuechan’s chest was trembling as she interrupted Yun Che with a cold tone. She turned around, and said with a cold voice devoid of emotion: “What has happened between

you and I was a mistake. I have almost forgotten about it. I hope that you will do the same. If you're unable to forget about it, then just pretend it was all but a dream. Please do not attempt to make it a reality."

Yun Che: "..."

"What has happened between you and I cannot be known by outsiders. If you do not wish to encounter difficulties because of it, please do not reveal the six stages of the Frozen Cloud Arts that you have obtained... You are

Qingyue's husband. If you do not wish for her and Frozen Cloud Asgard to become the laughing stock of the world, and be questioned about their morals ethics, please forget about me..."

Chu Yuechan closed both of her eyes, and the ice spirits around her body floated around her in a crazed manner: "Once we leave Heavenly Sword Villa, we shall never meet again."

After saying that, Chu Yuechan vanished from Yun Che's sight. Yun Che could only silently gaze

at the ice spirits which have yet to disappear...

“Sigh.” After a while, Yun Che returned to the bed and let out a long sigh. He put both of his hands on his nose and could still vaguely smell her fragrance, which was similar to an ice lotus.

“Looks like you’re unable to attain your goals.” Jasmine gloated.

“You won’t understand.” Yun

Che tilted his head and muttered before sighing again. He gave Chu Yuechan's parting words some thought... "Laughing stock of the world", 'questioned about their morals ethics'... these words had been deeply etched into his mind.

Xia Qingyue was his wife.

Chu Yuechan was Xia Qingyue's Senior Master, and at the same time, was also partially her teacher.

Matters that had violated moral ethics would definitely draw the attention of the world... Especially if it concerned a respected sect in Blue Wind Empire, like Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Even if Chu Yuechan truly had feelings for him as an individual, at the same time she was Frozen Cloud Asgard's Fairy of Frozen Beauty. She could not knowingly ruin Frozen Cloud Asgard's thousand year reputation without regard for the consequences.

Regardless of how she felt, rejection, was the only choice she could make.

---

The Ranking Tournament at both the main and the secondary arena had finished. The rankings of over five hundred sects had been decided.

1st Place: Blue Wind Imperial Family

2nd Place: Frozen Cloud Asgard

3rd Place: Heavenly Sword Villa

4th Place: Xiao Sect

5th Place: Burning Heaven Clan

After these rankings were announced, it had caused large waves amongst those in Blue Wind Empire's profound circle. Yun Che and Xia Qingyue were both only seventeen years old, but their names had already spread throughout every corner of the Blue Wind Empire and traveled towards the six other nations very quickly.



The other nations had always paid close attention to the Blue Wind Empire's Ranking Tournament. The results of the Ranking Tournament had greatly shocked the other nations as well, making them unable to not remember the names Yun Che and Xia Qingyue.

Yun Che's origin, his circumstances, the incidents he had been involved in within the Blue Wind Profound Palace, his performance at the Ranking Tournament... were all fabricated into various books which circulated around the

market. His battle with Xia Qingyue had especially been exaggerated and hyped to be earthshaking and described as if it had been a battle between deities... The others, even included the exceeding sentimental love story of him and the Blue Moon Princess that could move even the heaven and earth...

If Yun Che was walking around any of the streets at any of the cities in Blue Wind Empire that talked about his exploits, he would have had a convulsion on the spot.

Yun Che had greatly underestimated the influence of the Ranking Tournament. While he was staying at the quiet Heavenly Sword Villa, he was clueless of the fact that his name and his deeds were being exaggerated and spread around as legends.

After the Ranking Tournament had ended, the various big sects had started to leave. Only the top ten sects of the Ranking Tournament had remained for the sake of entering the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. None of

them were willing to pass this chance up.

As the days passed, the day when the entrance to the Heaven Basin Secret Realm would open quickly approached.

After Yun Che had awakened, the recovery of his wounds had considerably sped up. He did not go anywhere during the next two days and had quietly nursed his wounds. Based on his injuries on the Sword Discourse Arena the other day, nobody would believe that he had

already woke up. Furthermore, his wounds were already mostly healed.

The night before the opening of the Heaven Basin Secret Realm.

Ling Yuefeng stood under an ancient tree in his courtyard, gazing at the crescent moon in the night sky. His clothes had gotten moist from the misty night atmosphere. It had shown that he had been standing here for a long time.

“Sigh.” Ling Yuefeng suddenly let out a very long sigh.

“Yuefeng, what has happened, has already happened. There’s no point in dwelling on it. Even though we had lost, it doesn’t mean that our Heavenly Sword Villa’s disciples are weak. Both Yun Che and Xia Qingyue being this strong was unexpected. Our loss was not without justifiable reason.”

Xuanyuan Yuefeng walked over and consoled him.

Ling Yuefeng continued to gaze at the crescent moon while deep in thought. He had not realized that Xuanyuan Yufeng was nearby. He had a complex look in his eyes as he turned around and sighed, while saying: "It has been about a thousand two hundred years since our ancestors had constructed Heavenly Sword Villa. Nobody had ever challenged our position as the number one sect. But during my time as Villa Master, I actually... I have been trying to calmly accept the facts, but I am unable to let go. I have let our ancestors down. I have let the thousand year history of Heavenly Sword Villa down."

“Don’t put it like that.”  
Xuanyuan Yufeng consoled:  
“You’ve taken up the heavy  
responsibility of Villa Master  
since you were young. It has  
been twenty one years since  
then. I’ve been with you  
throughout. We’ve watched  
Heavenly Sword Villa grow,  
we’ve watched Yun’er and Jie’er  
get strong under your care and  
surpass the younger you. We’ve  
already done enough to be proud  
of ourselves. Although we didn’t  
perform as expected during the  
Ranking Tournament, the  
Ranking Tournament is only a  
competition between the  
younger generation. Whether it



is our foundation, resources, prestige or overall strength, we wouldn't lose even if you put the nine other ranked sects together. Why can't you just let go if that's the case?"

Xuanyuan Yufeng's words had greatly calmed Ling Yuefeng down. He embraced Xuanyuan Yufeng and said with emotion: "My wife, you're right. To be wed to you in this lifetime is my, Ling Yuefeng's greatest blessing. What can't I let go?"

Xuanyuan Yufeng gently smiled

and leaned on her husband's shoulder.

Ling Yuefeng shifted his gaze, looked into the distance, and said: "There's still light in Yun'er's room... Sigh, I can tell that he has been very restless lately. I believe the one who'll have the hardest time letting go would be Yun'er. I'm worried that his self confidence and love towards swordsmanship will take a hit. I should pay him a visit and talk to him about this."

Xuanyuan Yufeng stood up and

slowly shook her head: "Yun'er's restlessness has nothing to do with his defeat the other day."

"You mean..."

Xuanyuan Yufeng said: "That's good too. Yuefeng, go ahead and pay him a visit. Let him speak of his troubles and maybe you can give him some advice. He will know what to do from then on."

Ling Yuefeng nodded, then walked out of the courtyard slowly, towards the direction of

Ling Yun's courtyard.

Xuanyuan Yufeng returned to her room. Not long later, someone had knocked on the door: "Yufeng, it's me."

Hearing that, Xuanyuan Yufeng immediately went to open the door. Surprisingly, it was Ling Kun.

Ling Kun sat down upon entering the room. He looked at Xuanyuan Yufeng for a bit before saying: "Yufeng, how have you

been for the past years? Did that Ling Yufeng brat ever mistreat you?”

“Yufeng has always treated me well. Thank you for the concern, Uncle.” Xuanyuan Yufeng replied with a smile. She poured a cup of tea for Ling Kun before sitting down opposite him. She asked sullenly: “I wanted to meet Uncle this late at night because I wanted to know... I wanted to know if my father... Is my father still... Is he still mad at me?”

“Heh heh.” Ling Kun laughed and said: “Yufeng, as his daughter, you should be the most clear about what kind of person your father is. The Ninth Elder has gotten over it a long time ago. Do you really think that the relationship between Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and Heavenly Sword Villa could be facilitated by a lowly aide like myself? The Ninth Elder had always been secretly pulling strings from behind. The Dragonscale Armor that I had brought over was from the Ninth Elder. Although the Ninth Elder had long accepted your marriage with Ling Yuefeng... his stubborn personality had prevented him from saying

anything. The only thing he has been displeased with over the years is that you have not went back to visit him even once.”

Xuanyuan Yufeng’s eyes became watery: “That year, father flew into such a huge rage and I had even caused him to lose face. How would I dare to go back?”

“Sigh, silly girl. You’re wrong... You are the Ninth Elder’s only daughter. He would never truly resent you. Even though he doesn’t openly say so, anyone can tell that he sorely misses

you. If not, he wouldn't keep talking about what you did in the past... After we've sealed the demon, you should bring Yuefeng, along with Yun'er and Ji'er and visit Mighty Heavenly Sword Region with me. When the Ninth Elder sees you along with his two grandsons, he will be extremely elated. After you have reunited with the Ninth Elder and removed the gap between you and him, he might regularly visit you and his grandsons. At that point of time, Heavenly Sword Villa will greatly benefit. If Yun'er and Jie'er are able to personally receive guidance from the Ninth Elder, their prowess will definitely skyrocket.



Xuanyuan Yufeng, with great difficulty, controlled her emotions and slowly nodded her head: "...Alright. When Yuefeng returns, I will talk to him about this."

"That's good." Ling Kun laughed. He then casually asked: "When I was coming over, I saw Yuefeng rushing towards the southeast, is there an urgent matter?"

"He went..."

Xuanyuan Yufeng's voice suddenly changed as she abruptly raised her head. She had an ugly expression on her face: "Southeast? You said... southeast?"

## Chapter 249 – Heaven Basin Secret Realm (1)

---

Ling Kun knitted his eyebrows, gave it some consideration and nodded saying: “It’s definitely the southeastern direction. Why do you ask?”

Xuanyuan Yufeng stood up, her face turning extremely ugly. Ever since the various sects left, Heavenly Sword Villa’s guest area had been virtually empty. The only sect that had remained in the southeast area... was Frozen Cloud Asgard!

“Uncle Ling, do me a favor...”

---

A lone moon hung in the night sky, with several stars shining brightly.

Ling Yuefeng flew through the night sky. He was originally heading towards Ling Yun's courtyard, but changed directions midway and went towards Frozen Cloud Asgard's

residence.

The atmosphere around Frozen Cloud Asgard's courtyard carried a unique calmness. Ling Yuefeng shut his eyes and lightly inhaled, as if he was savoring something. A short while later, he opened his eyes and gazed at the room Chu Yuechan stayed in. The lights were still on. Though, as he gazed upon the light in the room, he felt a piercing cold chill emitted from within... He knew he had been discovered. Chu Yuechan's current cultivation wasn't beneath his.

Ling Yuefeng inhaled slightly, then used voice transmission, projecting his thoughts towards Chu Yuechan: “I, Ling Yuefeng, would like to request a meeting with the Fairy of Frozen Beauty. Would you grace me with your presence?”

“What do you want? Speak!”

Chu Yuechan didn't appear. She only replied with five short words, each of them without a shred of emotion in them. They were cold to the point where they could freeze humans into

ice sculptures.

In the Blue Wind empire, only Chu Yuechan would dare to speak to Ling Yuefeng in such a manner. Even the Mistress of Frozen Cloud Asgard wouldn't dare. Hearing such cold words from Chu Yuechan, Ling Yuefeng could only bitterly smile. "Ever since the first time we met in the Ranking Tournament, I've gone to Frozen Cloud Asgard twenty times within ten years, but I've never been able to see you even once, until this year's Ranking Tournament..."

“There’s no need to speak of matters of the past. If Villa Master Ling has any matters, please speak of them immediately.” Chu Yuechan coldly said.

Ling Yuefeng sighed: “Back then, everyone knew about how I felt for you. Even if I had to be the laughingstock of the entire world, even if I had to incur my parent’s anger, I still continued to visit Frozen Cloud Asgard. All I hoped for was to meet you once again... Alas, after so many years, my memories of you are



still of that year... Even today, the greatest wish of my lifetime is that I could see you once again... I no longer wish to obtain your love, all I wish is to see you once more, so I can see how you look like now...”

Ling Yuefeng was a passionate person, but it wasn't easy to get him infatuated. Before meeting Chu Yuechan, he had devoted all of his efforts into swordsmanship. But on the day he met Chu Yuechan, the emotions he'd been burying burst open. Thirty years have passed since that moment. Figuratively speaking, any

emotion should have waned over the long period of time, but in Ling Yuefeng's heart, Chu Yuechan's image had never waned. Was it because of Lin Yuefeng's undying passion, or was it because Chu Yuechan was simply too charming? Nobody knew.

“You already have a wife and plenty of kids. You and I are simply strangers who've met a few times, there's no need to meet again. My current appearance has nothing to do with you. If you have no further matters, please leave. Your hospitality should not include

disturbing female guests late in the night!” Chu Yuechan remarked, with a faint hint of anger in her voice.

“Sigh, your temper hasn’t changed since that year. All I wish is to see you once more, so I can put aside my wish. I have no other hidden agendas. Once I’ve seen you, I will immediately leave. I will not bother you for as long as I live after that...”

“Rip!”

Following a slight tearing sound, an icicle came out of nowhere and flew directly towards Ling Yuefeng. Ling Yuefeng stuck his hand out and grasped the icicle. The icicle's freezing feeling quickly spread throughout his hands, into his heart.

Without bidding Chu Yuechan farewell, without having said anything, Ling Yuefeng left. His lonely figure vanished in the night sky very quickly. That year, he was not only the Young Villa Master of Heavenly Sword Villa, but also an incomparably outstanding youth. The amount

of female admirers he had was not few... but he had blindly fell in love with one he wasn't supposed to. With his strength, in the Blue Wind Empire, he could obtain fame and power easily. There was nothing he couldn't obtain within his lifetime, with the sole exception of Chu Yuechan... The heavens had blessed her with the most beautiful outer appearance, but had given her an icy cold heart. She was the only missing piece in Ling Yuefeng's life.

Not far away at a dark corner, Xuanyuan Yufeng was trembling with a very ugly expression on

her face.

Under Ling Kun's profound strength's isolation, neither Ling Yuefeng nor Chu Yuechan were able to sense their presence. Although they have been communicating using voice transmission, everything they've said had been silently tapped by Ling Kun. Xuanyuan Yufeng was only trying her luck originally, but when she had heard everything Ling Yuefeng had said to Chu Yuechan with her own ears, she exploded with rage.

“Ling Yuefeng... You really are a passionate man... It has already been thirty years, thirty damn years, but you’re still unable to forget that woman... I thought you were unable to accept what happened in the Ranking Tournament, so I comforted you for half a day... but who... knew you were actually thinking of that woman! You even dared to ask to meet her in secret!”

Xuanyuan Yufeng uttered each word with deep hate and rage: “I, Xuanyuan Yufeng, shortchanged myself, shamed my family, and married into this

meager Heavenly Sword Villa for more than twenty years... Yet I am still not equivalent to a woman who had made a fool out of you in front of the world, who refuses to even meet you. Ling Yuefeng... you've really outdone yourself!!”

When a woman had sufficient hate and envy, she would transform into the most terrifying demon. Ling Yuefeng and Ling Kun were still members of the same clan, so Ling Kun didn't want this matter to continue spiraling out of control. He immediately urged: “Yufeng, you don't have



to get this angry. You've already been with Yuefeng for more than twenty years and should know his personality. What he has said just now was very clear, all he wanted was to see Chu Yuechan one last time. From then onwards, he wouldn't think about her again. I've heard that in the past, in order to obtain her love, he's made many visits to Frozen Cloud Asgard within a span of ten years but has never succeeded. All he's doing now is to fulfill what he was unable to do in the past: to see her again."

"Rightfully speaking, as the

Villa Master of Heavenly Sword Villa, nobody would dare to humiliate him and not give him face. But today, that woman treated him coldly, without giving him any face. As his wife, this is where you should feel bad for him. If instead, you return and start quarreling with him, all you would be doing is creating discord between the both of you. However, if you do not stop him from doing what he's doing and treat him as per normal, he might feel guilty because of what he's doing. If that's what happens, you would benefit instead, right?"

“Not stop him? How can I not stop him?!” Xuanyuan Yufeng’s chest shook while saying so, but the anger in her voice was already half gone. She stared at the light within Chu Yuechan’s room and softly said: “Uncle Ling’s words have enlightened me. I should not be blaming Yuefeng. The fact that he hasn’t forgotten that woman also shows that he’s honest to his feelings... If this woman no longer existed, what I wouldn’t want to see wouldn’t happen! While Chu Yuechan has harmed Yuefeng.... someone else is doing the same to Yun’er. Yun’er hasn’t been himself as of late, I suspect he’ll make the same choices as his father once did.”

“You’re talking about Xia Qingyue?”

“I’m going to destroy Frozen Cloud Asgard for causing harm to my husband and son.” Xuanyuan Yufeng coldly remarked.

Ling Kun furrowed his eyebrows as a strange light flitted past his eyes. Towards Xuanyuan Yufeng’s proclamation out of envy and hate, he had not only not stopped her, but instead nodded, saying: “If you really

intend to do so, there's no reason for me not to help you. Except, Frozen Cloud Asgard is not a normal, easy to destroy sect. The fact that it has existed for a thousand years shows its considerable influence. How about you return to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region with me and let the Ninth Elder know of this matter. He has missed you for so many years and would not reject any request from you. At that time, I will personally volunteer myself to carry out this mission. Within three years, we'll make Frozen Cloud Asgard vanish, never to be seen again. Nobody will know that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was behind this. How about it?"

Xuanyuan Yufeng had only said that she wanted to destroy Frozen Cloud Asgard in a moment of rage. Who knew that Ling Kun had actually agreed to do so. If one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds had agreed to help, getting rid of Frozen Cloud Asgard was as easy as squashing an ant. Bearing great hate towards Frozen Cloud Asgard, how could Xuanyuan Yufeng disagree? She nodded, saying: "We'll do as Uncle Ling had advised. Yufeng thanks Uncle Ling."

“Hoho, it’s only a small matter.” Ling Kun laughed. His laughter had concealed deeper meaning.

---

Deep into the direct north of Heavenly Sword Mountain Range was a flat clearing. Within the imposing Heavenly Sword Mountain Range filled with sword energy, this place was one that was completely different. The atmosphere was calm and quiet, and even the sounds of the wind were exceptionally

soothing.

At noon, a group of people arrived. This group of people were all of the ten sects who had ranked in the top ten of the Ranking Tournament. This was the entrance to the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. Everyone here carried varying levels of excitement, especially those who've yet to enter the Heaven Basin Secret Realm before. Their eyes were oddly bright and looked as if any possible encounters were already in front of them, within reach.



However, within this group of people, Yun Che was not present. Representing Blue Wind Empire's group was solely Qin Wushang.

Ling Yuefeng stood at the front and announced: "Shortly, the entrance to Heaven Basin Secret Realm will appear. Before that happens, I will need to remind all of you of some things."

"Heaven Basin Secret Realm can only take at most fifty people at a time. With that said, each sect can only send five

representatives. As for which five, you are free to choose. After entering the realm, you will only stay for two days. After forty-eight hours, you will all be teleported back here against your free will. There's only one exception to this rule..."

Ling Yuefeng coldly said: "And that is a dead person!"

## Chapter 250 – Heaven Basin Secret Realm (2)

---

“Do not ever think that the Heaven Basin Secret Realm only contains innumerable resources and treasures. At the same time, it also contains immeasurable danger! If you pay no heed to safety and are driven by greed, you may very well lose your life! The Heaven Basin Secret Realm is immeasurably huge and there has never been anyone who was able to travel to the end. At the same time, what you see within the Secret Realm changes every single time. Even if you’ve once traveled deep into the Secret

Realm, you might see a completely new world this time around.”

“While exploring the Secret Realm, you can choose to travel alone or travel in a group. But in order to truly gain experience, the young and older generation should split up.”

Ling Yuefeng’s speech had left everyone in deep thought. If the younger generation still needed the older generation’s protection, that would be wasting this precious training

opportunity and incur the embarrassment.

“Within the Secret Realm, sound transmission does not work. Nobody will be able to communicate via sound transmission.”

“The Secret Realm is a place for exploration and training, it’s not for settling grudges! If you wish to settle your grudge within the Secret Realm, I would advise you to not do so. Do not waste this precious chance to train! Especially the older generation, I

hope that you wouldn't stoop that low and disregard your dignity and attack someone of the younger generation. If I happen to find out, you wouldn't like the outcome." Ling Yuefeng distinctively said. "Even if there's conflict between the younger generation due to a treasure found at the same time, the older generation is not allowed to intervene."

"The deeper you go into the Secret realm, the higher the danger! If you are not strong enough, do not try to push your luck. Even the season within the Secret Realm is not fixed.

Sometimes we'll get the warm spring season, sometimes we'll get a cool summer season, but if luck is not on our side, we might get a harsh winter..."

The younger generation who did not have experience entering the Secret Realm earnestly listened to Ling Yuefeng's long speech and took them to heart. At this time, a "Zizi" sound came from behind Ling Yuefeng, beckoning people to look towards the sound. To their surprise, a spatial distortion had formed behind Ling Yuefeng. Its surface was just like a stormy wave, with layers and layers of

constantly forming ripples.

The spatial ripples started to speed up its vibrations and began to revolve at high speed until it formed a gigantic swirling vortex. The surrounding air currents around the vortex were sucked towards it, giving rise to the howling of the wind. Eventually the revolution of vortex started to slow down, and when it completely stopped, it became a jet black hole which was almost three meters long in diameter. Through the jet black hole that floated in midair, nothing could be seen other than complete



darkness.

“This is the entrance into the Heaven Basin Secret Realm.” Ling Yuefeng stood in front of the entrance, looked at the crowd who had faces of astonishment and excitement, and said: “Each time the Secret Realm has been accessed, on average there will be two or three people who get left within the realm, never to return. Now that the entrance to the Secret Realm has opened, it will only stay open for seven and a half minutes. Anyone who wishes to back out may choose to do so now!”

There were none who wished to back out. Those who were afraid of death were meant to never become truly strong. Furthermore, the risk was not high. Two or three out of fifty wasn't even comparable to the risk they took when they chose to join their respective sects' special training. Within some of the sects with higher standards, those that had several hundred to thousands of deaths weren't uncommon.

“I've already said what has to be said. Let us enter the secret

realm based on the results of the Ranking Tournament. Our friends from Blue Wind Imperial Family shall enter first.”

Of the Blue Wind Imperial Family’s representatives, only Qin Wushang proceeded. Xia Yuanba’s cultivation was too low and he would only be seeking death if he had entered, as much as he was curious as to what was within. Cang Yue’s cultivation was too low as well, but she had no interest in the Heaven Basin Secret Realm to begin with. Both of them remained at the Villa to take care of the heavily injured Yun Che.

As such, only Qin Wushang represented the Blue Wind Imperial Family and entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm.

“Palace Chief Qin, go ahead.” Ling Yuefeng was naturally aware of the circumstances. He didn’t say anything unnecessary and just led Qin Wushang towards the entrance.

“Hmph! As expected, he really did not show up! What a waste of my time.” Fen Juecheng coldly remarked, at the same

time he took quick glance at the nearby Mu Tianbei. Mu Tianbei looked similarly upset.

“It’s okay. When I’m done exploring the Heaven Basin Secret Realm and leave the Heavenly Sword Villa, I’ll be able to kill him any time I want!”

The one who said this was Fen Juebi. After a few days of recuperation, his injuries could be said to be roughly half recovered. However, the aftereffects of damaging his

blood essence were still there. Currently, he could only display half of his strength at best. However, this was his only chance to enter the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, so he couldn't give it up regardless.

Not only did he get heavily injured from Yun Che's attacks, he had also lost all of the face he had and he would inevitably be punished upon returning to the Burning Heaven Clan. He had completely remembered all of the above as debts that Yun Che owed him, and he would make sure to collect them. His desire of wanting to kill Yun Che

wasn't less than that of Fen Juecheng's.

“It's not the same.” Fen Juecheng whispered: “Killing someone in the Heaven Basin Secret Realm will not give us any future troubles. Once the Heaven Basin Secret Realm closes, there will be no traces of evidence left. Having gotten first place in the Ranking Tournament, Yun Che's fame has gone through the heavens. He's not someone we can kill whenever we want! It'll be very difficult to kill him without leaving behind evidence, much more difficult than doing so

within the Secret Realm. Besides... although Mu Tianbei bears a similar grudge towards Yun Che, he wouldn't dare to strike outside of the Secret Realm!"

At that moment, someone hurriedly shouted from the distance: "Hey! Palace Chief Qin, wait for me!"

The crowd turned their heads, and surprisingly, they saw a Yun Che anxiously running towards them. After the Ranking Tournament, towards the



seventeen year old youth capable of destroying a Domain to obtain first place, the younger generation only had faces of awe and respect.

The current Yun Che didn't look very well. His face was a serious illnesses' pale white, and his steps were weak. From time to time, he revealed marks of bandage wrapped indents on his body..

Although the distance from Heavenly Sword Villa to this place was far, to someone who

was able to achieve top ten in the Ranking Tournament, even if they had ran at top speed, it wouldn't take much effort. But when Yun Che had come dashing here, he was out of breath and his breathing was unsteady. Looking at his condition, he only had twenty to thirty percent of his usual strength.

Compared to what he was like five short days ago, his recovery speed was almost miraculous and very shocking.

“Yun Che, why have you...” Yun Che had given Qin Wushang a huge shock.

Yun Che waved both of his arms and calmly said: “Rest assured, Palace Chief Qin, my injury is already about sixty to seventy percent recovered and I’ve regained some of my profound energy. Furthermore, this is a rare chance. Forget about me being able to freely move, even if I had to crawl here, I wouldn’t miss it!”

Qin Wushang looked at Yun

Che, and helplessly said: “Since you’re already here... so be it.”

“Yun Che, the Heaven Basin Secret Realm is not as its name makes it out to be. It carries significant danger within and you have to be extremely careful, especially with your current condition. Don’t force it.” Ling Yuefeng reminded.

“Mn. Thank you, Villa Master Ling, for the reminder.” Yun Che nodded. He glanced around him and saw Ling Jie and Ling Yun. Ling Jie made a “It’s okay, I’ll

protect you” gesture... When he looked at the group of five from Frozen Cloud Asgard, Chu Yuechan had already looked away... Lastly, he took a glance at the people from Burning Heaven Clan and Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress before he followed Qin Wushang through the entrance to the Heaven Basin Secret Realm.

When Qin Wushang and Yun Che’s visages vanished through the entrance, Fen Juecheng couldn’t control his laughter anymore: “The heavens gave you a path, but you chose to barge through hell instead!”

Yun Che was no stranger to the feeling of spatial travel. This was the exact feeling he had when he had entered the Dragon God Trial Grounds. Very quickly, the mysterious feeling vanished and an ice cold air assaulted him. He involuntarily shivered. He opened his eyes and couldn't help but stare at what was before him.

The bone chilling cold wind blew snow to fill the entire sky. A mirror-like smooth ice field continually extended beyond what he could see and giant

mountain range of ice stood erect before him like steep cliffs. Unable to be seen, the highest peak towered beyond the clouds and radiated coldness even in this thick cold climate.

An uncountable amount of hail that had been broken by cold wind pelted down. When it hit the face, it caused severe pain. If people with lower cultivation were to be here, they might have already been covered with bloody holes just the hail.

“This is the Heaven Basin

Secret Realm?” Yun Che murmured in a daze. What was before him was nothing compared to what he had imagined. Looking at the nearby Qin Wushang, it would seem that he too, was shocked.

Behind him, the spatial vortex constantly distorted, and each time it distorted, someone else was sent here. When they opened their eyes, their reactions were even more exaggerated than Yun Che's. Nobody had expected the legendary Heaven Secret Basin to contain a snow white world.



Ling Yuefeng was the last to enter, and he said furrowed brows: “Looks like we are very unfortunate this time. To have drawn Heaven Basin Secret Realm’s harsh winter climate! This is the worst and most dangerous condition. However, this should be favorable... to our friends from Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“Yueli, let’s go!” Ling Yuefeng’s words were unable to affect Chu Yuechan at all. Without making eye contact with anyone, amongst the fluttering cloaks,

she had already left into the distance. Her figure soon changed into a strip of white in the winter sky, looking at home with the blowing snow.

“Wushuang, Xuexin, you should both travel together. Qingyue, you should travel alone. It’ll be up to your abilities to obtain benefits here.” After a short exchange, Chu Yueli also vanished into the winter sky, following Chu Yuechan.

Ling Yuefeng helplessly looked towards the direction Chu

Yuechan left in before floating up and said: "It is time that we left too. Let the younger generation choose where they want to go. They will have to depend on themselves for everything from now onwards."

Without saying a word to Ling Yun and Ling Jie, he too, vanished far into the winter sky. The regions that the older generation explored could not be compared to those that the younger generation did. The rest of the elders did not object to what Ling Yuefeng had said and had only given at most, simple instructions before leaving in

different directions and quickly disappearing from their line of sight. If they had stayed out of concern to protect the younger generation, it would cause more harm than good.

All that was left were the people of the younger generation. Among the younger generation, other than the disciples who had participated in the Ranking Tournament, there were other outstanding individuals... such as Xiao Sect's Xiao Kuangyu and Burning Heaven Clan's Fen Juecheng.

All of the sects had left at least three younger disciples and at most five members except the Blue Wind Imperial Family. Therefore, Yun Che was especially awkward amongst the group of young disciples. Him being alone was secondary, because due to his placing in the Ranking Tournament, most of the other disciples were eager to travel with him. But the problem was, due to his injuries, he was only able to display twenty to thirty percent of his strength. Without doubt, the current him was going to be a burden to whomever he went with.

## Chapter 251 – Jasmine’s Decision

---

The instant Ling Yuefeng left, Ling Jie took a big stride to Yun Che’s side: “Boss! Whaddya say, let’s form a group! Even though it’s my first time entering this place, my old man has told me a lot regarding this place. Much of it will come in handy, I guarantee that I won’t drag Boss down!”

While he said “I won’t drag you down”, it was evident his real intention was to protect Yun Che. After all, it would be way

too dangerous if he traveled alone in the state he was currently showing.

Yun Che was naturally moved by Ling Jie's kind intentions, but he actually waved him off, and said: "It's alright. Since this is training through experience, it's still better to travel alone. Especially you, Little Jie. Though your talent is pretty good, and your sword intent and sword heart are first-class, you've always resided within the Heavenly Sword Villa. What you're missing the most is training through experience in dangerous situations. If you

were to travel with me, the results of your training will be greatly diminished.”

“But, but...”

“There are no buts.” Yun Che extended a hand and pinched his chin: “You personally agreed to be my little brother. What, you’re not even going to listen to my first decision?”

“Eh...” Ling Jie, who had an innocent mind and a head not really capable of making turns,



was held up by Yun Che's words. After being confused for quite a while, he could only reply: "Fine. Boss, you must be careful. My old man really wasn't trying to frighten you guys with his words just now."

"Don't worry, I'm not the kind of person to die easily. Furthermore, I'm currently wearing the Dragonscale Armor." Yun Che pinched the corner of his clothes, revealing a sheet of dragon scales, which reflected an icy-cold light. As the reward for placing first in the Ranking Tournament, although the Heavenly Sword Villa was

extremely reluctant to part with it, they had no choice but to give the Sky Profound Armor to Qin Wushang while clenching their teeth and resisting the pain. Qin Wushang had given this Dragonscale Armor to him yesterday, and he directly wore it today.

The Dragonscale Armor only had one very thin layer. When one wore it, it wasn't cold nor cumbersome; moreover, it would automatically adjust itself to fit the build of the wearer. This armor was entirely worthy of being a life-protecting tool. As he had expected, the instant he

revealed the Dragonscale Armor, several tens of surrounding gazes filled with greed and jealousy instantly shot in his direction.

Ling Jie turned around and said to Ling Yun: “Big Bro, Boss said it’s best for me to travel alone, so I won’t go with you. I’ll be leaving first... Boss, you must be careful. Otherwise, my beautiful Princess Sis will be all alone... Aaaaahh! I’m off!”

Ling Jie called out the Celestial Yang Sword, puffed his chest,

and walked forward by himself in an imposing manner. Ling Yun nodded at Yun Che, and his gaze seemed to inadvertently shoot towards Xia Qingyue's location. He walked forward a few steps, finally took a small breath, and walked in front of Xia Qingyue and said politely: "Xia Fairy, would you like to form a group? I came here three years ago, so I'm somewhat familiar with this place. This place is extremely dangerous, but we should be able to handle any dangers if we travel as a group, and we'll also be able to travel much farther. If we discover any treasures, Xia Fairy will also have the priority in selecting them. How does that

sound?”

Not far away, Fen Juecheng and Xiao Kuangyu's faces both revealed strange expressions. They had also entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm three years ago, and at that time, Ling Yun had left early by himself, giving no one any chance at all to partner with him. But now, he had actually taken the initiative to travel with someone else, and his words even carried a sense of entreatment.

Only idiots wouldn't be well

aware of his thoughts.

“I thank Young Villa Master Yun for the good intentions, but Qingyue has already decided to travel alone.” Faced with Ling Yun’s voluntary invitation, Xia Qingyue nevertheless directly rejected his offer without any hesitation at all.

The number of people Ling Yun had voluntarily invited before did not exceed five, and this was the first time he had been rejected. Ling Yun’s expression didn’t change; without any more

insistence, he nodded: "If this is so, then Xia Fairy must be careful."

After he finished speaking, Ling Yun also left by himself, and his silhouette rapidly disappeared into the flurry of snow.

Even Ling Yun had been rejected, so Xiao Kuangyu, who had originally been eager to give it a try, also clenched his teeth, and after struggling for a long while, decided to give up as well. As for the other people, not one even dared to go up and try.

Even Xiao Kuanglei, who was also the current Xiao Sect Master's son, could not gather the courage to talk to Xia Qingyue. With the strength she had displayed in the Ranking Tournament, she handily surpassed them by an entire plane. The status of these disciples from the large sects may be exceptional elsewhere, but in front of Xia Qingyue, they couldn't even bring themselves to lift their heads up.

Disregarding everything else, just on the basis of strength, they didn't have the qualifications to travel with Xia



Qingyue.

The lone Yun Che swept his surroundings with a glance. Without greeting anyone, he casually selected a direction and began walking at a leisurely pace.

“Junior Sister Xia, we’ll be off now. You must be careful.” Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin bade farewell, and left together. Xia Qingyue nodded; she watched them leave, and accidentally glanced at the direction Yun Che had walked, causing a

complicated expression to flash in her eyes. After, she began walking north alone.

The entire world had been covered with snow. The only thing that could be used to distinguish direction was that single icy mountain which reached into the clouds. As Yun Che traveled forward, even though he had profound energy protecting his body, he was still chilled to the point of non-stop shivering.

“Where there isn’t ice, this

place is filled with snow. As for that 'Heaven Basin', I can't even see its shadow. And how can this kind of place contain any heaven-quality items. Even if there were any, they definitely have long since been buried under the icy snow... Huff, how cold."

Yun Che walked for more than an hour. He only saw the boundless plains of snow and snow-filled sky, and nothing worthwhile at all. This was completely different from the rare and exotic flowers and plants, with strange stones and spirit jades aplenty within a

scenery filled with high majestic mountains and jungles he had envisioned. Furthermore, after walking for such a long time, he had yet to see even the shadow of a profound beast!

How is this a search for rare treasures, I simply came here to suffer!

“The existence of this little world is really strange.” Jasmine muttered to herself.

“Strange?”

“This little world was indeed made by humans. Furthermore, its level of power is extremely high, and it must have existed for a very long time, so the appearance of a few heaven-grade treasures isn’t strange... What’s strange is that this kind of small world shouldn’t appear in this sort of location, because it’s simply not something that can be created with the strength of this plane.”

“It’s probably something a strong expert left a very long time ago.” Yun Che said without

thought. He wasn't concerned about the origin of this Heaven Basin Secret Realm at all. As he was walking leisurely, he suddenly said: "Jasmine, how many people are following me right now?"

"Four". Jasmine responded.

"Four?" Yun Che was startled. This number didn't match the number he had in mind.

"There will never be a shortage of enemies that want to kill you

by your side. Have you ever wondered why this is so?" Jasmine said coldly.

"No! These people can't even be considered my enemies." Yun Che wagged his finger, and said with a cold smile: "They're nothing more than a bunch of stepping stones seeking death!"

"Of these four people, three of them should be here to kill you. It seems the other person isn't; on the contrary, this person might be here to save you." Jasmine said.

“Mn? Save me? Who is it?”

“You’ll know in a bit.”

Yun Che’s footsteps gradually grew slower. After muttering to himself for a while, he said: “Jasmine, in a bit, I need your help to kill a person.”

“Okay!”



Yun Che froze for an instant, because Jasmine had agreed too quickly. Every time Jasmine attacked, the toxic poison in her body would spread. So, if it wasn't a life-or-death matter or an opponent Yun Che definitely couldn't contend against, she definitely wouldn't strike out. But this time, she had directly agreed just as Yun Che began to open his mouth. Yun Che couldn't help but feel nervous, and asked weakly: "Eh... could it be that you have some other... additional conditions?"

"Of course I do!" Jasmine's voice gradually became more

cold and stiff: “You should be clear about the state of your body right now. This small world is the perfect place to kill people. You should also be clear about who might try to kill you in this place. Yet you still dared to come here, just because of my existence! I must kill whoever you want me to kill, otherwise, you will die, which means I will die as well.”

“I remember you once said that you definitely weren’t willing to become dependent on my strength. But you seem to have completely forgotten your words. In a lot of the things that

you do, when you consider your capability, you will also include my strength within your calculations. When I can use my power, in the entire Profound Sky Continent, it's impossible for you to encounter any risky situations. The hidden dependency in your thoughts will greatly restrict your growth..." Jasmine spoke every word with extreme seriousness. Her tone of voice was just like a great master, who had experienced countless dangers, instructing a disciple.

Yun Che actually approved of a small portion of what Jasmine

had said. For example, this time, he didn't want to give up the chance to explore the Heaven Basin Secret Realm; if it wasn't for Jasmine's existence, he definitely wouldn't have entered this place in his current state. Contrary to what one might expect, Fen Juecheng was actually of secondary importance. The crucial point was that he had also detected killing intent from Mu Tianbei's body.

Mu Tianbei, as the Fortress Master of the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, was definitely not inferior to Qin

Wushang in terms of strength.

“I’ll help you kill one last person. After, I’ll self-seal my profound strength for a very long time, and focus on detoxifying the poison in my body in the Sky Poison Pearl. In the future, you can only rely on yourself for everything you do. Don’t even consider hoping for my help.” Jasmine said coldly.

“... There’s no need to be this absolute, right?” Yun Che’s heart shook: “What’ll happen when I encounter some life-threatening

danger I'm unable to withstand? If I die, you will also die. So you're not afraid..."

"Hmph! After attaching myself to the Sky Poison Pearl for such a long time, the poison has flared up numerous times because I've forcefully activated my strength. Up until now, barely any poison has dispersed since I first met you! Rather than suffering through these poison flares again and again, and being unable to see any hope of recovering, it might actually be better to end it all with death." Jasmine said snappily.

Yun Che opened his mouth, contemplated silently for a moment, then nodded slowly: "Alright, I understand. Furthermore, I wholeheartedly approve of your decision."

At this time, in the midst of the endless snow, two blurred silhouettes suddenly appeared. Following Yun Che's leisurely strides forward, these two silhouettes gradually grew clearer.

When he could see the two

people clearly, Yun Che stopped walking. He revealed an expression of pleasant surprise, as if he had met an old friend. He jogged over and greeted: “Isn’t this the Burning Heaven Clan’s Young Clan Master and Juebi ol’ chap? What’re you two doing here? For us to meet in this boundless Heaven Basin Secret Region, who wouldn’t agree that this is a beautiful heaven-fated destiny!!”



# Chapter 252 – Killing With A Borrowed Blade

---

Seeing Yun Che's appearance, Fen Juebi nearly laughed out loud. He narrowed his eyes, and edged closer step-by-step with Fen Juecheng: "Indeed, what a coincidence it is for us to meet in this boundless land. However, you don't look very well right now. You've only walked to here after such a long time; it looks like you haven't recovered much from your previous injuries."

"There's no point in wasting words with him." Fen Juecheng

said coldly. He looked at Yun Che gloomily, and sneered indifferently: “Yun Che, do you really believe our meeting here was a coincidence?”

“Could it be that it wasn’t?” Yun Che froze, then exclaimed suddenly: “Oh! I know, you must’ve thought this place was too dangerous, and wanted to travel with me, right? That’s certainly not a problem.”

“No! We’re only here to send you somewhere. Traveling together is unnecessary.” Fen

Juecheng smiled even more darkly.

“Send me somewhere?” Yun Che’s face revealed some doubt: “Where?”

“[The Yellow Springs Road!](#)” Fen Juecheng laughed coldly. A red light flashed in his hand as he grasped a deep-red longsword. The tip of the sword carried a scorching killing intent, and pointed straight at Yun Che.

A look of fright flashed in Yun

Che's eyes. He stepped backwards rapidly, and even spoke with a small stutter: "Y... Young Burning Clan Master, in the past, we've had no grievances nor enmity. What do you mean by this?"

"Ha ha ha ha!" Seeing Yun Che's frightened appearance, Fen Juebi laughed heartily: "No prior grievances? You're actually innocently stupid. Alright, seeing as you're about to become a dead man, I'll explain why I want you dead. In the Ranking Tournament, you dealt several severe injuries to me. It's nothing if I just lost face, but the

Blue Moon Princess is a woman my Big Bro has taken an interest to, and you actually dare to touch her! You truly don't know how death is written!!”

“Ah?” Yun Che stared wide, and revealed an expression of incredulity: “That... that can't be! Princess Cang Yue and I are a harmonious couple. In these past several years, how come I've never heard her say you were interested in her? I understand, this is probably only Young Burning Clan Master's wishful thinking. My Princess Cang Yue doesn't even pay attention to you. That only

means that Young Burning Clan Master doesn't have enough charm; what does that have to do with me?"

"You!" Fen Juecheng furrowed his brow ferociously, as his face flushed with anger.

Yun Che seemed as if he hadn't noticed his overflowing anger at all, and continued: "Moreover, even if you do kill me today, what do you think will happen? Forgive me for my blunt words, but Young Burning Clan Master has absolutely nothing to

deserve my Cang Yue... My Cang Yue is the majestic princess of the imperial family; in terms of status and respect, there's not one woman in the Blue Wind Empire that can compare to her. Yet you, Young Burning Clan Master, is but a young clan master. There is only one princess in the Blue Wind Empire, but there are thousands of young clan masters, as many as there are stones in a dung pit. It's practically the difference between a white cloud and mud. Furthermore, in terms of appearance, my Cang Yue looks like a fairy. Look at you: a donkey's face and a monkey's nose, an ox's head and a horse's mouth, and a face full of

malevolence. Forget about just being ugly. You have a face full of vile air, and my life shortens every time I look at you. Even I, a man, pity you.”

“Moreover, in terms of accomplishments, I’m seventeen this year, yet I have already defeated someone at the third level of the Earth Profound Realm and placed first in the Ranking Tournament. You’re twenty three or four this year, yet you appear as if you’re only at the second level of the Earth Profound Realm. This disparity is a bit too great. Between you and me, only someone blind



would pick you... Oh oh, some time ago, I heard Happy Marriage Courtyard's Little Red, Little Green, and Little Purple mention that Young Burning Clan Master's little wee wee is only half an inch long, and is as thick as a hemp stalk... Tsk tsk, with your situation, even a forty year old widowed aunt wouldn't be interested in you, let alone my Cang Yue. Sigh, as a man, I pity Young Burning Clan Master's situation which is like turbulent river water..."

Since he could remember, Fen Juecheng had been fully aware that he was a dragon among

men. In the younger generation, he stood at the highest level, so much that he could show disdain to everyone. But just now, Yun Che had practically called him a good-for-nothing. Fen Juecheng wasn't easily angered, but Yun Che's were just too malicious. He was well aware that Yun Che was deliberately humiliating him, but his face still turned the color of a pig's liver, and killing intent several times stronger exploded out: "YOU'RE... COURTING... DEATH!!"

Fen Juecheng's fury erupted. A blue fire ignited on his sword,

which stabbed straight at Yun Che's chest. Fen Juecheng didn't hold back at all in this strike, and even threw in the fury that filled his heart. Under the might of the Earth Profound Realm, the nearby snow turned into water vapor in an instant. Even the thick mantle of snow underneath subsided at a terrifying pace.

As the sword pierced forward, Yun Che's mouth revealed a cold smile. He grasped Dragon Fault in a flash, and immediately smashed straight at Fen Juecheng's flaming blade.

An enormous sound erupted, and blue flames flew in all directions, spewing the snow on the ground ten feet high into the air, completely veiling one's line of sight. Fen Juecheng's entire body shook as both his arms felt a numbing feeling and the flaming blade flew out from his hands. His heart grew alarmed, and his mind calmed a bit later. But all traces of the Yun Che in front of him had vanished. Without any hesitation, his body flashed, leaving behind a crimson silhouette, and retreated thirty steps. At this time, he heard Fen Juebi scream miserably...

When the snow which filled the sky descended, Yun Che's silhouette appeared. He was carrying Dragon Fault, and beaming as he stood in place. Under his foot, was shockingly, a stepped on Fen Juebi. Dragon Fault, which weighed over four thousand kilograms, completely pressed Fen Juebi's body down along with Yun Che's trampling, causing his eyes to turn white and complexion to turn green as he howled with incomparable pain.

Fen Juecheng's complexion

changed abruptly, and his expression became incomparably overcast: “Your... your injuries, are actually...”

“That’s right, I faked them.” Yun Che’s foot moved from Fen Juebi’s back to his waist, and pressed till he shrieked like a pig about to be slaughtered: “In order to wait for a few trash that overestimated their own capabilities to voluntarily send themselves up for death!”

The recovery ability brought by the Great Way of the Buddha

was not something an ordinary person could imagine. Currently, Yun Che's internal and external injuries had recovered completely, and he had recovered around seventy percent of his profound strength. Though dealing with Fen Juecheng would be a bit too difficult, messing with the heavily-injured Fen Juebi was as easy as turning his hand. Of course, scaring Fen Juecheng for a bit would be sufficient; Yun Che had even defeated Xia Qingyue, who was at the third level of the Earth Profound Realm, so Fen Juecheng, who was at the second level of the Earth Profound Realm, wouldn't be naive enough to think of

himself as Yun Che's opponent.

“Impossible! I heard that not only were your injuries extremely grave, your profound strength had also diminished completely! It's simply impossible for you to recover in five short days! Furthermore... how did you know in advance that I was coming to kill you?” Fen Juecheng said while clenching his teeth. Although he had said “impossible”, his heart had been completely shocked. The numb feeling he had received from Yun Che's strike still lingered. If his strength hadn't recovered, how could he



have attacked with such a frightening strike?

“Heheheheh,” Yun Che began laughing with ridicule: “That’s why I said that Young Burning Clan Master is nothing but a mere idiot who believes he is infallible. Once this Heaven Basin Secret Realm closes, all traces will vanish. For you two, this is the perfect place to kill someone, but it’s the same for me as well. To the people I want to kill, I never show even a hint of mercy... So let’s start with your pathetic little brother.”

Before the sound of his words descended, the power under Yun Che's foot increased suddenly, causing Fen Juebi to emit a blood-curdling shriek again, as his five viscera and six bowels warped under the great pressure. Although Fen Juebi's strength wasn't weak, he was but a dish of food in the face of Yun Che, let alone the fact that he had several grave injuries and his strength had diminished greatly. Fen Juecheng's face became as overcast as a dark cloud as he fumed with rage between gritted teeth: "Then let's see you try to attack! To guard against any accidents, before we entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, Great Elder

left a special soul imprint on his body. If he were to die, Great Elder will immediately know who killed him! At that time, you... and everyone related to you, will receive the wrath of the entire Burning Heaven Clan! Every one of them will die in the most miserable way possible!!”

“Right... right... you... you can't kill me! If you dare to kill me... Great Elder will know... you can't kill me!!”

As the son of the Burning Heaven Clan Master, Fen Juebi

had never been trampled by anyone before. Moreover, this was the first time he had actually faced the menace of death. This kind of person was often someone who fears death the most. At this moment, Fen Juebi's face was a deathly white color, and his lips were ashen. Half of his condition was due to a relapse in injuries from Yun Che's beating, and the other half was due to fright.

“What he says is actually true. Detection imprints have indeed been left on both of their bodies. If they were to die, the person who left the imprint will

immediately know who killed them.” Jasmine said.

“Really?” Yun Che’s expression didn’t change. On the contrary, he started laughing coldly at Fen Juecheng: “Do you really believe I wouldn’t dare kill you because of that? Do you really think I’m afraid of your Burning Heaven Clan?”

As he spoke, Dragon Fault in Yun Che’s hands suddenly dropped, and smashed onto Fen Juebi’s right leg without any mercy. Only a “snap” sound

could be heard, and the bones in Fen Juebi's right leg snapped. An incomparably mournful sound akin to the wail of ghosts and the howl of wolves spread outwards. Even though the sky was filled with snow, the sound still traveled a great distance.

“You!!” Fen Juecheng didn't think Yun Che would actually be this vicious and merciless. He had executed this strike that was capable of permanently handicapping Fen Juebi, without any hesitation at all. Fen Juebi's mournful shriek had caused his entire facial expression to warp, as the joints

in both his hands made cracking sounds.

Seventy percent of Yun Che's profound strength recovering didn't equate to seventy percent of Yun Che's actual strength recovering. Because he had forcefully burned the Phoenix Blood, he wouldn't be able to utilize the strength of the Phoenix Flame for three months, causing his overall strength to diminish significantly. With his current state, there was absolutely no possibility of him defeating Fen Juecheng.

But Yun Che's expression remained incomparably confident. The head on exchange had also let Fen Juecheng's heart give birth to fear. And in front of Fen Juecheng, he was not worried in the slightest and had instead quickly crippled Fen Juebi. It was clear that he was not afraid of angering him; on the contrary, it seemed as if he was trying to anger him on purpose. This infuriated Fen Juecheng to no end, yet made him even more cautious about daring to act without thinking. Not only did he not dare to advance, he was completely on guard, and had even made



preparations to withdraw at full strength, as to evade the chance of Yun Che suddenly attacking him.

SNAP!

Yun Che smashed down with his sword again, directly snapping Fen Juebi's left leg as well. Amidst Fen Juebi's blood-curdling screams, Yun Che slowly raised his head. A sneer and a provocative smile hung on his face... This smiling expression caused Fen Juecheng's scalp to feel numb

for a moment. His body retreated backwards uncontrollably, and his sudden howl charged into the sky: “Fortress Master Mu! What are you doing... Why haven’t you attacked yet!!”

Just as Fen Juecheng’s voice fell, the snow diagonally above Yun Che suddenly became chaotic. Amidst the chaotic snowstorm, a silver colored spear shot out with an incomparably terrifying screeching sound. Wherever the spear went, the snowstorm was roughly split open. From a distance, it was like a dazzling

silver colored line that was drawn on a sky sealed with ice and snow.

The aura of death brought along by the spear instantly made all of Yun Che's hair stand up. However, his expression was nevertheless, still incomparably tranquil. Instead, the corner of his mouth curled into an evil smile as the Dragon Fault Sword easily swung down and suddenly smashed onto the ground.

Boom!!

Following Yun Che's strike, the snow on the ground rose in excess. Aside from the snow being raised, Fen Juebi's body had also been lifted. Before Fen Juebi, who was jolted into the air, had time to react, his chest was pierced through by a silver spear...

This was a fatal strike from a Sky Profound expert, so how could its strength not be terrifying? Before Fen Juebi, who had been speared through the chest, had time to let out a wretched shriek, his body had immediately exploded open, bursting into more than ten

lumps that scattered into the distance... The silver spear continued downwards, pierced through the after image Yun Che had left with Star God Broken Shadows, before burying who knows how deep into the ground.

# Chapter 253 – How Do You Want To Die?

---

Heaven Basin Secret Realm,  
northwest direction.

BOOM!!

The mountain was directly blown apart, revealing large chunks of soil and rocks that were buried under the snow and ice. According to the previous experiences of those who entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, some unusual stones

tend to frequently be laid beneath the mountain.

However, after blowing the mountain apart, Fen Moli did not advance. Instead, his entire body trembled and froze on the spot, and he wore an extremely ugly expression. The middle-aged man that was beside him immediately asked: “Great Elder, what’s wrong?”

Fen Moli’s expression slowly turned incomparably gloomy. The anger and murderous intent that were being released from

his body caused the middle-aged man to tremble with fear. After quite some time, he then said with a low voice: “Juebi... has died!”

“What!!” The middle-aged man exclaimed. Not even two hours had passed since they entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. Before they even reaped any rewards, they had instead received such a grievous news first. He asked in alarm: “Great Elder, you had left a soul imprint on Juebi’s body. Who is it... Who is the one that had such nerve to actually kill Juebi!”



“It is Mu Tianbei!” Fen Moli tightly clenched both his fists, and nearly crushed his hand bones. Suddenly, he let out a punch, releasing a path of purple flames in front of him that directly blew the small mountain in front of him into rubble. A roar filled with extreme anger came from his mouth: “Mu Tianbei!! There are no grudges nor enmity between you and my Burning Heaven Clan, yet you actually committed such an evil act. In the span of one month, I will definitely erase your Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress from the face of this world, forever!!”

On the other side, Mu Tianbei descended from midair and looked towards the dismembered body of Fen Juebi that was all over the ground. His body spasmed a bit and his face turned ugly, as if he had swallowed a dead fly. Fen Juecheng's expression was ten times uglier. A face that was originally handsome and outstanding was now distorted to the point that even his biological mother would never be able to recognize it.

Fen Juebi died... He had just

used the existence of the soul imprint to threaten Yun Che, but now Fen Juebi died in the blink of an eye... He didn't even die in the hands of Yun Che, but died because of the fatal blow Mu Tianbei was preparing for Yun Che.

Bang Bang Bang Bang....

Light and brisk clapping sounds echoed from the side. Yun Che had a face full of schadenfreude. His gaze shifted towards Mu Tianbei as he gratefully said: "You are worthy of being called

the Fort Master of Heavenly  
Spear Thunderfire Fortress.  
That strike of yours is so  
fleeting, transcendent, and  
incredibly exquisite. This junior  
didn't know that you were still  
brooding over the clash he had  
with the Young Fort Master Mu  
from before, and still had some  
problems with it. Not only were  
you prepared to hit a person  
who was already down, you had  
the indifference of a bystander.  
You stuck by your actions and  
killed the second young master  
of the Burning Heaven Clan!  
This mind, this spirit, this  
boldness, makes this junior feel  
shame and admiration at the  
same time. I heard that Fen  
Juebi carried the soul imprint

that Fen Moli left for him on his body. Right now, Fen Moli should already know about Fort Master Mu's impressive feat of having killed his clan's second young master in one spear strike. He must be angered to the brink of life and death by now, hahahahahaha..."

After Yun Che's sarcastic ridicules, he didn't forget to let out a burst of mad laughter. Mu Tianbei's complexion went from clear to black, then black to white. The anger he held within his belly narrowly avoided exploding his stomach. He clenched his fists and angrily

roared: “Little junior! Young Burning Clan Master would naturally resolve this matter for this Fort Master. Death is close at hand, yet you are still able to laugh! Just watch as one of my strikes ruthlessly break the bones in your body!!”

Mu Tianbei angrily rose, and charged toward Yun Che. His right hand became a claw that grabbed straight towards the top of Yun Che’s skull.

Yun Che stood motionlessly in place as he gazed at Mu Tianbei’s

approaching right claw with ridicule. This reaction immediately made Mu Tianbei's heart waver as his movements slowed. But at this exact moment, an extremely cold air suddenly assaulted him from ahead. A few specks of cold bristles shot right toward his eyes and Mu Tianbei's figure stopped to grab those incoming things which were in fact icicles that released a bone chilling coldness.

But at the same time, a long strip of white ribbon shot out from within the wind and snow. It wrapped around Yun Che's

waist and brought him flying along with it. On the other side of the long ribbon was the fine, snow white figure of a female!

“Qingyue?” Yun Che looked at Xia Qingyue, who had suddenly appeared. He never thought that the fourth person who was following him whom Jasmine mentioned... was actually Xia Qingyue.

“Don’t say another word. Let’s leave quickly!”



Xia Qingyue's crescent eyebrows furrowed tightly. She took Yun Che with her as she moved forward through the snowstorm at an extremely fast pace. Under these kinds of situations, the movements of other profound practitioners would be greatly hindered. For her, not only would there be no harm; on the contrary, she could draw strength from the ice and snow to quickly recover her profound strength. Therefore, even if she brought along Yun Che, her speed was still extremely fast, as the two quickly disappeared into the wind and snow.

Mu Tianbei had also obviously recognized that it was Xia Qingyue. He flung off the icicles on his hands and did not pursue them. Instead, he stopped in place and did not move for a long while. Only his expression was constantly changing.

“Fort Master Mu, what are you still standing there for! Quickly go, and kill him!” Fen Juecheng anxiously yelled.

Mu Tianbei still made no movements. He breathed in a large breath of air and said:

“That person is Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Xia Qingyue! When Yun Che was just by himself, I obviously wanted to get rid him to save trouble in the future! However, Xia Qingyue is by his side now. If I kill her, Frozen Cloud Asgard’s people will know! If news got out that I, the Great Fort Master of the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, killed Yun Che within the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, how can I still stand up!”

“Then go kill Xia Qingyue along with him!” Fen Juecheng said with a sinister face.

“Wuh... What?!” Mu Tianbei’s was suddenly shocked. What kind of person was Xia Qingyue? She should be considered the most talented disciple in all of Frozen Cloud Asgard’s history. If by chance Frozen Cloud Asgard knew about it, then the issue would not be about whether or not he could stand up. Instead, the entire Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress would become Frozen Cloud Asgard’s mortal enemy. Against their extreme rage, his sect’s hundreds of years of foundation would be pulled up by its roots. The consequences were something he absolutely could

not bear.

“Why is this something to hesitate about?” Fen Juecheng said with a loud voice: “After killing those two, and once the secret realm closes, this matter would become top secret! The matter regarding my second brother, I’ll explain it clearly to my Great Elder. If you let them go like this, the fact that you took action to kill Yun Che would spread out anyway. The reputation of you, Mu Tianbei, would suffer in the future just the same. You’ve seen how very fiery Yun Che’s temper was. You provoked him earlier and just

now, you acted with the intent of taking his life. When he matures in the future, do you feel that your Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress would still have peaceful times? The ones to suffer would be more than just yourself.”

“If you still can’t think it through!” Fen Juecheng started to have a threatening voice: “Then I won’t feel like explaining the matter regarding my second brother to my Great Elder... hehe. Do you want to make matters worse and kill me as well to make Burning Heaven Clan despise you even more?”

Mu Tianbei's entire body froze. After a twitch of his face, the ice and snow beneath his feet suddenly rose up. He chased in the direction of where Xia Qingyue and Yun Che left like a hawk.

“Qingyue, you... why... are you here ...?”

The speed of their pace was too fast. When Yun Che opened his mouth, large amounts of wind and snow poured into his mouth. After making the effort

for quite a while, he was able to finally ask a question, which had a very obvious answer.

Xia Qingyue said nothing. It was unknown whether it was because she didn't hear it or that she was too worried about Mu Tianbei chasing up to them. She didn't dare to be distracted in the slightest.

Earlier, before Yun Che had left, she quietly changed directions and followed behind him because she feared Yun Che would run into some danger. In



an environment filled with wind and snow, it was very easy for her to conceal her aura. Therefore, whether it was Yun Che or Mu Tianbei, none of them found out that she was always in their vicinity. As for why she was unable to control herself from following him, she gave herself the reason that since Yun Che's injuries were caused by her, she was responsible for protecting his safety in this dangerous place.

Only, she didn't think that Fen Juecheng and Fen Juebi would take advantage of this situation to kill him, and expected the

Sect Master class Mu Tianbei even less!

Yun Che's eyeballs shifted as his body tilted and his head fell into the ice and snow. Then, he was miserably dragged across the ice and snow by Xia Qingyue. She stopped right away and hurriedly asked: "Are you alright? Hurry up and quickly get up! If Mu Tianbei catches up, it'd be a disaster."

Yun Che straightened his upper body, shook the ice and snow off his head, and miserably said:

“Qing... Qingyue my wife, my internal injuries seemed to have worsened... I already... I already can’t run anymore... You should leave... don’t worry about me! The one he wants to kill is me... As long as you get far away from here, he won’t do anything... to you... Cough cough cough cough...”

Yun Che coughed for a while to forcefully cough out the ice and snow that had previously poured into his stomach.

Xia Qingyue nervously looked

back. Without caring about anything else any longer, she retracted the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon, put her right hand under Yun Che's ribs, and supported him up: "Hold onto me tightly... In this environment, it's not impossible for us to escape!"

This time, Yun Che had indeed swiftly reached out to hold onto Xia Qingyue's soft and slim waist. Just by holding it, it was hard to imagine that this body, which was seemingly as weak as a willow, could unexpectedly release a heaven freezing, earth sealing power. Once Yun Che

held onto it, he couldn't bear to let go. It was comforting to the point that he almost let out a groan.

Having her body touched and held by a male, caused a deep and peculiar feeling to flash within Xia Qingyue's heart. She immediately activated the full power of her Frozen Cloud Arts to use Frozen Cloud Asgard's exclusive profound movement skill, "Frozen Fantasy Snow Dance", and moved towards the north at an extremely fast speed.

“Juniors! Where are you running off to! Prepare to die!”

Mu Tianbei's roars suddenly sounded from behind them. Xia Qingyue quickly looked back, only to astonishingly discover that within the wind and snow behind them, the figure of Mu Tianbei appeared, and was gradually approaching.

Cold light concentrated within Xia Qingyue's beautiful eyes. She extended her left arm and a ball of icy blue light danced about. The flying snow in an area of a

few hundred meters around her all became under her control and flew towards Mu Tianbei.

Bang!!

After a huge sound, all the flying snow was easily dispersed by Mu Tianbei. Mu Tianbei was Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress' Fort Master with a profound strength that had surpassed the fifth level of the Sky Profound Realm. His total strength seemed to not be inferior to Xia Qingyue's teacher, Chu Yueli. He was

someone that Xia Qingyue had absolutely no chance of defending against. Even if she forcefully activated her Frozen Cloud Domain, it would basically be ineffective against him.

At the moment, Yun Che comfortably held Xia Qingyue and his hands rubbed her slender waist from time to time. He wasn't satisfied at all because Mu Tianbei stubbornly came and disturbed them as he chased closer when he got into a distance where he could attack them. Yun Che bore his teeth in quite a bad mood and lightly



muttered: “Jasmine, kill him!”

Bang!!

There was clearly nothing ahead of him, and Mu Tianbei, who saw that he would soon overtake Xia Qingyue and Yun Che, suddenly collided into an incredibly tough thing that made him dizzy. Only after he spun a few circles in midair did he steady his body. He shook his head and looked up front again, but any traces of Xia Qingyue and Yun Che had long since been lost. What calmly floated in

front of him was a little girl clothed in a cute, red colored princess dress.

Flying snow fell down in great packs and flooded every corner of the surrounding, but not a trace of snowflake landed on the body of the little girl. Mu Tianbei stared blankly for a long while as he looked at her, because this little girl was too refined; practically a hundred times more refined than the highest quality porcelains dolls meticulously sculpted by the top artisans of the Blue Wind Empire. It was exactly this excessively refined little face

that hung a completely grim expression which didn't match her age and lovely figure at all.

She extended her finger which was more tender than snow and pointed towards Mu Tianbei. Her crystalline eyes emitted a bloody ray of light: "How do you want to die?"

# Chapter 254 – A Woman’s Heart

---

“Who... Who are you?”

Mu Tianbei had never thought that there would ever come a day where he would be frightened by a little girl, to the point where his entire body spasmed. For Jasmine, who was currently only in a half-soul form, her strength was not even ten thousandth of her normal form. However, to Mu Tianbei, it was still a nightmare-like pressure. Even though in front of him was just a little girl whose

beauty could not be described, he felt as though he was looking at the abyss of death. Every part of his body was uncontrollably trembling crazily.

Jasmine's tender lips slightly tilted, revealing an ice-cold light smile. "This princess has already given you a chance to choose your method of death. Since you refuse to choose, then this princess shall choose on your behalf... Disappear!!"

Jasmine's small hand gently sliced the empty air...

Bang!

A gentle explosive sound rang. Before this sound could travel too far, it had already been submerged completely into the snowstorm. In this slight commotion, Mu Tianbei's body instantly burst... To be more exact, his body was instantly broken down! His body broke down into countless of extremely small fragments, and then, these fragments continued to break down, and break down... and they broke down into fragments even smaller

than dust, until the fragments completely disappeared. Not even a trace of his body was left... as it was taken over by complete nothingness.

As she watched Mu Tianbei disappear in front of her eyes, Jasmine's expression was completely indifferent. Her two hands held in front of her chest, and following the flipping of her palms, she cast a mystical profound formation. This profound formation spiraled at high speed, and disappeared within her chest. After that, Jasmine's figure disappeared from the spot.

With Mu Tianbei nearing their backs, Xia Qingyue initially thought that they no longer had any possibility to escape. Just when she was about to forcefully open her Frozen Cloud Domain, she was surprised to feel that the pressure coming from Mu Tianbei had suddenly disappeared. When she turned to look, she could no longer see Mu Tianbei's figure as well. Although she was surprised, she did not dare to stop even for a single moment as she brought Yun Che further and further away at an incredible speed... Unconsciously, she had already went past one ice mountain after



another.

Sensing that Jasmine had returned, Yun Che immediately asked. “Is the deed done?”

“Do you really believe that he can escape alive under my hands?” Jasmine said snappily.

“... Then what about Fen Juecheng? Did you deal with him as well?”

“I only told you that I will help you kill a single person. I don’t have the mood to care about some Fen Juecheng!”

“Shit... If Fen Juecheng isn’t dead, then didn’t I kill Fen Juebi for nothing!? He only has to tell Fen Moli, and whole world will know that I was the one who killed Fen Juebi! If that’s the case, I might as well kill Fen Juebi personally with my hands back then!”

“That’s your problem. What does that have to do with me?”

“...” Yun Che’s face cramped for a moment. He could only take a deep breath, and helplessly said. “Never mind! Where’s Mu Tianbei’s corpse? Is it still at the place where he almost caught up to us earlier?”

“I have already made sure that he completely disappeared from this world. Forget about a corpse, not even a single speck of ash is left. What did you want to do with his corpse?”

“F\*ck!” Yun Che almost leapt

out of Xia Qingyue's body. "Mu Tianbei is the Fort Master of the Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress! The Fort Master, you know! There's definitely a large amount of sect treasures in his spatial ring, or he might even have some sort of world-shocking secret, and you actually made him to vanish just like that! It would have been great if you had casually sliced him into half, it would have saved you time and effort as well! Y-y-y-you... You will definitely be a spoiled woman when you grow up in the future."

Jasmine coldly snorted. “You don’t have the capability to kill him yourself, and had me deal with him instead, so stop with all this nonsense!”

“...” Yun Che had no words to rebut her with.

Turning back to give another glance, Yun Che could only swallow down the thought of turning back to kill Fen Juecheng. In the vast snowfield, it was basically impossible to determine one’s direction. When Xia Qingyue sprinted, she did

not leave any trace, and even if there were some traces left behind, they would have already been covered by the snowstorm. The possibility of turning back to find them was basically none.

“Currently, I have already sealed my profound energy. In the next very long period of time, my strength will only be used to expel the poison, and it cannot be released outside. A seal like this is something I can’t even remove myself. When you once again encounter some danger, just pray for the best.” Jasmine said, and her words were definitely not a joke. She

had seriously sealed her own profound energy. However, a seal like this did not prevent her from circulating profound energy, rather, it prevented her from releasing her profound energy outside her body.

“A very long period of time? How long is that?”

“It is a sealing profound formation that I casually casted, I don’t know how long the seal will last either. The shortest is a single year, while the longest might be a few dozen years!”

“ ... ”

After continuously proceeding forward for more than two hours, and after confirming that Mu Tianbei would not be chasing after them, Xia Qingyue's mind finally relaxed as she fell onto the patch of snow with Yun Che.

As though he had been startled, Yun Che let out a “Aiya” sound. His body was suddenly thrown forward. He instantly landed on Xia Qingyue's body and hugged



her really tightly.

After sprinting with her full strength for so long, a large majority of Xia Qingyue's profound energy was used up. She steadied her breathing for a moment, and then, neither lightly nor heavily, raised her hand to push away Yun Che, who was on her body. Then, she stood up, and her breathing had slowly calmed down as well. Her expression was even more calm, with not even a hint of emotions on her face.

“Stand up. There’s no need to act anymore, I know that your internal injuries never acted up in the first place.” Looking at Yun Che who she had pushed into the pile of snow, Xia Qingyue spoke with an indifferent expression.

Yun Che stood up from the pile of snow and casually patted off the snow on his body. Just when he was about to speak up, he was suddenly stunned for a moment... Earlier, when Xia Qingyue had brought him to flee with all her strength, the veil on her face had long fell off somewhere along the way. A

beautiful face, so absolutely beautiful to the point of causing people to hold their breaths, was revealed before him, at such a close distance. Her snow-dress fluttered, bathing within the snowstorm. A charm like this, even the legendary snow woman would pale in comparison.

Seeing that he did not say anything for a long while, and was instead looking at her own face while in a slight daze, Xia Qingyue reached out her hand to touch her own cheek. Only then did she realize that her veil had gone missing. Her brows slightly twitched. She slanted her face to

the side, and lightly asked. "The reason why Fen Juecheng and Fen Moli wished to kill you, is because of Princess Cang Yue. But why did Mu Tianbei want to kill you?"

Evidently, she had heard the conversation between Yun Che, Fen Juecheng and Fen Juebi. Yun Che regained his senses, slightly curled his lips, and said. "Mu Tianbei had once invited me to join Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress, and even ridiculed the Blue Wind Profound Palace. Then, he was sent back by my ridiculing comments, and I even harmed

his core disciple, hence, he held a grudge against me... It was just something like that.”

Xia Qingyue softly said. “Mu Tianbei is number one in the Northern Passes, and no one would dare to offend to him. People like him would never tolerate even a little bit of offense that come their way, and I had heard from Master once that he had always been prideful and egoistic... People like him, it’s best that you don’t offend them in the future.”

“I had never take the initiative to offend someone, all of them were the ones who came to offend me. It’s just that I have learnt to never be polite and tolerate people who offend me.” Yun Che said without a care. Looking at the side-view of Xia Qingyue’s perfect face, he smiled. “Qingyue my wife, it’s good that you’re here this time. Otherwise, I would have definitely died in Mu Tianbei’s hands. But, you’re my wife, after all, so I won’t say thank you... Speaking of which, why were you nearby back then? You couldn’t have seen that I had yet to recover from my injuries, was worried about my safety, and have been sneakily following

after me, right?”

“I just happened to pass by.”

Evidently, Xia Qingyue was not good at lying. When she said those words, her tone and demeanor was very unnatural. She shifted her gaze away as well, not wanting to make eye contact with Yun Che. She turned to the side, and coldly said. “Mu Tianbei should have lost us, it’s nearly impossible for him to think of finding you in this Secret Realm. Your injuries have already fully healed, and

your profound energy has already recovered by at least seventy percent. It should be enough to fend for yourself in this place. Take care.”

After saying that, Xia Qingyue’s snow-dress fluttered, and she was about to leave.

“Hey, hey! Wait a minute!” Yun Che hurriedly stepped forward, and blocked her front. “You can’t really be leaving like this, right? In truth... In truth, earlier, those words were used to fool Fen Juecheng, my wounds



are basically not fully healed at all. At most, I'm only fifty percent healed, especially my internal injuries, right now, they're still... Kuh kuh... Cough cough cough... My profound energy has only recovered by thirty percent at most, really... If, I'm once again found by Fen Juecheng and Mu Tianbei, without you by my side to protect me, then wouldn't I... It doesn't matter if I die, but to burden you to become a widow, how could I bear such a thing..."

Xia Qingyue's beautiful brows evidently twitched for a moment.

“Besides, we are a legally wedded husband and wife, and since we’re husband and wife, we should live together on the same bed, die together in the same hole, share our blessings and depend on each in times of crisis. Now that I’m currently troubled by various things, as my wife, shouldn’t you do your part as what a wife would do, and take up the responsibility to protect me... Hey, hey! Don’t go...”

Back then, when Yun Che’s meridians were crippled, facing

Xia Qingyue who was too high for him to reach back then, he would frequently say these cheap words, causing her to feel angry and helpless. Currently, in terms of strength, Yun Che could not compete with Xia Qingyue, but in terms of persistence, Xia Qingyue was definitely unable to compete with Yun Che. Hence, the two of them were basically six of one and half a dozen of the other. When Yun Che spoke with Xia Qingyue, naturally, he would not have any sort of scruples at all.

Xia Qingyue did not bother to pay attention to what he was

saying as she directly circled around him, and lightly stepped on the snow as she headed towards the north. Yun Che stood at the same spot, and said very resentfully. “You can’t... really be leaving me here alone like this, right?”

Xia Qingyue did not answer. After walking very far away, she suddenly stopped her steps, and said with an extremely soft voice. “What are you still standing there for? Hurry and catch up to me.”

“As you command!” Yun Che instantly grinned from ear to ear. With a slight tap underneath his feet, he caught up with Xia Qingyue’s side swiftly... He did not look as though he had not fully recovered from his heavy injuries at all.

The two of them headed northwards, and very quickly, they disappeared within the snowstorm.

In regards to Xia Qingyue appearing and saving him, it was

impossible for him not to feel grateful in his heart. Because the person he faced back then was Mu Tianbei, an extreme expert of the Sect Master class. When Xia Qingyue saved him, she undoubtedly carried the same risk of dying under Mu Tianbei's hands, together with him. And, at the same time, he was very puzzled... When he encountered Xia Qingyue again at Heavenly Sword Villa, he could only feel indifference from her body. Not closeness, not rejection, not coldness, but just the form of indifference that he could extremely not bear at all.

The few days after their marriage, he worked hard to plant his figure into Xia Qingyue's heart. But, such a long period of separation, was evidently enough to completely disperse his shallow figure in Xia Qingyue's heart. Also, to a certain degree, he believed that currently, in Xia Qingyue's eyes, he was nothing but a normal existence whom she was binded with a marriage certificate. Someone who could she do with, and could do without. But, today, when Xia Qingyue followed him to protect him, and came out to save him, he was once again confused... He completely unable to figure out what kind of place he currently

had in her heart.

To a man, if there was something in the world that he would never be able to understand, it would undoubtedly be a woman's heart.



# Chapter 255 – Heaven Basin's Enormous Beast (1)

---

Yun Che and Xia Qingyue journeyed together just like that. The two of them were unquestionably the strongest combination among Blue Wind Empire's younger generation. The two of them continued straight north... To speak more precisely, they didn't know what direction laid ahead of them either. Only boundless snow-covered plains and blizzard could be seen; there weren't any rewards, nor did they meet any danger. Not even half a

silhouette of profound beasts was seen.

Yun Che kept on chattering endlessly, asking Xia Qingyue various questions, and then self-servingly told her about Xia Yuanba's situation from back then to now. Xia Qingyue's response was always impeccably indifferent, and only occasionally replied nonchalantly. Her hands continuously waved, sweeping away the ice and snow on the ground, but never found anything throughout the process.

“Qingyue my wife, don’t you have anything you want to ask me? Like... Have I been well after you left, what places have I been to, and was I bullied by anyone...”

“With your personality, it would already be good if you didn’t bully others; who could truly be able to bully you.” Xia Qingyue expressionlessly replied with her charming eyes looking toward the front. After that, the light in her eyes moved, and she finally voluntarily asked him a question: “But I want to know,

during this period of time, just how did you grow to such an extent?

Xia Qingyue had finally taken the initiative to ask him a question. Yun Che's expression immediately became serious, and he spoke: "This matter is my secret, and I absolutely would not tell other people. But since you are my wife, so that's a different story. Mn... I met a master, she allowed my profound veins to grow anew and also taught me a bunch of random things. Furthermore, I've also had some special encounters during this period of

time. That is how I came to be today.”

“Your Master?” A hint of surprise flashed through Xia Qingyue’s eyes: “To be able to bring you up to such a height within such a short period of time, your Master is definitely a supremely extraordinary person.”

Yun Che waited for a bit, but didn’t hear any further questions. He instantly said: “Don’t you want to ask me who this master of mine is?”

“That is your privacy, I have no right to probe.” Xia Qingyue replied with indifference.

“Mm...” Yun Che pondered a little, and said while smiling: “This master of mine, indeed is a supremely remarkable being. But you definitely won’t be able to guess just exactly why she is “remarkable”. She is even more amazing than you imagined, and also completely changed my fate. However, she definitely isn’t a good master. Because, to be precise, she didn’t truly teach me anything, and had just

always stuffed a bunch of things directly into my head. Then, she made me comprehend and practice them myself. But I, as the disciple, had never disappointed her, alright? Everything she stuffed into me, I would always comprehend them in a very short amount of time. That's how the present me came to be."

"Hmph, you narcissist!" In his mind, resounded Jasmine's voice that was full of contempt.

At this time, an eccentric

feeling suddenly came from Yun Che's left hand's palm. He immediately lifted up his left hand, and shockingly discovered that his palm was currently flashing with a green brilliance that belonged to the Sky Poison Pearl.

This is....

The Sky Poison Pearl's reaction toward treasures!!

And to make the Sky Poison Pearl react, it certainly wasn't



just any ordinary treasure either. At the very least, it would be at the rank of the Star Concealing Grass.

After coming back to the Blue Wind Empire, the Sky Poison Pearl had a total of two detection reactions. The first time had discovered the Star Concealing Grass, and the second time had detected the existence of the Evil God's Fire Seed. And this third time... the direction that the reaction pointed at, just happened to be directly ahead of them.

“What happened?” Xia Qingyue saw that he stopped moving, and asked while turning her head back.

“I’m guessing that we will have an enormous reward very soon!” Yun Che clasped his palms: “Let’s go continue forward.”

The blizzard did not have any hint of stopping, and it was unknown just how long this blizzard had been going on. The ice and snow under their feet also thickened to an unimaginable extent. The two of

them continued traveling forward for more than four hours; the Sky Poison Pearl's reaction was still there, but nothing was gained yet. This did not disappoint Yun Che, and the inside of his heart instead became even more excited... To make the Sky Poison Pearl have an reaction across such a long distance, the thing that it discovered must be no trivial thing! At the very least, it would be much more rare than the Star Concealing Grass!

Just what would it be?

The temperature of this place was frighteningly low. After walking for so long under this sky and earth of ice, in order to defend against the acute cold, the profound energy expenditure speed was also extremely fast. Even for Yun Che, who had a body not inferior to a true dragon, this was also starting to become a little unbearable, so it could be imagined how much more unbearable this was for the other young profound practitioners with slightly weaker profound strength. He shrunk his neck a little as his gaze looked toward the front with care, and then asked on a whim: "Qingyue my wife, your

Master and Senior Master should have come here many times before, what rewards did they usually obtain?”

Xia Qingyue thought for a bit, and said: “Master had come to this place twice before, and was rewarded plentifully every time. The first time, she acquired three pieces of Pure Cloud Jade and two Ten Thousand Year Old Blood Reishi; the second time, she obtained a chunk of Purple Veined Heaven Crystal, three drops of Profound Spirit Jade Dew and a chunk of an enormous beast’s bone. Master said that there are a total of

three seasons here, and the season's characteristics are exhibited to an extreme. Amongst them, the most unlucky would be encountering winter. It is because the winter's blizzard would cover everything tightly, thus, it would be very difficult to obtain anything rewarding.

Very unfortunately, Yun Che and Xia Qingyue encountered the cold winter with overwhelming flying snow on their first time entering the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. That's right, any and everything was tightly covered by the ice

and snow. Let alone treasures, even a chunk of rock could not be seen.

“What is the best thing that someone who entered this Heaven Basin Secret Realm had found?” Yun Che asked. As he spoke till here, he suddenly stopped in his tracks.

Xia Qingyue also stopped right after, and slightly nodded: “I don’t know. If someone really found anything great, they normally would stay quiet about it. However, I had heard my

Master bring up that more than four hundred years ago, someone had found a Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus in the Heaven Basin before.”

“Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus?” Yun Che had a surprised face. Out of all the grasses and herbs in the world, the ones that Yun Che did not know could be counted with one hand. Yet he had never heard his Master bring up the name Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus. Today was actually the first time he had heard of it.



Xia Qingyue slightly lifted her gaze, and slowly spoke: “The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus is a type of sacred object that’s recorded in my Sect’s 《Frozen Cloud Sacred Book》, and the other top Sects also has records of it. In the records, it is a sacred object gifted by the heavens, and is also a kind of object which shouldn’t exist in the mortal world because it opposes the heavens. Legends say that one appeared long ago, and never appeared again afterwards. It only existed within the many records that spoke about it. Four hundred years ago, a Senior of the Xiao Sect had used Spirit Sound Transmission and told everyone who were in the

Heaven Basin Secret Realm at that time that he found the “Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus” which was exactly the same as in the records... However, those were his last words. After he spoke those words, there was no further contact from him. He never could walk out of the Secret Realm, and fell there.”

“Sacred object gifted by the heavens”, “Object that opposes the heavens”. All of these descriptive words that came from Xia Qingyue hinted at how shocking of an existence the “Emperor Awakening Heart

Lotus” was. Yun Che followed up and asked: “Just how exactly does this ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’ oppose the natural law? Don’t tell me that one would become immortal after eating it or something?”

“...No one had actually seen it so everything about it are only from the records.” Xia Qingyue said with a light voice: “I heard my Master say that after consuming the ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’, it could make someone without any profound strength step into the Earth Profound Realm in a day’s time... With my current realm,

if I were to consume the ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’, I could step into the Sky Profound Realm with a single step. Furthermore, the power hidden inside ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’ is extremely gentle, and absolutely would not cause a situation, where the person who consumed it cannot endure the change and become injured, to appear.”

“...It’s that amazing?!” Yun Che’s mouth flew wide open. To make someone without any profound strength at all to directly step into the Earth

Profound Realm, and allow a profound practitioner of the Earth Profound Realm to enter the Sky Profound Realm, that the vast majority would not even dare to peek at, with a single step; it was simply hard to believe that there existed something like that in this world.

If one could acquire it, one could climb to a height that others may not achieve even if they worked hard for their entire lives. The words “object that opposes the heavens”, was not at all an exaggeration for it. And this kind of thing that

breaks the balance too much, should indeed, not exist in this world.

“Speaking of which, what does that ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’ look like?” Yun Che’s hand tapped his chin, as his face revealed an extremely odd complexion. His gaze was also somewhat erratic.

Xia Qingyue’s pink lips slightly opened, and said vividly: “I have seen the records regarding ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’ before. It is much larger

than a normal lotus flower, and its diameter when blooming is as long as five feet. On its petals, is a somewhat eccentric light blue color...”

“...Is it a blue color like a blue crystal? Every single petal also had the luster of glazed glass like crystals. The stamen in the center of the flower is a scarlet red, and even glows. The flower stem that supports it is also blue, a type of illusory blue that’s much deeper than the petal’s color...” Yun Che stared at Xia Qingyue, and spoke sentence by sentence with an odd expression.

A hint of surprise condensed in Xia Qingyue's charming eyes: "So you actually had seen the records about it before?"

"No no, definitely not." Yun Che extended his finger, and probingly pointed behind her: "What I am talking about, is that lotus flower behind you."

Xia Qingyue suddenly turned around. And then, her fragrant lips slightly opened, as her entire being froze there.



In a place no more than fifty steps away from them, appeared a light blue colored silhouette. That's right; that was a lotus, an enormous lotus flower. Its diameter was as long as five feet, it had an illusory blue colored jade-like flower stem and light blue flower petals that flowed with fluorescent brilliance. Yet its stamen was like a red colored starry sky that had gathered together, and flashed with a mysterious and eccentric light.

A lotus ought to bloom in the summer with a scorching sun,

yet this lotus, had lofty bloomed within the blizzard. The wind howled and the falling snow flew about, so it would be difficult even for an ordinary person to stand upright under this kind of blizzard. Yet this lotus flower unyieldingly stood there; neither the petals or the stamen had the slightest of waver. It was as if none of its petals could possibly fall even if the blizzard was ten times stronger.

Under the snow, the entire land was even submerged underneath. Yet only this lotus flower was not covered. On the

petals, even a trace of the drifting snow could not be seen. In this world of overwhelming blizzard and snow, it became the only, and also the most blinding existence.

# Chapter 256 – Heaven Basin’s Enormous Beast (2)

---

“Emperor Awakening... Heart... Lotus....” Xia Qingyue was completely stunned. That lotus flower in her sights and the “Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus” from the records were exactly the same. None of the characteristics were any different. The color of its unique petal, its radiance, and furthermore, it was being battered by the elements, yet still had the attitude of arrogance towards all living things on heaven and earth. All

of this proved that this was absolutely an extraordinary object. Only at this moment, Xia Qingyue had a look of disbelief in her eyes. She didn't dare to think she could inadvertently and unexpectedly encounter such a divine existence from the legends and records.

“Could that really be the ‘Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus’ that you mentioned?” Hearing Xia Qingyue’s disillusioned murmurs, Yun Che’s expression was similar stirred in a peculiar manner... this was the one of the divine objects from legends, the heaven

opposing lotus? Found just like this?

So quaint? So simple? So lucky?

Wait... Lotus flowers all bloomed in the water. The person who discovered the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus on the verge of the death four hundred years ago told everyone that when he discovered it, he was within the Heaven Basin... Could it be, that he himself and Xia Qingyue just happened to stepped onto the Heaven Basin...

on the Heaven Basin which had frozen over?

“There’s no mistake, it’s exactly the same as the records.”

Yun Che saw an extremely rare expression of excitement from Xia Qingyue’s face. Such a divine object from legends just suddenly appeared right in front of their eyes. Let alone her, even Chu Yuechan would probably have difficulty maintaining her composure as well. Xia Qingyue took some steps forward and prepared to approach that blue

lotus, but she was blocked by Yun Che's hands right way: "Wait, don't go near it yet. If that event from four hundred years ago is real; then, the one which that person discovered was perhaps this exact one! In other words, right now we are already standing on the Heaven Basin. After that person discovered it, he left behind a note before death... to state that it was extremely likely that a huge, hidden danger hid behind this lotus flower.

Xia Qingyue withdrew her footsteps and slowly nodded. The rarer the object, the more



likely it was protected by a powerful profound beast. Naturally, it wasn't because those profound beasts were looking out for its safety, but it was for the powerful strength it contained. It would nourish the growth of the profound beast and at a suitable time, the profound beast guarding it would consume it in order to advance its strength by leaps and bounds. Therefore, it would guard it with its life and absolutely did not let another person approach and touch it.

“Jasmine, are there auras of powerful profound beasts

nearby?" Yun Che calmed down and asked Jasmine.

But he waited a good while, but still did not hear a response from Jasmine.

Yun Che shut his eyes and entered into the Sky Poison Pearl, but discovered that Jasmine peacefully laid down on her white jade bed with a tranquil look over her snow white face. Her hands intersected over her chest and formed a very strange gesture. Around her body, green light

flickered from time to time.

Could she be detoxifying herself?

Yun Che didn't dare to bother Jasmine and exited from the Sky Poison Pearl. He then concentrated and spread his senses in all four directions, but was in fact unable to detect the existence of any dangerous auras. He then muttered hesitantly to himself: "It's so empty here, if a profound beast was here, then I could probably spot it right away. Additionally,

if we stepped into the Heaven Basin and the Heaven Basin had been iced over a long time ago, all the profound beasts would naturally be sealed under as well and would probably not come out. If I think of it like this, then perhaps it wouldn't be as dangerous as we thought."

"But still, it's still good to be careful. There could still be profound beasts hiding under the snow. If this Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was truly being guarded by a profound beast, then it would certainly be an extremely dangerous one." Xia Qingyue

raised her brows slightly.

Yun Che sensed the situation around himself again and then stepped forward: “Don’t move from that spot, I’ll go take a look.”

“Let’s go together.” Xia Qingyue followed beside him: “Just in case there is a danger, us two can look after each other.”

Accidentally discovering this divine object from the legends, the two were nervous and

excited at the same time. An object such as the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was absolutely not something ordinary people could discover, let alone obtained by ordinary people. The two slowly moved forward, and cautiously and carefully approached... Until both of them stood at a position within reach of the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, and still without any accidents occurring.

The two then let out a long sigh of relief at the same time.

Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was almost right in front of them. Looking at the incomparably captivating petal and pistil, Yun Che rubbed his hands in unimaginable excitement “Hehe, it looked like it wasn’t a completely terrible misfortune to encounter winter here! The effect of the weather here on the profound beasts, especially the profound beasts in the Heaven Basin is much greater than it is on us.”

As he spoke, Yun Che reached out with his left and touched the blossoming Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus.

“Wait!” Xia Qingyue yelled at him to stop: “If you wanted to pluck it off, you have to be careful. Plucking such a high valued divine object, the difficulty would be extremely high. If you’re even the least bit careless, it would easily drain away a great deal of effect.

“You can be at ease about this, don’t forget, I’m a genius doctor.” Yun Che laughed with great self-confidence. With the Sky Poison Pearl, no matter the plant, he could seize it with absolute perfection. After



plucking it, it would directly enter the Sky Poison Pearl and not even a trace of the power it contained would be lost.

Yun Che softly nipped at the stem of the otherworldly blue flower with his left hand that silently released a green light. At this moment, he suddenly raised his head and asked: “Qingyue my wife, aren’t you afraid that I’ll keep it to myself after pluck it?”

Xia Qingyue’s beautiful eyes slanted and with an indifferent

expression: “This Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was found by you, it should belong to you anyway. How does it concern me in any way?”

Yun Che was suddenly startled. A peculiar feeling flashed within his mind and he immediately stopped talking. A green light flashed in his palms; then, the entire Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus disappeared into the Sky Poison Pearl.

Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was absolutely an

extremely valuable treasure, but no matter how valuable it was, it was impossible for it to surpass the Sky Poison Pearl. Under the effects of the Sky Poison Pearl, the originally hard to pluck Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was plucked off by Yun Che with as much ease as the most ordinary of flowers.

From discovery to approach, to successfully plucking it, the entire process was incredibly smooth. Let alone risks, even an obstacle did not exist. It was simple to the point that it was somewhat abnormal. Yun Che smacked his hands and stood up.

Just as he was about to speak, an incomparably muffled sound like a roar originating from the endless abyss suddenly echoed past... The source of that sound seemed to come from underneath his foot. Then, a faint vibration occurred beneath them that gradually intensified.

Yun Che's expression suddenly changed. He grabbed Xia Qingyue's hands right away and muttered: "Quickly, leave!!"

The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was indeed not unguarded

by a profound beast.

A severe winter descended upon the Heaven Basin, so it froze over. As for this profound beast which stood guard by the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus' side all year round, it had entered deep hibernation on the bottom of the Heaven Basin. Since it did not sense Yun Che and Xia Qingyue's approach, it was still fast asleep then. However, once the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus had been plucked away, when its aura had completely disappeared, it had finally woken up, evoking a fury that

surged to the skies.

That was the most terrifying roar that Yun Che had heard in his two lives. The oppressing power that the roar contained practically crushed his spirit, as well as his five visceras and six organs. Xia Qingyue's expression was not any different from Yun Che's expression. They rushed into the distance at their fastest speed. Under their top speed, they traveled outwards past about six hundred meters in the blink of an eye. The vibrations underneath their feet gradually intensified at this moment, as if mother earth could collapse at

any moment.

BOOM!!!!!!!!!!!!

AWOOOOOOOOOOO!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

A huge heaven crashing earth splitting sound echoed from behind Yun Che and Xia Qingyue, followed by a terrifying roar that was enough to burst heaven and earth.

This roar suddenly shook Yun

Che's brain into a blank state as he fell into the ice and snow together with Xia Qingyue. Then, they subconsciously looked back at the same time, and discovered the most shocking scene they had ever seen in their lives.

The ground was entirely uplifted. The ice and snow that covered the ground and countless huge chunks of ice was lifted into the skies quite far away, until it reached an altitude they were no longer capable of seeing. Then, a huge wave of water soared into the sky... that's right, a wave of water! Yun



Che's thoughts weren't wrong. They were stepping on the frozen Heaven Basin beneath them. The ice covering the Heaven Basin was over thirty meters thick, but was easily broken like thin sheets of paper. The basin water beneath them rose into mid air and became an incredibly tall tower of ice. Underneath the wave of water, an incredibly huge white figure rushed into the air until it leapt over a hundred feet high. Then, it heavily landed.... The sound it caused the instant that it landed was world-shaking. The layers of ice in the surrounding was widely ruptured as well. One of the cracks reached right below Yun Che and Xia Qingyue's feet.

This was an enormous beast that completely surpassed Yun Che and Xia Qingyue's imagination. It was around three hundred meters tall and white hair covered its entire body. It had a humanlike body and a vicious wolflike head with scarlet red eyes. When it landed, it was like a small mountain that blocked a huge amount of light from the heavens, and the aura it released, was way more terrifying than over ten thousand mountains. In front of its huge body, Yun Che and Xia Qingyue were as insignificant as two little flies. The distance they ran with their fastest speeds to

escape, was covered by its feet in merely two steps.

.....

In between two icy mountains, Ling Yuefeng finally found his first reward from an ancient forest that wasn't completely covered in ice and snow. Just as he was about to pluck that pitch black [Reishi](#), the sound of a profound beast suddenly echoed from the distance. The place it came from was very far away, so the sound wasn't very loud, but it indeed shook Ling Yuefeng's

entire body. His face showed an incredibly shocked expression, and even his soul was unexpectedly trembled by the roar that originated from faraway.

“This is... this is... the power of a Tyrant Profound Beast!!” Ling Yuefeng looked in the distance and an uncontrollable fear loomed over his face.

“Inside the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, there was actually a Tyrant Profound Beast...”

“Wait! This cry is filled with anger! Could it be that someone stepped into its territory or provoked it?”

While thinking about these things, Ling Yuefeng’s expression kept changing. The power that this sound contained could send him, a Throne, into deep fear. He felt that the owner of this sound could destroy him effortlessly. Tyrant Profound Realm... a level never before seen in Blue Wind Empire, because in the history of Blue Wind Empire, there never was a true Overlord. “Throne” was already the peak and limit of the

Blue Wind Empire. Titles like “Overlord” and “Monarch” could exist only in the fantasies of Blue Wind profound practitioners. It was a level that they absolutely could not comprehend and imagine.

The person who offended this Tyrant Profound Beast, he would turn into dust particles in the blink of an eye... It was impossible for there to be a second outcome.

Ling Yuefeng subconsciously retreated two steps, and then

flew towards that roar in the distance. Right now, he could only deeply pray that the ones who offended this terrifying Tyrant Profound Beast wasn't a part of his Heavenly Sword Villa.

## Chapter 257 – On The Brink Of Death

---

That roar transmitted an extremely terrifying pressure and penetrative power into every corner of the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. It completely overwhelmed the most powerful experts of the top ten sects with shock, and made each of them retreat from the source of the roar. They simultaneously thought that death would be inevitable, but none of them could have imagined that the people who encountered this terrifying profound beast were the two most talented people of



the younger generation!

Jasmine, who was concentrating all her energy on detoxifying herself, was suddenly startled by the terrifying aura. Her severe and astonished voice echoed within Yun Che's mind: "What's going on? You guys actually provoked a Tyrant Profound Beast!"

"Tyrant Profound Beast?" Yun Che was terrifyingly alarmed. The oppressing feeling that this incredibly huge beast gave Yun Che was far superior to that

Emperor      Profound      Flame  
Dragon, but he never could have  
thought that this was a Tyrant  
Profound Beast, since the level  
of Tyrant Profound Realm was  
never before seen in the Blue  
Wind Empire! It was a  
fantastical existence only told in  
legends!

The powerful pressure from  
the Tyrant Profound Beast  
caused Yun Che and Xia  
Qingyue's bodies to stiffen.  
Their five visceras spasmed and  
their heartbeats practically  
halted. To defend against a  
Tyrant Profound Beast or to  
escape from underneath its

claws was undoubtedly just a crazed dream. Yun Che clenched his teeth and said: “Jasmine! Is your strength truly completely sealed off, and you can’t utilize even a bit of it?”

“...” Jasmine remained silent for a long time and furrowed her delicate eyebrows. She never could have thought that not long after she sealed off her profound strength, Yun Che would provoke such a terrifying guy. But according to her, because she sealed herself, she could not unseal herself. The sole hope that Yun Che had to avoid this critical situation was already

completely broken.

As matters stood, Jasmine was also beginning to have some regret.

“This time you are surely going to die.” Every one of Jasmine’s words were incredibly solemn.

“No!!” Yun Che suddenly shook his head: “I still don’t want to die... I can’t die!!”

“Qingyue... Let’s escape quickly!!”

Yun Che clenched his teeth and shouted loudly. He got up with incredible difficulty under that incredible mountain-like pressure. He grabbed Xia Qingyue’s hands and fled away with all his might.

“ROAR!!!”

Their movements invoked an angry roar from that huge beast. The giant beast lifted up its right

arm and smashed downwards towards the direction they fled in...

The sound of wind that whistled from behind Yun Che made him subconsciously turn around. That huge fist wasn't attacking them, rather it fell beneath that huge beast's own feet, but it still caused Yun Che's pupils to suddenly contract. He grabbed Xia Qingyue with one arm and used all his strength to leap high in the air. "Burning Heart" opened, and following the crazy surge of profound power, a translucent barrier suddenly appeared around him

and Xia Qingyue's bodies.

“Sealing Cloud Locking Sun!!”

Boom!!

Like a heavy hammer that came from heaven, it smashed the ground viciously, causing the entire Heaven Basin to vibrate. If it wasn't a state of severe winter right now, but a summer day instead, perhaps a great amount of the Heaven Basin's water would quake into the sky.

Feeling a great danger from beneath him, Yun Che carried Xia Qingyue and leapt high in the air as he fiercely inhaled. Using Star God's Broken Shadow, he instantaneously pulled even higher into the air. Then, he flipped over facing downwards with his back to protect Xia Qingyue with the front of his body.

“Yun Che...!”

When Xia Qingyue cried from shock, it was immediately



drowned out by the sound of that heaven shocking, earth shaking explosion.

After all, this was an indirect attack from a Tyrant Profound Beast. Even though Yun Che had leapt high into the sky a long time ago, the shockwave from the impact of the attack was still something he was incapable of resisting. His “Sealing Cloud Locking Sun” was instantly broken through and a chunk of broken ice and fine snowflakes struck him on the back. Yun Che’s eyes bulged outwards and his face suddenly turned deathly pale. An arrow of blood sprayed

out from high up in the sky and a small bit of landed on top of Xia Qingyue's clothes, dying her snow white cloud dress into a patch of red.

Without the protection of "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun", that single instant was already enough to kill Yun Che. He violently bit the tip of his tongue to prevent himself from fainting. He channeled his profound strength vigorously and activated "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" once again. However, this time, an extremely terrifying scene appeared within Xia Qingyue

and his line of sight...

They saw an incomparably large head that was still more than thirty meters away from them, but it already covered their entire vision range. On its head were two eyes as scarlet as blood, and the two bloody eyes were focused entirely on them. Following that, it opened its large, deep as the abyss mouth towards them and spread forth an incredibly powerful suction force. The solid ice, the flying snow... and the embracing Yun Che and Xia Qingyue were absolutely incapable of resisting the suction force, so they flew

toward the middle of that wide open mouth.

Yun Che and Xia Qingyue suddenly shouted out instinctively, and Yun Che suddenly realized during this exact moment why the attack of the huge beast smashed the ground instead towards them. It was because that huge beast knew that Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus had been seized by them and was bound to be on their body right now. If it destroyed them, then the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus would be destroyed as well. However, if it shook them high

in the air and sucked them inside its stomach, it was equivalent to swallowing that Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus that they had on their body!

When he noticed this, a strand of hope flashed across Yun Che's eyes. Under the tremendous suction force, Xia Qingyue and himself gradually neared that deep abyss like huge mouth; even if Xia Qingyue and himself used all their power, they still did not have even the slightest chance of breaking free. Yun Che unwaveringly stared forward while maintaining "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun"

with all his power. Both his hands embraced Xia Qingyue tightly, and he loudly yelled over and over again: “Hold onto me tightly... Hold onto me tightly.. Don’t let go... Hold onto me tightly!!”

Before Yun Che and Xia Qingyue’s eyes, everything suddenly became pitch black as the large mouth of that enormous beast finally closed.

The sound of the wind still whistled beside their ears. The moment they entered inside the

mouth of that huge beast, Yun Che felt himself enter a dark and icy purgatory which possessed a freezing sensation that dug into his heart and pierced his bones. The temperature of this huge beast's body was unexpectedly much lower than being within the Realm of Heavenly Snow Invocation. Under those huge impulsive movements, his body unceasingly collided with the surrounding as they rapidly advancing forward. In the darkness, he experienced countless canyons and incredibly long tunnels. He closed his eyes and maintained "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" with all his strength during this process, because this was the

only thing they could rely on to not be smashed to bits during these courses of events.

An unknown amount of time passed by and the impacts had finally ended. They landed in an incredibly solid surface and finally stopped moving.

“Sealing Cloud Locking Sun”, which he had maintained for all this time, silently disappeared.

After it had been calm for awhile, Xia Qingyue finally



opened her eyes. She realized where she was, but she was incapable of believing that she was still alive... Furthermore, apart from her slightly aching body, she was not injured in the slightest.

She raised her eyes and saw a empty space around her. Then she extended her right hand and a lump of illusionary blue light condensed in her palm, slightly illuminating an empty area of ten meters around her.

This should be the stomach of

that enormous beast, but the incredibly strange thing was that this place did not seem like the interior of a profound beast's body at all. It was actually more like an icy cave. The floor was incredibly hard and icicles both long and short suspended in the surrounding. The air here was extremely foul, making it hard to breathe. The temperature was lower than what she could have imagined. Even with the seventh stage of the Frozen Cloud Arts, and an intimate connection with the water element, Xia Qingyue was still feeling slightly uncomfortable.

“Yun Che, you’re okay right?”

Xia Qingyue called out gently, but she did not hear a response from Yun Che for a long time. Xia Qingyue moved her hands down to let that weak blue light shine on Yun Che’s body, but she discovered that his eyes were half shut and his complexion was deathly white like paper. A smudge of blood slowly extended from the corner of his mouth... When she touched his body, the only thing she felt was an ice-cold sensation.

Xia Qingyue quickly knelt beside his body. Her palms pressed against his stomach and her voice became more panicky: “Yun Che, are you still okay?”

When she checked the flow of his internal energy, Xia Qingyue’s hands distinctively shuddered. Because at this moment, his internal energy was as weak... as an infant’s.

Yun Che’s eyes slowly opened up a bit. His face exposed an incredibly faint smile: “So... great... we’re both... alive...”

It took him a great amount of effort to say these few short words.

Under the enormous beast's earth-quaking fist, Yun Che suffered an extremely severe injury, but he didn't have time to stabilize his energy and had to forcefully maintain "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun." "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" wasn't a normal profound technique, but an explosive technique of the Evil God. Although it was an explosive defensive technique, it wasn't an ordinary defensive

barrier, but a defensive skill that could only be utilized for a short moment to save his life. With each breath that “Sealing Cloud Locking Sun” was active, the consumption of profound strength was equivalent to an activation of “Falling Moon Sinking Star”.

From being shaken into the sky until they were completely sucked into the stomach of the huge beast, a total of thirty breaths had passed by. During this period of time, “Sealing Cloud Locking Sun” had to be continuously maintained; otherwise, he and Xia Qingyue

would have met their deaths a long time ago. The thirty breaths of activation had a huge consumption that an ordinary person would have difficulty imagining; furthermore, this consumption was still in a state where Yun Che suffered a severe injury.

Now, he finally calmed his energy, and his internal injuries had also intensified by many times. His profound strength was completely exhausted without even a trace remaining.

His internal injuries were incredibly severe, and he did not have even the slightest bit of profound strength to combat the cold. Every second in this frighteningly low temperature deprived Yun Che of a great deal of life force. He felt like his body was pierced by a myriad of needles, and very quickly, the ice cold sensation he felt disappeared bit by bit until he gradually lost all feeling of his body.

He smelled the taste of death and it was the first time he was this close within reach of it.



Xia Qingyue took her hands away from Yun Che's body. Her eyes became confused: "Yun Che, you..."

"Qingyue... don't say anything... listen to me..."

Yun Che's breathing became incredibly weak. The temperature here caused both his hands, legs, and body to become frozen stiff in this short amount of time. Both his eyes had also lost all color. He was able to speak because he relied

on his strong and unwavering consciousness, but he knew that this last bit of consciousness could disappear at any moment...

Death came too fast and sudden.

“Qingyue... good thing... nothing happened to you... I should... die any moment now... After I die... don’t... take care of me... You don’t fear cold... perhaps it’s possible... escape from here... even if this... huge beast... is even more

frightening... you have to... use all your strength... to escape...”

“Yun Che! Don’t talk anymore! You can’t die that easily... If you want me to leave, we have to leave together! You won’t die!”

This calamity was too sudden, and it caught her completely unprepared. Yun Che’s internal injuries were incredibly severe. His five visceras and six internal organs were practically all smashed apart. His life force was incredibly weak and it was possible that it could disappear

in the next second. She knew how he suffered such a severe injury. She also knew why he was so weak right now... When they were shaken into the sky, his back faced downwards to bear all the force of the impact and left her without the slightest bit of injuries. From the moment they were sucked into that enormous beast's mouth until they landed here, that incredibly terrifying force was something that even her most powerful ice crystal defense could not withstand, but that barrier that constantly protected them blocked all the impact... That was without a doubt, an extremely tough and resilient barrier. With such an incredibly

powerful barrier, one could imagine just how much power it consumed.

Except, Yun Che was already unable to hear her voice. His eyes were still half open, but not a trace of light remained. His four limbs, body, cheek, hair... Was already completely covered by a layer of ice. Underneath that layer of ice was an ice-cold body that was on the verge of completely burning out its entire life force.

“Qingyue...”

He softly

muttered: “If we meet again in the next life... become my wife again... okay... because... this life... I still have not completely conquered you... I... am not satisfied...”

Xia Qingyue’s body shook and her vision became fuzzy all of a sudden.

Both of Yun Che’s eyes lost their final traces of focus and spirit during this moment. His entire body became still. Only his throat moved ever so slightly to say the words that came from

his soul...

“Grandfather... Little aunt...”

“Senior sister Xueruo...  
Jasmine... I’m...sorry...”

“ ... ”

“Ling’er... I’m coming for you...  
Ling’er... Ling’er...”

His final mutters were as weak as a breeze, until it completely faded away... Then, a shining drop of blue starlight descended from Xia Qingyue's face and lightly struck his completely stiff lips.



# Chapter 258 – Finding The Hope Of Life In Despair

---

Xia Qingyue touched her own cheeks and felt her ice cold tears.

She was stunned in place, because she couldn't believe that she was shedding tears.

Things such as tears were too unfamiliar to her. After she wept that one time when she was four, she never shed a single tear again. Frozen Cloud Asgard's

Frozen Heart Arts made her calm under any circumstance; no happiness, grief, sorrow, or anger. Under the Frozen Cloud Arts, her heart was always cold and effective. Practically nothing could invoke a tremble in her heart... Apart from when she faced Yun Che.

...And only when she faced Yun Che.

She did not understand the reasoning behind this either.

But at this moment, after touching the tears on her own face, she finally came to a conclusion...

Her jade white hand slowly hung down and lightly touched Yun Che's face. Her line of sight had already become fuzzy because of her tears. In this fuzziness, what she saw wasn't a frozen stiff face, but a face that was sometimes unwavering, sometimes apathetic, sometimes overbearing, and sometimes smiling...

In her world, Yun Che was a very special existence. It was not only because they were husband and wife, but also because he was different from all the other men she had met... Those other men were either terrified and couldn't look her in the face in front of her, or tried too hard to put on a guise of an elegant noble, but were still unable to hide their lecherous eyes, which disgusted her. Only Yun Che... was able to completely be himself in front of her. Even when he was in his most dire straits, he did not feel the slightest bit inferior to her. He was so incredibly mysterious that it felt like she wanted to completely understand

everything about a man for the very first time. Sometimes, he was so calm that it amazed her, sometimes he talked and acted like a child, and sometimes he acted like a scoundrel... But she was able to instill every one of his aspects into her heart, and then accidentally recalled them one time after another...

Only, she was a person who was destined to chase after the peak of the profound road. To achieve this height, she was willing to let go of everything and naturally expel those images which were subconsciously imprinted in her heart...

Except, in this world, not everything was controllable through willpower alone.

After the first tear dropped, her eyes became stream that overcame all its obstacles. Streaks of tears flowed down uncontrollably and quickly moistened her entire face.

“Yun Che... You don’t need to wait for the next life... In fact... on the Sword Discourse Arena, when you defeated me, you had already conquered me...”

“No matter how much I meditate... I couldn't genuinely completely seal away all of my emotions. My constant indifference was merely my own selfish way of escaping...”

“At that time, for the sake of opening all of my profound entrances, you used more strength than you could bear and almost permanently damaged yourself. If not for you, the Xia Qingyue today would not exist... You have fought with all your might on the Sword Discourse Arena only for the

sake to prove that you are qualified to be my husband. You would rather use extra energy and intensify your internal injuries to divert the direction of your attack than harm me... And right now, you protected me for my sake again, with all your strength and life force... You're obviously very smart, but do you actually believe after doing all this for a girl... that there would still be a girl who wouldn't be conquered by you..."

Xia Qingyue slowly stood up and placed both her hands on her chest. She shut her eyes and lightly said: "Yun Che, you're



the man who I, Xia Qingyue, had married. How can you just die like this... As a husband, you did many things for me, and I never bore any responsibility as your wife...”

“At least this one time, I want to let you know... I, Xia Qingyue... am willing to be your wife...”

A dim ray of blue light emerged slowly from Xia Qingyue’s body and gradually became more concentrated. Its illumination made this ice-cold area seem

extra illusionary. These blue lights lasted a long time until Xia Qingyue drew it out and gathered all of it into both her hands, and condensed it into gaudy, icy bristles of blue light within her jadelike hands.

Xia Qingyue gently stooped down and laid both her hands over his stomach. She had a bewildered expression as she silently watched the blue light flow out like water onto Yun Che's stomach enter within his body bit by bit... Very quickly, a layer of dim blue colored halo of light appeared over the surface of his body.

When the light dimmed, a weak and gentle light illuminated the incredibly tranquil face of Xia Qingyue. She lightly shut her eyes. At this very moment, she was indescribably beautiful.

.....

Yun Che had already fallen into the abyss of death. Before the moment his consciousness had completely faded, he believed that he would never wake up again.

But under the abyss of death, he suddenly started sensing the existence of his body. The ice cold sensation on the surface of his body became clearer and clearer, and was no longer as unbearably cold as before...

Did I arrive in an icy hell?

...Before he died, he killed many people; after death, he was going to go to hell no matter what...

Yun Che felt a sharp pain slowly being transmitted from his chest that made his consciousness become increasingly awake. Little by little, he opened his eyes and barely caught a glimpse of a few weak rays of blue light.

“You’re finally awake, hmph! You didn’t die even like this, your life is really tenacious.”

The sound of Jasmine’s voice echoed by his ears. Although the her voice was panting with rage, it was still unable to conceal the

sound of joy and relief.

“I... didn’t die?” Yun Che made great effort to open his eyes and said with a tone of disbelief. Although his internal organs were still in pain, it wasn’t like the shattering pain from before. The air was ice-cold, but it was no longer a bone-piercing cold. On the contrary, a feeling of warmth spread over the surface of his body. His five senses had been restored to normal and his four limbs had also regained their sensations. His originally completely exhausted body had also regained some strength.

“You should have died, but that girl gave all of her profound strength to you, sealed your internal injuries and isolated you from the cold air, so that you can temporarily regain consciousness. However, this is the inside of a Tyrant Profound Beast’s body, it’s simply impossible for you two to leave. Therefore, you two will still die in the end... The only difference is that the order is inverted. She is going to die before you.”

It was... Qingyue?

Her profound strength... she gave me all of it?

Yun Che's was astonished. He clenched his teeth and suddenly supported himself up. Under the weak blue light, he saw Xia Qingyue peacefully crouching over his body. Her snow white face was incredibly calm and peaceful without a trace of emotion, but it had a slight trace of an incomprehensible satisfaction.

“Qingyue! Qing....”



Yun Che's hand touched Xia Qingyue's hand. Then, he withdrew it like lightning with a look of horror on his face. Because she cultivated in Frozen Cloud Arts, Xia Qingyue's body was slightly cold already; however, it wasn't a freezing cold, but a rather refreshing cold. But now, Xia Qingyue's body was as cold as profound ice.

“She used all her profound strength to moderate your internal injuries, help you withstand the cold, and restore

your vitality. She doesn't have any profound strength left to protect her own body and simply cannot withstand the cold air here. If it wasn't for her body being accustomed to the frigid cold all year round, then she might have already froze to death before you woke up. However right now, she is at her last breath... This is an ice attributed Tyrant Profound Beast, the cold air within its body is severe. It is simply something you two cannot hope to resist!" Jasmine said coldly with furrowed brows.

"Qing... yue..." Yun Che got up

with great difficulty and slowly touched Xia Qingyue's cheeks with his hands... His movements were very very soft since the Xia Qingyue right now was like an icy beauty that would break on contact. It made one's heart ache and suffocate.

She, who was obviously cold and detached towards him from the start was willing to quietly protect him before his severe injuries had healed, and when he met great danger, was willing to leave with him... Now, she was willing to risk her own life in order to save him.

He never understood why she was cold and indifferent towards him all the time, but right now, he clearly saw through her true intentions under the surface of that frozen exterior.

“Qingyue! Wake up quickly... Qingyue... Wake up!”

He gently shook Xia Qingyue’s upper body and worriedly shouted for her to get up. He immediately had an idea and took out a large pile of clothes from within the Sky Poison

Pearl and laid them over Xia Qingyue's entire body until all his own clothes had been taken out... And in the end, even took out the Jasmine's pink bed sheet to wrap them tightly over Xia Qingyue's body.

Only, the temperature here was too terrifyingly low. The cold air permeated Xia Qingyue's body like a nightmare and gnawed away more and more of her remaining life force.

“Not good... I must leave. Only death awaits here... Have to

leave!!” Yun Che clenched his teeth with all his might and tried to get up. A sharp pain transmitted from his chest. His back and his rigid limbs weren’t completely listening to all of his orders, and made him fall down ruthlessly again. Before he struggled one more time, he suddenly discovered that in this pitch black darkness, in addition to the blue glow on the surface of his body, there was another strand of green light.

Yun Che rapidly raised his left hand and shockingly saw the Sky Poison Pearl was glowing with an illusory ray of green

light.

This was the Sky Poison Pearl's detection light, and the flickering green light was especially strong, proving that it the thing it discovered was so close to him that it was only a few steps away!

“Don't tell me there is actually a treasure hidden inside here?” Yun Che said subconsciously.

Jasmine appeared and looked at Xia Qingyue, then looked at the

shining Sky Poison Pearl and coldly said: “This ice attribute profound beast is able to open its mouth and swallow half a mountain. Swallowing an extraordinarily precious treasure is not strange at all.”

Yun Che gasped for breath with all his strength and reached out to point forward: “Jasmine, can you go take there and take a look at what the Sky Poison Pearl found... After all, the Sky Poison Pearl is emitting a very strange light time time. Not only is this time’s light intense, the frequency it is flickering at is also very high. Perhaps it’s



something that it doesn't usually find."

"You're dying soon, why do you still care about some strange treasure?" Jasmine's small and exquisite brows locked in place as she said somewhat angrily.

"I don't care about some strange treasure... Rather, I care about any possible traces of hope!" Yun Che crudely gasped for more air and said: "There is nothing on me that can help Qingyue and I leave this place... Right now, the only thing that

can save Qingyue and me is only some sort of teleportation thing... Just in case...just in case what if that precious treasure actually had a space attribute!?”

“Naive! Do you truly believe there are such coincidences in this world?” Jasmine mumbled to herself, but still walked towards the direction that Yun Che pointed in. Her exquisite and delicate red figure quickly entered the darkness... Shortly after, Jasmine suddenly let of a cry of surprise from up ahead.

Yun Che's mind suddenly trembled. Something that made Jasmine cry out in such alarm absolutely had to be some extraordinary object. He eagerly asked: "What did you find? Is it actually a treasure with space attribute?"

Jasmine's voice echoed through in a peculiar way: "Your life is truly tenacious to the point that makes me jealous! Although it's not the the precious treasure with space attribute that you wanted, it could still protect you against death... It's no wonder that an ice attribute Tyrant Profound Beast could appear

here. So it actually swallowed it into its stomach! All year round, it had been absorbing its overflowing power... Yun Che! Catch, then swallow it!”

Under the half excited, half serious Jasmine’s voice, an azure blue speck of light flew out from the darkness and landed in the middle of Yun Che’s palm.

# Chapter 259 – Another World

---

This was a very small bead the size of an ordinary glass ball that sparkled all over like a sapphire; however, the rich rays of blue light it emitted was much stronger than a sapphire, making it shine like little star. When Yun Che grabbed it, it seemed as though it had suddenly awakened from its slumber. Suddenly, it released an incredibly intense azure blue light that shrouded Yun Che's entire body inside.

“This is...” The azure blue ray of light was rich and enchanting, illuminating every corner of the place. Yun Che brought it in front of his eyes and looked at it in a stupor. At this moment, a violent turmoil suddenly transmitted from within his exhausted profound veins — that was a turmoil of excitement that spurred his stiff body’s blood and mind. At this moment, a strange sensation attacked Yun Che’s heart... He had a incredibly calm sensation when holding the azure blue bead in his hand. It felt as if something that should have originally belonged to him, had finally returned to his side.

And this feeling wasn't unfamiliar to him. This same feeling emerged when he obtained another object. His memories suddenly returned to the Scarlet Dragon Mountain Range —— Flame Dragon's cave —— that red colored —— Evil God's fire seed!

“Why are you still distracted, eat it quickly! Aside from the attribute, its aura and the fire attribute Evil God's seed you had eaten that time, should be exactly the same! This is clearly the Evil God's water seed that

was swallowed by this big guy into its stomach; thus causing the existence of this ice attribute Tyrant Profound Beast!”

Jasmine judged by relying on its aura, but Yun Che’s sensation was more accurate than Jasmine’s. He was completely sure that this and the Evil God’s seed at that time in the Flame Dragon’s cave, were exactly the same! After glancing at Xia Qingyue, whose life was coming closer to its end with every passing moment within this icy cold place, he stuffed that azure blue colored bead into his mouth, and swallowed it.



Instantaneously, Yun Che's profound veins was suddenly put into a state of violent turmoil. The surface of his body suddenly emitted azure blue rays of light. These rays of azure blue light had completely engulfed Xia Qingyue's light blue colored profound strength that she gave him. Afterwards, like a lump of azure blue flame, the surface of his body began to ignite.

The icy cold sensation completely disappeared. Yun Che closed his eyes and his entire body was full of

unspeakable coziness. The azure blue light on his body became increasingly rich and gradually spread to Xia Qingyue's body. In a split second, the ice crystals that covered Xia Qingyue's body disappeared without even going through the process of melting. All the icicles in the surrounding areas which had been touched by the blue light disappeared as well. The extremely frightening cold air within the Tyrant Profound Beast's body was unexpectedly unable to exist underneath the azure blue radiance.

During the frantic turmoil of

his profound veins, a profound strength that seemed to have come out of nowhere rapidly surged forth. His profound strength in his originally exhausted profound veins began to recover at a rapid pace... With the warm strength that came out of nowhere, his practically broken internal organs were also healing at an amazingly quick speed.

The profound strength within his profound veins gradually increased and reached its capacity, yet it still did not stop...

A soft sound rang, and Yun Che heard a faint noise of something breaking. At this moment, the sensation that a hurdle had been directly overcome was transmitted from his profound veins. The blue rays of light that had shined for a long time over his body had also finally burned out at this time.

During that split second, Yun Che clearly felt as though his profound veins had evolved. The profound strength it held condensed into such a density that he could hardly believe. His

perception of his own body and his surroundings also changed immensely. His entire body, soul, and profound veins were all suddenly reborn and became anew...

Yun Che raised his head and slowly exhaled. A sudden surge of profound strength many times more tyrannical than what he had before dispersed from his body! The aura of this kind of profound strength had already broken through the True Profound Realm, and stepped into Spirit Profound Realm! Even his internal injuries had all healed!

Yun Che silently inspected his interior and he saw his originally crystal-like body so vividly that it seemed as if it was see-through. His original profound veins which were as crimson as flames were now transformed into a mix of scarlet and blue. Each of his fifty four profound entrances all flickered alternatively in blue and scarlet rays of light. Not only his profound veins, even his channels, plasma, and cells all had a hint of an azure blue to them now.

The scarlet and the blue colors weren't completely separate, but they weren't completely fused either. They were somewhere in between, all mixed up in a mess without repelling each other in the mess, without intruding upon each other's independent existences.

What Yun Che consumed was indeed the water seed that the Evil God originally left behind.

When he ate the fire seed back then, Yun Che's profound veins gained a fire attribute and

gained the ultimate affinity with the fire element. He was also able to control fire to a certain degree, and could not be harmed by fire in any shape or form.

Now that he consumed the water seed, Yun Che's profound veins gained both water and fire attributes. In nature, water and fire were two incompatible elements, but these two attributes coexisted perfectly within the Evil God's Profound Veins.

At the same time, what Chu



Yuechan left behind that time, the Frozen Cloud Arts that had to be sealed up because of incompatibilities with the fire attribute profound veins, had also completely awakened!

Yun Che opened his eyes and rubbed his hands. An azure blue barrier spread outwards to completely isolate Xia Qingyue's body from the cold air outside. The miraculous power of the Evil God had completely healed all of his injuries, restored all of his profound strength, and let him breakthrough from the True Profound Realm right into the Spirit Profound Realm. All of

his nervousness, apprehension, and worries had also completely faded away, as his heart became incomparably tranquil... Because his soul had also risen to a higher level.

Yun Che extended his hand. With a thought, a small chunk of ice crystal solidified in his palm. Then, this piece of ice crystal became water, then snow, then into mist... Using just his thoughts, he was able to change its form however he pleased. Now, his body was completely familiar with the water element. Along with fire, any form of water attributed power were

also unable to harm him anymore.

Jasmine returned to his side. Although her expression was unwavering, the burden in her heart had been lifted: "You really do possess some powerful luck. For the sake of finding the Evil God's seeds, I came to the Profound Sky Continent, but didn't find anything. But, within a span of less than two years, you already came across two seeds! Especially this seed which appeared at such an incredibly fortunate time! The Evil God's seeds contains powerful elemental strength. Right now,

not only can you control the water element, you also gained an absolute immunity to it. The cold air here is now completely harmless to you!

“But this doesn’t mean I can get out alive!” Yun Che clasped his hands tightly. His eyes shifted toward Xia Qingyue’s body which still had an incredibly weak aura and was still as cold as before: “I have to take her and leave this place as soon as possible! Otherwise, it’ll be difficult for her to continue on.”

At this moment, a buzzing sound rang within Yun Che's mind. Then, an incredibly old and distant voice that felt like it came from an ancient era sounded.

“Successor of my powers... You are finally here...”

This voice is... is...

Yun Che quickly shut his eyes. As he concentrated his mind, he tried to respond with his thoughts: “You’re... the Evil

God?”

“That’s right... the seed you had just consumed... contains a fragment of my soul that I left behind... I waited many many years within this small world... and finally waited until your arrival...”

Yun Che’s heart stirred and and then blurted out his thought: “Could it be, that the small world that I’m in right now is something you established back then?”

The old voice gently said: “Correct... except... this isn’t important... the seeds I left behind has already gotten a new owner... this trace of soul...will also soon disappear... Successor of my powers... relax your mind... steady your breathing... let me take a look at your memories... let me understand with the last bits of my power... what I can do for you...”

Yun Che did not resist, and did not stay on guard either. He completely relaxed his mind, and allowed this insignificant strand of power invade the sea of his consciousness... A few

breaths later, this strand of power then pulled out from within his sea of consciousness.

“So it’s like this...you’re only an ordinary human... yet you possess an extraordinary fortune and fate... Your experiences tells me... that you’re a qualified successor... I have much expectations for your future... only... it’s destined that it’ll be impossible for me to see your future... Your strongest wish right now... is to leave this dangerous place... I’ll use the final bits of my power to fulfil this wish of yours... and also send you to a special place...”



Although he didn't know what kind of place the "special place" that the old voice mentioned was, leaving this place was already enough to make him almost mad with joy: "Thank you! My wife's current condition is really dangerous. if we stayed here any longer, it would put her life in danger! Please, send us away from here as soon as possible!"

"I understand...but there is no need to thank me... You have inherited my powers... which means you are also destined to

inherit my mission... The one who should say thank you... should be me... Your future... is destined to exceed your imagination... Continue to become stronger... this is your only choice... Now then... go... But that place... you two can only stay for twenty four hours there... After twenty four hours... you two will be taken back to this small world...”

Mission?

Evil God's mission?

The old voice disappeared from Yun Che's sea of consciousness; then, the space where he was with Xia Qingyue suddenly distorted. He embraced Xia Qingyue tightly and disappeared with her into the twisted space.

.....

A wave of cool and refreshing air mixed with the faint scent of flowers and the fragrance of soil assailed their nostrils.

Dark green grass, a small

running river, and trees of various height and width were unevenly distributed everywhere. This was the scene that Yun Che saw after he opened his eyes. But this scene that couldn't be any more ordinary, was extremely precious right now; it made him breath out a long sigh of relief, and then carefully lowered Xia Qingyue who was in his bosoms.

Xia Qingyue's entire body was still ice cold and unconscious. Her aura was still delicate, but this change of environment alleviated a great deal of tension from her serene face. Yun Che

quickly took out his most effective and mild Small Dewdrop Pellets, and put it inside of Xia Qingyue's mouth. His left hand pressed above her heart. He used his profound strength to protect her life, and then dispersed the cold air within her body bit by bit.

This was a place that didn't seem to be visited by many people, and it didn't seem to be anything special. Yun Che didn't know where this place was, and didn't know why the Evil God used the final bits of his strength to send them to this place. His energy concentrated all over Xia

Qingyue's body. While he was concentrating on expelling the cold inside her, he silently admired her devastatingly beautiful complexion and gradually became lost in his gaze...

You... you'd rather use your own life to save me...

If you hadn't risked your life to save me... then right now I... should already be a thoroughly dead person.

When I'm facing you, what I think about the most is how to conquer you... but only the thing I am most clear about is that among the reasons, love makes up only a tiny portion. What it's mostly made up of is a male's desire to possess beautiful things. My identity as your husband... is a bit funny, but I cannot let go of my arrogance and dignity.

After today, I won't think about conquering you anymore... but to completely and totally possess you... even if I have to tear apart the entire Frozen Cloud Asgard, I must completely and totally,

make you mine!

“Save me... Save me...”

When Yun Che was deep in thought, an urgent cry for help echoed from nearby; this was the cry of a young girl with an empty voice that sounded like it originated from a remote valley spring; it contained deep terror and fear. Then, the sound of chaotic footsteps grew closer.

Once Yun Che's profound strength reached the first level



of the Spirit Profound Realm, his vision range also substantially increased. He looked towards the source of the sound and found a little girl who wore yellow clothes quickly fleeing his way. She was too far to be able to discern her appearance, but from her petite and exquisite body, she should only be around ten years old. However, she had clearly already established the foundations of profound strength since her running speed wasn't slow at all.

Behind her, three men in black calmly and unhurriedly chased her as they teasingly laughed:

“Hey hey, you can run all you want. Let’s see how far you can run once you run out of strength...”

Yun Che was concentrating on protecting Xia Qingyue’s heart vessels and didn’t want to be distracted; furthermore, in this place that he didn’t completely understand yet, he didn’t want to meddle in other people’s business. He quickly retracted his gaze and didn’t care about it anymore.

“Plop”... The weary little girl

fell on the ground. She struggled for a bit, but she couldn't get up. Her tears already filled her eyes and clenched her teeth, but she stubbornly did not want to let the tears flow out.

Behind her, three men in black calmly and unhurriedly walked over. The man in the middle extended his hand, grabbed towards her and laughed recklessly: "Su Ling'er, run again, keep running.... hahahaha..."

Yun Che's eyes suddenly opened

wide and his entire body felt like it had been electrocuted.

Su... Ling... er!?

## Chapter 260 – Ling'er

---

The name that sounded in his ears instantly caused a stir in his heart. The face and figure of a girl uncontrollably surfaced in his mind.

Su Ling'er, the girl who was his heaviest pain, the girl whom he was the most sympathetic for, who was also the biggest regret in his lifetime, was engraved deeply in his heart. Her eyes were forever that gloomy, as she had forever been silently caring, keeping watch, spending all efforts, and waiting for him...

However, even after all the efforts that she had spent, until the moment she died, she never managed to wait for his return.

He knew that she carried a blood feud, yet, in the end, he never knew what her past was. She refused to tell him, and even until her death in his arms, she was unwilling to tell him whose deadly hands she died under... Because she was unwilling to pass on another layer of vengeance to him, who had long lost himself in his own vengeance. However, the more important reason, was still himself... If he could have cared

for her more, and was more persistent in knowing about her past, he could have definitely known of her enemies much earlier.

That bamboo grove, that small, simple and crude bamboo house, that small creek that was forever so clear, the girl who stayed there, who would only wait and keep watch for him... formed all of the memories of him and Su Ling'er. She had gave her everything for him, truly, without any regrets, from the bottom of her heart. Yet he had never done anything for her, not even the simplest of promises.

When he embraced her for the last time, his heart was so broken that he cried and wailed loudly. No matter how he hatefully smashed his head repeatedly against a rock, he was unable to get back the chance to repay her in the slightest.

Whenever the memories regarding Su Ling'er surfaced, he would always suffocate for a moment from the pain in his heart.

He turned his gaze and looked towards the little girl who fell on



the ground, who was about to land in the hands of those three black-clothed men.

She too, was called Su Ling'er, and had exactly the same name as the Ling'er he had already lost... Yun Che stood up. Facing this little girl who had the same name as her, he was destined to not just ignore the scene. Because the name "Su Ling'er", had toggled that forever most sensitive, and weakest nerve of his. If he had the opportunity to repay her even the slightest bit, even if he had to sacrifice half of his life, he would not hesitate in the slightest.

After the black-clothed man grabbed onto the little girl's clothes, he instantly picked her small body up, and said with a sinister smile. "This sure is a stubborn little brat, to actually be able to run so far... Hehe, now that his daughter has landed in our hands, I really want to see if old man Su Huangshan will still be as obstinate!"

"You... You bad people! Papa will definitely save me, and then beat all of you down!" Even though the little girl's eyes were

filled with fear, she did not cry. Stubbornly holding back her tears, she struggled and shouted in the black-clothed man's hands.

“Hahahaha!” The black-clothed man laughed out wildly. “Then that will really be the best outcome, I really hope to have him here! I really want to see if that Su Huangshan...”

Before the black-clothed man's words fell, a violent wind suddenly struck from behind.

At the most, the strength of these three black-clothed men were at the mid-level of the Spirit Profound Realm. To Yun Che, they were barely any threat. However, to protect the little girl's safety, Yun Che still decided to silently approach them, and instantly unleash his strength once he had reached a sufficient distance. Like an eagle suddenly diving straight down to catch its prey, he charged towards the black-clothed man who was holding onto Su Ling'er, and heavily smashing the defenseless black-clothed man away. At the same time, he snatched over the little girl who was in his hands, and carried her in his arms.

“Ah——” The frightened little girl let out a shriek, and subconsciously hugged onto Yun Che’s arms tightly.

Very quickly, Yun Che steadied his body. With his back facing the three black-clothed men, he gently placed the little girl down, and then said with a smile. “Little sister, do not be afraid. I’m here to save you. With me here, you will definitely not be abducted by these bad people.”

The little girl was frightened repeatedly, and was still in a little state of shock. But, when she saw Yun Che's warm eyes and his kindest smile, it was as though a clear wind had swept away the fear in her heart. A huge degree of the fear had dispersed in an instant, and her eyes had become watery as well. She looked at Yun Che, and strongly nodded. With her two small hands, she tightly grabbed onto the corner of Yun Che's clothes, and hid behind his back.

“Where did this random brat come from? To actually dare to step into our Blackwood

Stronghold's business, I think you're tired of living!!”

When he was silently attacked by Yun Che from the back at such close proximity, the black-clothed men were initially frightened, as they thought they had encountered a strong enemy. However, after inspecting and finding out Yun Che's profound energy was only at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm, his heart completely calmed down as his voice became low and ruthless.

Yun Che grabbed onto the little girl's small hand and shielded her behind his back. Then, he turned his head over, and coldly laughed. "In front of a child, I don't wish to see blood. I will give you five seconds... Scram, immediately!!"

Yun Che's words stunned the three black-clothed men. Then, as though they had heard a funny joke, all three of them began to laugh out wildly, to the point where they could not even stand straight.



“He’s telling us to scram! He’s actually telling us to scram!? Ahahahaha!”

“Yo! This kid is actually at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm at such a young age, it’s no wonder he’s so arrogant...”

“His talent is pretty good, but as for his brain, he’s basically not even comparable to an idiot. Death is at his footsteps, yet he’s actually telling us to scram, hahahaha...!”

The three of them wilfully laughed out with ridicule, and their gaze on Yun Che was as though they were looking at a pitiful idiot. And as to how Yun Che was looking at them, it was filled with even more disdain and pity.

The black-clothed man on the left twisted his hand, took a step forward, and kicked towards Yun Che. His eyes were filled with scorn. "Come! Let this granddaddy teach you some morals!"

Yun Che narrowed his eyes. Like a flash of lightning, he greeted the black-clothed man's kicking right leg with a smashing fist.

Bang!!

The loudness of the sound of this exchange, was completely out of the three black-clothed men's predictions. Following that, an incomparably clear "crack" resounded, and the black-clothed man's wild laughter stopped as his face distorted completely. His entire

body was sent flying far away, as though he was a scrap bag being blown away by a hurricane, and accompanying it was an incomparably sharp scream that went further and further away...

Yun Che's arm strength was that freakish. If not for the need to mind about the little girl behind him, if he had used more of his strength as a pushing force, that black-clothed man's right leg would have shattered into fragments on the spot.

Seeing that terrifying black-

clothed man actually being sent flying away like a huge bird, the little girl's mouth was wide open in an "O" shape, and she even let out a subconscious "Waah" sound.

With this single exchange, the wild laughter of the two other black-clothed men were completely stucked in their throats as well. Their eyes sank inwards, their expressions paled in aghast. Even if they were idiots, they should be able to realize how terrifying that one strike Yun Che threw out earlier was. The strength of the youth in front of them, was

unimaginably stronger than what they had thought by several times; he was someone whom they were not even worthy of offending.

The two people's gaze on Yun Che changed from that of scorn, to fear. At the same time, they began to retreat. Seeing that Yun Che did not have the intention to chase after them, without even daring to utter another word, they ran far away for their lives, and very quickly, they disappeared from Yun Che's sight.

He did not know what identities these people held, so naturally, he would not have the intention to ruthlessly slaughter them. Since they fled, Yun Che did not bother to chase after them. He turned around, looked at the little girl who had the same name as Su Ling'er, only to realize that she was currently raising her small face and looking at him with her watery eyes that were filled with little stars.

Yun Che had originally wanted to say something, but when he looked at her small face, the words that he was about to let

out were suddenly sealed in his throat, as his entire being stood there in a daze...

The little girl looked about ten years old. Her little face was snow-white and refined, her make-up made her look even more beautiful and cute, and her pair of pupils sparkled like the stars in the night sky. It could be expected that when she grew up, she would definitely be a beauty at a catastrophic level.

And what made Yun Che absent-minded was that this



little girl's features, were filled with... Su Ling'er's reflection!

Her contours, eyebrows, nose, lips, chin... all of them were so very similar to Su Ling'er's. When they were joined together, she looked so much like a smaller and younger version of Su Ling'er. Only her eyes were evidently not the same. Because, the eyes of his Su Ling'er were always so dim, and were always filled with sadness that could cause one's heart to ache. While this little girl's eyes were sparkling even brighter than a gem, and even more spirited than a stream, as though they

had gathered the purest of spiritual energy between the heaven and earth.

“Ling... er...”

Su Ling'er's face surfaced in front of him. Within his blurry vision, it slowly overlapped with the little girl's. He subconsciously reached out his hand, and gently stroking the girl's tender cheeks with quivering fingers and soul. This action of his did not incite the little girl's rejection. She looked at Yun Che strangely, blinked

her eyes, and politely said. “Big brother, thank you for saving me... Big brother, you’re so incredible, you instantly sent the bad guy flying towards the sky, just as... you’re just as incredible as my Papa!”

The little girl’s words woke Yun Che up from his hallucination. Realizing his loss of decorum, he hurriedly regained his senses and revealed a smile on his face. “There is no need for thanks, bad people should always receive punishment... You’re called... Su Ling’er, right?”

“Mn!” The little girl nodded. She was stronger than Yun Che had imagined. Seeing her current expression, it seemed that her fear earlier had completely disappeared, and she no longer needed him to console her. She tilted her head. “Big brother, how do you know my name?”

“I heard it when they shouted for you. Then... little sister, how old are you this year?” Yun Che asked with a smile.

“Ten years old!” The little girl

reached out her two hands, stretched her ten fingers, and said with a huge grin. It seemed as though, to her, reaching ten years old was a very incredible achievement. She then asked him back. “Then, big brother, what’s your name?”

“Me? I’m called Yun Che.” Yun Che answered directly without hiding anything.

“Yun... Che?” The little girl blinked her eyes, and said softly. “Such a strange name... Uuu... Why does it sound strange...”

After Yun Che reported his name, the little girl suddenly entered into a state of deep thought. With her finger pressing on the side of her chin, she tilted her head as she looked at Yun Che, as though she was trying hard to recall something.

“What is it? Is my name that strange?” Yun Che laughed.

The little girl strongly blinked her eyes again, and then, with thirty percent confusion, and seventy percent seriousness, she

asked. "Big brother, have we met before in the past? Why do I feel as though I have met big brother somewhere... Even big brother's name, has a little... sense of familiarity to it."

"Haha!" Yun Che laughed, he could not help but hold onto the girl's little face with his hands. "Me too! Not only is little Ling'er's name the same as someone who is very important to me, you even look very similar. This sort of very mysterious feeling, is called fate. It means that little Ling'er and I have a strong fate, and we will become very good friends."

“Fate?” The little girl mulled over this word very seriously, and following after, her thin eyebrows smiled into two slender crescents. “Mn! As long as big brother doesn’t hate me, I’m willing to become very good friends with big brother!”

.....

Author Note: In the initial story settings, Azure Cloud Continent and Illusory Demon Realm each had their own unique division of their profound strength levels.



When comparing their big realms and small realms with Profound Sky Continent, only their names are different. In the earlier parts of the story, it had been casually mentioned as well... But after thinking about it later, so as to not cause confusion to everyone and myself (the key point is myself), it's still best to use one universal set of names!! Everything is: Elementary, Nascent, True, Spirit, Earth, Sky, Emperor, Tyrant, Sovereign, Divine, Saint!

# Chapter 261 – Azure Cloud Dream

---

“Ling’er, I shall first bring you over to get to know a big sister before sending you back home, alright?”

Yun Che’s attention had never left Xia Qingyue. Holding on little Ling’er’s hand, they arrived next to Xia Qingyue.

As expected, when Su Ling’er saw Xia Qingyue, her eyes instantly shone, and she let out a

soft cry. “Waah! Such a beautiful big sister! She’s more beautiful than any other big sister I have met before... But why is she lying here? Is she injured?”

“Mn!” Yun Che nodded. Walking over next to Xia Qingyue, he once again pressed his hand on her chest. “But she will get better really soon.”

Xia Qingyue’s temperature had gradually returned to normal. However, her breathing was still really weak, and she did not show any signs of waking up any

time soon. As a doctor, he was extremely clear about Xia Qingyue's current situation... After transferring all of her profound energy over to his body, her own body was completely devoid of spiritual energy, and under this state of depletion, an ice-cold chill completely entered her body... Including her blood, heart, and every corner of her body... Not only was her vitality injured, her meridians had suffered a considerably large damage, it might even be possible for her entire body to be paralyzed because of this.

What Jasmine said was right. If not for the Frozen Cloud Arts she was cultivating that allowed her body to adjust to the cold to a certain degree, it would have been certain death for her long before Yun Che woke up back then.

With her body's current degree of weakness, all Yun Che could do was to use the most gentle of methods to disperse the cold chill in her body. He did not dare to make any other movements.

Little Ling'er squatted at the

side. Her two hands held on to her cheeks, as she stared unblinkingly at his heavy and serious look. She kept looking at him like this for a very long time, as though she was trying to figure something out.

After a good while, Yun Che's hand finally left Xia Qingyue's chest. He heaved a long sigh of relief, and raised his hand to rub off the warm sweat from his forehead. At this time, he finally realized that Little Ling'er, who did not interrupt him throughout the entire process, was looking at him without turning away. That cute and

focused look could not help but cause him to laugh. "Why do you always keep looking at me?"

"Because big brother Yun Che is very good-looking." Little Ling'er answered without any hesitation.

"Good-looking?" To be praised by a naive and blooming young girl who did not have any sort of subtlety, Yun Che could not help but feel proud in his heart. He laughed cheerfully. "Even though I am indeed really good-looking, good-looking people

might not all be good people. Ling'er, aren't you afraid that I'm a bad person as well?"

"I'm not afraid!" Ling'er shook her head, and firmly said. "Big brother Yun Che is definitely not a bad person!"

"Why?"

"Because..." Ling'er did not even think for a single moment, and hastily gave an explanation for Yun Che. "Because, not only did big brother Yun Che save



me, with just a single glance, you look like a very, very good person. Uuu... Papa taught me not to approach strangers since I was young, and since I was young, I have always hidden far away whenever I see living people. But, it's not the same for big brother Yun Che at all. When I see big brother Yun Che, I'm not afraid in the slightest, and I feel very close to you... even closer than a real brother! It's like... I have known big brother Yun Che a long, long time ago. When I see big brother Yun Che, my mood also becomes very happy."

While she said that, little Ling'er smiled, revealing two little pearl-like canine teeth.

Yun Che smiled as well. Actually, in his heart, he felt the same as little Ling'er as well. Just by quietly looking at her like this, his mood would become especially cheerful, as though he had actually seen his Ling'er return to his side. Even the heartache he got from the state of Xia Qingyue's body had watered down quite a bit.

Currently, Xia Qingyue was no

longer in danger of losing her life. What he needed to do next, was to recover her vitality bit by bit, and quietly wait for her to wake up. After she wakes up, there was still a need to slowly recover her vigor, and this process would require a very, very long time. After that, he needed an even longer time to condition her body, so as to not leave any sequela. As for completely recovering her profound energy, it might not even be possible to do so within half a year.

It was good that he was in front of her. Otherwise, if he was not

by her side, with Xia Qingyue's current state, she might have been paralyzed for life.

“Is beautiful big sister not well yet? When is she going to wake up?” Little Ling'er looked towards Xia Qingyue, who was not showing any signs of waking up, and asked worriedly. At the same time, she was silently thinking in her heart: When I grow up, it would be great if I'm as good-looking as beautiful big sister...

“Don't worry. She's already

fine, she just needs to rest for a period of time.” Yun Che said with a very relaxed tone.

Xia Qingyue’s current state was momentarily stable, and at the moment, he did not dare to do anything excessive either. It was about time he officially started to find out what this place, where the Evil God sent him and Xia Qingyue to, actually was. He looked at the little girl in front of him that he saved, who stimulated the depths of his soul. Just based on the same name she had with Su Ling’er, and the similar appearance she had, it was destined that he was

unable to leave her alone like this.

He asked Su Ling'er. "Ling'er, where's your home? Is it far away from here? Why were those people trying to capture you?"

Ling'er's small hand moved away from her cheek, and she pointed to the north. "My home is over there. It's not too far away from here. At first, Papa was suppose to bring me out to play today but while we were walking, a lot of black-clothed

people suddenly appeared. Papa began fighting with those black-clothed people, and told me to quickly run away... So I kept running, and after running quite far away, suddenly, those three bad people from earlier appeared and chased after me together... If big brother did not save me, I might have already been captured by them. Uuu... I don't know what happened to Papa either, but since Papa is so strong, he's definitely able to beat up all those bad people."

When she spoke of her "Papa", little Ling'er's eyes were filled with adoration, and did not

carry too much worry. Evidently, she trusted her 'Papa' very much.

Because of sprinting for a long time, and even tripping down heavily in the end, little Ling'er's shoes were already completely filled with dirt. The corners of her skirt were dirtied by a large amount, and there was even a big bruise on her small leg as well. Earlier, Yun Che had been concerned about Xia Qingyue's situation the entire time, and only now did he realized that. Instantly, he felt his heart ache. Walking next to Ling'er, he picked up her small slim leg, and



gently asked. “Ling’er, did you fall and injure yourself? Does it hurt?”

“A little... But it’s already not that painful anymore.” When Yun Che picked her small leg up, pain clearly flashed through her expression. However, it was hurriedly replaced with a smile that could move everyone’s hearts. It was as if she was trying to console Yun Che instead.

“Come, let me take a look at it. I’m a very incredible genius

doctor, you know. No matter what injury it is, I'm able to cure it well." Yun Che sat beside Ling'er, and as he said that, he carefully took out her shoes because he had to check if her ankles were injured.

As Yun Che held onto her shoes, he asked. "Ling'er, can you tell me where I am? I came from a place very far away, so I don't even know where this place is."

"A place very far away?" The little girl had an expression of

astonishment, but then, she excitedly said. “It’s no wonder big brother Yun Che is not the least bit old, yet is as incredible as Papa. You and this beautiful big sister must have came from those incredible places in those legends, right? Papa told me, in those incredible places, there are many very incredible people, and there are people that are even more incredible than Papa... Ah! Oh right, I almost forgot to answer big brother Yun Che’s question...”

Ling’er stretched out her hand and pointed to the distance. “My home is called the ‘Grandwake

Clan', and it's at the bottom of the tallest mountain over there. That mountain is called 'Grandwake Mountain'. Big brother Yun Che, have you ever heard of that mountain? Papa told me that our home's mountain is very famous in the Azure Cloud Continent, you know."

"Mn, of course I have heard of it." Yun Che nodded, and smiled. "My master once told me, Grandwake Mountain is a divine mountain, and is one of the thirteen divine mountains. There was a period of time when I yearned to see it. I did not

expect that this place is...  
actually...”

Yun Che’s voice suddenly slowed down, and then, it was completely stuck in his throat. Abruptly, his body trembled, and even his pupils had severely shrunk for a moment. His voice, began to tremble. “Grandwake Mountain... Azure Cloud... Azure Cloud... Azure Cloud Continent? You’re saying... this place is... is... Azure Cloud Continent?”

“That’s right, this place is

obviously Azure Cloud Continent.” Yun Che’s sudden strange reaction caused Ling’er to feel puzzled.

Yun Che was completely stunned in place. His mind was in a state of chaos, and only after a good while, did he finally calm his state of mind down. Azure Cloud Continent... A place that had been sealed within his memories, a place where he had stayed in his past life, a place where his life had ended at. A place where he thought it was no longer possible for it to appear again in his life, and had thought his fate with this place

had forever been severed then and there.

In the Blue Wind Empire, he had once tried to inquire information about the Azure Cloud Continent, however, basically no one there knew about the name “Azure Cloud Continent”, and Azure Cloud Continent was not even mentioned in any of the various records. Hence, he knew that Azure Cloud Continent and Profound Sky Continent belonged to two completely different worlds, and there was essentially no sort of intersection between them.

From then on, he had forever kept it within his memories, and, in the Profound Sky Continent, it was a place that only he knew of.

He completely did not expect that, the place that the Evil God sent him to, was actually here!

The Phoenix's Spirit had once said, he had three lifetimes. Indeed, he truly did have three lifetimes. In his first lifetime, he grew up in the Xiao Clan of Profound Sky Continent's Blue Wind Empire. When he sixteen



years old, on the day of his marriage with Xia Qingyue, he was poisoned to death by Xiao Yulong, and his life ended there. In his second lifetime, he was born in Azure Cloud Continent, and was picked up by the Medical Saint. He spent half his life learning medical techniques, saving the ill and aiding the injured. He then spent the other half of his life with a heart filled with hatred, slaughtering countless of people. And when he was twenty seven years old, he was forced off Cloud's End Cliff and died.

In his third lifetime, he brought

all of his memories in his first and second lifetimes, and awakened in his first lifetime's dead body...

His knowledge told him that his own experiences were so strange and shocking, to the point of that they could shock the world.

He had once suspected that everything about the Azure Cloud Continent was actually just a dream as well... Otherwise, how would he have awoken in his own body that should have died at least twenty

seven years ago... There was a possibility for everything in this world to be turned over, however, only time could not be turned back. If his lifetime in Azure Cloud Continent was not a dream, then, excluding every other possibilities, based on time, at least twenty seven years were turned back.

However, currently, the name “Azure Cloud Continent” had once again appeared in his world, and it was telling him with a thundering voice... Everything about the Azure Cloud Continent was not a dream at all, and it was

impossible for it to be a dream.

“Big brother Yun Che, what happened to you? Your expression looks really strange? Ow...” Su Ling’er cried out painfully. It seemed like, when Yun Che was lost in a daze, he accidentally pressed on the bruise on her ankle.

Yun Che regained his senses, and hurriedly held onto her small leg carefully, gently taking off her socks. “It’s nothing. I was just thinking of some matters earlier, did I hurt you... Right,

Ling'er, can you tell me, which country are we in?"

Grandwake Mountain was located in Supwake, a country that was situated furthest east in Azure Cloud Continent. Yun Che very clearly knew of this point, he simply wanted to use this girl's answer to make a clearer confirmation that he had indeed returned to the Azure Cloud Continent.

"Of course, it's the Country of Supwake!" Ling'er answered clearly.

“Then... What profound year is it this year?”

“Azure Cloud’s 1999 Profound Year!” Ling’er blurted out, answering with complete confidence.

Yun Che’s movements instantly paused...

Azure Cloud’s 1999 Profound Year?

When he leapt off Cloud's End Cliff, it was clearly the Azure Cloud's 2014 Profound Year, and now, time had past a year and a half since then, the time here should have been Azure Cloud's 2015 Profound Year!

If time had really turned back by twenty seven years, then this year should have been the Azure Cloud's 1987 Profound Year!

Why was it Azure Cloud's 1999 Profound Year?

On the day of Azure Cloud's 1999 Profound Year, he was still in the Azure Cloud Continent, and had just reached twelve years old. Su Ling'er was two years younger than him, and had just reached ten years old. Back then, they had yet to meet, and he always followed his master to different places, learned more and more complex medical techniques while testing out all of the herbs on earth. At the same time, he had only just found out the existence of the Sky Poison Pearl...



Could it be, the place the Evil God said he would send him to, was just a dreamscape he created? After all, the Evil God's residue soul read his memories, and would believe that this was the place that he would wish to be in the most.

His thoughts were once again in a state of chaos, and the movements with his hands became slow as well. On Ling'er's leg, that dirtied sock was finally taken off. On her leg which was as tender as milk, two dots of hazel-colored scar marks were incomparably eye-catching...

Yun Che's entire body once again trembled, as though he was struck ruthlessly by a bolt of lightning.

This scar...

It was at the same position... as his Ling'er's. The same shape. The same size. The same color... The exact same scar!!

In his mind, the image of him first seeing this scar surfaced...

Back then, Ling'er told him. "This was bitten by a very cute little snow mink when I was seven years old. But, it can't be blamed, as I was the one who accidentally stepped on its tail. Oh right, that little snow mink is called Ling Ling, we even became very good pals."

After that, he had used a type of medical cream that he mixed himself and completely removed the scar by applying it on her leg, allowing her leg to once again return to being as flawless as white jade.

Seeing Yun Che suddenly looking at the scar on her leg in a daze, little Ling'er blinked her eyes, and said cheerfully. "This was bitten by a very cute little snow mink when I was seven years old. But, it can't be blamed, as I was the one who accidentally stepped on its tail. Oh right, that little snow mink is called Ling Ling, we even became very good pals."

"...!!!"

Yun Che slowly raised his eyes and stared blankly at the little

girl who had a charming smile,  
as his vision began to spin...

# Chapter 262 – Su Hengshan

---

“What happened? Why is your mind fluctuating so violently?” Jasmine suddenly asked. She felt that Yun Che’s mind was in an unprecedented level of turmoil, so much that she could even distinctly hear the violent “badump” “badump” sounds of Yun Che’s heart beating.

Azure Cloud Continent... 1999  
Profound Year... 10 years old...  
Su Ling’er... the scar... the same  
name... similar complexion...  
and the style of speech that’s

exactly the same...

All of this weaved within Yun Che's mind chaotically, causing his spirit to tremble incomparably violently. This was because everything that happened pointed towards one possibility... Without caring whether or not he would frighten the girl, he suddenly reached out and lifted her dress and undergarments. On the upper end of her delicate right knee, he saw two small, crimson birthmarks side-by-side...

“Ling’er... you’re Ling’er...  
you’re Ling’er... you’re Ling’er...  
YOU’RE LING’ER!!”

The instant he saw those two birthmarks, Yun Che’s last emotional barrier completely collapsed. The blood in his body bubbled up, golden stars lined his vision, and he almost fainted on the spot! The things in the deepest recesses of his mind and spirit began to stir violently: grief, bitterness, pain, sorrow... All these feelings milled forward, and his eyes instantly grew hazy with tears. The moment his emotions crumbled, he suddenly hugged the girl, and



held on firmly, as if he were embracing his entire world.

“Ah...” The girl, who was completely unaware of the raging waves of emotion in Yun Che’s heart, was startled by Yun Che’s sudden action and change of heart. However, as for Yun Che’s sudden tight embrace, for some reason, she didn’t feel any rejection at all. After quite a while, she said feebly: “Big Brother Yun Che, it hurts, you’re hugging me too tightly, uu...”

Right now, every single one of

this girl's words was like heavenly music from his dreams to him. Every aspect of her tightly linked to his spirit and lifeline. Hearing her voice, Yun Che loosened his arms practically in fright, then grew afraid that this would scare her, and hurriedly released his arms. But his hands still lightly rested on her thin shoulders, seeming as though he was afraid that if he didn't hold on to her, she would disappear right in front of him.

She's Ling'er... My Ling'er...

Then... All of this, is indeed a dreamscape brought by the Evil God?

A dreamscape is alright! As long as I can see my Ling'er again, even if it's a dreamscape, I'm willing to stay asleep forever...

“Big Brother Yun Che, why did you cry all of sudden?” The girl's heart was filled with bewilderment, but seeing the tear stains on Yun Che's face, her eyes filled with pity. She reached out, met his gaze, and lightly wiped off the teardrops

on his face. She definitely didn't know how extremely precious every one of Yun Che's tears was, and that they had gushed for her.

“I'm... I'm alright. Only... only, some sand got in my eyes.” Yun Che shook his head and gave a clumsy excuse as he tried to hold his tears back. In this world, the only thing that could cause his state of mind to go out of control so thoroughly was Su Ling'er... even though everything in his awareness right now was an illusion. Su Ling'er could never actually appear in front of his eyes again, because his Ling'er

perished in his arms back then, and he had personally buried her within that bamboo forest.

“Eh? Does it hurt a lot? Uuu... I’ll help blow into Big Brother Yun Che’s eye, alright? Once, when I was really young, some sand got in my eyes. But after Mother blew into my eye, I was completely alright.”

As the girl spoke, her pink and tender lips puckered... The Su Ling’er in front of him was so innocent and unaffected, so carefree and without worry, and

her eyes were so bright and clear. Yes, the current her was still situated under the care and pampering of her close relatives. She hadn't gone through any great changes, and still didn't understand what sadness was, what sorrow was, what enmity was, what pain was... The Su Ling'er in his memories, with that eternally distressed and detached expression in her eyes, caused his heart to fill with needle-like pain every time he thought of her.

“It's alright, the sand's already gone. Look, I'm fine.” Yun Che firmly blinked at her, and his

mouth formed an extremely warm smile: “What’s most important now, are the injuries on Ling’er’s leg... Everything’ll be okay in a flash, and it won’t hurt at all.”

Yun Che once again covered his hands over the girl’s bruised leg. Accompanied by a warm profound energy, the Sky Poison Pearl’s purifying force gently entered her bruise and slowly nourished it... Then, he took out a medicine bottle and delicately applied the ointment on her calf, ankle... He then swapped to her other leg, and applied the ointment on the two

symmetrical scars there.

In the entire process, Yun Che's actions were very light, as if he was touching a beautiful and frail crystal doll. With Yun Che's medical expertise, this little injury could not even be injury, but in order for Su Ling'er to not even feel a sliver of pain, he used his all to focus his mind. Painstaking effort was concentrated within every one of his movements. After the entire process, he looked even more exhausted than a patient nearing death. However, he gladly suffered through it.



In not even half a quarter of an hour, the bruise on Su Ling'er's ankle and calf had miraculously disappeared completely. Even the scar on her leg had also lightened by a lot. In at most three days, it would also completely disappear. Su Ling'er shook her leg a little, and then cried out in surprise: "Wah! It doesn't hurt anymore! Not even a little! Big Brother Yun Che, you're seriously too awesome!"

The girl looked in his eyes with a gaze full of brilliantly shining stars. The admiration she felt

for Yun Che had sharply risen by a substantial amount.

Yun Che used his profound energy to drive away the dirt on Su Ling'er's shoes and socks. Then, he carefully put them back on Su Ling'er's legs. Su Ling'er did not resist, nor did she refuse. She didn't even feel embarrassed at all. In her heart, there contained a type of warm happiness and an odd sort of feeling that she could not say out loud... Even she herself, did not understand why that was the case.

“Ling’er! Ling’er... Where are you? Ling’er...”

Suddenly, anxious shouts sounded in the distance. And what was being shouted, was surprisingly Su Ling’er’s name.

Yun Che heard it before Su Ling’er. With a twitch of his brow, his gaze swept over, and saw a middle-aged man hastily run over. He was in a panic, his hair was disheveled, and the clothes on his body were rather worn out. However, there was a type of calm and mighty upper

class feeling could be captured on his bearing.

He's... Su Ling'er's father?

The middle-aged man's footsteps were lightning-fast, and he traveled over in a short time. Having heard his voice, Su Ling'er's eyes shined as she spoke excitedly: "Papa, it's Papa's voice!"

She stood up suddenly, and ran over in the middle-aged man's direction. However, after

running a few steps, she turned around and looked at Yun Che, and stopped again. Standing at her former place, she beckoned at the middle-aged man: “Papa! I’m here, I’m here!!”

“Ling’er!” The middle-aged man became overjoyed, and rushed over with his fastest speed. He grasped Su Ling’er’s shoulders at once, and spoke with an extremely anxious tone: “Thank god thank god... Ling’er, why did you run to such a faraway place? Are you injured anywhere? Did anyone try to kidnap you?”

“Papa relax, even though there were bad guys, but... Big Brother Yun Che saved me. Big Brother Yun Che is really amazing. Not only did he smack those bad guys running all at once, he also made the place I fell and hurt myself not hurt at all.”

The middle-aged man's entire heart was full concern about Su Ling'er's safety, and when he saw her, all his attention was even more so focused on her. He had only now noticed Yun Che's existence. He took a step forward, and said with immense

gratitude: "This little brother, thank you for rescuing my daughter, this Su really is eternally grateful."

With Yun Che's arrogant bones, let alone middle-aged man, even if it's a highly respected elderly person, he would ordinarily just deal with them with a straight face. But the one before his eyes was Su Ling'er's father, which was an entirely different matter. He hastily greeted back: "Senior Su is too polite. Ling'er is kind and cute, anyone would come to her rescue if they saw her. This junior also just merely lent a hand."

From the middle-aged man's complexion, what Yun Che saw was the deep care and concern for Su Ling'er. At least, his fatherly love toward Su Ling'er wasn't the least bit impure.

Yun Che's modesty, gave the middle-aged man a very good impression. He smiled and said: "To receive such a praise from little brother here, my little girl here must be thrilled." At this time, he noticed Xia Qingyue, who was laying there without a sound. Even though she was only silently laying there, there



still remained the goddess-like beauty that would drive one into ecstasy. The middle-aged man went blank for a bit, then immediately recovered and asked: "Little brother, is this one your friend? Looking from her complexion, is she haunted by a severe illness?"

Yun Che nodded: "This is my wife. Her body has been affected by the cold, and her vitality has been severely injured. Perhaps she will remain unconscious for a very long time."

“So that’s how it is...” The middle-aged man nodded, and inside his heart he exclaimed: The man is otherworldly handsome, the woman is as beautiful as a goddess; what a fine-looking pair! Their background definitely isn’t ordinary. Especially this woman, how can a normal family raise up such a goddess-like girl. This man’s age looks only to be seventeen or eighteen, yet his profound energy aura has already reached Spirit Profound Realm. He ought to be some disciple or even a heir of some top level sect...

As he thought till here, the middle-aged man spoke: "Little brother, you ought to have come from a foreign place, right? Do you currently have any place to stay? If you aren't unwilling, how about staying for a few days at our Grandwake Clan? It'll also allow this Su to express his gratitude."

The inside of Yun Che's heart moved. He took a glance at the unconscious Xia Qingyue, then took another glance at Su Ling'er, and said: "This junior does indeed need a place of settlement to treat my wife's injuries... If that's the case, then

this Junior will gratefully receive Senior's hospitality."

"Hahahaha, do not be so modest little brother. Compare to your great kindness of saving my daughter, this isn't considered to be much." The middle-aged man started to laugh warmly: "Oh right, this one's surname is Su, with the name Hengshan. Come, Little Brother Yun."

"Big Brother Yun Che will go home together with us? That's great that's great that's great!!"

Su Ling'er was excited to the point of jumping. That exceptionally happy appearance made Su Hengshan feel somewhat inexplicable. He made a spoiling smile: "Not only is Little Brother Yun our benefactor, he is also our guest now. You'll have to learn some manners, shouting and yelling like this doesn't make you good girl, okay?"

"Heee! Papa really is naggy. Big Brother Yun Che is the bestest person, he wouldn't complain about me." As she spoke, Su Ling'er ran over and grabbed Yun Che's hand and said while

grinning: “Big Brother Yun Che, you promised to come back home with us, you can’t escape halfway okay?”

“Okay!” Yun Che extended his hand pushed Su Ling’er’s little nose tip with a faint smile... He really wanted to know just what kind of family was Su Ling’er born and raised in.

Su Hengshan felt somewhat puzzled for a moment. Calculating from the time, Ling’er and Little Brother Yun at most have met for half an hour

at most, how did they become so close already? Moreover, looking at Ling'er's manner, she, who usually didn't like to meet with strangers, was exceptionally fond of Little Brother Yun... How curious.

Yun Che carried Xia Qingyue, followed behind Su Hengshan, and walked towards the "Grandwake Clan" that Su Ling'er had grown up in.

## Chapter 263 – Grandwake Mountain, Grandwake Clan

---

On the way, Yun Che conversed with Su Hengshan. He ascertained once more than this place was indeed Azure Cloud Continent from Su Hengshan's own mouth, and the year was in fact 1999! When Su Hengshan asked them where they came from, he responded without thinking that him and Xia Qingyue left their sect to experience the outside world, but not long ago, they had an unlucky encounter with a vicious profound beast, and Xia



Qingyue lost consciousness from a heavy injury.

During his past life, Yun Che was already sure that Su Ling'er had an extraordinary family background. Although she normally wore the simplest of clothing to do his laundry, bathe him, mend his clothing, cook, pick his medicine, season his medicine and treat him... She did everything more skillfully than how a girl from an ordinary family background would have done, but her instinctive grandeur and grace was not something an ordinary family could have raised. He

only figured through his conversations with Su Hengshan, that Su Hengshan was an incumbent sect master of the Grandwake Clan! And Su Ling'er, was precisely the princess of the Grandwake Clan. East of the Supwake Country's river, Grandwake Clan was without a doubt the number one sect, as well as the biggest power. Their status was similar to New Moon City's Xiao Sect's Branch Sect, and they relied on Grandwake Mountain for its incredibly generous amounts of natural resources and minerals.

From the estimates of Su

Hengshan's profound energy aura and the encounter with the three men in black earlier, this Grandwake Clan's power level should be higher than New Moon City's Xiao Sect's Branch Sect by a level or two, but it absolutely wasn't at the level of the Four Major Sects' level.

However, even in the east of the Grandwake River, Grandwake Clan still had enemies: the Blackwood Stronghold!

As sect master, Su Hengshan had the dignity and might of a

sect master, but he had an even more cultured and refined personality. When he was facing a junior, he did not show the pride of the number one sect master east of the river. Not a hint of falsehood or reservation hung on his face as he showed his appreciation and thanks for Yun Che. If he didn't hear it from his own mouth, Yun Che wouldn't even have believed that he was a sect master at all!

Having a father like that, it was no wonder that Su Ling'er was raised to be so honest and elegant.

He wanted to learn about the matters concerning Su Ling'er as much as possible. When he asked the father daughter duo why they would encounter such aggression, Su Hengshan let out a long sigh. His face exposed a deeply angry look: "They're all just some sect grudges. If I say it, we would just be mocked, Little Brother Yun... Except I didn't think that they'd take action against Ling'er! This kind of insulting behavior is utterly unforgivable!"

Yun Che muttered to himself a

bit and said: “Senior Su, forgive this junior for talking too much. You and Su Ling’er just came out together to have some fun for a little while, but encountered such an obviously calculated ambush. It’s clear that someone exposed your and Su Ling’er’s whereabouts.”

“Sigh!” Su Hengshan sighed: “How can I not know about all this. It’s just that I really don’t want to suspect anyone on my side.”

Grandwake Clan was far larger

than Yun Che could imagine. At the very least, the size of this clan was far greater than the Xiao Sect Branch Sect he had once went to. For a clan of this size, there would be at least a few tens of thousands of disciples.

“Big Brother Yun Che, look, this is my home! It’s big isn’t it! This huge mountain behind us is also our home!”

As they approached Grandwake Clan’s main entrance, Su Ling’er happily and pridefully

introduced everything to Yun Che. Su Hengshan's brows were constantly tight and his mind was occupied the entire way, but Su Ling'er was actually being a bit too carefree considering she almost encountered a great disaster. A naive and adorable smile constantly hung on her face like she had already forgotten all the events prior to this... Looking at her fairy-like smile, Yun Che's line of sight was constantly confused and dazed... Ling'er, how wonderful would it be if you could be this carefree without worries your entire life...



“Father! Ling’er, you’re back!”  
A barely twenty year old young male welcomed them from afar and emotionally yelled: “I heard rumors that you guys encountered an ambush from the Blackwood Stronghold. Seeing you guys without any problems is wonderful... Father, Ling’er, you two aren’t hurt right?”

“No problem, just a bit of a scare and luckily, this little brother helped.” Su Hengshan nodded and introduced Yun Che: “Little Brother Yun, this is my son, Su Haoran. I am forty six this year and only have a pair of

son and daughter like this. Even saying such things is a bit shameful, hehe... Haoran, this is Little Brother Yun Che. If he didn't save Ling'er, Ling'er might have been captured by those bastards from Blackwood Stronghold. Little Brother Yun's wife suffered a few minor injuries, and requires our help for a few days. You have to thank and take care of them for your father."

"What! Blackwood Stronghold's people took action against Ling'er? That's lower than low! Utterly heartless!" Su Haoran's entire face was filled with anger

and he cupped his hands toward Yun Che: “Brother Yun, thank you for saving Ling’er...”

When he spoke to this point, he shot glance toward Xia Qingyue being carried by Yun Che within his arms. Suddenly, His gaze was completely fixated and was unable to move away anymore. His face became imbecilic and foolish like he had lost his soul all of a sudden.

Yun Che remained calm and collected, and embraced Xia Qingyue closer to his chest to

hide her face away Su Haoran's line of sight, then gently smiled: "It only took a bit of effort. Brother Haoran is too courteous."

"Big brother." Su Ling'er who stood by Yun Che's side crisply shouted at Su Haoran with her emotionless voice and joyless face. This felt a bit strange to Yun Che because he distinctly felt Su Ling'er wasn't intimate toward her brother. It almost seemed like there was a slight bit of alienation.

And this Su Haoran's look towards Xia Qingyue also made him very uncomfortable.

Su Haoran just recollected his thoughts and half lowered his head and with an unnatural expression, he said: "Father, the clan already knows the matter about you being ambushed. Second and Sixth Uncle are in the conference room waiting for you."

Su Hengshan nodded: "I'll go then. Haoran, you go and arrange residence for Little

Brother Yun and his wife... Oh, just set them up in the Dragon Perching Pavilion.”

He turned around and said to Yun Che: “Little Brother Yun, I have some matters to attend to, excuse me. If you need anything, don’t hesitate to tell my son. Please don’t be too polite. Ling’er, come and follow papa.”

Su Hengshan brought Su Ling’er and left quickly. Su Ling’er looked back once in awhile; the fact that she didn’t want to leave Yun Che was

written all over her face. Under Su Haoran's guidance, Yun Che carried Xia Qingyue to the Dragon Perching Pavilion that Su Hengshan mentioned and gently placed Xia Qingyue on the only huge bed there.

Grandwake Mountain's atmosphere was incredibly grand since it was one of the twelve divine mountains in the Azure Cloud Continent. There were countless spirit medicine and spirit stones within the mountains. The rich resources gave birth to the powerful Grandwake Clan. The room that Su Hengshan personally

appointed for Yun Che was extremely luxurious. The name “Dragon Perching Pavilion” wasn’t pointless. On top of all kinds of red hardwood decorations, sculptures in all shapes and forms depicted a majestic five clawed flying dragon. This place should be where Grandwake Clan received their most honored guests. It goes to show just how grateful Su Hengshan was towards Yun Che for saving Su Ling’er.

“Brother Yun and this lady are... husband and wife?”



“That’s right.” Yun Che nodded. Then, he saw a hint of jealousy within Su Haoran’s eyes.

“Heheh.” Su Haoran forced a smile and said: “Brother Yun is truly fortunate to actually be wedded with such a beautiful fairy-like bride. Oh, Brother Yun doesn’t lack natural talents either. You actually stepped into the Spirit Profound Realm, not bad not bad.”

These words from Su Haoran contained the arrogant tone of

the strong talking to the weak. He complimented Yun Che's natural talents, but his demeanor was in fact proud and aloof. He was twenty years old this year, and his profound strength was already at the fourth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. He was at the peak level within the younger generation east of the river. Just comparing profound strength, he was stronger than Yun Che who was only at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm... but that was merely profound strength.

“Brother Haoran is wrongfully

praising.” Yun Che spoke without thinking.

“Except, Brother Yun, it’s not that I’m criticizing you. Although your natural talents aren’t bad, you came out just like that to experience the world together with your wife. You’re just making too much trouble for yourself. In this world, there are many people with better natural talent than you. Arrogance, complacency, and ignorance aren’t good things. Before you have the strength to properly protect your family, it’s better to to not do as you please. Otherwise, when you encounter

an actual disaster and you don't have the strength to protect your family, harming your fairy-like wife's life would be terrible.

When Su Haoran spoke, he peeked at Xia Qingyue from time to time. Every time he glanced towards her, his fingers would tremble a bit... In his entire life, he had never seen a girl as beautiful as Xia Qingyue; furthermore, he could never imagine it was possible for a girl to be beautiful to such a degree. There were even several times when he couldn't resist losing control to knock Yun Che out, and then enjoy this sleeping

beauty however he liked.

Yun Che faintly smiled and said: “Thank you Brother Haoran, for your reminders. I’ll remember it.”

Su Haoran extended his right hand and had difficulty enduring making a grabbing motion: “This lady is in a coma and isn’t waking up. Looks like her injuries aren’t light. I just happen to have some medical expertise. Let me examine a bit, then grab some spirit medicine, and she’ll be awake in no time.”

After he finished talking, Su Haoran casually walked forward and approached Xia Qingyue's bedside.

Yun Che took a step forward and impolitely blocked Su Haoran's way and calmly said: "No need, I can't be any more certain of my wife's condition. There is no need to for Brother Haoran to feel troubled. Thank you Brother Haoran, for your warm reception, I won't waste your time any longer. You may leave."

Su Haoran's expression changed and he didn't have a reason to stay anymore. He stared at Yun Che a bit and said: "Very well then. I won't bother you two. If you need anything, you can tell my servants outside anytime."

After Yun Che saw Su Haoran leave, he tightly shut his room's door. He coldly smiled and muttered: "He dares to lust after my wife... humph! You can think all you want, but if you think about anything else, even if you are Ling'er's brother, I won't go

easy on you!”

Xia Qingyue was sleeping soundly, and had no idea that she already came to another world. Yun Che kept close and guarded by her side. Every eighth of an hour, he would check her inner vitality, and see that her internal energy became increasingly calm, which finally put his mind at ease.

“Jasmine, do you have any way to help her recover a bit faster?” Yun Che asked. Although Xia Qingyue’s condition had



temporarily stabilized, the injuries in her profound vein were too severe. To completely restore Xia Qingyue would take a long time even for him. Him and Xia Qingyue could only stay here for a day. After returning to Heaven Basin Secret Realm, they could stay a maximum of half a day. When they leave the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, the people of Frozen Cloud Asgard would never let Yun Che see her again. Yun Che believed they wouldn't be able to completely restore Xia Qingyue if she was brought back to Frozen Cloud Asgard.

“Of course!”

Yun Che was only casually asking, but he didn't think Jasmine would decisively answer with certainty: "It's precisely the thing that you found with her, the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus!"

"This lotus flower's effectiveness is far greater than you can imagine! After using the Sky Poison Pearl to perfectly refine the essence of the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, if you give it to her afterwards, her entire body would recover shortly and her

profound strength would step into the Sky Profound Realm right away... in your Blue Wind Empire, she would be considered the first person under twenty to step into the Sky Profound Realm... Only, the premise of everything is that you'd have be willing!"

# Chapter 264 – Qingyue Awakens

---

“Really?” Yun Che’s mind shook, and stood up while shouting: “Whether or not she could breakthrough is secondary. If the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus could make her completely recover within a short period of time, then why would I not be willing!”

“You have to think it through clearly.” Jasmine warned: “The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus being considered a sacred object

in your Blue Wind Empire is not an exaggeration at all! After using this Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, an object of the same level might not appear in Blue Wind Empire for the next thousand years. In other words, if you use this Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus on her, then it equates to you forever losing an enormous opportunity.”

“Furthermore! You have all kinds of divine beast bloodlines and primordial god arts within your body. Every time your profound strength rises by a level, your increase in strength

is not something another person could compare to! If you used the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus on yourself, the rise in strength it would bring would far surpass her! In my eyes, if you truly gave it up, it would be a stupid and wasteful move!”

Yun Che took two steps back. Then, with a thought, he was already cupping that huge Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus between his two hands. Even though the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus had been exposed to the air, it was wrapped under the powerful aura of the Sky Profound Pearl, so its essence

did not leak at all. He said without the slightest hesitation: "Raising strength is certainly important, but she is my lawfully wedded wife. Her recovery is by far, much more important than raising my own power!"

"...If the person who laid in front of me is you, I'd pick you just the same!"

Jasmine originally wanted to say something, but after hearing this from Yun Che, she was suddenly speechless and did not

say another word for quite a while.

The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was quickly wrapped up by the green light that the Sky Poison Pearl emitted. All the essence it contained was quickly refined. Flakes of faint blue and red powder gently floated down, and finally landed in Yun Che's palm. What remained was a round bead the size of a dragon's eye that emitted a faint blue radiance.

An intoxicating fragrance



assailed his nostrils. After Yun Che gently breathed in a breath of air, he immediately felt his entire body relax, and even his blood circulation mildly sped up quite a bit. As an existence that was at the level of a sacred object, the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus was incredibly precious, but the difficulty of refining this was also incredibly high as well. If it was in anyone else's hands, retaining a third of its full effectiveness was the limit. However, in the hands of Yun Che, he could perfectly do what no one else could possibly believe, one hundred percent effectiveness!

Therefore, the effect of this “Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet” in Yun Che’s hands was much stronger than what was recorded! Perhaps twice or three times, maybe even more!

The records had shown that one pellet would allow someone at the early stage of the Earth Profound Realm to break through into the Sky Profound Realm, but the one in Yun Che’s hands... even he himself had no idea what level Xia Qingyue’s profound strength would raise up to after she wakes up.

Only by smelling its fragrance, one's entire body would feel as if it had been baptized. It was simply impossible to imagine what kind of transformation it would bring if it was consumed. Its attractiveness is something that all profound practitioners even those elderly experts who had great experience would hardly be able to resist it. Yun Che silently looked at it, but his expression was unexpectedly ordinary. He didn't even have a hint of hesitation. If it wasn't for Xia Qingyue saving his life, he would have been a dead man long time ago, so how could he not be willing to save her!

He moved forward and gently parted Xia Qingyue's delicate lips. Then, he put the "Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet" that could cause the entire Blue Wind Empire to tremble into her mouth. With a gentle push of his profound energy, he guided it into her body.

Jasmine did not say anything to stop him.

Clank...

Without even needing Yun Che

to his profound strength as a catalyst, the Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet had practically instantly entered her body. Xia Qingyue's body blossomed with a layer of splendorous moon-white sheen. This layer of light was incredibly gentle and did not have a trace of violent energy. In most situations, a medicinal pellet that contained a lot of power would generally take a very long time to refine and the process would be brimming with danger. When swallowed, it would usually exploded like a flame inside the body. If it wasn't controlled and refined well, this flame would be enough to harm the whole body, or

could even be fatal. However, when this “Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet” entered the body, the strength it contained was as mild as a ripple; slowly and gently, it spread into every part of the body and bestowed all the power it contained to Xia Qingyue.

Under the moon-white sheen, Xia Qingyue’s breathing became more and more relaxed. Yun Che quickly and pleasantly discovered that all her meridians, which were damaged by the cold, were miraculous healing at a rapid pace. The circulation of her blood also

quickly calmed down as well. Then, a slight rosy blush started to appear on her pure white face. Afterwards, under Yun Che's careful gaze, she slowly opened her eyes.

From the time Xia Qingyue took the Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet to when she woke up, it took only an eighth of an hour. The miraculous effects of the Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet made Yun Che feel as if he was dreaming.

“Where... is this?” Xia Qingyue

looked all around in a daze. With a misty expression, she felt as if she was in a dream. According to her memories, they were still in Heaven Basin's enormous beast's darkness and cold.

She felt a gentle source of power within her body and a layer of warm power continuously rushed into every part of her body.

“Don't get up.” Yun Che promptly reached out, pressed her shoulders down, and gently



said: “This is a very safe place... don’t worry, you’re not dreaming. We’ve already escaped. I am already alright, and you will also be better soon.”

Then, he gave a simple account of the events that had occurred to Xia Qingyue; about everything that happened after escaping the enormous beast in the Heavenly Basin to arriving at this place. But his version of the events had a slightly deviation from what actually occurred. He told Xia Qingyue that he inadvertently found a space attribute treasure within the

Heaven Basin enormous beast's stomach and had escaped to here. He did not tell Xia Qingyue that this place was in fact a "fantasy world".

As Yun Che gave his explanation, the Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet was still steadily releasing its power within Xia Qingyue's body, restoring her originally completely exhausted profound strength at an astonishing pace. With this speed, perhaps in less than two hours, her body and profound strength would have completely recovered.

“You gave me... the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus?” After sensing the warm power within her body, that was the only possibility that Xia Qingyue could think of.

“Mn, I was still a bit worried before. Luckily, it was like what you had said, its medicinal strength is incredibly warm. There’s no risk at all.” Yun Che said with a slight smile.

“But...”

“No buts.” Yun Che interrupted her words and lightly shook his hand. Then he reached out and grabbed her delicate hands: “For the sake of saving my life, you were willing to give up your own. Why would an Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus matter. Besides, we’re a married couple, we don’t need to distinguish ourselves separately.”

Suddenly, the heart of Xia Qingyue, who had her hands gripped tightly by Yun Che, trembled slightly. She unconsciously wanted to

struggle her hands free, but they were being firmly held by Yun Che. She continuously struggled several times, but she lost due to her powerlessness. She could only let him hold her hands, and her heart rate gradually increased. Even though she secretly used the Frozen Heart Arts, she was not able to suppress it.

The two had been married for a long time, but this was the first time they had held their hands together so ambiguously. Xia Qingyue's hands were ice cold and soft; they were as tender as soft jade, so soft that they

seemed to be boneless. After Yun Che held her, he was not willing to let go. The two remained silent for quite a while and both of them were afraid of talking, in fear of breaking this special mood.

Knock knock knock...

Graceful footsteps approached from the outside, and then a knock was heard. Not wanting to let go of Xia Qingyue's hands, Yun Che asked: "Who is it?"

“Big Brother Yun Che, are you inside? It’s Ling’er.”

Su Ling’er’s free-spirited voice that seemed like a nightingale echoed through. Yun Che promptly opened the door, and saw Su Ling’er, who changed into a mild green colored chiffon, charmingly stand outside. When she saw Yun Che, she happily smiled: “Big Brother Yun Che!”

---

Author's Note: This chapter is a bit short... allow me to think for a while, prepare for a fight!!

A main character who doesn't fight cannot be the main character... How much do you think the main character's wife could evolve?



# Chapter 265 – Mutual Hostility

---

“Ling’er.” After seeing Su Ling’er’s delicate little face, Yun Che brimmed with warmth and joy. This joyous feeling that struck the depth of his soul was a joy that nothing else could replace. Just by calmly looking at Ling’er, he felt that his life was already perfect.

He didn’t know that when Su Ling’er saw him, she had the exact same change of emotions as he did. Yun Che had it because him and Su Ling’er were

bound by their past life. As far as Su Ling'er was concerned, it was merely the simple feeling, simple joy and the feeling of being near, without any other reason or cause. She said: "Heh, Big Brother Yun Che, father told me to tell you that at dusk, there will be many people coming to the clan and some bad things are going to take place. When it's time, Big Brother Yun Che has to shut his room door tightly and should not leave for any reason."

"Oh?" Yun Che's brows moved slightly. Then, he nodded and answered with a slight smile: "Okay, I understand."

“Mn! Then... Big Brother Yun Che, I’m going back now. You and beautiful big sister have to rest well.” Su Ling’er said while beaming. She took a little step back, but didn’t leave right away. A pair of liquid diamond eyes clung on to Yun Che for awhile and had an expression that couldn’t bear to leave.

“Ah? Why do you need to leave so quickly? I still want to talk with Su Ling’er for awhile.”

Su Ling’er pouted and said:

“Father said that you guys should have traveled quite a distance, and must be exhausted. Additionally, the beautiful big sister is ill and needs to rest as well, so he told me to leave as soon as I passed on the information, so that I won’t bother you... Big Brother Yun Che, when beautiful big sister wakes up, can you play with me? Oh there’s more... Big brother Yun Che came from very far away, I want to listen to Big Brother Yun Che tell stories about the place from far away.

Su Ling’er was still naive, and carefree with smiles. It made

Yun Che feel a dizzying joy so extravagant that Yun Che felt as if he was in a dream. He gently smiled, then slowly and carefully nodded his head: “Okay! When it’s time, I’ll play with Su Ling’er for sure and I’ll tell Su Ling’er many stories... It’s a deal!”

“Mn! Hehe...” Su Ling’er tilted her head then ran away happily like an oriole that was set free.

After closing his room door, Yun Che’s expression quickly turned severe.

There was going to be a group of people that would come in the evening? What kind of bad things were going to happen? Could it be...

On top of the bed, Xia Qingyue's eyes were lightly shut and was in a meditative state. She calmly absorbed and guided the strength of the Emperor Awakening Heart Pellet, except her five senses really weren't completely sealed. She heard the entire conversation that Yun Che had with Su Ling'er.

Their time limit in this place was only a short twenty four hours. He naturally couldn't spend each and every second with Ling'er, but at the moment, Xia Qingyue definitely needed someone to guard her side and Grandwake Clan wasn't really a place they considered calm and stable. In addition, there was the Su Haoran who harbored evil intentions, so he absolutely did not want to leave Xia Qingyue's side.

“Yun Che, have you been here before?” Jasmine suddenly said.

“No, I haven’t.”

“Then why are you acting so special towards that little girl? You just met her today, but when you saw her completely lose control of her emotions earlier, your emotional reactions became out of the ordinary! What is going on here?” Jasmine said with a serious tone. Even though “that little girl” coming out of the mouth of another little girl was a bit strange...

“...” Yun Che raised his head



and lightly said: "That, is truly an unspeakable secret."

Jasmine: "..."

During the entire afternoon, Yun Che always guarded Xia Qingyue's side as Xia Qingyue laid there motionlessly. The moon-white sheen beside her never waned, and this layer of light magically isolated the aura of Xia Qingyue's profound strength, inhibiting Yun Che from finding out the state of her profound strength. But this was fine as well, if the Emperor

Awakening Heart Pellet was actually as astonishing as the legends said they were, then perhaps Xia Qingyue would be able to breakthrough into the Sky Profound Realm! If the aura of the profound strength breaking through startled the Grandwake Clan, then it might attract unnecessary attention instead.

The sky gradually dimmed and it was already nightfall. At this moment, the sound of urgent footsteps suddenly echoed in from outside, as if many people were rushing to a certain place right now. The sound of

footsteps continued on for a long while until the sound of disorderly and abnormal clamor started transmitting from afar. With Yun Che's hearing abilities, he faintly heard the sound of callous laughter and angry rebuke from time to time.

Yun Che took a glance at Xia Qingyue's state, and then walked to the window. He carefully opened a slit in the window and looked towards the place where the sound originated from.

There were already many

people gathered to the brim in front of Grandwake Clan's Conference Hall. On one side were Grandwake Clan's leaders and a group of disciples headed by Su Hengshan, who had a pair of angry eyes. Across from them stood a group of three hundred men in black. Under the escort of the men in black were over ten middle-aged people dressed in different attire. There was also an elder with a swagger, who was sitting in a rattan chair that seemed came out of nowhere. His eyes were half closed and he was unrestrained like an old deity with a proud attitude that didn't put anyone else in his eyes.

“Su Hengyue! I always respected you as my second brother. Even though you had opposed me when we were fighting for the position of Clan Master in the past, I still put the matter behind me and never mentioned it! These past years, the clan’s resources were all prioritized for you! I can understand that you want our late ancestor’s treasure as well, but you actually unhesitantly collaborated with Blackwood Stronghold and made these ambitious moves! How can you face our deceased father, how can you face our Grandwake Clan’s ancestors!!

Su Hengshan's face was brimming with anger and his gaze shifted to another person: "And you! Li Yunji, when you met certain doom back then and your life was hanging by a thread, who was it that saved you? And who was it that gave you over ten years of peace? Is this how you repay my father and my Grandwake Clan's kindness?"

The middle-aged man, Li Yunji, who was pointed out by Su Hengshan took a slight step back and an unnatural expression

flashed on his face. But he immediately answered with a cold snort: “The late Clan Master’s kindness will naturally always be kept in my heart! It’s also because of the late Clan Master’s great favor, that I could not bear to see Grandwake Clan get destroyed in your hands! Resign as Clan Master and hand over the treasure key! If not for your obstinate behaviors, Grandwake Clan would have already had a shockingly powerful expert a long time ago! Grandwake Clan would have leapt to become a peak sect! And not the completely fruitless one like it is now!”

“Hehe, everything Yunji said is true.” Su Hengyue said while laughing: “Our late father handing over the position of Clan Master to you, was really the greatest mistake of his life! If you handed over the treasure key sooner and collaborated with Blackwood Stronghold, everything east of the river would have been ours a long time ago! Your stubbornness only burdened the entire Grandwake Clan!” He looked towards the elder who sat there and grimly smiled: “Even the elders who never questioned you about being Clan Master could not stand by idly and watch you any longer! Just obediently hand over the Clan Master position.



Be at ease and just become a teaching elder! The position of Clan Master doesn't suit you at all!"

"Load of bullshit!" Su Hengshan angrily laughed: "Blackwood Stronghold's behaviors were always despicable. They have an extremely poor reputation outside and had also always coveted our Grandwake Mountain resources. If we collaborated with Blackwood Stronghold, we would be working with the tiger and destroy our Grandwake Clan's hundreds of years of clean

reputation! As for our clan's treasure, our late ancestors clearly explained that we could only take it out when an extremely stunning talent, who is able to shock the world, appeared in our clan; otherwise, we'd be recklessly wasting it and pointlessly destroying our clan's greatest opportunity! If I took it out right now, that would be the real disgrace towards our ancestors."

"Clan Master Su's words are too harsh to listen to." A middle-aged man in black slowly walked forward: "Our Blackwood Stronghold genuinely and

sincerely wants to cooperate with the Grandwake Clan. You give me medicine and precious stones, and I'll give you divine weapons. It's profitable for both sides. By comparison, Brother Hengyue's knowledge and insight is much more powerful than yours. It's no wonder that your Grandwake Clan has stagnated and become lifeless during these past years."

"Heimu Qingya!" Su Hengshan's anger directed towards black attired man who had just spoken: "You despicable little man! I still haven't repaid you regarding the matter that

you intended to seize my daughter this morning, yet you still had the guts to personally come yourself! As the mighty Hold Master of Blackwood Stronghold, you had unexpectedly let your disciples take action on a little ten year old girl. Are you really worthy of your title as the Blackwood Stronghold's Hold Master?!"

"Heheh!" Heimu Qingya wasn't the least bit resentful when being cursed in rage by Su Hengshan: "Clan Master Su is misunderstanding. This Hold Master only wanted to invite your daughter as a very

important guest. The word “seize” isn’t very appropriate.”

“Really?” Su Hengshan clenched both his fists. He wasn’t a person who got angry very easily, but the people of Blackwood Stronghold taking action against Su Ling’er touched his absolute bottom line. He coldly said: “Heimu Qingya, I know how you are. If you don’t give me an explanation after we sort out our clan’s matters today, then don’t even think about leaving alive!”

Heimu Qingya grinned and smiled, but didn't say anything as he took two steps back. Both his hands were over his chest in a leisure posture... That's right, he was here to passively watch the great battle within the clan. No matter what the outcome was, it was all favorable.

The elder who had continuously sat upright in place, opened his eyes and heedlessly said: "Hengshan, I don't care who succeeds the position of Clan Master. I won't make trouble for you if you aren't willing to collaborate with Blackwood Stronghold either,

but the key to the clan's greatest treasure must be taken out today!"

The speech from Grandwake Clan's most senior elder naturally contained an extraordinary influence. Su Hengshan's expression suddenly transformed and then unhesitatingly said: "Absolutely impossible!"

The mood at the scene became increasingly tense. Grandwake Clan's disciples all rushed over, as more and more people filled

the scene. If they were only facing Blackwood Stronghold, they could unanimously confront them, but Blackwood Stronghold had the attitude of spectators. The two sides who had mutual hostility were all people of the Grandwake Clan... Only, the other side was a person who had left not long ago, who then entered the Blackwood Stronghold!

From the intense conversation between the two sides, Yun Che finally understood everything.



In the region east of Supwake's river, Grandwake Clan and Blackwood Stronghold were the two most powerful sects. Behind Grandwake Clan was Grandwake Mountain, medicine, as well as countless precious minerals and resources. Blackwood Stronghold was situated in the Blackwood Mountain Range and had huge amounts of metal and strange stones as their resource. The natural resources of the two sects really complemented each other, and Blackwood Stronghold had always wanted to collaborate with the Grandwake Clan many times for the purpose of sharing their resources, but Blackwood

Stronghold's actions were despicable and they also had a horrible reputation. Although the elders of the Grandwake Clan wanted to collaborate with them for the most part, the successive Clan Masters all disagreed profusely.

Until Su Hengshan's generation, Blackwood Stronghold, which was originally more than a half level lower, suddenly had an explosive development, and quietly reached the point where they could fight on even terms with the Grandwake Clan. This also made the elders want to support

Blackwood Stronghold. The people in favor of ruling the river east by force nowadays, increased up to the point where it had exceeded more than half, and gradually increased the pressure on Su Hengshan everyday.

But these weren't the main reason for the confrontation today. The real reason was an item that the late ancestors of Grandwake Clan had left behind — the clan's mystical treasure!

From a place called the

“Southern Border Holy Land”, a late elder of the Grandwake Clan obtained a valuable treasure, rumored to be at the “sacred object” grade!

# Chapter 266 – Disruption

---

Yun Che didn't hear what this valuable clan treasure was, but looking at the degree of importance they placed on it to the point that they started a big fight over it, it was probably something incredible. Perhaps, it really was an item of the “sacred object” grade like the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus.

Since the clan's treasure was precious to the point that it could be the hope Grandwake

Clan was looking for to become a peak sect of Azure Cloud Continent's Supwake Country, the decision of who to use this precious treasure on was of the utmost importance! If they used it on an ordinary disciple, it would undoubtedly be a waste. Due to the incredible precaution this matter required, they still never used the clans's treasure up until this generation, but had hidden it in an unknown place instead. Additionally, that hidden place could only be opened by a special key, and that special key was always in the hands of the next Clan Master.

In this generation, it was in Su Hengshan's hands.

Su Hengyue was an extremely ambitious person. He had coveted the clan's most valuable treasure ever since he was young, but although his aptitude was incredibly good, it still wasn't stunningly good. However, he still reached a high prestige within Grandwake Clan, and all these years, he had been enticing an ample amount of assistants, and was also making an extreme effort towards collaborating with the Blackwood Stronghold. All the elders in the Grandwake Clan

who shared these thoughts naturally gravitated towards him.

Right now, the reason why Su Hengyue resolutely wanted Su Hengshan to hand over the treasure key to the point that he didn't care about Su Hengshan turning hostile or borrowing Blackwood Stronghold's power was all because of his son, Su Haoyu!

This year, Su Haoyu was a full twenty years old and his profound strength was already



at eighth level of the Spirit  
Profound Realm! In all of  
Grandwake Clan's history, this  
had never happened before! He  
believed that with his son's  
natural talents, he was  
completely qualified to obtain  
the clan's most valuable  
treasure. He mentioned this to  
Su Hengshan over and over  
again, and even encouraged  
those in the clan to pressure him  
together, but Su Hengshan never  
agreed. Although Su Haoyu's  
natural talents were  
astonishing, he was absolutely  
not at the level of "World  
Stunning" that their late  
ancestors mentioned.  
Furthermore, Su Hengyue was  
always ambitious. If he actually

gave the clan's most valuable treasure to Su Haoyu, in the future, the authority of the Grandwake Clan would also completely fall into Su Hengyue's bloodline... For his own selfish desires, he discriminated against the Grandwake Clan and relied on Blackwood Stronghold's strength. If the Grandwake Clan fell into his hands, their future would be utterly inconceivable.

“Su Hengshan, if you took out the clan's most valuable treasure a bit earlier, then my son Haoyu would have soared into the skies a long time ago, and in less than

ten years, he would have taken our Grandwake Clan to a height that we could only dream of right now!” Su Hengshan callously laughed and said: “Don’t believe that we don’t know what you’re thinking. You’re envious of my son’s natural talents and want to personally consume our clan’s treasure. Heh, people being selfish and envious is completely normal. However, you want the entire Grandwake Clan to be dragged by you. As one of Grandwake Clan’s elders, I’ll never agree to that!”

“Bullshit!” Su Haoran angrily

roared: "It's obvious that you're the one who's selfish. For the sake of getting your hands on the clan's most valuable treasure, you actually slander us in reverse. You have no sense of shame at all!"

"Yoh!" Su Hengyue said coldly: "Before an elder finished talking, your son has already lost his cool. Could it be that this Clan Master's own son is more qualified to use the clan's treasure than my family's Haoyu? That's right, if you can win against my Haoyu, then you will naturally be more qualified than Haoyu. Haoyu, come and

compare your moves against your brother Haoran.”

“Yes, father.”

A youth around twenty year old completely dressed in white walked out from behind Su Hengshan. Although his expression was completely calm, his gaze exposed all of his pride: “Brother Haoran, no matter how much nonsense you say, it is useless. If you beat me, then I’ll have no face to use the clan’s most valuable treasure, and we would not have any dissent with

the Clan Master regarding this matter from now on. Please.”

“You!!” Su Haoran’s restrained his facial expressions until it was red all over; nevertheless, he didn’t dare to walk forward. Even though Su Haoyu was half a year younger than him, his profound strength already reached the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. Su Haoran wasn’t his match at all. If they really fought, the only outcome would him being oppressed into the dirt, and losing all his face.

Su Hengshan's chest puffed up, and then viciously huffed out.

“What? Could it be the Brother Haoran doesn't dare? Heh... Brother Haoran doesn't need to be so tense. We're only comparing moves, that's all. I certainly won't hit you too hard. Besides, just in case you beat this little brother, would you not have gotten what you wished for?” Su Haoyu pointed his fingers at Su Haoran with a face full of ridicule as a sneer appeared in the corner of his mouth.

“That’s enough, don’t argue anymore.”

An old voice sounded. Grand Elder Su Wanji, who sat on the chair, opened his eyes. His slow voice was serious and awe-inspiring: “For this matter, Hengyue was indeed a bit improper, but it is still a misunderstanding. Oh Hengshan, although our late ancestors told us to wait for a world shaking disciple to appear before using the clan’s most valuable treasure, our ancestors’ “world-shaking” could have meant many things. Haoyu is a genius that’s hard to come by



even in a hundred years. He is only twenty years of age, yet he has already stepped into the eighth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. In the Country of Supwake, he could already live up to the word “world-shaking”. It seems to me that Haoyu definitely has the qualification to use our clan’s most valuable treasure. I can guarantee that in the following century, it is practically impossible for a disciple with greater talents than Haoyu to appear within the Grandwake Clan.

All of Su Wanji’s words were

clearly biased towards Su Hengyue's side, but these words were irrefutable. He stared toward Su Hengshan and quietly said: "This year, Haoyu is twenty years old. He is not young anymore. If he grew up a bit more, using the clan's most valuable treasure would naturally be much less effective. Hengshan, if you still obstinately do not understand, and is willing to die guarding the clan's most valuable treasure before releasing it, then what if a so-called "world-shaking" genius never emerges within our Grandwake Clan, will the clan's treasure be forever sealed? Our clan could have soared into the sky a long time ago, but had

been stagnant for a long time because of this. If the day comes that our clan encounters a calamity, using the clan's most valuable treasure at that time, would be far too late!"

The harder Su Hengshan tried to restrain his eyebrows, the tighter it became... if Su Hengyue was a dutiful elder and Su Haoyu had a kind-hearted nature, then if enough people recommended him to offer out the clan's treasure, even if Su Hengshan felt that it was somewhat inappropriate, he wouldn't be so determined like this. Since Su Hengyue's line

made these series of actions for the sake of obtaining the clan's most valuable treasure, this matter was completely uncompromisable!!

Him enticing the clan could be forgiven. But to pressure them by using the strength of the Blackwood Stronghold was essentially an action that betrayed the clan!!

To these avaricious and unscrupulous people, even if he were to die, he would never agree on giving the clan's

treasure!!

“How’s this?” Su Wangji squinted and slowly said: “Hengshan, If you can find a disciple under twenty in our clan that can defeat Haoyu; then Hengyue will never raise the matters regarding the clan’s treasure ever again!”

Everyone among Su Hengyue and Su Haoran’s group began to laugh. Su Hengyue sternly said: “Very well! If there is anyone under twenty in my Grandwake Clan that can defeat Haoyu and

prove that his natural talents aren't the greatest, then I'll immediately slap my ass and leave. I'll never mention a word regarding the clan's treasure ever again and I'll apologize to the Clan Master for my inappropriate behaviors today... But, what if no one can defeat Haoyu?"

"Then please Hengshan, give the key to the clan's treasure to Haoyu. I believe none of the elders and the members of the clan present here want see this matter be dragged out or bickered over." Su Wanji said very slowly.

Su Hengshan clenched both his fists tightly and his fingers began to make popping sounds. Suddenly, right before he wanted to angrily reprimand them, an arrogant young man's voice came from his side.

“Good idea! Truly a good idea! Worthy of being the Grand Elder, even your ideas are so fair. Such a good idea, I will approve by raising both my hands!”

A smile hung over Yun Che's face as he slowly and relaxingly

walked over. On his hands, he dragged a nervous faced Su Ling'er who tightly leaned on Yun Che's body.

When Yun Che absolutely could not watch this any further, he left the Dragon Perching Pavilion and happened to find a peeping Su Ling'er who hid behind a tree. Seeing him leave his room, Su Ling'er ran over with her little steps right away and urgently said: "Big Brother Yun Che, Papa said you can't go over there! It's really dangerous over there."



“Don’t worry, I won’t be in any danger.” Yun Che smiled and said: “Ling’er, you stay here. You can’t go near there no matter what... Once this matter is settled, I’ll play with you.”

Once Yun Che finished talking, he continued forward. Just as he took a step, he stopped once again and said to Su Ling’er: “Ling’er, do you believe that I can protect you?”

Looking at Yun Che eyes, Su Ling’er unhesitantly and nodded with all her might: “Mn!”

“Then, let’s go over there together! No one can hurt you as long as you’re by my side!” Yun Che lightly said and then took Su Ling’er’s hand. Because in his heart, the safest place Su Ling’er could stay at, was by his side. He wouldn’t be relieved if she was anywhere else.

Once Yun Che’s pridefully arrogant voice transmitted outwards, he suddenly became the focal point of the scene. Su Hengshan suddenly turned pale in great alarm: “Little Brother Yun, and Ling’er... Why are you

here! Quickly, leave this place. The matter here is unrelated to you, and it is not a place you should have come to!”

Earlier when Yun Che saved Su Ling'er, if he was recognized by the Blackwood Stronghold as the one who destroyed their important plan, then they might have gazed at him. As far as Su Ling'er was concerned, it was even more dangerous for her to be here. Once the plain and honest words were said, he had already lost all of his anger and bitterness, and planned to stop them right there. This was a place they absolutely should not

be in.

“Papa, I... I’m not afraid. I’m here to cheer Papa on.” Su Ling’er sweetly smiled towards Su Hengshan; nevertheless, she neared Yun Che even more and held onto Yun Che tightly with both of her little hands.

“It was me who wanted to bring Ling’er here, because I won’t be at ease if Su Ling’er was anywhere else but by my side.” Yun Che stood upright, and said in a low voice: “But I implore Senior Su to be at ease. Even if I

were to die, I won't let a single strand of hair on Ling'er be hurt."

"..." When Su Hengshan looked at the expression in Yun Che's eyes, he was stunned for a while... Through the tens of years of his trials and hardships, he had heard those similar words many many times, but none of those times could have moved him as emotionally as this time's. That statement "even if I were to die, I won't let a single strand of hair on Ling'er be hurt" wasn't only spouted out from Yun Che's mouth, it was something that originated from

his will and his soul... Looking at the expression in Yun Che's eyes, he felt the determination contained in his words. He was extremely convinced that if the price to protect Ling'er involved a life, he would absolutely sacrifice himself without any hesitation.

He lightly grasped Su Ling'er's hand. That kind hazy imposing feeling was precisely the same as if he was protecting his entire world.

And Su Ling'er was also firmly

grabbing and hugging him. Even though he arrived in front of the father, she still remained by his side and did not rush to his side. Her eyes contained her worries for him, but they were fearless... It seemed like as long as she cuddled by his side, she had nothing to fear.

Yun Che and his daughter had clearly only met today. He was incapable of understanding how these two were able to form such an intimacy to this degree. He believed that even two people who were inseparable for more than a dozen years could not achieve such a pure dependence

and protection.

Could it actually be some sort of heavenly fate?



## Chapter 267 – Tyrannical Might

---

The moment Yun Che appeared, one of the people among the Blackwood Stronghold widened his eyes. He hurriedly stepped forward, and whispered into Heimu Qingya's ears. "Hold Master, it's him... It was him who sabotaged our plans when we were about to abduct Su Hengshan's daughter!"

Heimu Qingya swept his gaze at Yun Che. Suddenly, he slapped onto that person's face,

growling. “A bunch of trash! You people actually allowed someone who had only entered the Spirit Profound Realm to sabotage our plans, what’s the point in having you bunch of trash then!?”

The Blackwood Stronghold disciple’s slapped face swelled up heavily. He timidly retreated, and did not dare to utter another word.

Heimu Qingya stared at Yun Che with sinister eyes, and said towards Su Hengyue in front of him with a low voice. “Brother

Hengyue, this is the kid who hindered us from abducting that little girlie! Hmph, he sure sabotaged our great plans. If the little girlie was currently in our hands, then there wouldn't be a need for such trouble!”

“It's him?” Su Hengyue's eyes which were staring at Yun Che instantly turned dark and ruthless, as he coldly laughed. “And here I was wondering where I was going to find this kid, but he actually does not know any fear and popped out himself!”

Su Hengyue sound transmitted to Su Haoyu. “Haoyu, find an excuse, and give this kid a ruthless lesson! Even if your ‘hand slips’ and ‘accidentally’ kill him, it doesn’t matter either!”

Su Haoyu immediately responded. He inspected Yun Che’s level of profound strength, and following after, he revealed a disdainful expression. He took a step forward, and blew up at Yun Che. “Where did this wild brat come from? From the looks of it, you’re not one of our Grandwake Clan’s people either, heh! This is a place where our

Grandwake Clan is having a discussion regarding an important matter, it's not a place where a wild brat like you who comes from god knows where can step into, hurry and scram! If you don't wish to scram yourself, this young master can send you off himself!"

When Su Haoyu voiced out these words, everyone on site gave out a different atmosphere. Because these words by Su Haoyu, were evidently purposefully used to shame and anger his target. It seemed like they had a certain conflict between them.

However, Yun Che was not even the least bit angry. He used his gaze to size up Su Haoyu, and while he was sizing up, he nodded for a moment, and then disappointedly shook his head. The next moment, he actually looked as though he was sizing up a cattle that was being sold. He held his chin with his hand, and leisurely said. "Mn, so you're Su Haoyu, the one who is proclaimed to have the best talent in Grandwake Clan? Your appearance is still passable. Compared to this young master, you're still far off by a hundred thousands miles, but your appearance could still be looked

at. However, it's a pity that your mouth is too smelly, it smells so much, it's nauseating."

"Hahahaha!" Su Haoyu laughed out wildly. "And here I was thinking why a wild brat like you would come here for, so you're actually here to seek death!"

"No no no no!" Yun Che waved his finger. "I have grown so big, yet, I have yet to know how the two words 'seeking death' are written. Earlier, I simply heard that you're the so-called genius

disciple with the best talent in Grandwake Clan, so I came over to see if you look like a human or a dog, and while I'm at it..." Yun Che reached out his right hand, and flexed his wrist. "I'm here to seek advice from you, the so-called number one genius."

When Yun Che said these words, a couple of people at the scene began to laugh out loud. Su Haoyu had profound strength at the Eighth Level of the Spirit Profound Realm, in Grandwake Clan, or even the entire river east, he was unparalleled among those who were under twenty



years of age. While Yun Che, who was merely at the First Level of the Spirit Profound Realm, actually dared to “seek advice”! Yun Che’s looked to be around seventeen or eighteen years old; to enter the Spirit Profound Realm at such an age, his talent was considerably decent as well. However, in front of Su Haoyue, it was basically not even worth mentioning. The eyes of many people began to carry ridicule, and there were even some that were looking at Yun Che as though he was an idiot.

“Heheh, he really doesn’t know

any fear.” Su Hengyue and Heimu Qingya coldly laughed at the same time.

Su Hengshan’s eyebrows moved, and was about to voice out and stop Yun Che, however, just when he was about to let out his voice, he swallowed it back in. He deeply looked at Yun Che’s expression, and no longer said another word. Although he and Yun Che had only known each other just earlier, from the short interactions he had with him, he felt that Yun Che had a maturity which far surpassed his age, at the very least, he should not be someone who was

reckless and ignorant... There might be a deep meaning in his current actions.

The reason why Su Haoyu angered Yun Che, was to agitate him into a fight with himself in the first place, and then, he would take the opportunity to teach Yun Che a ruthless lesson. However, he never expected that, with only a few sentences, Yun Che would want to fight himself already. Su Haoyu coldly laughed in his heart. Crossing his arms in front of his chest, he said disdainfully. “With your qualifications? You’re still not worthy to fight with me!”

“Hahahaha!” Yun Che laughed out loudly. “I have seen cattle blowing hot air before, but I never thought that a smelly worm knows how to blow hot air as well. And not only is this air so funny, it’s so smelly, it’s hard to breath.”

“You... you’re seeking death!!”

Yun Che was not angered, and it was Su Haoyu who had flared up. With a cling, he pulled out his longsword, and pointed it towards Yun Che. “Reveal your

weapon. You don't know how the two words 'seeking death' are written, do you? Today, this young master shall properly teach you then!"

Yun Che released the hand he was holding onto Su Ling'er with, and gently pushed her next to Su Hengshan. However, he did not bring out his weapon, and his two hands actually swinging playfully in front of him, as he casually said. "The fact that I'm seeking advice from you, is already giving you a huge amount of face. You actually still wish that I reveal my weapon? If it's just you, you don't seem to

have the qualifications yet.”

“Pfft...” Quite a number of people on-site snorted.

“Hmph! This idiot, is simply making a fool out of himself!” Su Haoran silently scolded in his heart. Recalling Xia Qingyue, who was beautiful as a fairy, his heart uncontrollably trembled. At the same time, he silently said hatefully: Such a beautiful person, actually married to an idiot like this, the heavens are simply blind!

“Good... Very good.” Su Haoyu suddenly felt that his status would drop just by standing together with this kid in front of him, and he instantly roared out. “Then, go to hell.”

Su Haoyu stabbed out his longsword. As his profound energy surged, the thin long sword disrupted the air in the surroundings, sweeping up circles of spatial ripples. Momentarily, there were a couple of elders at the scene who nodded in praise at the might contained in this sword.

The corner of Yun Che's eyes inclined upwards. His right hand casually swung out and grabbed towards Su Haoyu's longsword.

“The hell! This kid is seeking death!”

“To actually dare to use his hands to take on Su Haoyu's sword, doesn't he want his hand anymore? Let's not talk about him who's just at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm, even if it's someone at the tenth level of the Spirit Profound



Realm, he's simply seeking to be crippled if he does something like this!"

"Little brother, be careful!!"  
When Su Hengshan, whose heart was ill at ease in the first place, saw Yun Che's action, he momentarily could no longer stay calm, and shouted out of shock... However, Yun Che's palm was already almost half a foot away from Su Haoyu's sword. He could only helplessly watch Yun Che's palm make contact with Su Haoyu's longsword.

With a “pu” sound, Yun Che’s right hand grabbed onto Su Haoyu’s sword just like that. It could no longer move a single inch, and the profound energy on the sword completely extinguished instantly. Before waiting for Su Haoyu to react, Yun Che’s hand had already left at lightning speed. Forming a fist, he ruthlessly smashed onto the blade of the sword with a single punch.

**BAM!!!**

Yun Che’s arm strength was

exceptionally terrifying. Under this heavy blow, Su Haoyu's thumb and forefinger was instantly spread apart. His longsword had flew out of his hand, and while it was flying away, it shattered into numerous pieces...

“Wha... What?”

This was a scene which everyone would never even dreamed of. Every single one of them paled out of shock. Even Su Hengshan, Su Hengyue, Heimu Qingya, and even the

Grand Elder, were all completely dumbfounded.

Su Haoyu took two steps back. His pupils contracted, his right palm was bleeding profusely, and was incomparably painful. This unexpected change caused his mind to instantly go into a half-insane state. Before he could even gasp, Yun Che's figure had already rushed right in front of him. An ice-cold face appeared right in front of his eyes, and a solid punch smashed onto his chest.

“CRUNCH!!”

With a dull sound, Su Haoyu's entire chest sank inwards. His bones cleanly broke, and like a rolling calabash, his entire body rolled far away, pulling out a long trail of blood on the ground.

“Haoyu!!” Su Hengyue was so shocked, it was as though his soul flew out of his body as he swooped towards Su Haoyu's side. Beside him, the middle-aged man called Li Yunji leapt out, and pierced towards Yun

Che's chest with a sword. "You dare to harm my young master, give me your life!!"

For Su Haoyu, who was proclaimed the number one genius in Grandwake Clan, not only was his sword stopped by Yun Che's empty hand, he was actually heavily injured in a blink of an eye as well. This caused Su Hengshan to feel shocked and overjoyed at the same time. Suddenly, when he saw Li Yunji moving towards him, he quickly charged over, roaring out loud at the same time. "Li Yunji, you dare!! Little brother Yun, be careful!"

A pressure of the Earth  
Profound Realm pressed towards  
him. This time, Yun Che no  
longer dared to behave  
haughtily. With a swing of both  
his hands, Dragon Fault had  
already been grabbed within his  
hands, and without even looking  
at the person attacking him, he  
temporarily activated “Burning  
Heart”, and directly smashed  
towards him with a single  
“Falling Moon Sinking Star”.

Bang!!!!

This loud bang caused everyone's eardrums to ring for a very long time. When Yun Che stepped into the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm, under the "Burning Heart" state's activation, his peak strength was comparable to a normal practitioner at the mid-stage Earth Profound Realm, so how could it be blocked by Li Yunji, whose profound strength was only at the second level of the Earth Profound Realm? Within the loud bang, Li Yunji who leapt out, as though he was a kite with a broken string, was sent flying back. When he landed, he took dozens of steps back, and then, with his sword as a support, he knelt onto the



ground, and a large amount of blood splurged out from his mouth... The tyranny of that one sword strike from Yun Che, caused him to feel as though his organs had been completely shattered.

Su Hengshan, who had rushed out initially to save Yun Che, stopped. Looking at Yun Che whose hands were holding onto a gigantic sword, his two eyes were filled with astonishment.

Everyone's eyes on Yun Che, were stricken with shock as

well.

This youth who looked to be only seventeen or eighteen years old, actually defeated Su Haoyu in a blink of an eye, and then, he injured Li Yunji who had the profound strength at the Earth Profound Realm with a single strike as well... Even if they had personally seen it, they still did not dare to believe this was actually real.

“Waaaaao!!” Su Ling’er’s two hands held onto her little face. The number of little stars in her

eyes were even more than the stars in a clear night sky. “Big Brother Yun Che is so incredible! Big brother Yun Che... is so handsome!!”

With a “bang”, Dragon Fault was stabbed deeply into ground by Yun Che. He coldly looked at Li Yunji, and said with ridicule. “From what Clan Master Su said earlier, your life was saved by the previous Clan Master, and he even took you into the Grandwake Clan for a few dozen years. In the end, not only do you not know how to repay his kindness, you’re actually helping those with ill intentions

to coerce his descendants and make things difficult for them... Heh! A dog that was brought up still knows how to be loyal, you're really worse than a dog. With that one sword strike I smashed into you earlier, I even fear that I have dirtied my hands."

Whenever Yun Che scolded people, he had always been incomparably harsh. These words were like daggers stabbing into Li Yunji's heart. He, whose internal injuries were not light in the first place, instantly paled as his eyes roundly widened. Under the

extreme anxiety and grief in his heart, he instantly fainted.

Su Hengyue peremptorily stuffed dozens of medicinal pellets into Su Haoyu's mouth, and then, continuously inserted profound energy into him to dissolve the medicinal strength, stabilizing his injuries. He fiercely turned his head, and stared at Yun Che, it was as though his eyes were daggers coated in blood. "You damn junior! You actually dare to harm my son, I will definitely have you die a dog's death!!"

“Tch!” Yun Che curled his lips in extreme disdain. “You actually spout such nonsense when your son’s skills are inferior. I kindly stepped out and helped you teach him a lesson. I don’t mind if you don’t give me the proper thanks, however, you’re actually still making such a fuss. I really wonder where you get the courage to say such shameful words in front of such a large audience... If you want to blame, then blame your son’s incapacibilities. And what genius this is... This is simply a joke!”

“You!!” Su Hengyue’s eyes

widened roundly, and his lungs almost exploded out of anger. If not for the need to insert profound energy into Su Haoyu, he would have already acted against Yun Che, without regard for his status.

“This... oh, Grand Elder.” Yun Che no longer bothered with Su Hengyue anymore, and his gaze turned towards Grand Elder Su Wangji, whose expression was extremely terrible. “Elder, earlier you said that, as long as you’re able to find a disciple who is under twenty years old in the Grandwake Clan that is able to defeat Su Haoyu, then, Clan

Master Su will have full authority to decide about the matter regarding the clan's treasure. This Su Hengyue father and son pair is also not allowed to once again bring up the matter about the clan's treasure, and must give their respects to Clan Master Su as well. This was something Su Hengyue had agreed to in front of everyone here... Grand Elder, these words that you said, you shouldn't have forgotten about it so quickly, right?"

"Hmph!" Su Wangji let out a cold snort. "What this elder has said, I will naturally keep my



promise. Unfortunately, you're not a disciple of our Grandwake Clan! Even if you enter our clan now, it's no use! Grandwake Clan has never taken in any disciples from outside! And Li Yunji is nothing but half a servant as well!"

“Heheh, looks like Grand Elder isn't well informed of the news.” Yun Che narrowed his eyes, and said smilingly. “Clan Master Su has already betrothed his daughter Su Ling'er to me, I am currently Clan Master Su's son-in-law... Tell me then, am I not someone of the Grandwake Clan now!?”

## Chapter 268 – Engagement

---

Yun Che's words suddenly blanked everyone's minds. Whispers began to sound from every direction and there were many that constantly shook their heads to show that they knew absolutely nothing about this matter. Everyone's expressions were especially strange since Su Ling'er was after all, still young. She was only ten years of age this year. If the two unsuspecting people were betrothed before they were even adults, that would still have been quite normal, but Yun Che

was a full grown adult! There certainly was something wrong with that...

Looking at the situation in front of them, no matter who it was, they thought it was extremely likely that this was just a fabricated excuse to thwart Su Hengyue's ambitions.

Su Hengshan was caught in a daze as well, but he quickly reacted. He took a quick glance at Yun Che and without changing his expression, he said: "That's right, Yun Che is the

number one genius of the younger generation amongst the ones I've seen. I quite admire him, since, in terms of natural talent he is at least ten times better than Su Haoyu! You have seen this fact with your own eyes; additionally, he also saved my daughter's life, so I have arranged for my daughter to marry him. When my daughter reaches sixteen years of age, they will marry!"

Su Ling'er blinked her innocent watery eyes. She had a look of confusion all over her face. After all, she was already ten years old this year and not some two or

three year old little kid. She already knew what “marriage” meant. Even if she didn’t understand it completely, she was aware of what it basically meant. She looked at her father and then at Yun Che. Her heart was beating wildly as she was at her wit’s end.

“Bunch of crap!” Su Hengyue clenched his teeth and angrily said: “Su Hengshan, don’t treat everyone like an idiot! This child is only someone who recently helped you. This marriage thing, is just an excuse! Otherwise, how can there not be a single person here who knows about

it!”

“Hehe, that’s only because I haven’t publicly announced yet. Don’t tell me that my own daughter’s marriage requires the consent of others?” Su Hengshan said indifferently. He looked at the crowd and then calmly continued: “Looks like, all of you aren’t too convinced. That’s fine. I, Su Hengshan, will publicly announce this matter right now...”

He looked at Yun Che, and Yun Che also looked at him... Su

Hengshan's expression was incredibly complicated, but Yun Che's expression was incredibly unwavering and tranquil. This was the meeting of eyes between two men who loved the same girl dearly. From the expression in their eyes, one of them had the pure love of a father, and the other had an expression that shook one's heart... undying determination.

After seeing the look in Yun Che's eyes, Su Hengshan's heart and mind also calmed down. All of his nervousness became the feeling of wonderful calmness.

His mood before was always immersed in the shock that Yun Che instilled. Although he loathed the Su Hengyue father and son pair, he had no choice but to recognize them. Su Haoyu's natural talents were incredible, and no one in Grandwake Clan could reach him. But this kind of genius, had actually suffered a crushing defeat in front of Yun Che, who was two or three years younger than him. And his following strike was able to severely injure Li Yunji who was in the Earth Profound Realm. He was only at this age, but he already had such frightening strength. Within his



cognition, this could only be described as unimaginable.

A young man who possessed such a strength must have been born in a top top notch sect in the Country of Supwake... wrong! The sect he was born in must be top notch even in the Azure Cloud Continent!

Although Grandwake Clan controlled the everything east of Supwake River, he wasn't delusional that such a disciple like this could appear within their younger generation. The

sect that he belonged to was an existence that Grandwake Clan could only kneel to and worship. He was absolutely certain about this point without a trace of doubt. The same opinions also emerged within the hearts of practically everyone present.

Now, the only concern was if Su Ling'er was suitable for him, since he was completely suitable for his daughter.

Yun Che's looks were one in ten thousand. His personality, as well as his deep and

unfathomable expressions, was something no one could reach up to... These things were all secondary within Su Hengshan's heart, but the love and protection that he showed to Su Ling'er came from the depths of his soul and bones. The unwavering determination to protect her life that he showed once before made him unable to feel anything but emotional. Although he and Su Ling'er had obviously just met this morning, the sensation that he felt was so incredibly clear that amazed him from the bottom of his heart.

And to a father, was there

anything more relieving than entrusting his own daughter to a person who was willing to protect her with his life?

At the same time, Su Ling'er also clearly displayed an unreasonable amount of trust and dependence towards Yun Che.

He was incapable of determining what Yun Che's morals were like. Today, in a situation where he could have absolutely avoided from the start, he unhesitantly showed

his power, and put himself in a dangerous situation. This was also a kindness that he had towards Su Hengshan and the Grandwake Clan, but he felt the reason why Yun Che acted like this was entirely because of Ling'er.

In conclusion, if he could entrust his daughter's future to this kind of person, he could feel at ease about his daughter's entire life. If he had to find a blemish, it would be that Yun Che was already married. If his daughter were to marry Yun Che in the future, she could only become a concubine.

The mood of Su Hengshan, who had never thought about the matters concerning Su Ling'er's marriage before today, became incredibly calm. His face contained a slight smile and he used an ample voice to declare: "Today, I'll formally declare that my daughter, Su Ling'er will be betrothed to Yun Clan's son, Yun Che. The girl is still young right now, but when she is sixteen, they will set a date for marriage! Everyone here shall now bare witness!"

Every one of Su Hengshan's

words were resounding. No one was able to hear a strand of falseness or reluctance at all. Once he finished talking, he lightly nodded towards Yun Che with a smile on his face and warmth in his eyes... That was the expression of a daughter's father who was closely examining his son-in-law. Even the most vicious person there could not see a strand of fake acting.

Yun Che quickly walked forward, knelt on one knee, and sincerely said: "Son-in-law Yun Che, thanks father-in-law for his consent!"

“Yun Che, you must think it through clearly. The girls of our Grandwake Clan will never marry outsiders. If you want to marry my daughter, then you will become a member of my Grandwake Clan!”

Yun Che nodded without the slightest bit of hesitation: “I understand! From today, I, Yun Che will become a disciple of the Grandwake Clan! I will share both the honors and disgrace the Grandwake Clan!”



Yun Che raised his head and looked towards the stunned Su Ling'er. He gently smiled... Ling'er, during those times, I had never given you the tiniest amount of commitment. I owe you way too much. This is a dreamscape, but it is also a beautiful dream. Let me give you everything that I can within this dream.

“Hahahaha, good!” Su Hengshan walked forward and helped Yun Che up. He let him and Su Ling'er stand together, then faced Su Wangji and Su Hengyue and said: “Grand Elder, Yun Che is my son-in-law now

and is also a son-in-law of the Grandwake Clan. Naturally, he is now a member of my Grandwake Clan. In terms of age, he is younger than Su Haoyu. In terms of natural talent, hehe, Elder must have surely seen it clearly. Grand Elder had just suggested it, and everyone here heard it clearly. I believe with the Grand Elder's seniority and prestige, you certainly will not go back on your words. So now, I'll have full authority regarding the matters regarding the clan's treasure in the future. I believe that you, elder, will certainly not have any objections."

Su Wanji's old face was rigid and extremely ugly all over; he was speechless. His words before were completely for Su Hengyue to get his way. He never could have imagined that in the blink of an eye, it had become the big pit that he was jumping right into.

“Su Hengyue, do you have anything else to say?” Su Hengshan asked with raised eyebrows.

“Hmph!!” Su Hengyue's gaze was gloomy. His hands, which

were pressed against Su Haoyu's chest, were trembling.

“Hehehehehe!” An unpleasantly cold laughter sounded. Heimu Qingya, who had always been watching by the side, slowly walked forward towards Su Hengshan. Two elders of the Blackwood Stronghold closely followed from behind him. Heimu Qingya didn't stop until he was less than three steps away from Su Hengshan, then he raised his hand toward Su Hengshan: “I sincerely congratulate Clan Master Su in finding such a wonderful son-in-law. Not only

did you solve a lifelong problem for your daughter, you even have completely handled of the matter regarding your clan's valuable treasure.

“Heimu Qingya, our Grandwake Clan's valuable treasure concerns the prosperity of my clan. It doesn't belong to anybody else but our Grandwake Clan. Hmph! If you wish to talk about my Grandwake Clan's matters again, before the matters regarding you outsiders' ulterior motives, I still haven't paid my debts for the matter regarding the fact that you tried to do something to my daughter!

I'd like to see just what kind of explanation you'll give me today." Su Hengshan said sternly.

"Heh, Clan Master Su does not need to be so angry. I'll certainly have an explanation for you. However, before that, I have something to remind Clan Master Su." Heimu Qingya's eyes were half squinted and a dangerously cold light radiated from between the cracks of his eyes: "The reason you can be so happy go lucky right now is because of this son-in-law of yours that came out of nowhere. As long as you have this son-in-

law, the number one disciple of your generation can never be Su Haoyu, but what if he were to suddenly die...”

When Heimu Qingya spoke to here, his figure suddenly flashed and charged like a streak of black lightning towards Yun Che. A fist imbued with violent surges of profound energy grabbed toward Yun Che’s chest.

“Qingya old bastard, you dare!!”

Su Hengshan's expression transformed into great anger. Just as he was about to take action, the two elders behind Heimu Qingya were already facing him to completely block his attack, to prevent him from hindering Heimu Qingya during this exact moment.

Heimu Qingya possessed strength of the Sky Profound Realm. There were only already only a few people within Grandwake Clan who could contend against him. Additionally, since Heimu Qingya was already closeby before he suddenly took action,



Grandwake Clan's experts of the elder class were all too far away, and were unable to block it in time. All of them could only look on helplessly as Heimu Qingya directly charged at Yun Che's front.

Heimu Qingya was an extremely despicable and immoral person, but no one could have imagined that he'd be despicable to this degree. Even with the identity of a Hold Master, he actually went as far as to sneak attack a junior in front of everyone's eyes!

When Heimu Qingya was talking with Su Hengshan, Yun Che had already placed Su Ling'er behind him to protect her and strengthened his awareness at the same time. Perhaps Su Hengshan could not sense it, but he was extremely perceptive to things like killing intent; he had sensed that Heimu Qingya had a desire to kill him with one strike. During Heimu Qingya's charge, Yun Che's brows lowered and Burning Heart opened. Along with a loud shout, "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" instantly activated.

Bang!!

Heimu Qingya's palms struck against the barrier of "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" and a stuffy noise sounded. A huge shock wave transmitted from ahead and caught him off guard, causing him to retreat several steps.

But Yun Che and Su Ling'er, who was behind him, were in fact unmoved and completely unharmed. However, "Sealing Cloud Locking Sun" was directly shattered by Heimu Qingya's

single palm.

Heimu Qingya was greatly shocked. He never could have imagined that he would be shocked into retreat by this youngster. He was shocked and angry. Following a low roar, he mobilized all the profound energy in his body and blasted towards Yun Che with his palm again: “Junior... die!!”

Yun Che was not frightened, nor was he in a panic. He quickly grabbed Su Ling'er and prepared to escape with Star

God's Broken Shadow... He only needed to dodge this single strike from Heimu Qingya. By then, the elders and disciples of the Grandwake Clan would catch up, and Heimu Qingya also would never be able to think about harming him and Su Ling'er ever again.

But at this moment, an ice cold breeze suddenly blew past. Within the cold wind were many pieces of floating snowflakes. A long white ribbon followed the wind and snow to lightly meet Heimu Qingya's fist; it was as light as breeze.

Boom!!!!

The moment this white ribbon that was as light as a feather brushed against Heimu Qingya's fist, an explosion erupted. It was in fact an earth-shattering power that caused Heimu Qingya to cry out loudly. All five of his fingers were broken and his entire body flew far away. A breeze of cold wind followed behind him and blew away all the Blackwood Stronghold disciples who were currently trying to rush over. Instantly, black figures filled the air, and

like the transit of dense locusts, their wretched screams were unceasing.

This sudden turn of events stunned everyone at the scene. Those who were fighting also unanimously stopped... A white figure followed by icy spirits that fluctuated up and down in the sky slowly descended in front of Yun Che.

## Chapter 269 – Steamrolled

---

The appearance of an absolute beauty, would always attract the gazes of an extremely large number of people in a short period of time. However, Xia Qingyue was different. What she attracted were not just mere gazes with her every appearance, she could, even more so, cause the souls of everyone present to leave their bodies at that one moment.

Xia Qingyue gently floated down, and stood next to Yun



Che. She wore completely white dress, her snowy complexion was dream-like, and her icy eyes glittered like the stars as a long white ribbon gently fluttered, while encircling around her body. Instantly, everyone had completely lost their voices, every single one of them stared blankly at Xia Qingyue, and their gazes were misty, as though they had suddenly fallen into a dream, and saw the legendary fairy from the moon palace descend onto the mortal realm...

Heimu Qingya continuously took a number of steps back. His

right hand was trembling out of extreme pain; all five of his fingers were broken, and they were twisted beyond unsightly. He raised his head and looked towards Xia Qingyue, and after being stunned for a moment, the shock in his heart reached an extreme degree... He was actually struck injured by a girl who looked only about seventeen or eighteen years of age! The density of the profound energy contained in that strike earlier, caused him to tremble in fear. And the icy profound aura being emitted out from Xia Qingyue, had even more so, caused the nerves in his entire body to tense up... Because that was a type of strength that

completely suppressed him in terms of level!

Behind him, the hundreds of Blackwood Stronghold disciples who were blown away by the cold wind, fell onto the ground one after another like a bunch of cooked dumplings. However, none of them stood up, as all of them screamed out and grimaced in pain. Because, on all of their bodies, large or small amounts of ice crystals had formed. The parts covered by the ice crystals would freeze up in the short time of a few breaths, and they would even force them to completely lose

consciousness, instantly causing them to basically become unable to stand up.

Heimu Qingya's brows trembled wildly. Raising his left hand, he pointed towards Xia Qingyue. "Who... Who... Who are you!?"

The tremor in Heimu Qingya's words were evident. After taking Xia Qingyue's hit earlier, he was once again locked on by her power, he was thus the one who could feel the terrifying amount of strength Xia Qingyue

possessed to the greatest extent. At such an age, coupled with such profound strength, it was enough to cause the Blackwood Stronghold Master's spiritual world to be turned upside down out of shock.

Xia Qingyue looked at Heimu Qingya with cold eyes, and did not say a single word. Yun Che's eyes shone brightly, carrying Su Ling'er, with a whoosh, he went to her side. "Qingyue my wife, you're finally here. If you had not come over, you would have been a widow for the rest of your life!"

Yun Che said, and even put out a frightened look. Xia Qingyue's eyes slightly moved, as she felt completely helpless. Others were not clear of Yun Che's strength, however, she knew of it clearly enough... With his Star God's Broken Shadow, even if it was Heimu Qingya whose strength had reached the Sky Profound Realm, he should not even think of touching his figure that easily.

When Yun Che uttered the words "Qingyue my wife", one after another, those male disciples who were slightly

obsessed with her, felt as though a dagger had stabbed into their chests as they cast gazes of extreme jealousy and envy at Yun Che... All of their attention were firmly attracted by Xia Qingyue's fairy-like appearance, and did not have time to comprehend just how terrifying of a strength she possessed. And probably, the first instance they saw Xia Qingyue, subconsciously, they would never connect her with the two words "strong expert". Because, with a beauty of such degree, with just a smile, she was capable of dominating the world, there's simply no need for her to possess such great strength.

“Beautiful big sister, you’re awake... That’s great... My name is Ling’er.” Being carried so tightly by Yun Che’s chest in front of so many people, Su Ling’er seemed to be a little embarrassed. Her little face was flushed red, and she greeted Xia Qingyue with a very soft voice.

Xia Qingyue turned her gaze to the side, and gently nodded towards Su Ling’er. Her lips slightly moved, however, she was unable to smile... Perhaps, she had already forgotten how to smile. At least, Yun Che had



never seen her smile before.

To those elders who had great strength, what they were amazed by were not just Xia Qingyue's looks. When she pushed Heimu Qingya back with only a single strike earlier, it caused none of their expressions to not change in agitation, and their entire faces were filled with shock and disbelief... However, immediately after, they quickly consoled themselves. A little lady who was just seventeen or eighteen years old, no matter how monstrous she was, it was basically impossible for her to

push back an expert at the Sky Profound Realm. It must have definitely been luck, or, Heimu Qingya must have simply used only a very small portion of his strength in that strike of his...

Although they auto-suggested this to themselves, when Heimu Qingya moved earlier, their senses, however, clearly told them that not only did he not hold back with that strike, rather, he had used a hundred percent of his strength!

Su Hengshan stepped forward.

When facing Xia Qingyue, his demeanor actually had a small amount of respect. “This miss, I’m Su Hengshan. Earlier, miss was injured and was in a coma, it seems like you’re completely fine now, nothing is really better than this. Thank you for lending out a hand earlier, to save... my little girl.”

Yun Che nodded. “Mn, Qingyue my wife, this is my father-in-law whom I have just admitted to. This time, it’s all thanks to father-in-law for taking us in, only then did we have a place to settle in.”

As he called her “Qingyue my wife”, he introduced her to his “father-in-law”. This scene caused a large number of people to stare with their tongues tied. However, unfortunately, this astonishingly beautiful girl did not even have a hint of jealousy and discomfort on her face. She turned around, and gently bowed towards Su Hengshan. “This junior, Xia Qingyue, thanks Clan Master Su for the hospitality.”

“It’s nothing much, you’re too courteous.” Su Hengshan

hurriedly waved his hand to reply. Although he was already middle-aged, when facing Xia Qingyue, his eyes still did not dare to make contact with hers. He silently sighed in his head. Then, as he turned his gaze towards Heimu Qingya, anger instantly spread throughout his face. “Heimu Qingya! You little man! I have long known of your despicable name, however, I never expected that you could actually be despicable and shameless to this extent! Our Grandwake Clan’ fame being on par with your Blackwood Stronghold in these recent years, is basically a huge humiliation!”

Su Hengshan then switched his gaze again, looked towards Su Wangji, and said. “Grand Elder, the incident earlier, you have seen it clearly yourself as well. Su Hengyue had associated with such a person. Not only is he suspected for betraying our clan, he’s even more so a mockery to all of us! And you, as our Grand Elder, actually stands on his side. Even though I am Clan Master, I am also your junior. I have endured time and time again. Even when Su Hengyue had censured me time and time again, I have never retaliated! However, today... back then, when Blackwood Stronghold

held the intention to abduct Ling'er, I can still tell myself that you people do not have any idea of this matter. However, just now, when Heimu Qingya suddenly moved to attack my son-in-law, not only did you guys not stop him, you people still looked calm and behaved leisurely... Grand Elder, Su Hengyue, although I really did not wish to see an internal conflict within our Clan, and have people with ill intentions to make a joke out of us, I am not a fangless tiger either! In the current Grandwake Clan, ultimately, I still call the final shots!"

“Enough!” Su Wangji’s expression was extremely ugly. He glanced at Heimu Qingya whose right hand was still trembling, and Su Haoyu who had fallen on the ground due to heavy injuries. He then patted on the armrest and stood up. “The incident today shall end here... Hengyue, bring Haoyu away!”

Su Hengyue’s expression twitched. He glared maliciously at Su Hengshan and Yun Che, had the disciples behind him carry Su Haoyu who was out cold, and without saying a single word, he began to leave



hatefully. Su Hengshan's words were right, ultimately and currently, he still made the final calls in Grandwake Clan. The reason why he dared to come here so aggressively today, was due to his largest reliance on Su Haoyu's incomparable talent. On this point alone, he had gained the support of a large amount of people in the clan. Added with Blackwood Stronghold's strength, it was enough to give Su Hengshan a huge amount of pressure. However, he never expected that, while this was going on, a random Yun Che would actually charge right in!

Su Hengshan's eyebrows twitched. He stretched out his right arm, however, after stretching it out halfway, he retracted it again. While containing his boiling anger, he allowed them to make preparations to leave. And at this moment, a cold snort suddenly resounded.

“Wait a minute!!”

Yun Che took a step forward, and coldly stared at Heimu Qingya who had a stiffened expression. “This place is not my

territory, so it's not really suitable for me to say words like 'you guys think you can come and go as you please', however... Blackwood Stronghold Master, the fact that you tried to kill me earlier, could it be that you're thinking it will end just like this?"

Heimu Qingya's eyes narrowed, and began to laughed coldly. "What? You're still thinking of keeping me here?"

At the moment, although Heimu Qingya was laughing

coldly from his lips, his body did not feel the least bit comfortable. His back was even covered entirely in cold sweat since earlier. His five fingers on his right hand were not just simply broken, he could feel wisps of extremely ice-cold energy flowing in his entire right hand. These wisps of cold energy were like ice daggers; for every second they flowed, it was as though a dozen daggers gouged in and out of his hand, causing him to feel a heart-piercing pain. However, even when he used all of his strength, he was still unable to force out a single strand of these wisps of cold energy.

He was the one who wished to immediately leave the most, because, facing Xia Qingyue, a deep fear had already grown in his heart.

“Keep you here? Hahahaha, you’re thinking too highly of yourself. Just by your ugly and sinister face, despicable and shameless soul, I would even fear that it’s too dirty to keep you here as food for the houseflies. I simply wish to have you pay the proper debt you owed me earlier!” Yun Che turned his head, and sternly

said. “Of course, this is just a personal grudge between Heimu Qingya and I, and it has completely nothing to do with the Grandwake Clan...”

After saying till here, Yun Che suddenly raised out his hand, pointed it at Heimu Qingya, and said with a furious expression. “Qingyue my wife! It’s him! Earlier, he actually moved to kill me! This hatred for his attempt to kill your husband, even if I’m able to endure it, you can’t endure it, right!?”

Xia Qingyue's eyelashes slightly raised, her pair of cold eyes had already locked onto Heimu Qingya. Before Heimu Qingya could speak up, the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon on her body suddenly swung out at lightning-speed, and directly brushed against Heimu Qingya's chest.

Heimu Qingya's pair of eyes sank, and growled. "Arrogant junior! You think I'm afraid of you!?"

Heimu Qingya's palm moved. With a black iron spear grabbed

in hand, his spear spun out a gigantic black vortex in the midst of his growl, taking on the seemingly powerless Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon.

This was a might coming from a Sky Profound expert, and those nearby, who were slightly near to him, all suffered a shortness of breath due to the pressure, and some were even suffocating.

Ssssss!!



The moment the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon made contact with the black metal spear, an ear-piercing tearing sound rang. That vortex which carried a gigantic amount of energy was like a piece of tissue being torn apart, a blooming ice lotus suddenly smashed away the spear while heading straight towards Heimu Qingya.

Heimu Qingya's expression paled greatly from shock, and hurriedly retreated. The surrounding people looked even more dumbfounded... Heimu Qingya's strike earlier, he had completely used his full

strength, however, this girl actually... blasted it away with a single blow!

“I shall aid you!!”

Seeing that the situation was getting bad, Su Hengyue quickly bent his body, and pierced his sword towards the Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon... The two powers who were among the top ten Sky Profound experts in the river, were actually working together to fight against a teenage girl who was only seventeen years old. Everyone

had never seen, nor heard of such a scene before, and it could only be depicted as inconceivable.

Yet, Xia Qingyue's expression did not moved a single bit, and only her hand movements had slightly changed.

Instantly, The spiraling ice lotus split in two, and smashed towards Heimu Qingya and Su Hengyue respectively...

Ping!!

Su Hengye's block was not of the slightest use. The moment his longsword made contact with the ice lotus, even his arm was sealed in ice as well. Of the two ice lotuses, one of them pressed onto Heimu Qingya's chest, while the other pressed onto Su Hengyue's chest, and then, they exploded at the same time.

The two of them screamed at the same time and flew in opposite directions, smashing into seven or eight Blackwood Stronghold disciples, and caused

them to faint on the spot.

Their bodies were completely stabbed with shattered ice flower that caused countless piercing wounds. Half of their bodies were sealed in ice, and they were basically unable to move for a brief moment. As they laid on the ground, their expressions were completely lifeless. They were basically unwilling to believe everything that had happened... Not just them, Su Hengshan, Su Wangji... and even Yun Che, were staring with dumbfounded expressions.

Two experts at the Sky  
Profound early stages, the  
pinnacle of strength in the  
entire river east, were actually,  
by a teenage girl... defeated  
terribly with a single move!!

With just a single move!!

When Xia Qingyue pushed  
Heimu Qingya earlier, Yun Che  
had already determined that  
after she finished refining the  
Emperor Awakening Heart  
Pellet, her strength had  
definitely surpassed Heimu  
Qingya's! Not only could she

have entered the Sky Profound Realm, she might have leapt into the mid-stages of the Sky Profound Realm...

However, he definitely had never expected that, when facing the combined attack of two experts at the Sky Profound Realm, Heimu Qingya and Su Hengyue, she actually simply used a single move to defeat them!

Even if it was someone at the mid-stages of the Sky Profound Realm, it would basically be

impossible to do something like this!

Could it be, the current Xia Qingyue, was already... at the late-stages of the Sky Profound Realm?

“Jasmine, what’s the level of Xia Qingyue’s current profound strength?” Yun Che asked with a slight tremble.

“...As expected of the Sky Poison Pearl, ranked fifth among the Heavenly Profound



Treasures, such perfect refinement to an extreme degree. In all of the large thousands of worlds, only the Sky Poison Pearl is capable of doing this.” Even Jasmine’s voice carried a hint of shock. “Her current profound strength, has already stepped over the Sky Profound, and is ranked in the Realm of the Emperor Profound! She has even surpassed Chu Yuechan, and has reached the second level of the Emperor Profound Realm!”

“Currently, these two at the second level of the Sky Profound Realm are no different from

infants who have just learnt how to walk in front of her! If she had not held back, these two people would have already become ice particles!”

Yun Che: “.....”

Yun Che: “.....”

Yun Che: “What... did you..... say!?!?”

## Chapter 270 – Borrowing Power To Induce Fear

---

According to Jasmine's earlier words, the usage of the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus allowed an expert of the Earth Profound Realm to directly leap into the Sky Profound Realm. However, the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus that Xia Qingyue consumed was refined by the Sky Poison Pearl; its effectiveness must be several times more powerful than the legends stated. Yun Che thought about the possibility that she might directly leap into the mid

stage of the Sky Profound Realm... and perhaps even the mid to late stage...

He absolutely did not imagine that she could cross two whole realms from the Earth Profound Realm into the realm whose very name caused people to tremble, the Emperor Profound Realm! She became an identity that countless people looked up to, a Throne!

A female Throne who was only seventeen years old!

“This... is... too... ridiculous... right!” Yun Che groaned to himself.

What kind of concept was the Emperor Profound Realm? In the entire Blue Wind Empire, the number of Thrones combined did not exceed ten people, but these ten were existences who were at the peak, peak realm within the Blue Wind Empire. Every one of them had a reputation that far exceeded the Blue Wind Emperor. And among these Thrones, the youngest was originally Heavenly Sword Villa's Ling Yuefeng; then, due

to some coincidence, the one who originally had at least ten more years until breaking through, Chu Yuechan, directly broke through because Yun Che gave his Dragon Yang to her, thus replacing Ling Yuefeng as the youngest Throne.

But Xia Qingyue was only seventeen and a half!!

This was far beyond an exaggeration, it might as well be a fantastical story! In the Blue Wind Empire, this was completely completely

unprecedented... perhaps even impossible.

And in the east river region of Supwake Country, a Throne... was god! A god that could crush everything! Although the east river region of the Supwake Country didn't have the highest levels of profound realms, it absolutely wasn't low either; however, there had been three hundred years before the appearance of the previous Throne. In history, the one that appeared before was over seventy years old.

“The power it takes to go from the Sky Profound Realm to the Emperor Profound Realm requires ten times the amount that it would take to go from the Earth Profound Realm to the Sky Profound Realm. Her astonishing breakthrough, is perhaps related to her Nine Profound Exquisite Body.” Jasmine thought out loud, but this wasn’t heard by Yun Che.

The experts on the side of the Blackwood Stronghold and Su Hengyue, including Su Wangji, originally wanted to take action, but after seeing Heimu Qingya and Su Hengyue get defeated



instantaneously, it was same as if their heads had been smashed. Their eyes stared wide open and they severely trembled all over. That look of exaggeration was like they had seen a ghost in broad daylight.

Su Hengshan's mouth gaped open, he was also shocked until his brain became stupid. After a long while, he lightly muttered to Yun Che: "Little brother Yun, may I ask about this lady's... current cultivation level?"

"Oh!" Yun Che raised his

eyebrows. Using a loud enough voice, he answered with incomparable casualness: “My wife’s talents are so-so. She’s already seventeen this year, but she had only drifted into the second level of the Emperor Profound Realm. Even saying this might make everyone mock us.”

“Wu... Wu... WUT!”

Yun Che’s words were like a thunderclap that exploded beside everyone’s ears and made them shudder all over. A

terrified expression was birthed within their gazes that glanced at Xia Qingyue. Su Wanji was shocked so much that his butt fell back down to his chair.

Normally, if one said that a seventeen year old girl had the cultivation level of the Emperor Profound Realm, everyone would treat them like a lunatic. However just then, they clearly saw the simultaneous defeat of two strong experts at the Sky Profound Realm by her hands, with their own eyes... This was a strength that was only possible within late stages of the Sky Profound Realm!

This girl perhaps was a genuine seventeen year old Throne!

The atmosphere at the scene changed quickly. Everyone's attention focused on Xia Qingyue. The shock that she brought shrouded everything else. All kinds of grudges that happened earlier in the face of this huge shock were practically negligible.

Seeing the reaction of the people in the surrounding, Yun Che's heart began to lament...

This was the benefit of absolute power. When there was absolute crushing power, there was absolute crushing control. People will fear, dread, respect, worship and serve... No one would dare to bully, shout, persecute, nor assassinate...

To genuinely achieve self-protection and protect the people by your side, possessing absolute power is the only solution. Everything else was bravado.

This was something that Yun

Che always strived for with all his might.

If he didn't use that Emperor Awakening Heart Pill on Xia Qingyue and used it on himself instead, then the power he possessed today might have been... at the Emperor Profound Realm. At the time, when he was originally at the Elementary Profound Realm, the strenuous effort, cultivation, and breakthrough time made this realm an absolute fairytale, he didn't even think about this realm back then. Today, before two years had even passed, he was already standing beside an

actual Throne, and at the same time, had a brief encounter with that kind of power.

Looking at Xia Qingyue at his side, Yun Che's heart moved slightly, but he didn't have a speck of regret, and didn't think the least about what he might have gained and lost. The fact that Xia Qingyue was his wife was completely enough.

Looking at Heimu Qingya was being helped up by his two guards, Yun Che's gaze sank, and he callously laughed: "Heimu

Qingya, the debt of capturing my fiancée, Su Ling'er, and trying to kill me, have you thought well about how you would pay me and my father-in-law?"

Heimu Qingya breathed in a large breath of air. The cold energy circulating within his body made him wish that he was dead. He gritted his teeth and replied angrily: "Payment? Heh... if you have the guts, just kill me!"

"Kill you? You think I wouldn't dare?" Yun Che's face



immediately clouded: “My father-in-law is a venerable Clan Master, he must consider everything from a greater perspective. Even if you took action against Su Ling’er, he will probably be apprehensive toward your matter. However, I’m different... you’re just a teeny weeny Blackwood Stronghold Master. Killing you is no different than killing a dog! Qingyue my wife, kill him!”

These words of Yun Che ruthlessly reminded everyone, and made them simultaneously think: To be able to foster such a power at such a young age, there

must be some terrifying power backing them up! The sects they came from, the levels they were at, were so high up that they didn't even have the qualifications to look up to them.

Then for their level, perhaps killing a Blackwood Stronghold Master really was no different than killing a dog!

The awakened Xia Qingyue was especially obedient towards Yun Che. When Yun Che spoke those words, cold energy rushed forth

from her body and a delicate lotus bloomed in the middle of her palm. Then, with a dance of her fingers, it suddenly flew towards Heimu Qingya.

Followed by a bone chilling killing intent, a stream of cold energy assaulted his face. This strike caused Heimu Qingya's soul to leave him. Those words that he said earlier were just spiteful words that he said without thinking. After he finished, he realized that he wasn't facing the Grandwake Clan at all, but a Throne that didn't belong to the Grandwake Clan at all! If a Throne wanted

to kill him, what did they have to fear!

The chilling light of the dancing ice lotus looked incredibly gorgeous, but as it approached, all the hairs on his body stood up. He didn't have the slightest doubt that if he touched that ice lotus, he would undoubtedly die with no chance for flukes.

Under the threat of death, Heimu Qingya shouted out weirdly. Under his serious condition, he used more power

than ever before to escape backwards at an incredible speed as if a grasshopper, to dodge the ice lotus that came from Xia Qingyue; however, he landed on the ground like a dead dog, and wasn't able to stand up even after a long while... As the Hold Master of the Blackwood Stronghold, he was an expert of the Sky Profound Realm. Perhaps he never thought about the possibility that one day he might be in such a miserable state.

Xia Qingyue's brows moved slightly. As she turned her snow white hands over, another ice

lotus blossomed from her palm. That ice lotus from earlier clearly told everyone that for even the Blackwood Stronghold Master, who ruled the river east, she could kill them as long as she wanted to without the slightest bit of doubt. When the second ice lotus blossomed, all the faces of those who belonged to the Blackwood Stronghold had a huge change. Su Wangji ferociously stood up and roared with his old voice: "Stop! Don't do things that are so absolute, otherwise..."

"Otherwise what?" Yun Che raised his eyebrows and stared at

him while coldly saying: "When he wanted to kill me, you watched from the sides. When we want to kill him, you come out grumbling? Ah, my father-in-law and my fiancée, Su Ling'er, are all people of the Grandwake Clan. Looking at their faces, I'll pretend I didn't hear you earlier. If you dare to speak another word, I'll have my wife kill you immediately! Do you want to try it!"

Su Wangji's eyes stared wide open and his body trembled all over. A stutter came out of his throat, but in the face of Yun Che's cold and harsh gaze, he

nevertheless, forcefully  
swallowed the word “you”  
which almost came out of his  
mouth. Then, he heavily sat  
back down on his chair and did  
not dare to speak anymore. A  
fear of death was instinctual, as  
Grand Elder, he usually rode  
roughshod over people and  
indulged in his aloof position.  
He never experienced an actual  
death threat; this was an  
absolute and genuine first time.  
Facing such a threat of death,  
that so called backbone and  
courage, all became the coldest  
fear. He shuddered all over and  
didn’t dare to speak another half  
a word.



Honestly speaking, Su Hengshan could be said to be extremely relaxed and pleasurable right now. Heimu Qingya was his mortal enemy, and he could never do anything about him. As the Grand Elder, Su Wangji never paid any attention to him. Even if he was angry, the only thing he could do was endure. Right now, looking at Heimu Qingya and Su Wangji, who had kept quiet out of fear, he had an incredible pleasure in his heart. However, with his nature, he naturally didn't want to see things go to such an extreme. He came up and patted Yun Che's shoulders, shaking his head to say: "Little brother Yun, let it go. Even

though Heimu Qingya is despicable, he still has an outstanding reputation in the river east. If he's killed just like this within the Grandwake Clan, it would eventually be somewhat troublesome. He has suffered a severe injury now, and it looks like he has no chance of recovering even within half a year. Let him pay a price, and then let him go."

Yun Che didn't feel that it was unusual at all for Su Hengshan to say something like this. He bitterly smiled and said: "Father-in-law, Su Ling'er and I announced our betrothal in

front of everyone. Why are you still calling me ‘Little Brother Yun’, it’s too undeserving... If you don’t like calling me son-in-law, Father-in-law can call me Yun Che directly, or ‘Che’er’.”

Su Hengshan stared blankly. Looking at Yun Che’s appearance, he obviously put today’s ‘betrothal’ completely and genuinely into his heart. He began to laugh: “Look at me, with only the betrothal on my mind, I actually forgot to change the way I address you... Che’er, my words earlier, what do you feel about them.”

Yun Che smiled and said: “Since Father-in-law has spoken, Che’er will naturally comply. Only, what kind of price does Father-in-law want him to pay?”

Heimu Qingya’s mind had already been stretched to the limit and cold sweat dripped down from his forehead. Hearing their conversation, his mind shook. He rapidly took out a spatial ring and threw it to Su Hengshan without saying a word in the process... In order to live, he had no choice to soften up, and hand over the ‘price’ in

front of everyone. Under this disgrace, his chest wanted to break apart, but he still couldn't say anything.

Su Hengshan took the spatial ring and swept it with his profound strength. There were three whole stacks of Purple Cloud Profound Iron in there. With the rarity of the Purple Cloud Profound Iron, this was practically an entire year's worth of Blackwood Stronghold's harvest. He nodded with satisfaction and waved his hand toward Heimu Qingya: "Since Blackwood Stronghold Master is so gracious, then this

Su won't be impolite either...  
Have a nice trip, I won't be  
sending you off!"

Heimu Qingya's chest violently heaved up and down. Then, his eyes flipped, and he immediately fainted. His two guards promptly helped him up and looked at Xia Qingyue with terrified gazes and didn't dare to stay any longer. The disciples of Blackwood Stronghold who accompanied them all followed behind and left dejectedly.

Yun Che secretly let out a sigh a

relief in his heart. Then, he looked at Xia Qingyue with grateful eyes.

At the time when he met Su Ling'er, her entire world was filled with melancholy and murk... and combined with Su Ling'er's status, one could imagined that she, at the time, must have encountered a huge change within her family and all kinds of desperation.

Yun Che never knew from start to finish just what kind of disaster her family encountered.

However, looking at the busy, unrestrained and carefree Su Ling'er today, he never wanted her to repeat the life he had in the past. As a result, he borrowed Xia Qingyue's absolute strength today and used his tyrannical words and actions to help the Grandwake Clan establish a terrifying might, creating the facade of a might supporter for all those who held malicious intent towards the Grandwake Clan... Although counting on a short-term facade in hopes that the Grandwake Clan would not fall into its previous fate was bit too naive, this was the only thing that Yun Che could do...



Even though... this was only a dream world... After twenty four hours, everything would turn into nothing... but he did all that he could for Ling'er only because of his love for Su Ling'er, and the shame in the depths of his heart.

# Chapter 271 – The Bamboo Forest Phantasmagoria

---

A clan dispute that had exploded after being pent up for a long time finally reached a conclusion that no one could have expected. Yun Che didn't actually know how Su Hengshan was going to treat the Su Hengyue and his son, as well as the elders and disciples that always supported him. He didn't really care about it. When Blackwood Stronghold left, he took Su Ling'er and left.

During this matter, Yun Che had roughly gained an understanding of Su Hengshan's nature. Evidently, this was an upright, honest, modest person, and he put a great deal of affection in his heart, but this wasn't such a good clan leader... because he wasn't fierce and determined enough with the way he did things. Otherwise, a person, such as an elder, wouldn't go rampant like that. Although it reached this step and Su Hengyue had already betrayed the clan, Yun Che could imagine the way he'll treat this matter still wouldn't be very decisive. Afterall, Su Hengyue was his elder brother. Also, it wasn't just him, there were

many elder characters who supported him.

From the matters today, Yun Che was able to see the potential crisis that Grandwake Clan was in.

“Big brother Yun Che, you and Papa said that I’m already a... fiancée, what’s a fiancée?” Su Ling’er grasped Yun Che’s hands with a confused gaze and asked. She had a faint idea of what the word fiancée meant, but she wanted to hear the answer from Yun Che’s mouth.

Yun Che smiled and said: “It means that when Su Ling’er grows up, you will marry me and become my wife... like your beautiful big sister.”

Xia Qingyue slanted her eyes at him with a peculiar expression.

“Wi... fe... What does that mean?” Su Ling’er mouth was slightly agape, this form of address made her even more puzzled.

“This means that only I can call you Ling’er. After Ling’er becomes my wife, we’ll be together forever to accompany each other, take care of each other, and make each other happy and do all the things that make us happy together.” Yun Che lightly said. These words were really simple to say, but Su Ling’er at that time, until she disappeared and withered, wasn’t able to hear it from his mouth.

Su Ling’er’s footsteps immediately became a lot slower, as if Yun Che’s words made her stupid.

Yun Che lowered his head and carefully asked: “Ling’er, then when you grow up, do you want to become my wife?”

Su Ling’er raised her snowy tender cheeks, then nodded with all her might. She laughed sweetly: “Mnn! I like being with big brother Yun Che!”

Yun Che held Su Ling’er’s little hand even tighter. His heart was filled with warmth... mixed together with the pain.

Finally, Xia Qingyue could no longer remain silent. She slanted her gaze towards the tender little Su Ling'er, instantly guessed her age, and furrowed her brows and asked him: "Are you serious?"

Yun Che knew what Xia Qingyue was thinking. Anyone who saw him actually be so serious and determined for a ten year old girl to become his wife would only have one word in their heart: "beast". He stuck up the corner of her mouth and helplessly said: "I'm actually



serious... But, I have my own reason. Besides...” Yun Che’s expression was slightly painful: “This is only a dream, isn’t it? Since it’s only a dream, then let it... become as as beautiful as a fantasy.”

“...” Xia Qingyue had absolutely no idea what he meant, but looking at the sincerity and melancholy in his eyes, she turned her cheeks around and didn’t ask again.

“Qingyue my wife, today you...” Yun Che very carefully

asked: “Why are you that... Umm... obedient.”

Xia Qingyue lowered her eyes and lightly said: “The strength that I have now should have originally belonged to you. If you wanted to use it, I wouldn’t have refused.”

Yun Che stared blankly, pinched his nose a bit, and didn’t continue with this topic: “From the Earth Profound Realm all the way to the Emperor Profound Realm, this progress is too frightening. However, if the

progress is too great, then there might be realm instability issues. Qingyue, it'd be good if I'll accompany you back to the Dragon Perching Pavilion to harmonize your aura for a bit to avoid any backlash that might be left behind."

Xia Qingyue nodded: "It's enough if I return myself. You can play with Ling'er."

Yun Che did not keep insisting. After warning her to be on guard, he brought Su Ling'er and left. After all, he promised

Ling'er that after Xia Qingyue woke up, he'll keep on playing with her.

After Yun Che walked far away, Xia Qingyue turned around to look at Yun Che's figure from behind. Her mood was blank as she absent-mindedly soliloquized: "Is it because... we're husband and wife... ?..."

.....

"Ling'er, where do you want to go and play?"

“Hehe... when I’m together with big brother Yun Che, my mood will turn especially good. It’ll be fine to go anywhere and play... Oh... let me think! That’s right, let’s go to the bamboo forest in the back, and play, okay?”

“Bamboo... Forest?” These two words touched upon some of Yun Che’s nerves.

“Mnn! At the foot of the mountain, there’s a big big bamboo forest. I like the wind in

there the most. Only, Papa said that many dangerous profound beasts might appear there, and he never lets me go there by myself. Papa is always so busy too, so he rarely brings me there to play.”

“Bamboo forest... bamboo forest... okay, then let’s go to the bamboo forest and play.”

South of the Grandwake Clan, was a huge area covered with a bamboo forest that extended all the way to the foot of the mountain in the distance; dense

emerald green color flooded that entire area. Along with the rustling of bamboo leaves, dense bamboo branches and the waves of unceasingly refreshing wind that brushed by, made people incredibly relaxed and carefree.

“Wow! So relaxing!” Standing in the middle of the bamboo forest, Su Ling’er closed her eyes and extended both her arms, and raised her little nose to sniff the refreshing air from the bamboo forest with all her might.

The bamboo forest in front of them wasn't as dense as the one where Yun Che and Su Ling'er lived before, but after seeing that same emerald green, the same delightful refreshment, and feeling the brush of the oncoming wind, it felt like his spirit was being lightly rinsed. Looking at the bamboo forest, then looking at Su Ling'er, Yun Che became silly for a moment... At the time, that beautiful bamboo forest and that beautiful Ling'er, that beautiful world with two people, why was the only thing he saw hatred...

Su Ling'er was always that



melancholic, she always told him to let go of his hatred... Perhaps, at that time, she had already let go of her past and only wanted to stay together with him. The melancholy she had later, wasn't from her past at all, but had probably come from him instead...

“Big brother Yun Che, it's really beautiful here right?” Su Ling'er smiled and said: “This is my favoritest place ever. Every time I come here, it feels like I've become a fairy, and I'll forget all the unhappy things. I like everything here... I often think, if I grew up in the future, I'll

certainly place my family within a bamboo forest... Oh! Just thinking about it makes me so happy.”

Yun Che’s heart violently shook.

No wonder... no wonder when master died, she dragged his unconscious and heavily injured self for several days, and stopped within a patch of bamboo forest. At that time, he only believed that Su Ling’er felt it was safe and concealed... As it turns out, she was sincerely fond of

bamboo forests and had a dream about bamboo forests since young.

In the bamboo forest, her heart could calm down, she could imagine herself as a fairy... and only within a bamboo forest, could she overcome her loneliness, worries, fears, depression and problems... Day after day, year after year, when forever waiting for his return.

Yun Che clenched both his fists tightly, and his heart sored like a pincushion. Shame filled his

soul like a tide. He realized more and more that he wasn't worth of Ling'er, that he wasn't able to make it up to her even after ten lifetimes...

“Ling'er, let's build a home here okay?” Yun Che lightly asked.

“Huh? Build a home... here?” Su Ling'er was full of astonishment.

“Mn!” Yun Che smiled and nodded: “Didn't Ling'er always dream of living in a bamboo

forest? Then let's build a little bamboo house in the midst of these bamboos. This way, Su Ling'er can live here as long as she wants to."

"Bamboo... house?" After Su Ling'er was startled for a while, her starry eyes immediately became incredibly bright: "Can we... really? But if the bamboo here gets hurt, isn't that a bit too unfortunate..."

"Haha!" Yun Che began to laugh. He lightly comforted Ling'er's cheeks and lovingly

said: “There are so many bamboos here, and there are only a few that can be part of a little house. If these bamboos knew that they could be made into a house for an adorable Ling’er, then they would definitely be very happy.”

“Mn!!” Su Ling’er let her inner worries go and yelled with incomparable happiness.

Yun Che pointed his fingers out and directed his profound strength like a knife. With a sweep of his finger, over ten

bamboos were neatly severed. Not long after, a huge pile of bamboo stalks that were thick enough stacked up by their sides, and a large enough open space was cleared up in this dense bamboo forest.

With Yun Che's profound strength, this engineering feat wasn't too difficult, but it wasn't relaxing either. However, with Su Ling'er excitedly cheering him on by his side as he wiped his sweat from time to time, even though sweat rolled down his back, he didn't feel the least bit exhausted.

The sky gradually dimmed and a simple little bamboo house finally took shape. This little bamboo house was much smaller and cruder than the one Su Ling'er and him lived in. It wasn't even enough to shield them from the wind and rain, but this delicacy certainly had a clean and refreshing feeling. Also, this wasn't just a small bamboo house, there was a little bed and a little chair inside as well.

After the bamboo house took shape, Yun Che's ears were filled



with Su Ling'er's excited cheers. She excitedly ran around the little bamboo house. Her free spirited and beautiful voice reached his ears from very far away... She was actually like a carefree fairy.

“Big brother Yun Che, let's just live in here today, okay? This was my dream before... also, with big brother Yun Che keeping me company, I won't be afraid at all.”

“Mnn, okay!”

In the middle of the bamboo forest, they played from the afternoon all the way until the moon hung in the night sky. The laughter that came from Ling'er today was more than what Yun Che had heard from her during those times. This afternoon, the cheers and laughs that came from Ling'er became his entire world. Today, he belonged only to Ling'er.

The bright moon hung high up in the sky, and Ling'er, who ran around all afternoon, was finally tired. She and Yun Che slept shoulder to shoulder on the bamboo bed they built

together... The bamboo house was very simple and very stiff... moving just a little would cause it to creak all over. However, laying on top on it, breathing in the fresh air, sniffing the odor of the emerald green bamboo, and feeling the breeze that slipped through the cracks from time to time, the two were were incredibly content. Of course, the thing that was even more important was that they were by each other's sides.

“Big brother Yun Che, I really want to... be together with you forever... Oh... If I say it like that, would it make big brother

Yun Che feel weird... Obviously, we've only just met today, but I liked big brother Yun Che from the first moment I saw you... Am I a really strange girl?"

The little bed was incredibly narrow. Su Ling'er lightly leaned against Yun Che's body and asked in a little voice.

"No." Yun Che began to smile: "Because it's the same when I saw Ling'er. During an entire lifetime, it's very difficult for a person to inexplicably like someone during the first time

they see each other. If two people felt the same way about each other, then, perhaps they are destined by the heavens to be together, or perhaps... have lingering affection from a previous life.”

## Chapter 272 – The Dream-Waking Hour

---

Ling'er turned around, and rested her head on Yun Che's arm. Her eyes were hazily looking at the moonlight shining down between the gaps of the bamboo trees. A long time later, she gently said. "If I can sleep in a bamboo forest, while under the moonlight, it will definitely be a very beautiful, beautiful thing."

Yun Che gazed upwards, and gave a gentle and natural smile. Pushing out his palm, with a

“bang” sound, the bamboo ceiling above revealed a large enough hole. A full moon, completely appeared within Ling’er’s line of sight. A huge amount of moonlight took the opportunity to pour down as well, lighting up every corner of the bamboo house.

“Wa!” Su Ling’er let out a tender cry. Looking at the full moon in the sky, and feeling the atmosphere coming from the man beside her, this was the first time she ever experienced the sort of feeling where even her heart was intoxicated.

“Big brother Yun Che, can I really become your wife, like beautiful big sister, and be with you together forever?” Su Ling’er asked sillily. The current her, still did not really understand the relationship between a man and a woman. However, she really purely, really strongly, liked and wished to be together with him.

Yun Che held onto her small hand, and gently said. “Of course! Your papa, had already betrothed you to me in front of so many people. When the day I



return comes, and Ling'er is grown up, we can then marry, and then, be together forever..."

Su Ling'er first laughed lightly, and then, reacted over something, as she instantly grabbed onto Yun Che's arm. "When you... return? Big brother Yun Che, you're... you're going to leave?"

This was an illusory realm created by the Evil God's soul. Things like illusory realms, Yun Che was not foreign to them. Within the Phoenix's trials and

the Dragon God's trials, the places that he had been to, were all illusory realms. The people that appeared in illusory realms, would not know they were actually illusions either. However, illusory realms were, after all, illusory realms. He could only stay here for twenty four hours, and after he leaves, everything here, would all disappear as well.

Sensing the panic in Su Ling'er's voice, his heart stifled, and said. "Ling'er, I'm not someone that belongs to this place. My home is in a place that's very far, far away. Even

though I don't wish to leave, I still have to return, and I must leave, by tomorrow... But, Ling'er, don't worry, when you're grown up, I will definitely return... I will return to marry you, and then, bring you away, and stay together with you... alright?"

These were all lies that could not be fulfilled. Because, after the end of twenty four hours, every single thing here would disappear. No matter was it Su Ling'er of the past, or the current Su Ling'er, both of them could never appear again in his world. However, this promise of

his, actually came from his soul, and did not have any hint of falsehood. If Su Ling'er was still alive in this world, then, no matter how heavy the price, he would definitely fulfill it, and never would he allow her to painfully wait for him again.

The night instantly became very quiet. The moonlight no longer shone, and even the intoxicating night wind had seemingly disappeared without a trace. When the information of Yun Che leaving tomorrow, and was even for a long period of time, entered Su Ling'er's mind, she realized everything she was

currently feeling revelled about, had quietly turned into reluctance and sadness... She and her father had come to this bamboo forest many times, and every single time, she would always be happy. However, she definitely had not felt as blessed as tonight. What she liked the most was not the bamboo forest, but the person who was currently accompanying her in watching the bamboo forest together...

Su Ling'er threw herself onto Yun Che's body. She did not cry, she simply closed her eyes tightly, and said gently, as

though she was sleep-talking. “Big brother Yun Che... You must come back. I will properly, and obediently grow up. I will wait for you to come back and marry me, no matter how long, I will always be waiting... I will continue to wait till you come back and marry me...”

Although these words of infatuation that came from a ten year old girl were filled with innocence, it was more refreshing than a mature woman's emotional words. Because, the words from a girl at such a young age would not carry even a hint of falsehood,

purposefulness and  
deliberateness, but only the  
purest and simplest of emotions,  
feelings and desires.

---

On the second day, when Yun Che carried Su Ling'er back to the Grandwake Clan, it was already noon. Based on the time, the twenty four hours stated by the Evil God's soul, they were only left with less than an hour.

Last night, they slept in each

other's embrace, and in the morning, when the sky was still dark, Yun Che carried her and climbed up Grandwake Mountain, where they watched the sunrise together, and ate the wild fruits that came from Grandwake Mountain. They left many of their voices and footprints on Grandwake Mountain... And just like that, unknowingly, the deadline had approached.

“Che’er, are you really not considering to stay for a few more days? Ling’er isn’t the least bit willing to see you go, you know.”



Seeing Su Ling'er who was lying on Yun Che's back, and refused to get down at all, Su Hengshan helplessly said with a smile. To Yun Che and Xia Qingyue, he was naturally grateful in his heart, however, before he could even accommodate them, they actually come forward to say their farewells.

“I really wish to stay as well, however, I really do have a reason which I have no choice but to leave for. I seek Father-in-law for your forgiveness...” He

turned his head and glanced at the girl he was carrying. With the calmest voice he could possibly use, he said. "I'm unwilling to let Ling'er go as well."

Su Hengshan nodded. He had already firmly believed that Yun Che and Xia Qingyue must be disciples born from a Sacred Ground-level Sect. Their actions and decisions, even with his title as 'Father-in-law', he basically did not dare to interfere either. Glancing at the girl who was quietly lying on Yun Che's back, with her two hands strongly hugging onto his neck, he

silently sighed, and said. “Are you going to leave now?”

“Yes...”

“Have Ling’er take my place to send you two off then.”

The one who sent off Yun Che and Xia Qingyue, was only Su Ling’er. Because, Su Hengshan knew that the person Yun Che cared about was only Ling’er, and even if he were to personally send them off, it would simply be excessive.

After leaving Grandwake Clan, Su Ling'er accompanied Yun Che and walked a very far distance, where they could not even see the silhouette of the Grandwake Clan. The time left from the full twenty four hours, had finally reached its final countdown as well.

Su Ling'er tightly grabbed onto Yun Che's hand. She was filled with sweet laughter while they walked, and did not even reveal a depressed look in the slightest. Walking up to here, Yun Che's feet stopped, and he gently said.

“Ling’er, you can stop sending us off from here. If we go any further, I’m worried for the safety of your return journey.”

Su Ling’er did not have the slightest resistance, as she nodded, and said with a grin. “Mn! I shall listen to big brother Yun Che’s words. You and beautiful big sister must be careful on the road... Uuu, big brother Yun Che, can you give me something... something... something that will allow me to feel big brother Yun Che is always by my side...”

As she smiled... a teardrop that she did not control well, actually fell from the corner of her eye, a long tear mark drew down her tender face.

Yun Che's heart trembled, and then, he was instantly filled with a complicated sourness. He squatted down, and gently took off Su Ling'er's outer clothing. Then, he took off the Dragonscale Armor from his body, and under Xia Qingyue's surprised gaze, he put it onto her body. The Dragonscale Armor could automatically adjust itself according to the wearer's figure, so, even if Su Ling'er's figure was

very slim and small, it was still very compatible. “Ling’er, this clothing is called the Dragonscale Armor, and it can protect you very well. You must wear it frequently, just like how I will be by your side, protecting you.”

Taking off the incomparably valuable Dragonscale Armor, and giving it to Su Ling’er who was within a illusory realm, this seemed to look utterly ridiculous, however, Yun Che simply could not control himself at all... Because this was the best protection he could give Su Ling’er after leaving her.

He took out a purple spatial ring, and transferred all of the various food and water stored in the Sky Poison Pearl into it. Then, he took out the various medicinal pellets that he had usually refined himself, and put them into the ring as well, as he taught her the usage of each one. "These are Small Heaven Returning Pellets, use it when you're injured... These are Green Dew Pellets, when you're accidentally poisoned, eat one of these... These are Profound Recovering Pellets, when you do not have any energy left, eat one of these... In the future, if... I'm saying if there comes a day that



you have no choice but to leave your home, and constantly encounter danger, you must definitely remember the items inside here. You must use the items here, to protect yourself well, alright...”

Su Ling'er listened to his words, constantly nodded, and nodded...

Yun Che did not wear this spatial ring on Su Ling'er's hand, because that would be too easily eyed by people, after all, purple rings which have a gigantic

space and a long shelf life were still considered to be rather valuable treasures even in the Grandwake Clan. He passed a gold silkworm thread through the ring, hung it on Su Ling'er's neck, and had the spatial ring that was sparkling with purple light enter under clothes.

Within Su Ling'er's pair of eyes, teardrops were currently falling. Patapata. Every single teardrop, fell into the deepest part of Yun Che's soul. He carried Su Ling'er in his arms, and gently said. "Ling'er, don't be sad. We're not going to be separated forever, after all. Once you grow up, I

will then return... return to marry you! So, you must grow up happily, and cheerfully, so that when I return, I will be able to see the most beautiful Ling'er... If in the future, you were to encounter some difficulty, you must not be afraid, and you must not despair either. You have to forever remember that, in this world, there will be a person who, even if he can't see you, he will still forever think of you, and miss you..."

"Mn... Mn!!" Su Ling'er strongly nodded, and struggled to suppress her crying voice. Her

thin teeth, had already bit rows of deep teeth marks into her small red lips...

The time left, had begun to enter the end of the end. Yun Che released Su Ling'er, held her face with his two hands, and gently kissed on her forehead. Then, he turned around, gritted his teeth, and walked forward, step by step... further and further away from Su Ling'er's line of sight...

Su Ling'er did not chase after him. Her two hands hugged the

front of her chest, and she hugged onto the Dragonscale that came from Yun Che, which still carried his lingering scent. Within her blurry vision, she stared at his gradually disappearing figure. Finally, she could no longer hold it in any longer, and her tears poured out. Loud shouts accompanied by crying voices resounded through the entire large open patch of land...

“Big brother Yun Che! I will wait for you... I will wait for you to return and marry me...”

“Big brother Yun Che, you must think of me... you definitely have to think of me... You can’t not think of me...”

“Big brother Yun Che... I will grow up quickly... You must return... You must... You must... You must return...”

“Big brother Yun Che... I’m unwilling to see you go... Uuuu... Uuuuuuuu....”

Yun Che’s figure went further and further away, and finally, at

a certain moment, he disappeared completely from her line of sight. She gently knelt on the ground, held onto her face, and began to cry out loudly... Her big brother Yun Che had left, and even her soul, had been brought away as well...

Su Ling'er's loud cries entered Yun Che's ears through the wind, causing his every step, to become incomparably more difficult than the previous one. His expression was painfully bitter, yet, he did not dare to turn back. Because, he was afraid that if he were to turn, he would no longer be able to take

another step.

“The relationship between you two, is very strange.” Seeing Yun Che’s expression, Xia Qingyue softly said. She was unable to understand how a grown man and a girl who was only ten years old, create such a strong bond in just a short period of time of a single day.

Yun Che raised his head, and looked towards the sky. “Qingyue, do you believe in... past lives?”



Xia Qingyue was slightly startled. She silently looked at Yun Che for a moment, and gently nodded. “I do.”

At this moment, in Xia Qingyue and his surroundings, a ripple of spatial distortion suddenly appeared.

“We’re finally about to return.” Yun Che closed his eyes, and softly whispered. “Good bye... My Ling’er...”

As he whispered, his and Xia

Qingyue's figure had already disappeared within the spatial distortion at the same time. Following after, the feeling of a spatial shuttle assaulted over, and then, in a flash, it disappeared again. Within that moment, a cold wind blew over.

When opening his eyes, his vision was filled entirely with white snow... He and Xia Qingyue, had returned to the Heavenly Basin Secret Realm, however, their position was not at the top areas of the Heaven Basin.

“Huu...” Yun Che heaved a long sigh. Even though that was just a young Su Ling’er from an illusory realm, and only an illusion constructed by the Evil God’s powers, even if that was the case, his separation with Su Ling’er still caused his chest to sink, as though it was about to explode.

“No matter how the beautiful the dream, eventually, there will come a time when one still has to wake up from it.” Yun Che looked in front of him, and said with melancholy. Right after, he entered his subconsciousness, and said to Jasmine. “Jasmine,

why did the Evil God's soul use the last of its powers to send me to such an illusory realm? Could it be, after reading my memories, it helped me resolve some of my regrets?"

"Illusory realm?" Jasmine's voice sounded. "So you're saying, you have been thinking the entire time that the world you stayed in for a single day earlier, was just an illusory realm?"

"... That's obviously an illusory realm." Yun Che powerlessly

said. If it was not an illusory realm, then how would Su Ling'er, who had long passed away, appear? And she was even Su Ling'er who was still at a young age.

“Heh...” Jasmine suddenly began to laugh out strangely, as though she had found out something interesting, as she slowly said. “I see, it’s no wonder your emotions and actions were so unusual. You actually treated that place as an illusory realm... But, I can very responsibly tell you this. That world you were at earlier, definitely... wasn’t... an...

illusory... realm!!”

---

Author note: This chapter is finally done, I'm tired as hell... I really hate writing these sort of difficult, unrewarding, yet unavoidable scenarios!!

TL note: Now imagine me translating this difficult, unrewarding, yet unavoidable scenario...

# Chapter 273 – The Sudden Truth

---

“Not an... illusory realm?” Even though these were Jasmine’s words, Yun Che was still shaking his head: “Impossible! I’m very certain that can’t possibly be the real world. It’s only an illusory realm!”

Jasmine faintly said: “Although I’m not sure why you are so sure that was an illusory realm, I am even more sure that it was the real world. Also, in deciding whether or not a world is real or

not, I'm much more qualified than you! With your current strength, you're also absolutely unqualified to determine whether or not it's an illusory realm."

Yun Che: "..."

He was certainly incapable of determining whether or not that was an illusory realm... Even in realms of the Phoenix Trial and the Dragon God Trial, apart from them being incredibly dangerous, he felt that they were no different than the real world.



If he hadn't entered them during a trial, but had entered them under different circumstances, he wouldn't have even believed that they were illusory realms.

But Jasmine wasn't the same. The realm she was in was something that Yun Che had absolutely no way of comprehending. Her understanding of the elemental laws and her comprehension and understanding of spatial laws was something that Yun Che had completely no chance of reaching up to. When they entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, Jasmine could

immediately tell the time that the Secret Realm was in and the fact that this was something that wasn't created by the people of this plane... Finally, with the confirmation from the Evil God's soul, he found that that it indeed wasn't something created with human strength, but something that the Evil God had created.

“The place we were in before that you believed to be the Azure Cloud Continent, had complete and stable elemental laws, natural laws and order laws. These laws are the basic laws that are absolutely impossible to create instantly in an illusory

realm! Also, from the completeness of the laws, that was a continent that had existed for several billion years!! It's absolutely impossible for it to be some illusory realm... Even if the True Gods still existed, it's still impossible to create an illusory realm that has more stable and complete laws than a continent that had existed for several billion years!"

Yun Che: "!!!!"

"It's absolutely impossible even for the Evil God... let alone a

soul fragment of the Evil God. That piece of soul you conversed with was already extremely weak. Using its final strength to be able to complete a round trip teleportation is already its absolute absolute limit. It's absolutely impossible to create an illusory realm! Even a most simplest of spirit realms is impossible!"

Jasmine's words were like one strike of shocking lightning after another that exploded in Yun Che's brain. It turned his entire brain into utter chaos, as if it was a huge wave that crashed into heaven...

That wasn't an... illusory realm?

That was... the real world? A real world that actually exists? It was the Azure Cloud Continent that he was so familiar with?

Then Su Ling'er... and time...

No! Impossible! Ling'er had obviously already passed away. She passed away in my arms and I personally buried her. How

could that have been the real her... and also the time. If they were actually in the Azure Cloud Continent, it shouldn't be that time at all...

“There's more...” Jasmine's voice continued during this moment: “Not only is that Azure Cloud

Continent an actual existence, its distance from the Profound Sky Continent shouldn't be too far, because its laws of elements, nature, and order have many similarities with the Profound Sky Continent. It and the Profound Sky Continent might

actually be on the same planet.  
Only...”

Jasmine stopped for a bit. Her voice had a little doubt to it: “Azure Cloud Continent’s fundamental laws are the same as Profound Sky Continent’s laws, but the temporal law which should have the most similarities are actually a bit different... Hmph! Although interfering with the time law is fundamentally impossible, for these sort of lower planes, it’s absolutely impossible for my perception to be wrong! Perhaps, Azure Cloud Continent’s temporal law has

been tampered with, or maybe  
Profound Sky Continent's  
temporal law has been tampered  
with, or maybe both have been  
tampered with!"

Jasmine's words have been  
filtered time and time again  
within Yun Che's head, making  
his originally impatient and  
disorderly brain even more  
chaotic... Now, he suddenly  
raised his head as if lightning  
struck his brain...

He suddenly remembered that  
in the realm of the Phoenix



Trial, the Phoenix spirit told him something very strange...

“...It seems that the girl whom you call Ling’er must have really been very important to you. And also because of her, your inner self holds heavy regret. However, you don’t have to suppress this regret in the depths of your soul. You have passed through the reincarnation cycle due to the Heavenly Profound Treasure and it has tampered with this world’s karma. Under the butterfly effect, time, dimension, and planes will also change as well. Your regret and

debt, you may have not yet lost  
your chance to make up for  
them.”

“ ... ”

“ ... ”

Heavenly Profound Treasure...

Passing through the  
reincarnation cycle...

Butterfly Effect...

Tampering with karma...

Interfering with time...

These words rampaged within Yun Che's brain until they finally slowed down. With his unimaginable rebirth, with Jasmine's words, with Su Ling'er in the Azure Cloud Continent within the "illusory realm"... Everything began to slowly make sense...

Passing through the reincarnation cycle... after he died in the Azure Cloud Continent, he woke up in a dead body in the Profound Sky Continent...

Isn't this precisely going through the reincarnation cycle... Since after a person's death, all of their memories and life should have been washed away, since they reincarnate into a completely brand new next life. But for himself, he retained all of his memories from his previous reincarnation...

If the Azure Cloud Continent that he was in wasn't an illusory realm, then the Su Ling'er he met wasn't an illusion... Then, wasn't it precisely... karma and time that had changed...

Him "passing through the reincarnation cycle" was a fact, because it was his most genuine and strange experience, then... then... Azure Cloud Continent's time interference, Ling'er's existence... were real too!?

However, even Jasmine had

said interfering with time was fundamentally impossible... Also, he didn't have the so called Heavenly Profound Treasure that was able to "pass through the reincarnation cycle" on his body. The only Heavenly Profound Treasure that he had was the Sky Poison Pearl, and its powers were concentrated in poison, medicine, refinement, containment and finding things; they had nothing to do with "reincarnation" at all. Apart from the Sky Poison Pearl, he had no other Heavenly Profound Treasures at all. If he really had one he didn't know about, how could Jasmine not sense it?

“Jasmine...” Yun Che breathed a deep breath and quietly asked: “Within the Heavenly Profound Treasures, is there anything that allows... passage through the reincarnation cycle, and tampering with karma?”

“...I just said, temporal laws are fundamentally impossible to be tampered with, but I never said that it’s absolutely impossible to tamper with them, precisely because among the seven Heavenly Profound Treasure, there exists a heaven opposing item that can cause time to flow in reverse. It’s precisely the seventh treasure of the Seven

Heavenly Profound Treasures, the “**Mirror of Samsara**”. The power of the Mirror of Samsara is precisely ‘tampering with cause and effect and transmigration’! After the complete destruction of the True Gods, there hasn’t been another power that was sufficient enough to tamper with time and dimensions. Apart from the ‘Mirror of Samsara’ that is able to interfere with time, there’s also the sixth treasure of the Heavenly Profound Treasures that could interfere with dimension, the ‘World Needle’.”

“The abnormalities of the



temporal laws within the Azure Cloud Continent made me precisely thinking about the possibility that someone used the ‘Mirror of Samsara’... this is an extremely interesting discovery since at least this shown that the ‘Mirror of Samsara’ once manifested on the Azure Cloud Continent! If ‘those people’ knew about this fact, then perhaps a terrifying wave of carnage would sweep through this plane!”

Mirror of Samsara... Mirror?

Yun Che's heart suddenly throbbed, and he subconsciously held the pendant that he always wore.

Could it be...

“Jasmine,” Yun Che calmly said: “If the Mirror of Samsara actually manifested, then you can probably sense its existence with your power right?”

“No,” Jasmine denied: “Amongst the seven Heavenly Profound Treasures, the Mirror

of Samsara's abilities are the most heaven opposing, but the reason it's ranked last is because every time it activates, it must hibernate for twenty years. Within these twenty years, it does not have a shred of power. It'll become the same as most ordinary mirrors."

" ... "

Yun Che's heart rate accelerated. He held his pendant tightly... In his memories of the Blue Wind Empire, he wore a pendant since young and never

took it over. Similarly, in the Azure Cloud Continent, he had always worn it. In two different continents, two different lives, he had a pendant that he always wore with him.

After opening this pendant, there was a little mirror... A little mirror that could not possibly be more ordinary.

But according to Xiao Lie, the reason his birth parents were chased and killed was because of an item known as a... “Heavenly Profound Treasure”!

Could it be that it actually is... one of the seven Heavenly Profound Treasures, the Mirror of Samsara?

If it really was the Mirror of Samsara, it would explain why he went from the Profound Sky Continent to the Azure Cloud Continent and the period from the Azure Cloud Continent back to the Profound Sky Continent... his memories, his life's transfer, without any breaks! All the questions could have a correspond explanation...

If it really was the interference from the Mirror of Samsara, then... then... the Azure Cloud Continent that he just went to... the Su Ling'er he had personally embraced...

Were also real!!!

His life in the Azure Cloud Continent, disruption in reincarnation, disruption in space and time... everything was real!!

Su Ling'er... is still in this world! Still on the Azure Cloud Continent that he was familiar with and grew up in!

Then, his master... perhaps with the reverse flow of time, might still be alive! After all, when Su Ling'er was ten, he was only twelve. At the time, he was still traveling the world with his master!

“That was Ling'er... that was Ling'er... that was actually Ling'er... She didn't die... she's really Ling'er...”

The sudden facts exploded Yun Che's brain. All the blood in his body practically began to boil. He looked at both his hands and violently trembled all over... He always thought the Ling'er that he had obviously seen and closely embraced was nothing but an illusion created by the Evil God. Jasmine's words, combined with his experience with the voice of the Phoenix spirit made him hear the morning bell. His Ling'er had just been in front of his eyes, by his side. He treated her like an illusion and then left just like that...



Yun Che growled from the bottom of his throat, then fiercely reached out and pounded his head. He was occasionally mad with joy and then occasionally had a nervous breakdown... the Ling'er he was madly in love with was still alive. In his anger and regret, he treated her like an illusion, and didn't bring her back at all...

All of Yun Che's weird reactions had finally started to make Jasmine understand them. Looking at the pendant that he had been grabbing onto in his

hand, she suddenly said: “So that’s how it was, no wonder you went to that continent and lost control when you saw that little girl... It’s also no wonder why Sky Poison Pearl fused together with your body...”

“Don’t tell me, the one who activated the Mirror of Samsara’s power... was you!?”

# Chapter 274 – Leaving Heaven Basin Secret Realm

---

“I don’t know.” Yun Che didn’t refute Jasmine, but he was unable to confirm it either. After a slight hesitation, he frankly said: “But I actually did transmigrate because I was originally poisoned to death in the Profound Sky Continent, and in the Azure Cloud Continent, I fell off a cliff when I was twenty seven... After waking up, I returned to the Profound Sky Continent, and awoke under the condition in which I had been poisoned to

death... All the way until now. And Ling'er, was my most important person in the Azure Cloud Continent, but she had obviously died!”

Jasmine: “...”

“These sorts of things actually happened to you!?” Jasmine was truly startled. She had heard of the legends concerning the Mirror of Samsara, but she hadn’t seen the Mirror of Samsara and its powers at all. If what Yun Che said was true, then it would fit perfectly with

the Mirror of Samsara's "passing through the reincarnation cycle" in the legends! Only the Mirror of Samsara could achieve these things!

"Then, in your memories, was there an item that was always on your body... If I'm guessing correctly, it should be the pendant that you've always worn on your neck? I remember when you opened it, there was only a mirror inside..." Jasmine slowly said: "Then, apart from the Sky Poison Pearl, there was actually another Heavenly Profound Treasure on your body! Except, where did you get this Heavenly

Profound Treasure from?”

“I don’t know... it had always been on me. I always thought that reason that I kept wearing it was because it was the only evidence to find my birth parents.” Yun Che shook his head: “The only thing that I want to know now is: since the Azure Cloud Continent is real, then where is it? How do I return there... That was the real Ling’er... I must find her again!”

“...If I can leave your body and move as I wish, then I can find

where the Azure Cloud Continent is within three days, but it's completely impossible for me right now. Azure Cloud Continent shouldn't be too far away from the Profound Sky Continent. When my powers reach a certain height, I can naturally see a wider portion of the world... For you, this is the only way to return to that Continent.

Not too far away... This was in regards to Jasmine's power level! If it was actually not too far away, how could there be no records of the Profound Sky Continent in the Azure Cloud

Continent. Even if Jasmine's guess was correct, and the Azure Cloud Continent and the Profound Sky Continent were on the same planet, then the distance between the two would certainly be impossibly far, a distance that's even harder to reach than the sky.

Jasmine's final words also tapped Yun Che's confused brain heavily and suddenly made him clear-headed.

Right... That's right! No matter how much I think about it right



now, it's useless! At least the conclusion is that Su Ling'er is still in this world. This was an incredibly pleasant surprise. To meet Ling'er again, the only way was to become strong. As long as he was stronger, strong until the point that he could shun the heavens and earth, then Azure Cloud Continent would appear in his sights, and he could find Ling'er again!!

Yun Che's mood became incredibly calm. He breathed in a breath of air and suddenly asked: "Jasmine, if it's really because of the Heavenly Profound Treasure's

interference that made Azure Cloud Continent's time flow backwards, then on the Azure Cloud Continent right now, could another Sky Poison Pearl appear?"

"This is unlikely." Jasmine faintly said: "There's also something you're mistaken about. If the power of the Mirror of Samsara really activated, then the reverse flow of time would be a small part of it. The thing it's most suited to interfere with is 'karma' and 'reincarnation'. Right now, not only would you and the Sky Poison Pearl not be on it, it's possible that... they've

never existed.”

Yun Che: “...”

“Karma”, “Reincarnation”... these were illusory and mythical words. They were things that were impossible to touch no matter what. Yun Che never thought that such incredibly illusory things could actually be interfered with. He spread his palm out, looked at the dim pendant, and quietly asked: “If this is really the Mirror of Samsara, then what kind of person... could actually create

such an item...”

“This fact is impossible to trace back to.” Jasmine said: “But the only thing that’s certain is that interfering with ‘karma’ and ‘reincarnation’ is tens of millions times harder than interfering with ‘dimension and ‘time’. When the True Gods existed, there were certainly powers that could interfere with the flow of time, but not one True God had the ability to interfere with ‘karma’ and ‘reincarnation’. Since they were the most fundamental laws since universal order, they should absolutely be untamperable;

otherwise, there would be chaos beyond the control and expectation in the universal order. However, the Mirror of Samsara could actually tamper with the most fundamental universal laws... The Sky Poison Pearl fusing with your body, is completely because of the 'karma' interference. It made what should have been impossible, possible. No one knew who created it, and what power created it.

“There are many legends that involved the Mirror of Samsara. In its history, it fell into many people's hands until it finally fell

into somewhere unknown... But in all these years, I've never heard of anyone being able to activate its power. And for the Heavenly Profound Treasures, what was even more unimaginable was that you... You are clearly an inferior human, but you possess two Heavenly Profound Treasures... If it wasn't for the fact that I have to rely on the Sky Poison Pearl, and the Sky Poison Pearl is fused with your body, I'll unhesitatingly choose to kill you and seize both of your Heavenly Profound Treasures."

"Yun Che, what happened to

you?”

A deeply doubtful voice arose from the crisp and cool air beside Yun Che's ears. He gripped his palms, didn't put the pendant back around his neck, and stored it into the Sky Poison Pearl. Then, he smiled bashfully at Xia Qingyue: “Nothing's wrong, I just have some sudden regrets.”

After swallowing the Evil God's Water Seed, Yun Che was feeling very intimate with water element right now, and it far

surpassed Xia Qingyue. He didn't feel the slightest bit cold in this world of ice and snow. He gazed at Xia Qingyue all over with a strange expression and said: "I really want to take a look at how surprised your master and everyone else would be when they find out that you entered the Emperor Profound Realm."

Without a doubt, after they leave the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, once Xia Qingyue's profound strength was exposed, there would be huge indescribable commotion. A seventeen year old at the



Emperor Profound Realm, that was truly an achievement on a level of the Four Great Sacred Grounds... For a Sacred Ground-class disciple to emerge from a little Blue Wind Empire, perhaps the entire Profound Sky Continent would be shaken.

Xia Qingyue looked deeply at Yun Che, and suddenly said: “Thank you.”

“...Why thank me?”

“Formidable power is very

important to me, and it's something that I'll chase after for my entire life. If not for you, I wouldn't have been able to reach my current height. So, thank you..." Xia Qingyue said lightly as she controlled her gaze. Back then, when he was in Floating Cloud City, he was powerless and helpless, so he was always being bullied until he was eventually expelled from his clan with no power to resist the other youths. If it wasn't for her assistance, his most beloved relatives would encounter hardships... After meeting again, he had already matured into a tree that pierced the heavens. The help that he had given her at the time was ten of

millions times more than she had given him.

“Heh, we’re married, we don’t need to thank each other.” Yun Che grinned and laughed: “If you really want to thank me, hmm... let me see you smile. We’ve known each other for so long, but I’ve never see you smile before.”

Xia Qingyue lightly shook her head: “It’s impossible for me. Ever since I was four years old, I had already forgotten how to cry, and how to smile...”

Yun Che was immediately stunned. He saw a dismal confusion flash past both of Xia Qingyue's eyes. He thought for a while and said: "Then can you tell me why you're so persistent on seeking power?"

When he was young, he was full of curiosity about his fiancée Xia Qingyue. When he played together with Xia Yuanba, he would often ask about Xia Qingyue, but Xia Yuanba had the same response every time... she was cultivating.

Practically all of her time was devoted to cultivating profound strength. Until Yun Che was sixteen years old, he had only seen her a couple of times, and they were all fleeting glances. She had an attachment to profound strength that was incomprehensible for other people to understand.

Xia Qingyue stayed silent for a while. She reached out her jade hands, cupped some flying snow and gently replied: “Aren’t you the same as me... You, why are you so attached?”

“For myself, and for all the people I care about to not be mistreated.” Yun Che said without the slightest hesitation.

“Not be mistreated...” Xia Qingyue’s eyelashes softly closed as she answered with a voice as gentle as fluttering snow: “I only seek... to reunite my family.”

Yun Che’s heart was moved as he looked at Xia Qingyue with shock. He silently pondered about the meaning of her words for a while then asked: “This

‘family’, does it include me? If you talk about a family, then as your husband, I should be your... most intimate of family on paper.”

Ice and snow slowly accumulated on Xia Qingyue’s palm, and didn’t melt for a long while. Her jade hands moved slightly and the white snow scattered into all four directions in the frigid wind. She touched the indescribable and bleak pain in her heart that was silently spreading out: “I am a person who’s not fit to have a husband... because I might never be able to fulfill the responsibilities of a

wife... There will be a day when I will leave here to go to a distant place, and it might be impossible to return anymore...” She shut her eyes and softly spoke as if she were in a dream: “Once, you were as ordinary as sand and only made me occasionally worry about you. Now, you are as dazzling as diamond, and makes me, who is destined to have no future, feel more and more terrified...”

Rumble Rumble...

A deep and distant rumbling



noise sounded, and slight vibrations began to arise from the ground. Two rapidly expanding spatial whirlpools individually appeared beside Yun Che and Xia Qingyue.

“It looks like we’re returning...”

Before Yun Che even finished his sentence, the two were simultaneously sucked into the spatial whirlpools.

# Chapter 275 – Gargantuan Favor

---

In the blink of an eye, two days had passed since members of the ranking tournament's top ten entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm.

Several tens of people anxiously stood waiting on the vacant space in Heavenly Sword Villa's rear mountains. These were precisely the members of the various sects who could not enter the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. Heaven Basin Secret Realm was a completely isolated

world, and news of anything that happened in there could not be transmitted, so they had absolutely no idea as to what happened in there during these two days.

Cang Yue and Xia Yuanba were undoubtedly the most worried of persons there, because not only did Yun Che enter with serious injuries that had not fully healed, his profound strength had not even fully recovered either, which meant that the danger of him entering this unknown area was increased exponentially. In these past two days, Cang Yue could

barely eat and could barely sleep. She had long since been waiting in this spot, and anxiously waited for Yun Che's figure to appear.

Ling Kun stood in the middle of the open space and silently looked on ahead.

Zzzt!

In the wake of the brilliant radiance brought along by the spatial vortex, a person dressed in white was tossed out. His hair

was disheveled and his clothes were worn out, as if he had recently fought a fierce battle... The first person to come out, was surprisingly Ling Yuefeng.

Ling Kun opened his eyes, and faintly asked: “Any finds?”

Ling Yuefeng slightly exhaled, and answered with knitted brows: “We were not lucky this time, and encountered Heaven Basin Secret Realm’s harsh winter. Everything was sealed in ice and covered by snow, so there weren’t any great gains.

But, I made an astonishing discovery, inside this Heaven Basin Secret Realm, unexpectedly dwells a Tyrant Profound Beast!”

“Oh?” Ling Kun’s gaze flashed: “What kind of Tyrant Profound Beast?”

Ling Yuefeng shook his head: “I have only perceived its sound force and did not dare to approach it. Perhaps someone had the misfortune of angering it.”

“Hmm...” Ling Kun muttered: “There was actually a Tyrant Profound Beast inside. If I knew that, I would’ve went in together with you. Wanting to find a Tyrant Profound Beast, is not that easy.”

Although Heaven Basin Secret Realm was mysterious, the things that could be found inside were too inferior to Ling Kun. After he had entered once, he had no interest entering again, which was why he didn’t go this time.

Zzzt Zzzt Zzzt Zzzt...

After Ling Yuefeng, were the flickering of many rays of light. More and more people were being tossed out. Even though Ling Yun and Ling Jie were both in tattered clothing, they were both perfectly fine, and also had some findings.

Members of the various large sects appeared one after another. Very quickly, Xiao Sect's members were all present, and Burning Heaven Clan's members were appearing one



after another... but in the end, only four had come out.

Fen Moli appeared with a murderous aura that filled the sky. The moment he appeared, he loudly roared with extreme rage: “Mu Tianbei!! You brute, come out right now!! To actually have murdered my Second Young Master... I will exterminate your entire clan!!”

Fen Moli’s anger and shout instantly made the members of Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress tremble with fear, and

also stunned everyone present... Mu Tianbei killed Fen Juebi? Nobody had heard that there were any grievances between Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress and Burning Heaven Clan. Why would Mu Tianbei kill Fen Juebi... To have killed Burning Heaven Clan's Second Young Master, had Mu Tianbei gone crazy!?

“Great Elder!” Fen Juecheng immediately went to Fen Moli's side, pulled him to the side, and said whispered something with gritted teeth.

More and more people were coming out, and every time one came out, Cang Yue's heart would tightly squeeze a little. Xia Yuanba incessantly comforted her on the side: "Senior Sister, rest assured. Brother-in-law is so strong, so he definitely be fine."

Zzzt...

The last rays of light flashed in the empty space, and Yun Che simultaneously appeared with Xia Qingyue. They stood side by side.

“Junior Brother Yun!” Cang Yue shouted out with pleasant surprise and immediately let go of all her worries. She sucked in a long breath of air, and hurriedly dashed at Yun Che.

And at this time, an angry roar suddenly exploded like a clap of thunder: “Despicable junior... Die!!”

In the midst of the roar, Fen Moli immediately pounced like an angry lion. His entire right arm ignited with deep purple

flames, as he directly burst towards Yun Che.

Everyone present were all basically discussing their findings and gains within the Heaven Basin Secret Realm. No one would ever think that the situation would change in this way. Qin Wushang immediately turned pale with fright. Chu Yueli and Chu Yuechan's complexions had also abruptly changed... because Xia Qingyue was standing right next to Yun Che. Under this attack from Fen Moli, it was extremely possible for Xia Qingyue to be harmed as well. How could two juniors

possible withstand an attack from an expert half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm?

But since everything was so unexpected, once they had time to react, Fen Moli had already flown in front of them. There was simply no time for them to block it, and they could only simultaneously yell out: “Stop!!!”

Cang Yue, who had almost arrived at Yun Che’s side suddenly felt an incomparably scorching air current come from

her rear, and the dangerous feeling made her rosy complexion lose color. Fen Moli's attack in extreme rage was fast and ferocious. He wanted to instantly kill Yun Che, and judging by the direction in which he had charged at, Cang Yue would be the first to be affected.

Yun Che's brows immediately sank. Instead of withdrawing, his figure flashed forward, and he rapidly sound transmitted to Xia Qingyue: "Help me cripple him!!"

After leaving behind an afterimage, Yun Che had already flashed beside Cang Yue, tightly embraced her, and activated “Sealing Cloud Locking Sun”...

In the midst of everyone’s surprised gazes, as if mad, Xia Qingyue confronted Fen Moli’s attack. Blue light curled around her right hand as she extended one hand forward and met Fen Moli’s purple flame.

“Qingyue!!” This scene made Chu Yueli turn pale in horror, as she could only helplessly watch



the two people's attacks collide...

A muffled sound echoed as an enormous ice lotus instantly blossomed between the two people. Under the swiveling of the ice lotus, the purple flames on Fen Moli's arms instantly extinguished completely. Without even having time to be bewildered, the enormous ice lotus suddenly split open, transforming into nine smaller ice lotuses that separately smashed onto Fen Moli's face, neck, body, ribs, and limbs...

Though they were both at the Emperor Profound Realm, if Xia Qingyue had to go against Chu Yuechan, she would be defeated without question, because in terms of battle experience and mastery of the Frozen Cloud Arts, she was far inferior compared to Chu Yuechan. However, in regards to pure profound strength, she had already completely surpassed Chu Yuechan by one level, and had surpassed all of the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies. In this kind of direct collision, even Chu Yuechan would be at a disadvantage, let alone a Fen Moli... Even though half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm only had half a step of

distance from the Emperor  
Profound Realm, this half step  
was a tremendous chasm!

The scene that everyone had  
expected to happen did not  
appear. What they saw, was  
actually Fen Moli being thrown  
backwards outside of the  
fluttering ice crystals. He landed  
with a groan, and his eyes  
protruded outwards. His  
complexion was pale as he  
widened his eyes and firmly  
fixed his gaze at Xia Qingyue. His  
throat surged with movement,  
until finally, his entire body  
trembled all over. With a thump  
of his heart, he knelt on the

ground as his entire body twitched in pain.

Xia Qingyue casually withdrew her arm. During this entire course of events, she had not moved from her current location. The profound energy produced by the exchange between her and Fen Moli was obviously incomparably frightening, but under the protection of Sealing Cloud Locking Sun, Yun Che and Cang Yue had only been thrown into the distance, and was not even the slightest bit injured. He promptly released Cang Yue and worriedly looked her up and

down: “Senior Sister, are you alright?”

Cang Yue’s little face had turned pale from the change of events earlier. With her profound strength at the True Profound Realm, being immersed in the collision between one at the Emperor Profound Realm and one half step into the Emperor Profound Realm was a sensation similar to dropping down the abyss of death. When she saw the safe and sound Yun Che, she laughed in relief: “I’m alright...”

After she said those two words, she discovered that their surroundings had become frighteningly quiet... Everyone's gaze were focused upon Xia Qingyue. Regardless of whether it was the young disciples or those imposing experts, all of their faces had suddenly warped into that of shock.

“Emperor...                      Profound...  
Realm!” Ling Kun looked at Xia Qingyue with sinking eyebrows, and an elusive tint flashed in his eyes. The three words he had said aloud resonated like three claps of thunder beside everyone's ears.

“This isn’t... possible...” Ling Yuefeng absent-mindedly murmured. The shock in his heart was indescribable. Although Chu Yuechan stepping into the Emperor Profound was surprising, it was still completely acceptable. After all, she was originally half a step into the Emperor Profound Realm. But Xia Qingyue... a seventeen year old Throne. In Blue Wind Empire, this was practically even more fantastical than myth! Even if one were to personally witness this, they were incapable of believing it.

Everyone had become completely dumbstruck. A seventeen year old Throne, this was a concept that they were fundamentally unable to comprehend, and also something they were simply unable to accept.

“Qingyue, you... you actually...” Chu Yueli walked over. She looked at Xia Qingyue with beautiful eyes filled with shock and incredibility. Since a disciple had made a breakthrough, she ought to be happy, but the breakthrough Xia Qingyue had made this time was just too exaggerated, and too



terrifying. What she first felt, was actually terror.

Standing in front of Xia Qingyue, and sensing the aura of a Throne coming from her, even as her Master, Chu Yueli, still felt a deep oppression.

Xia Qingyue walked forward, gently made a disciple's courtesy, and softly explained in front of everyone's gazes: "Master, disciple had a fortuitous encounter within the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, and consumed a fully bloomed

Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus... Only, this disciple never thought that the effectiveness of the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus far surpassed the rumors. In the span of one day, it unexpectedly allowed this disciple to directly break into the Emperor Profound Realm.”

The intelligent Xia Qingyue knew that she had to explain this matter in front of everyone present. The breakthrough she had this time was too world-shocking. Those shocked, were not only a little Blue Wind Empire. If she did not explain it properly, there would inevitably

be many people or forces... outside of Blue Wind Empire that would do their utmost to investigate the reason behind it in attempts to reap some profit. It was extremely possible for this to attract unexpected trouble, so she simply publicized the reason behind it, cutting off any sort of future troubles. At the same time, since she had already consumed the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, others would obviously not covet any remaining surplus. Even if they longed for it, it would still lead to nowhere.

“So that’s... it... So that’s it!”

The name, Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus pierced like thunder through the ten large sects' ears. That was the sacred object written about in Blue Wind Empire's records! Rumors of the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus' existence being within the Heaven Basin Secret Realm had also been there for several hundred years. After hearing the cause of this change, a portion of the terror within Chu Yueli's mind naturally dissipated, and was replaced by extremely pleasant surprise and excitement: "Four hundred years ago, a late senior who had fallen within the Heaven Basin

Secret Realm had left behind news of an Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus within the Secret Realm. In these several hundred years, numerous seniors had also attempted to find it. I didn't expect that this great opportunity had actually fallen onto you... This is truly a blessing from Heaven."

As the other sects' members listened in on their conversation, the shock, admiration, and jealousy in their eyes were practically leaking out of their body... The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, a sacred object from

legends! No wonder why a young girl had reached the Emperor Profound Realm in one step. This was Xia Qingyue's good luck, and was also Frozen Cloud Asgard's good luck... In front of this heaven-sized great luck, they seriously felt that even with their several hundred years of luck added together, it would not even reach this Frozen Cloud Asgard that had recently obtained an Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus!!

They simply could not imagine what sort of realm the seventeen year old Xia Qingyue, who had entered the Emperor Profound

Realm, would reach in the future... But what they did expect, was that when Xia Qingyue fully matured, as long as she was there, it was impossible for Heavenly Sword Villa to maintain their stable and unmoving, millennium long, number one position!

Xia Qingyue actually shook her head, and softly replied: “Master, this actually isn’t disciple’s good luck. The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus wasn’t actually found by this disciple. And was instead...” She used her eyes to hint at Yun Che, and continued: “And was instead

discovered by Sir Yun. At that time, disciple had encountered a gigantic beast within the Secret Realm, and was bound for death. To save me, Sir Yun allowed me to consume the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus... If not for Sir Yun's rescue, not only would it be impossible for me make a breakthrough, even my life would remain inside Heaven Basin Secret Realm."

Xia Qingyue's words were even a bit unexpected to Yun Che... because the few sentences she said to play it down, had actually made Frozen Cloud Asgard owe him a gargantuan favor!!



# Chapter 276 – “Demon”

## (1)

---

Everyone used an incredibly amazed expression to look at Yun Che. Each and every one of them truly found it difficult to believe that someone would freely give away an item that was hard to come by even in a millennia, to someone else. If he did that under the state in which he clearly knew that it was the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, then this boldness, and this sort of sensibility could both be said to be larger than the heavens.

Chu Yueli lightly nodded towards Yun Che: “Yun Che, this favor of yours, our Frozen Cloud Asgard will remember it. From today onwards, you are our Frozen Cloud Asgard’s most important friend! If you need anything, do not hesitate to ask our Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“This idiot... just for the purpose of gaining a beauty’s favor, he actually gave away the legendary Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus!! The Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus!!” Xiao Kuangyu murmured while

gritting his teeth. Even though he said that, he was extremely clear in his heart that the seventeen year old Yun Che, who was able to obtain first place in the ranking tournament, was not an idiot no matter what!

What they saw were only two people lucky enough to find the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, and simply did not know of the fatal calamity that had befallen them when they found it.

What Chu Yueli had said was

not out of anyone's expectations. If Yun Che had willingly given the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus to them, no matter which sect it was, they would all be willing to treat him like an ancestor. This kind of favor was truly too great. Not only did he save Frozen Cloud Asgard's most outstanding disciple since their founding, he had also allowed Frozen Cloud Asgard's level to greatly increase.

Yun Che originally did not care about some Frozen Cloud Asgard's favor, but once Chu Yueli had said those words, his heart moved as he asked: "Chu

fairy is too courteous. With the friendship between me and Qingyue, this isn't really that much... But, erm, can I really ask for anything?"

When he said those words, his gaze shifted towards Chu Yuechan. Sensing his gaze on her, Chu Yuechan's looked to the side with a face full of coldness.

Chu Yueli's eyelashes softly fluttered, and she simply answered with elegance: "This great kindness that you have given our Frozen Cloud Asgard is

too difficult for us to repay. If you have any requests, as long as we can accomplish them, as long as they don't violate our Frozen Cloud Asgard's principles, we would certainly not refuse."

"Okay!" Yun Che nodded. That being the case, he no longer had to be modest with Frozen Cloud Asgard: "I hope that the noble Asgard would remember today's words. If this junior requires any help from the noble Asgard in the future, then this junior would definitely not hold back."

“Our Frozen Cloud Asgard would never go back on its word. It is only right for us to do this because of the great kindness you have bestowed upon Qingyue.” After finished speaking, Chu Yueli shifted her gaze towards the extremely ugly sight of Fen Moli. At this time, her eyes became as cold as ice crystals: “Fen Moli! My Frozen Cloud Asgard and your Burning Heaven Clan have no grudges nor grievances, yet you, with your status as your clan’s Great Elder, had the nerve to actually dare attack our disciple with a deadly strike! If Qingyue did not have such heavenly luck, then she would’ve died by your hands! Do you, Burning Heaven

Clan, wish to become mortal enemies with our Frozen Cloud Asgard?”

In Fen Moli's previous explosive rage inducing strike, he used around seventy percent of his strength. As for Xia Qingyue's counterattack, she used at least ninety percent of her strength. In that one exchange, Fen Moli's internal injuries could be said to be extremely severe. If not for his unwavering profound strength that firmly suppressed it, he would have already fainted long ago. With fury written all over his face, he took in a large mouthful of air and pointed at



Yun Che: “That... That brute! He killed... our clan’s Second Young Master!”

Following the last flickering lights from midair, Heaven Basin Secret Realm had completely closed. But two people had not come out. One was precisely Fen Juebi, and the other, was Mu Tianbei.

“I killed your clan’s Second Young Master?” The corner of Yun Che’s mouth slanted. That disdainful expression looked as if he had heard an amusing joke:

“Elder Fen, with which eye did you see me kill your Second Young Master? Hmph, in fact, it was your Burning Heaven Clan’s Fen Juecheng and Fen Juebi who plotted to take advantage of me when I had not fully recovered my strength in Heaven Basin Secret Realm. Not only that, they did not even hesitate to involve Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress’ Mu Tianbei! If it weren’t for Xia fairy’s rescue, I would’ve already died in your Burning Heaven Clan’s two despicable people’s hands!”

“What?”                      Qin                      Wushang’s

expression changed into that of fury.

“Bullshit!!” Fen Moli angrily replied: “Why would our great Burning Heaven Clan target a nameless junior like you! It was obviously you who had evil intentions and plotted against my Second Young Master!!”

His words “nameless junior”, made many secretly laugh to themselves. Before the ranking tournament, Yun Che was indeed a nameless junior. But now, Yun Che’s overall strength

and fame, had far surpassed every member of Burning Heaven Clan's younger generation. If he was still considered to be a "nameless junior", then wouldn't it mean that his Burning Heaven Clan disciples were not even worthy of being called "nameless"?

"Hahahaha!" Yun Che laughed wildly: "Your Burning Heaven Clan's despicable shamelessness, distorting of facts, and ability to blame the victim first as the guilty, has truly opened my eyes. Fen Juebi did indeed die, but he had clearly died by Mu Tianbei's hands! At that time, Xia Qingyue

and your Young Clan Master were present. Furthermore, I have also heard your Young Clan Master say that you had planted some kind of special soul imprint on Fen Juebi's body. If he had been killed, then you would immediately know who had killed him... Do you swear on your Burning Heaven Clan's thousand years of honor, that the person you saw, who killed Fen Juebi, was truly me?!"

"You..." Fen Moli was suddenly at a loss for words, as his face turned purple. His reaction, had also let everyone clearly understand the truth. They were

not at all unfamiliar with such a thing like a dying imprint. But seeing Fen Moli's reaction, the person he saw, who had killed Fen Juebi, was definitely not Yun Che. Due to that, it was clear that Burning Heaven Clan had shifted this crime on Yun Che's head. As for everything else Yun Che had said, they ought to be true as well.

Chu Yueli's crescent brows tightened slightly while asking: "Qingyue, you were really present at that time? What exactly happened?"

Xia Qingyue calmly replied: "Reporting to Master, at that time, disciple was indeed nearby and had heard about the Burning Young Clan Master resenting Sir Yun because of Princess Cang Yue. After he entered the Heaven Basin Secret Realm with Fen Juebi, they had continuously tailed behind Sir Yun together. Furthermore, they had also brought along Heavenly Spear Thunderfire Fortress' Fort Master Mu, who wanted to put Sir Yun to death. But when they took action, Fort Master Mu had accidentally killed Fen Juebi. With the support of the concealment of ice and snowy weather, disciple took Sir Yun and helped him escape that life-

threatening situation. Elder Fen saying that Fen Juebi had died by Sir Yun's hands... are completely false."

Xia Qingyue had said the complete truth, but her narration was extremely ingenious. Mu Tianbei accidentally killing Fen Juebi was true, but the one who concocted the "accident" was Yun Che.

Xia Qingyue was like a fairy in snow. With her incomparably beautiful complexion and



extraordinary temperament, it was impossible for anyone to doubt her words. Once her words fell, a hissing sound immediately echoed from the surroundings. All kinds of contemptuous gazes lowered onto the six Burning Heaven Clan members and pressured them. They had recently suffered a crushing defeat in the ranking tournament, angered Frozen Cloud Asgard, and now they were held in contempt in everyone's eyes. If this were to go out, it would very negatively affect their Burning Heaven Clan's prestige.

Fen Juecheng's expression continuously changed. He finally clenched his teeth and said with complete discomfort: "Yun Che! You are well aware of how my Second Brother died! This grudge, our Burning Heaven Clan will make you pay in blood!"

Yun Che laughed coldly. Just when he was about to counterattack, a low voice suddenly sounded: "Enough!!"

Ling Kun swept the crowd with a gaze full of coldness. His gaze

possessed an incomparably heavy oppression. Everyone who was swept past had all stopped breathing instantly. He spoke with indifference: "Wait until you leave Heavenly Sword Villa to settle whatever grudges and grievances you have with one another. How you want to settle it, is none of anyone's concern. But this Heavenly Sword Villa, is not a place for you to resolve your resentments! I don't want to know who killed who, or who wants to kill who. What had happened earlier, I can pretend that they did not happen. But after we return to the Villa, if anyone takes action or continue to bring up past grievances, don't blame me for being

impolite!”

The incomparable might brought along by Ling Kun's words made everyone shut their mouths. As for Burning Heaven Clan's side, they had also breathed in a sigh of relief. Ling Kun said to Ling Yuefeng: “Yuefeng, I have stayed here long enough. I must leave tomorrow, so the Demon Sealing Ritual should start right now.

Ling Yuefeng nodded: “Everything will be as Elder Ling has planned.” After he finished

speaking, he turned to face the crowd: "All of you have already heard what Elder Ling said previously. Everyone has only recently left the Heaven Basin Secret Realm and had spent quite a large amount of their profound energy, so much that some of you still retain injuries. But this is the first time that the Demon Sealing Ritual became open to the public. This 'demon' had also used to be an enormous secret. To be able to personally see this demon, as well as the Sealing Ritual, is an extremely rare and valuable experience. I ask everyone to follow Elder Ling and I to the Sword Management Terrace. If you do not wish to come, you may

return to your courtyards to rest. Everything is up to you.”

Sealed under Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace was a mysterious “demon”. All the various sects had heard of this matter, and were all curious as to what kind of “demon” it was since the start. It was only natural for them to not want to miss this kind of opportunity. As a result, everyone neatly followed Ling Kun and Ling Yuefeng, and headed for Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace.

But not everyone was interested.

“Qingyue.” Chu Yuechan stopped Xia Qingyue: “Are you interested in this so-called ‘demon’?”

Seeing Chu Yuechan, who was like an icy moon, Xia Qingyue immediately understood why she had stopped her. She slightly shook her head: “Disciple isn’t really that interested.”

“If that’s the case, then follow me. The range of your profound strength’s increase is too large, it would easily cause your profound strength to become unstable and harm your profound veins. It must be stabilized as quick as possible.” After speaking, Chu Yuechan rose in the air and flew in the direction of the courtyards.

“Yes, Senior Master.” Xia Qingyue informed her master Chu Yueli, then followed Chu Yuechan.



Members of the ten large sects quickly returned to Heavenly Sword Villa, and then headed towards the Sword Management Terrace. The assembly of Blue Wind Profound Palace's four, were undoubtedly conspicuous. Qin Wushang was at the front. Following right behind him were Yun Che, Xia Yuanba, and Cang Yue. Yun Che and Cang Yue were constantly whispering on the way, and Xia Yuanba's eyes glittered as he eagerly rubbed his hands in anticipation. It was obvious that he was looking forward to see the rumored "demon".

“Fen Juecheng and them really wanted to kill you?” Cang Yue tightened her brows as she asked while holding back her rage.

“Mn. But don’t worry, a mere Fen Juecheng is no longer a threat to me anymore. But...” Yun Che secretly sighed: “Senior Sister, I probably can’t return to the Blue Wind Profound Palace with you anymore. After we leave Heavenly Sword Villa, Burning Heaven Clan will definitely make their move. I have to escape their notice and then leave alone. They definitely won’t do anything to you, Palace Chief Qin, or Yuanba. Burning

Heaven Clan will be hunting me down. I probably cannot return to Blue Wind Profound Palace for a long time, but don't worry Senior Sister, I have never been afraid of things like people hunting me down. If there is someone chasing me from behind, it would force me to become even more powerful."

Yun Che's words immediately tightened Cang Yue's heart... Burning Heaven Clan firmly believed that Yun Che was Fen Juebi's cause of death. The death of the mighty Burning Heaven Clan's Second Young Master would inevitably invoke the sky

filling fury of the entire Burning Heaven Clan. The result, would precisely be an unceasing hunt for blood...

That was an assassination from one of the Four Major Sects that the Blue Wind Imperial Family had always been deeply afraid of!!

Even though he had said those words with the most relaxed of tones, he still sensed that Cang Yue's breathing had momentarily stopped. Her complexion had also become

slightly pale, and a pair of small hands firmly grabbed onto him. He immediately comforted: “Senior Sister, there really is no need to worry. Don’t forget, I also have the protection of Frozen Cloud Asgard. If worst comes to worst, I’ll go hide in Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

## Chapter 277 – Demon (2)

---

“But, I’m worried... it’s still the Burning Heaven Clan... How about... How about you hide in the Imperial Palace? Even if they know that you’re in there, they definitely won’t dare to make trouble there.” Cang Yue said in a panic as she tightly gripped Yun Che’s hands.

Yun Che shook his head with a slight smile: “Even though Fen Juecheng was the one who started it, if you carefully think about it, I never avoided these conflicts, and had instead

intensified them so far, that Fen Juebi died... Perhaps I had subconsciously planned to make the Burning Heaven Clan chase me... After all, being hunted is..." Yun Che let out a small breath of air. He was well familiar and accustomed to a life of being hunted.

"Senior Sister," Even though the tone in his voice had changed, it was still gentle: "After all these disturbances are over, I'll bring you home, okay?"

"Bring me... home?"

“Mn!” Yun Che nodded, and raised his head, as if looking into the future: “Although I had been driven out of my clan, it is still the place where I grew up in. The most important thing is that my Grandfather and Little Aunt are there; wherever they are, is my home. It has already been a long time since I have left and there has not been a time that I wished to return... I want to bring Senior Sister home. They would probably be scared out of their minds if they knew that I actually brought home a princess for a wife.”



Just thinking about that possible scene made Yun Che chuckle. Grandfather and Little Aunt's figures, had also clearly flashed before him... Grandfather, Little Aunt, are you two still well... Unknowingly, I had already left for this long... Did you two get bullied there... After being locked in that desolate rear mountain, have you gotten thinner... You know, I think about you every day...

The current me, finally has enough power to return. I can now beat anyone from Xiao Sect. I will return the continuous misery you two have suffered

back, a hundredfold!!

Cang Yue stared blankly for a long time. Her eyes immediately softened to the point that it almost melted. Her heart rate, had also accelerated by several-fold. Her heart that she had been keeping calm, suddenly welled up in nervousness and joy. She quietly lowered her head and answered in an extremely soft voice: "Mn."

The Sword Management Terrace, was now just up ahead.

Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace was several times larger than the ranking tournament's Sword Discourse Arena. As far as the eye could see, as many as ten thousand swords flew in the sky above the Sword Management Terrace, stirring up an even greater vortex of sword energy. When walking up the Sword Management Terrace, waves and waves of sword energy would occasionally flit by. The sharp energy dully ached, as if knives were cutting into their face.

Various kinds of swords also covered the entire surface of the

Sword Management Terrace, and a few heavy swords were also included among them. Though their numbers was extremely low, it they were definitely not of common grade. Even the most inferior weapon there was at least a Spirit Profound Artifact.

In the middle of the Sword Management Terrace, a pitch-black sword as large as the heavens was halfway into the ground and halfway into the sky. The incomparably enormous sword body released an ancient and heavy aura, making the hearts of the ones who looked at

it go silent.

Ling Kun was walking at the very front and stopped in front of the enormous sword. He turned around and said: “This sword, is called ‘Heaven’s Punishment’, and is the suppressed demon’s sword. The demon arrested several hundred years ago, is precisely sealed beneath this sword.”

“The demon is incredibly strong, but inside the sealing formation, his strength has greatly been suppressed, so he

should never think of escaping. However, since it is a sealing formation, its power would naturally diminish through time. Every twenty years, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would always send one person here to strengthen the seal formation.

“The Demon’s existence, was originally a secret. Because the things that are related to him, may possibly affect the life and death of the entire Profound Sky Continent. The reason why we have allowed everyone to witness his true appearance is because not long after last time’s

seal strengthening, his relatives used a special method to avoid the Four Great Sacred Grounds' blockade, and entered the Profound Sky Continent. They asked all over about this demon's location with the intent to rescue him. At the very end, they had still discovered Blue Wind Empire. If not for our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's detection, the consequences would have been unthinkable."

"Oh! Listening to what he said, that demon seems to have come from outside of the Profound Sky Continent... Could it be those non-humans of legends?"

Xia Yuanba asked with wide eyes.

“Very likely.” Yun Che carefully nodded. At the same time, he silently thought to himself: The Four Great Sacred Grounds ought to have frequently come in contact with people not from Profound Sky Continent, then doesn't it mean that they... have come in contact with people from the Azure Cloud Continent!? And know of Azure Cloud Continent's existence?

Ling Kun's gaze swept across



and then said: “Today, everyone should open their eyes wide and clearly look at the appearance of a demon. In the future, if anyone asks you about people who look similar, you have to inform the Heavenly Sword Villa. Don’t be lazy or negligent by any means! Because that could possibly be another demon! That matter over ten years ago was enough to prove that they found some way to enter the Profound Sky Continent without the Four Great Sacred Grounds being aware of it! If this demon was rescued accidentally and its powers are restored, it would bring a great calamity to the Profound Sky Continent!”

“Bring about a great calamity to the Profound Sky Continent”... These words had undoubtedly shakened everyone’s heart. What kind of an existence was this demon, to actually be this terrible?

Rum... Rumble...

Following Ling Kun’s bizarre hand gesture, an enormous profound formation flashed from under the huge sword. In the profound formation’s rotation, that huge sword as

large as the sky slowly rose. Underneath the platform, was the lower half of the sword's body that had not seen night or day for twenty whole years.

The sword's body rose higher and higher, gradually reaching a height of several hundred meters. And just at this moment, a voice that sounded like it came from an evil spirit came from below:

“GRR... AAHH!!!! Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, you old dogs! Have you come to visit this

granddaddy again...  
HAHAHAHAHAHA... You pack  
of shameless, despicable, and  
treacherous dogs! If you have  
guts, hurry up and kill me  
already! I want to become a  
malicious spirit, tear the skin off  
your flesh, drink your blood,  
bite your bones into mush,  
pulverize your organs... and  
drag you all down to the  
[eighteenth level of hell](#), to suffer  
the penetration of ten thousands  
of blades for all eternity, and feel  
the pain of burning in hellfire!!”

This was the most resentful  
voice they had ever heard and  
the most malicious of curses. It

was even more frightening than the wails of evil spirits in hell... The hair of everyone who had heard this voice stood erect, and chills unceasingly crept up their spine. They had no way of imagining just how large of a resentment it would have to be able to release such heaven frightening earth startling grievances...

The enormous Heaven's Punishment Sword continued to rise for a little while longer until it had finally stopped. The tip of huge sword moved a similarly sized surface which appeared at the previously empty space.

What appeared in front of the people's eyes was a huge light yellow half sphere barrier. Within the barrier, was the huge Heaven's Punishment Sword with several tens of chains on the tip of it firmly sealing a person with a full set of white hair. His hair had reached the ground a long time ago and covered half his body and face. His body was as thin as a match and had a face that was as wrinkled as an evil spirit, but his pair of eyes was as frightening as the sharpest knives in the world and radiated a resentment that was like the abyss of hell.

“That’s... a demon?”

“Being sealed in the profound formation for over a hundred years without eating, drinking or dying. It’s practically an old demon! Sssss... what a terrifying demon, he glanced at me for a moment, and my entire body went cold.”

“So... so scary.” Cang Yue nervously pressed closer to Yun Che, with half her body hidden behind him.

This “demon’s” expression was quite terrifying, and his fury was great. It could even be said that to be the greatest that Yun Che had seen all his life. When he looked at him, even he, was a bit afraid, let alone Cang Yue.

“Jasmine, what kind of person is this? Can you tell?” Yun Che probed.

Jasmine answered with extreme disdain: “Demon? It’s only just a more powerful than the usual human. Hmph, what a



joke. A real demon of the demon race is even scarier than what you can imagine!”

Yun Che: “...”

Regarding the “demon” with his incredibly malicious curses and gaze, Lin Kun didn’t alter his expression at all as he calmly and collectedly said: “You want to curse, curse as much as you like. Heh, you think I don’t dare to kill you? If it wasn’t for you still having some uses, being a bargaining chip for exchange at some necessary moments, you

would have died several hundred times by now! Why would we go through the trouble of keeping you alive for a hundred years?”

“Fooey!” The demon sneered: “Despicable old dogs, you’re dreaming. Don’t think you can exchange me for anything! I was never willing to die because I wanted to personally see the the great Demon Emperor slaughter your entire family. That day won’t take too long to come... hahahaha!”

“Hahahaha!” Ling Kun laughed

madly as well: “It looks like you’re truly unclear on who is actually dreaming. It’s no harm for me to tell you again that your Demon Emperor had already died a long time ago. Died under hands of our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region’s Sword Master and the Sun Moon Divine Hall’s Heavenly Monarch. Your pitiful Demon Emperor who had just ascended to the throne, overestimated his own abilities and wanted to take revenge for his father. Tsk tsk... his cries were so pitiful when dying. Right now, the entire Illusory Demon Realm is supported by a little demon empress. Unfortunately, though the pitiful little demon empress has

imperial blood, your Illusory Demon Realm doesn't seem to be willing to let a woman become Emperor. She doesn't even have time to look after herself... slaughter our whole family? Hahaha, simply an enormous joke.”

“Utter bullshit!” The demon madly howled with rage. Those words of Ling Kun had obviously provoke him and made him completely lose control of his emotions as he violently struggled all over. He moved those chains while clamoring: “How can you bunch of inferior old dogs even compare to our

Illusory Demon Realm's great Demon Emperor! The great Demon Emperor can never die... NEVER! There will be a day when he will personally slaughter everything!!”

Illusory Demon Realm...  
Demon Emperor...

These strange words repeatedly came out of the two's conversation, causing Yun Che to become baffled. He looked all around, and noticed that bewilderment was written on everyone's faces. The only one

different, was solely Ling Yuefeng, whose expression could still be regarded as calm.

It seemed like the “Illusory Demon World” and the “Demon Emperor”, were things that only

Sacred-Ground level forces had qualifications to touch upon. It was obvious that there was an enormous animosity between them and the “Illusory Demon World”.

“Hahahaha, then just keep on dreaming!”

During his ridiculous laughter, Ling Kun wiped the spatial ring in his hands and several ten lumps of light yellow crystals hovered in front of his body. The top of every crystal released a power so dense that it made people shake in fear. Along with a wave of Ling Kun's arm, these several tens of crystals all separately flew towards a corner of the imprisoned "demon's" light yellow barrier, slowly submerged into the barrier, and became part of the barrier's power.

Suddenly, the color of the entire barrier became even deeper, causing the tint to become sparkly, it looked as if the yellow light filled its entirety. Those several tens of yellow crystalline objects all contained an incredibly power sealing force. Along with their merging, a once in every twenty years of barrier stabilization was completed at this moment.



# Chapter 278 – Frightening Change Of Events

---

“The profound formation used to seal this demon is called the Heaven’s            Might            Soul Suppressing Formation.” Ling Kun pointed his finger at the continuously flashing light from the profound formation beneath them, and said: “No matter who it is, in this Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation, their profound strength would be suppressed to the maximum limit. When this demon is being locked            under            Heaven’s Punishment, he shall never even

think of ever escaping this  
Heaven's                      Might                      Soul  
Suppressing Formation."

Ling Kun said expressionlessly:  
"This demon's outer appearance  
is completely the same as us, and  
profound strength is also what  
he cultivates, yet he possess a  
type of special ability called  
'Profound Handle'. However,  
amongst the demons, those who  
possess 'Profound Handles' are  
also few in number."

"And now, you have already  
seen what you all ought to have

seen. Remember what I had said previously.” Ling Kun’s gaze swept across the entire audience. Then, he took a step forward and coldly smiled as he stood in front of the barrier: “Demon, you must be really thankful to me since I have allowed you to see sunshine for this long, right? Before sending you back, I have another piece of news that I wish to tell you about... Heh, your son, and your daughter-in-law overestimated themselves and charged straight into Mighty Heavenly Sword Region twenty years ago to save you. But alas, they didn’t know that you had been transferred here a hundred years ago. Hahahahaha.”

The demon trembled all over. Fiercely raising his head, he roared like a madman: "You... What did you do to my son!! What did you do to him! If you harm a hair on my son's head, I wouldn't forgive you even if I become a ghost!"

"Tsktsk." Ling Kun coldly laughed as he shook his head: "Your son was quite crafty, and had actually escaped our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. He had almost found this place too, but alas, we found them first. What was even more unfortunate is

that they thwarted us again, and escaped back to the Illusory Demon World. However, both of them were seriously injured, and had been fleeing for several months, so their life force were pretty much burnt out. Even if they ran back to the Illusory Demon World, they practically had one foot in the grave. I'd reckon that they had already died more than ten years ago."

The demon's eyes grew wider without wavering. An endless sadness, anger, and despair crazily erupted from his body. He struggled hysterically, and shouted frantically: "You're

lying!! You're lying! My son  
would never die! AHHH!!!  
Mighty Heavenly Sword  
bastards... You guys are the ones  
who deserve to die!! AHH!!”

In the midst of his roar, a hand suddenly extended from the crack within the sealed demon's chains. Bringing about a boundless hatred, the hand shot straight for where Ling Kun was standing, and a beam of profound energy shot forward.

Cries of shock immediately sounded from the surroundings.

Everyone had all subconsciously retreated backwards. Ling Kun had also revealed traces of astonishment, but he was not scared, nor was he in a panic as he stood completely still. The profound energy beam struck the barrier, but did not pass through it. After a light “bang”, it disappeared completely.

“Everyone, fear not. Even though this profound formation barrier cannot prevent others from entering, it can completely keep all kinds of power from going out. The demon cannot harm us.” Ling Yuefeng explained. However, he was not

at all calm, because he was well aware of how powerful this Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation was. It was strong enough to suppress someone's profound strength down to not even one percent of their true strength. But under this suppression, the profound energy aura that came from the attack this demon activated under his rage, was actually not the least bit inferior to his all out strength!

To still be able to unleash an early-stage Emperor Profound strength after being sealed an entire hundred years, and it was



even under the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation... his complete strength in a normal situation was simply unimaginable! He was at least, stronger than Ling Kun by who knows how many times.

“Hmph!” Ling Kun coldly snorted in disdain: “To have allowed one of your hands to break through, looks like the previous seal was not tight enough. But no matter, you aren't that naive to think that you could escape the Meteorite Chain's seal and Heaven's Punishment Sword's suppression, right?”

“You despicable mongrels, I want to kill you... kill you all... AHHHH!!”

Ling Kun’s words from earlier had obviously upset the “demon” greatly, because perhaps to this “demon”, what had kept him going all along without giving in to death, was not the Demon Emperor, but his family. His roar was full of resentment and despair. He waved the only arm he could move, and lines and lines of profound light crazily smashed towards Ling Kun. The shouts

he released were no different than that of a wild beast's. The sounds of his struggles as he twisted and turned within his shackles were ear-piercing.

“Tsksk, how pitiful.” Ling Kun shook his head: “The former Demon Emperor’s guardian angel, the ‘King’ of Illusory Demon World’s millions of inhabitants, has now become a pitiful mad dog. Even I, am not willing to see such a sight. I guess it’s best to let me... send you down!!”

With a flip of his palm, a strange profound formation crystal was pinched between his fingers. A small scaled profound formation appeared before his body. Subsequently, the profound formation underneath the Heaven's Punishment Sword began to flicker again in response. Then, it slowly rotated, and gradually moved the Heaven's Punishment Sword, and the area in which the demon was sealed, downwards.

Even though Ling Kun was strong, he absolutely did not have the power to move this

huge seal formation, nor did he have the power to steadily move it. Only with the profound formation made by over ten of Heavenly Mighty Sword Region's top experts and the sealing power within that heavenly crystal, could he do that. As for Ling Kun himself, frankly speaking, he was just an errand boy and nothing more.

“This demon is really scary.” Cang Yue said with a small voice.

“He really is scary. I wonder

what kind of great hatred exists between his Illusory Demon World and Heavenly Mighty Sword Region to have made him be sealed here within a world of no daylight for a full hundred years. There's not many in this world that could go through that. Even though it looks as if he's a bit mad, he actually has not truly gone insane. The strength of his spirit, is truly astounding." Yun Che lamented.

"I also think... that he's really pitiful, and don't think that he's bad person." Xia Yuanba said carefully in a low voice.

“The grudges and grievances within such a plane like the Sacred Grounds, are things that we can never touch. As such, we even more so, do not have the qualifications to judge whether or not this demon is a bad person... We can only look from afar.” Qin Wushang said.

As the Heaven's Punishment Sword slowly lowered, the demon's figure was also beginning to gradually fade from their line of sight. But he still howled like an evil spirit, and the sound resonated past

everyone's ears. His hysterical attacks had also not stopped as chaotic profound streams of light smashed against the barrier: "I will definitely kill you... ALLL!!! I will definitely kill you all!!"

In the midst of his crazed roar, he suddenly stopped his assaults. He stretched his arm out in front of him and fiercely pulled inwards.

Whoosh!!



A burst of wild wind suddenly blew out from within the barrier. Then, it weakly expanded as it passed through the barrier while bringing along a magnetic force. It was obvious that in his extreme rage, this half crazy demon wanted to kill someone, and wanted to drag someone inside to kill them. As long as he could suck them into the barrier, no matter who it was, even if it was Ling Kun, once inside the “Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation”, they were bound for certain death, because even if it was someone stronger than Ling Kun, once inside the Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation, their profound

strength would also be suppressed down to at most the Spirit Profound Realm.

It was just that after passing through the barrier, the attraction force was extremely feeble, and those currently present were Blue Wind Empire's strongest experts. This gravitational force was simply too weak to affect them.

“AHHH!!! GRAHHHH!!!”

The Heaven's Punishment

Sword continued to descend, and the demon's voice had begun to become gloomy. At this time, the non-threatening attraction force stopped... Two breaths later, an energy current suddenly narrowly centralized outwards, and ferociously charged outwards... And the direction in which the energy current surged towards, was surprisingly... the spot where Yuanba was standing at!!

Everyone present could easily resist the energy current the demon had released with all his strength. This included Cang Yue, who was only at the True

Profound Realm. But there was one exception...

Which was the Yuanba with the lowest level profound strength, who was only at the Elementary Profound Realm!

Beneath the energy current, Xia Yuanba was suddenly, and fiercely, sucked in and flew towards the barrier. It was only up until the instant his body touched the barrier, did he let out a frightened cry.

No one had expected this sudden, misfortunate turn of events. None of them would have anticipated that the demon, who was about to be sealed back into the ground, would actually go frenziedly latch onto a youngster who was only at the Elementary Profound Realm. With the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation and the barrier in place, the demon was not suppose to bring them any harm in the first place. But these super strong practitioners that transcended strength, had all subconsciously forgotten about the existence of a super weak practitioner, and did not even think that the demon would use all his strength to

take action on a weakling that wasn't suppose to be there anyway.

“Yuanba!!!”

This was an event that Yun Che totally had not foreseen. They were suppose to be mere spectators here. With numerous experts around them, how could they possibly anticipate that such a disaster would suddenly arrive and target them? As he watched Xia Yuanba get sucked into the barrier, Yun Che paled in fright, and then fiercely

charged over in the midst of his explosive roar.

“Don’t go over there!!”

Qin Wushang immediately reached out to pull Yun Che back, but with the swift and mystical movements of “Star God’s Broken Shadow”, Qin Wushang’s lightning fast hands could only grab at his afterimage.

Sss!!!

Yun Che's speed at this time, had greatly surpassed all of his previous peak speeds. The flashing of his figure had unexpectedly raised the sound of an ear-piercing spatial friction. At the speed of light, he had finally chased towards Xia Yuanba's rear, and grabbed at his left ankle... But at this instant, both he and Xia Yuanba were sucked into the barrier at the same time, inside the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation!!

Without the barrier's



obstruction, energy current that had been aimed at Xia Yuanba was immediately a thousand times stronger, and quickly dragged them towards the demon at an extremely fast speed... What accompanied them, was the demon's deranged laughter: "Hahahahaha... Kill! I'm going to kill you all! Kill you all!!"

"Junior Brother Yun!"

"Yun Che!"

“Boss!!”

“Don’t go over there!!”

Cang Yue was firmly locked in place by Qin Wushang. The startled Ling Jie was slapped backwards by Ling Yuefeng. As they watched Yun Che and Xia Yuanba get sucked deeper and deeper into the barrier, everyone’s face had changed color. Ling Kun had previously explained what the Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation did to them, and they were incomparably clear about

what it meant to be sucked into the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation.

Ling Kun's expression had also changed greatly. In his eyes, he had undoubtedly lose a large amount of face because this kind of event happened under his watch. But even if he was given ten times more courage, he would not enter the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation to rescue them... And even if he did go in, it was simply impossible for him to rescue them. Instead, it would've been like setting himself up for suicide. He could

only look on helplessly as the two youths continued to get sucked towards the demon.

“Br... Brother-in-law!!” Xia Yuanba screeched out loud. His face had turned deathly white when he looked behind him and saw Yun Che, who had firmly grabbed onto his ankle.

An incredibly huge suppression surged forth from every direction and firmly locked onto Yun Che’s profound veins, making him feel as if his profound strength was being

frozen by a force that he was unable to expel... But this feeling of suppression could only last for a short period of time... The Heaven's            Might            Soul Suppressing Formation could indeed maximally suppress any human's profound strength at will, but at this moment, Yun Che had become Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation's sole exception, because his profound veins were not any ordinary person's profound veins, but rather profound veins that came from a True God!!

As for a True God's profound veins, how could a mere

Heaven's                      Might                      Soul  
Suppressing Formation from the  
mortal world possibly suppress  
it?!

“AHHHH!!!”

Following the rays of flashing red light from the Evil God's Profound Veins, that feeling of suppression                      immediately dissipated without a trace. After releasing an explosive roar, his entire body surged with a blood-red radiance. It was also at this time, that his eyes had instantly changed into a scarlet color.

“Purgatory!!”

In this moment between life and death, Yun Che had no reservations whatsoever to forcefully open the third gate. Under the explosive surge in profound strength, he concentrated all his strength on his right arm and suddenly flung Xia Yuanba backwards...

In this split second, he forcibly broke out from the demon's irresistible gravitational force, and flung Xia Yuanba far behind

him. Then, he shouted once more as he turned around in midair and used all his strength to continuously push at Xia Yuanba...

“Yuanba... leave!!”

Whoosh!!

Following Yun Che’s loud roar, all of his strength transformed into a surging storm, struck at Xia Yuanba, and rapidly sent him flying far away, outside the barrier... As for he, himself,



under the rebound and the demon's magnetic force, he flew towards the demon at an even faster pace.

“Br... other-in-law!!”

Xia Yuanba's flying body flew further and further away... Until he finally arrived at the edge of the barrier... At the instant in which his body separated itself from the barrier, he saw Yun Che flash a faint smile that brimmed with satisfaction before he closed his eyes...

Bang!!

After Xia Yuanba fell out of the barrier, he heavily smashed onto the ground. He, who was bound for certain death had actually been miraculously thrown outside the barrier. His head was spinning in circles and his body ached all over with extreme pain. Before he even had time to breathe, he got up and threw himself at Yun Che while releasing a heart breaking, lung rendering wild cry: “Brother-in-law... Brother-in-law!!”

It was also at this time that Yun Che's back landed onto the demon's palm. With a loud sound, his back was immediately burst open. His flesh was broken into pieces as his bones scattered everywhere. A bloody arrow around six meters in length spurted forth from his mouth. Subsequently, as if a broken puppet, his entire being was tossed aside into the distance and no longer moved. A large pool of blood rapidly spread from underneath his body... the final thing he heard with his last bit of consciousness, was the demon's wild laughter, which contained an incomparable elation.

Boom!!

The Heaven's Punishment Sword suddenly dropped down at an extremely fast rate. Then, in the midst of a loud sound, it completely fell down, sealing the demon, as well as the already deceased Yun Che, into an unimaginable depth under the Sword Management Terrace.

“Junior Brother Yun!!” Cang Yue released a desperate blood-curling scream. Then, both her eyes turned over as she fainted.

# Chapter 279 – The Fallen Genius

---

“Brother-in-law... Brother-in-law... Brother-in-law!!”

Xia Yuanba rushed forward as if he was insane, and threw himself under the Heaven’s Punishment Sword. Both of his hands smashed the platform under the Heaven’s Punishment Sword with \*bang\* sounds, until the skin between his thumb and index finger bursted open with blood. But the suppression of the Heaven’s Punishment Sword couldn’t be shaken in the

slightest even if all the power of the whole Heavenly Sword Villa were combined together. Let alone one Xia Yuanba, even ten million Xia Yuanbas would not be able to cause the slightest bit of damage.

Everyone's faces were filled with shock. They never would have thought that Yun Che, who defeated the core disciples of several major sects at the age of seventeen, who took first place in the ranking tournament, whose name that shook the continent, would so quickly perish in this kind of unexpected manner in front of

them right after he had obtained such a extremely dazzling aura.

And the reason why he perished, was not due to an accident from the hands of the demon, but was due to trying to save a person who was not even worthy of being called “trash” in their eyes. As they sighed, they didn’t know whether to commend him for his loyalty, or to lament at his foolish behavior.

“How did it end up like this....”  
Qin Wushang was shocked silly. Standing there for a long time

and not knowing what to do, his eyes enlarged the longer he looked on. Glory and pride were brought to Blue Wind Imperial City, but a nightmare happened so suddenly, just like that. He raised his head, and heavily gasped for air. He felt so depressed, as if his chest was about to explode. Claspng on a trace of hope, he took incomparably heavy strides towards Ling Kun, stood in front of him, and lifelessly asked: "Elder Ling, is it possible to lift the Heaven's Punishment Sword?... Maybe Yun Che... Maybe he..."



Halfway through his sentence, Qin Wushang could no longer continue speaking due to grief. So what if they lifted the Heaven's Punishment Sword? In that one strike from the demon, everyone could clearly see the horrible sight of Yun Che. That kind of heavy wound, let alone a person in the early levels of the Spirit Profound Realm, even a strong profound practitioner at the Sky Profound Realm would undoubtedly be dead... with no possible sliver of hope that they could be alive.

Qin Wushang's words startled the Xia Yuanba, who was

sobbing in desperation. He abruptly threw himself at Ling Kun. With a loud plop, Yuanba knelt firmly in front of Ling Kun, and grabbed his legs with his freshly bloodied hands. “Elder Ling... Elder Ling I beg you... I beg you to please be merciful and lift the Heaven’s Punishment Sword... Brother-in-law... he wouldn’t die so easily... please... please... I beg you to save Brother-in-law!!”

Xia Yuanba’s voice was hoarse and filled with desperation, letting those who heard him tremble in their hearts. Ling Kun’s face was quite unsightly,

as he was ultimately the main cause of this incident. If it wasn't because he suddenly had an idea before the ranking tournament to let the top ten sects to observe the Demon Sealing Ritual, this would not have happened. If it was Xia Yuanba who died, this incident would have been a small matter that would have been forgotten really quickly.... That's right! No one would remember weaklings, not to mention a dead weakling. This was the true reality of the situation.

But Yun Che; he was the champion of the ranking

tournament! More importantly, he was sectless, did not belong to any faction, and fought with the identity as the sole disciple that represented the Profound Palace's Imperial Family. This achievement of his stimulated and excited countless sectless youths who dreamt of becoming a strong person. The uproar he incited by winning the tournament this time exceeded every ranking tournament. Those in Heavenly Sword Villa had no idea, but within the borders of the Blue Wind Empire, Yun Che had already caused a huge storm. Especially in the Blue Wind Imperial City; the whole city was already in a celebrative atmosphere, and

were preparing to welcome Yun Che's return. Even Blue Wind Emperor, Cang Wanhe, was glowing pink with happiness while awaiting their triumphant return every day.

Yun Che's perfect control of the heavy sword, had even made Ling Kun feel like bringing him to Heavenly Mighty Sword Region.

But such a person, had perished just like that.

If this incident were to be leaked, the wave of terrible public opinion that it would bring along, would be no different than an enormous wave that could lift the entire Blue Wind Empire into the sky.

Ling Kun took a deep breath, and spoke with a heavy voice: “Preposterous! The suppression of the Heaven’s Punishment Sword can’t be released on a mere whim. The profound formation that I just activated required the cooperation of more than a dozen Heavenly Mighty Sword Region’s elders and it also took a long time to

finish.... Sigh! Even if it was possible to release it, so what? The wound he received just now... he has to be dead. He caused it himself... you all should... just give up.”

Every word that Ling Kun said was the truth and everyone agreed. Even within the Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation, this demon was still able to release a profound strength at the level of the Emperor Profound Realm. That one attack was not something that Yun Che could possibly withstand. When they saw the injury Yun Che received

under that one palm had caused their entire body to shudder all over. That type of injury, if it were inflicted on any other person, even if they had mountains of spiritual pellets and miracle herbs, it would still be impossible for them to survive that..

Even in an optimistic scenario, even if he didn't die and had one breath of air left, he was still in the directly provoked and crazed demon's grasp. How could he possibly still live!



Even in the most optimistic scenario possible, even if the demon decided to not kill him, and he miraculously lives... Heaven's Punishment Sword's suppression could only be released once every twenty years. Because of the demon's great strength, even without eating and drinking for a hundred years, he wouldn't die. But at Yun Che's level, one to two months was the absolute maximum. After that, he would die to hunger and thirst.

No matter what, Yun Che was bound for certain death.

“Sigh!” Qin Wushang sighed, shut his eyes, as his heart filled with grief.

Xia Yuanba stopped moving. He knelt there, frozen still, as if he suddenly died.

“Yuanba, stand up, you have to properly live on. Only with that, would you be worthy of this life that Yun Che sacrificed his to save.” Qin Wushang said dejectedly. After he finished speaking, there was no response at all from Xia Yuanba. He

lowered his head, and wanted to pull Yuanba back up, but he suddenly saw two very distinct long streaks of blood on Xia Yuanba's face.

Tears of blood!! Only when a person was in extreme grief, extreme pain, and when their spirit was on the verge of collapse, with their soul in endless lamentation, would they bleed out tears of blood!!

Qin Wushang's heart was violently shocked. In this moment, he could understand

that he had continuously underrated Yun Che and Xia Yuanba's bond and feelings. He would not have known that when Yun Che's profound veins were crippled, Yun Che had suffered under the extreme coldness and ridicule from others. Apart from his Grandfather and Little Aunt, only Xia Yuanba had constantly stood beside him, encouraging and comforting him, time and time again fought until bloodied against the people who mocked him. When Yun Che was young, Xia Yuanba was half of Yun Che's mental support, and was this lifetime's one and only true brother who he had engraved deep into his heart. As Yun Che

became more powerful and brilliant, there would always be different kinds of “friends” around him. But the relationships with those kinds of friends would never ever be able to compare to the time when he was at his lowest, when everyone looked at him with contempt, when he was seen to have no future. Would never be able to compare with Xia Yuanba’s pure and authentic feelings.

That was why when Yun Che became strong, he could not stand a single instance where Xia Yuanba had been bullied.

Whoever hurt Xia Yuanba, he would make the other party pay the greatest of prices. When he saw Xia Yuanba encounter a crisis, he would have no hesitation trading his own life for his... because Xia Yuanba was completely worth it for him to do so.

Qin Wushang hurriedly crouched in front of Xia Yuanba, and consolingly said: “Yuanba, are... are you okay? Sigh... if you want to cry, then loudly cry it all out. After crying, you must live well, live to prepare Yun Che’s funeral, and even more so, live to help Yun Che finish the things

he had not finished...”

Qin Wushang’s comforting words had no effect on Xia Yuanba at all. He knelt there, unmoving, with a face so pale there was no shred of color. His eyes were empty without a trace of life, and the two streams bloody tears on his pale face made it incomparably chilling...

“Yuanba!” Qin Wushang loudly shouted.

This loud shout startled Xia

Yuanba, as if shocking him awake from a nightmare. He suddenly screamed “ah”, stood up, and charged towards the north in a crazed manner. That lung piercing and heartbreaking scream resolutely piercing into everyone’s heart like countless needles filled with endless grief and sadness. No one stopped him. Their eyes filled with complex expressions as they watched him run out of their line of sight.

“Yuanba!!”      Qin      Wushang  
shouted. He wanted to chase,  
but he could not leave the  
unconscious      Cang      Yue.      He



sighed deeply, and his heaviness in his heart could even crush a mountain

“Villa Master Ling, please find someone to look after my disciple Yuanba.” Qin Wushang said helplessly, not willing to speak with any other person. He picked up Cang Yue, and flew towards their courtyard with a back that looked extremely lonely and desolate.

“How could this happen... How could this happen...” Ling Jie sat down on his butt, and blankly

looked at the enormous Heaven's Punishment Sword as his heart instantly chaotically tangled like hemp rope.

“The heavens are truly jealous of such outstanding talent.” Ling Yun shut his eyes, and said sympathetically.

“Elder Wugou, send someone to closely follow the one called... Xia Yuanba, don't let him get into any accidents. Furthermore, let Grandmother Jiumu go to Princess Cang Yue to check up on her. Don't let her

body and spirit get hurt. Sigh.” Ling Yuefeng finished his instructions and sighed deeply. The achievement of becoming the champion of the ranking tournament with profound strength at the True Profound Realm was unprecedented, but just like this, a peerless genius seen once in a thousand years, had fallen. There was no way that anyone would not feel regret.

“Yes.” Ling Wugou’s said in a dignified tone as he left.

“We should leave too.” Chu Yueli eyes fluctuated with a complicated expression as she took Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin, and silently left. She felt a bit a regret at Yun Che’s death, and a bit of pity. At the same time, she also felt a hint of rejoice that she should not have... because since this had happened, Xia Qingyue would be completely free of worldly bindings, and could focus on meditation in Frozen Cloud Asgard, until the day she takes over as the Asgard Mistress, and lead Frozen Cloud Asgard to stand at the very peak of Blue Wind Empire. The gargantuan favor that Frozen Cloud Asgard owed to Yun Che, had also

disappeared into thin air.

Most of the people were in lamentation, but there were also some people who rejoiced in other people's misfortune. For Fen Juecheng, this result was simply a gift sent from the heavens. He laughed coldly to himself and thought: "Idiot! He gave up his life to save a piece of trash... A complete idiot! But you should still be considered lucky to have you died so cleanly. If it was up to me, don't even think about dying so easily!"

The crowd gradually began to disperse. They could imagine the huge storm that would be stirred due to Yun Che's sudden death within the Blue Wind Empire.

Ling Kun stood at his original spot and looked at the Heaven's Punishment Sword. He tightly knitted his brows as he pondered: Odd! After Yun Che entered the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation, the power he released clearly did not weaken compared to what he had before he entered... Why was he not affected by the Heaven's Might Soul

Suppressing Formation? Is it because of some special circumstance, or maybe it's because the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation has a loophole?

But the guy was already dead. There was no point if he continued to think about these things. With a flick of his sleeve, he became a stream of light and disappeared from the Sword Management Terrace.

.....

“Wh... at? What did you say...  
What did you say!?”

When Chu Yueli told the complete incident of Yun Che's fall to Xia Qingyue, without even hearing Xia Qingyue's response, she had instead first heard Chu Yuechan's trembling voice that was similar to a lotus leaf in a fierce wind.

Chu Yuechan stood up, and ice spirits around her entire body became hysterical. Chu Yueli looked at her with a confused expression. Not understanding,



she asked: “Elder sister, what’s wrong? You.....”

“You said, he died... He... died...?”

In this moment, Chu Yuechan’s voice was as weak as if it had floated from the clouds. Her eyelashes, gaze, ice spirits, and entire body... shivered and trembled... Chu Yueli was shocked. She understood her sister better than anyone in this world. There was practically nothing in this world that could shake her heart. But now, her

feelings were obviously out of control... and they were completely out of control! Out of all her memories, this was through and through, the first time ever. She took a few steps forward, stood in front of Chu Yuechan, and anxiously asked: "Elder sister, what happened? You... You wouldn't have heard something wrong right? I said the person who died was Yun Che. He tried to save Xia Yuanba who came with him, and died at the hands of the demon. His corpse is also with the demon, suppressed beneath the Sword Management Terrace..."

Chu Yueli hadn't finished speaking, but Chu Yuechan had already flew out, leaving behind an unequaled desolate freezing gust of wind.

“Elder sister!” Chu Yueli exclaimed, and hurriedly chased after her.

Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin looked at each other, not knowing what to do.

As for Xia Qingyue... She sat there unmoving. Her gaze was

even more thoroughly stationary, without a single tint of color and focus as she looked forward. Even her breathing and heartbeat had completely stopped. In an instant, her entire person had become a lifelessly beautiful, ice statue...

## Chapter 280 – The Siblings Part Ways

---

Chu Yuechan took to the skies and flew swiftly with a pair of beautiful eyes that were misty yet expressionless. As if she had lost her soul, she didn't respond in the slightest to the urgent shouts from Chu Yueli.

In the end, she landed on the Sword Management Terrace, and stood in front of that huge Heaven's Punishment Sword. She looked at that tall and erect sword shape, and the aura that was as boundless as the sea. Her

usually ice-cold eyes, cheeks, and cherry blossom lips began to tremble: “Dead...dead... you’re actually dead...dead...”

“Elder sister!” Chu Yueli finally caught up. Chu Yuechan’s never before seen strange behavior sent her heart into a state of turmoil. She held onto Chu Yuechan’s arm and panickly said: “Elder sister, what’s wrong? What exactly is going on here? Tell me quickly...”

Chu Yuechan didn’t have the slightest reaction to her arrival

and voice. She foolishly looked at that Heaven's Punishment Sword and muttered in a daze: "Why are you dead... Why... Why!!"

Bang!!

A frantic icy cold power dispersed from Chu Yuechan's body and shocked Chu Yueli far away. She charged toward the Heaven's Punishment Sword and countless ice lotuses crazily exploded on the Heaven's Punishment Sword as she produced waves of shattering

grief. Every single one of her attacks contained her utmost possible strength. The power that a frantic Throne released contained an incredibly frightening might. Cold air roiled around the entire Sword Management Terrace as ice crystals filled the sky...

“Why... Why are you dead...”

“I don’t believe it... Come out for me... Come out!!”

“Why are you dead... Why...



Did you forget what you said...  
You clearly told me that you  
were a true man... How can you  
die... Come out... Come out!!”

“Weren’t you going to conquer  
me... Didn’t you want to go to  
Frozen Cloud Asgard to find  
me... Then why did you die...  
Come out...”

“...Please come out... As long as  
you come out... I’ll do...  
whatever you say... Come out...  
come out...”

Like a flurry of rain, countless ice crystals crazily struck the Heaven's Punishment Sword; however, let alone shaking it, not even a single scratch remained on the Heaven's Punishment Sword. The sound of every collision was deafening, but the cold roiling winds contained an incomparable grief. Chu Yuechan's voice went from desperation and heartbreaking to resentment and anger... Until finally, it became the most mournful cries and pleading...

At this moment, she wasn't the Fairy of Frozen Beauty that the

men of the world could only dream of admiring, but didn't dare to look at. She was now an emotionless and soulless ordinary woman...

“Elder... sister...” Looking at Chu Yuechan's actions, she felt her grieving emotions. When she heard her voice, Chu Yueli became completely dumbfounded. No matter how unbelievable it was, she had no choice but to imagine an absurd possibility... When this possibility appeared in her brain, she almost had a nervous breakdown.

The huge trembles on the Sword Management Terrace quickly drew in people from the Heavenly Sword Villa. Ling Yuefeng and several elders who weren't that far away rapidly rushed over. They simultaneously stared at the situation before their eyes.

When the others arrived, Chu Yueli's heart tightened. She rapidly advanced, and tenaciously embraced Chu Yuecan while: "Elder sister, stop hitting. That's the Heaven's Punishment Sword, it's

impossible to move... Yun Che is already dead... already dead!!”

Chu Yuechan’s body stiffened and suddenly halted all her movements... Chu Yueli’s words were like the final straw that turned her last hopes into completely despair.

“Plop...”

Streaks of bloody arrows spouted out from Chu Yuechan’s mouth onto the Heaven’s Punishment Sword. Her eyes

shut, and all of her consciousness changed into a blank despair as her entire body slowly fell backwards.

“Elder sister!!”

Chu Yueli cried out in alarm. After a brief period of dazzlement, she quickly held the unconscious Chu Yuechan and flew towards the direction of the courtyards.

“Fairy of Frozen Glass, what’s going on?” Ling Yuefeng quickly

asked.

Chu Yueli seemed to not hear him. She flew away with Chu Yuechan without talking to anyone, and quickly disappeared from their sights.

Seeing the scarlet pool of bloodstains on the Heaven's Punishment Sword, Ling Yuefeng's heart suddenly lurched and he urgently said: "Quickly! As soon as Grandmother Jiumu heals Princess Cang Yue, tell her to leave for the courtyard where

the Fairy of Frozen Beauty is staying!!”

Yun Che's death made a majority of people feel regret, but that was only regret. However, his death stirring up a series of chain reactions was something they never could have thought of.

Chu Yuechan overestimated herself. She originally thought that Yun Che's wrongful binding made her restricted and helpless. She believed with her temperament, she could



completely sever all emotions regarding Yun Che. She believed that her original reason for coming to the Heavenly Sword Villa was to see Yun Che one last time, settle all of her gratitude and resentments, and then be rid of any earthly thoughts.

But she truly didn't understand herself, and truly didn't understand her womanly feelings.

In the realm of the Dragon God Trial, those five months of close embrace, five months of being

taken care of, those five months of him always being in front of her and defeating all that posed risks to her body, five months of rather being bruised and scarred than her receiving the slightest bruise... All those, were enough to melt any woman's stone heart.

Let alone, Chu Yuechan, who never had a heart of stone. In this world, apart from the dead and the undead, there could never be anyone who was completely emotionless. She just happened to live within the icy cold Frozen Cloud Asgard, and had her emotions frozen by the

environment and her sect's profound arts. However, when these frozen emotions were released after melting, the blazing passion that came forth would far surpass any ordinary person, and far surpass her own imagination...

The moment she heard news of Yun Che's death, she finally realized this fact, after feeling her soul suddenly get strangled by the attacks of pain and despair. However, it was already too late...

“Junior Sister Xia, are you alright? Are... you alright?”

Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin accompanied Xia Qingyue at her side and asked with concern. Because after hearing news of Yun Che's death, Xia Qingyue had practically lost her soul, and just stared in front of her without moving for a long time. They originally thought the reason why she married Yun Che was to repay a debt of gratitude and fulfil her father's wishes. They didn't think she would have any feelings for him, and thought that even if she heard the news of his death, she would

feel a bit regretful. However, Xia Qingyue's reaction right now, completely went beyond their expectations.

Under their unceasing shouts, Xia Qingyue's beautiful eyes finally focused somewhat. Her towering chest began to violently move up and down for a long time, until she gently shook her head: "I... I'm fine."

She slowly stood up. Her movements were stiff, as if she was a marionette. The moment she stood up, her foot staggered

and she almost toppled to the ground. Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin promptly supported her with eyes full of concern and complexity.

“What Master said... are they all true?” Xia Qingyue opened her mouth and asked with a voice as light as smoke.

The two nodded simultaneously and Shui Wushuang said: “For the sake of rescuing your little brother... he pushed your brother back and personally landed into the hands

of the demon. With a single palm from the demon... his body was practically penetrated and he died right away. Even his corpse, is with the demon....”

“Don’t say anymore.” The last color of rosiness Xia Qingyue’s face ultimately faded completely and went so pale that it was as if she had fallen seriously ill. She held the corners of her dress with both her hands and each her delicate jadelike fingers were deathly pale. A feeling of desperation and powerlessness filled her entire body, and her heart felt like it had been pierced by an uncountable

number of needles more painful than death.

How could it be like this...

Is it because I'm truly unqualified to be a wife...

Why didn't I choose to go to the Sword Management Terrace together...

She muttered within her heart and gently shrugged off the two



people's hands who were supporting her. With light steps, she slowly advanced. With an expressionless gaze, she said: "I want to go by myself... to the Sword Management Terrace."

Shui Wushuang and Wu Xuexin looked at each other and saw the peculiar expression in each other's faces. They didn't stop her and didn't go with her either. They stayed far behind Xia Qingyue. Wu Xuexin lightly sighed: "Looks like, the elders aren't wrong about this. The emotions between men and women, we really can't touch any of it... it's too harmful. This

could possibly become the inner devil within Junior Sister Xia's heart."

Shui Wushuang said: "I never thought that Junior Sister Xia would truly develop feelings for that Yun Che. Sigh, but this is good as well. Once Yun Che dies, the emotional roots she shouldn't have, should completely be severed..."

After leaving the courtyard, Xia Qingyue staggeringly walked a while. She suddenly saw the figure of Xia Yuanba in front of

her eyes. He lowered his head and mechanically walked forward like a zombie. On his face, hung two streaks of undried bloody traces. When Xia Qingyue saw him, he saw Xia Qingyue as well. Every time he had seen her in the past, he would run to her with a face full of joy and shout “big sister”; however this time, his face only displayed terror, as he panickedly retreated. He roared in a low voice, and then turned around to run.

“Yuanba!”

Xia Qingyue's gaze trembled, and then she flew after him. She landed in front of Xia Yuanba, and Xia Yuanba stopped his footsteps. Both his hands blocked his front, and shouted with his coarse voice: "Don't... don't come over here... don't come near me!!"

"Yuanba, what happened to you?" Xia Yuanba's current appearance made Xia Qingyue's heart even more painful. She knew that because of Yun Che's death, the most heartbroken one would inevitably be Xia Yuanba. Not only did he have to bear the pain within his heart, he also

had a guilt and remorse which were countless times more painful.

“Don’t come near me!” Xia Yuanba fell back as his tears gushed out: “I already killed Brother-in-law, I don’t want to kill big sister too. I beg you, don’t come, don’t come near me!”

“Yuanba, don’t be like this. It’s not your fault...”

“No! It is my fault! It is my

fault!” Xia Yuanba knelt on the ground and painfully wept: “It was me, the trash, that killed Brother-in-law... it’s all me... it’s all me... Why wasn’t the one who died me... Why couldn’t I have died earlier! AHHH!!”

He cried painfully and raised his fist to viciously pound at his own head. Every strike was incredibly heavy. Xia Qingyue took a step forward: “Yuanba, don’t...”

“Don’t come over here!!” Xia Yuanba frantically tried to

escape backwards with both hands blocking in front of him. Tears fiercely rushed down his face, his voice was coarse and filled with sorrow: "You're my older sister, my close relative. Brother-in-law is my brother and also my close relative... Brother-in-law became increasingly stronger and turned into someone that I admire. He brought me, this trash, to the Blue Wind Profound Palace that I yearned for day and night and brought to to the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament that I didn't even dare dream of being at... When I was bullied, no matter how powerful the opponent was, he would viciously beat the opponent and

made them not dare to bully me again...”

“I fearlessly enjoyed everything that brother-in-law brought. His glory is also my glory because he is my most intimate Brother-in-law... But... but what did I do for brother-in-law... what did I do... I killed Brother-in-law... I killed brother-in-law... AHHHH... I’m trash... trash that’s lower than a dog... A trash who killed Brother-in-law... trash!!!”

“Yuanba...” Xia Qingyue bit her lips and didn’t know how to



comfort Xia Yuanba, whose spirit was so extremely shattered right now.

Xia Yuanba's pain continued for a very long time as he cried like a child in despair. His unceasing tears quickly drenched a large portion of the ground. Xia Qingyue didn't say much anymore, and quietly watched him cry... Crying in pain is fine, at least he could expel some of the pain and sorrow within his heart...

The sound of wind whistled

through the air. After some time had passed, Xia Yuanba finally stopped his painful crying, and gradually, his sobs had begun to disappear as well. He knelt on the ground with his hair hanging down. After being calm for a long time, he slowly stood up from the ground and all of a sudden, said gently: "Elder sister, I'm leaving."

"Leave? Where are you going? Returning home?"

"No, I'm not returning home. I don't have the face to return

home...” Xia Yuanba bitterly smiled: “Even if a trash like me does return home, I would have to live under Father’s protection. Perhaps there will be a day, where I’ll cause even father to die as well... I don’t want to be trash anymore. I don’t want to kill the intimate people beside me anymore...”

“I need to leave... I need to search for a power that won’t make me trash anymore... I need to become stronger... I don’t want to be trash anymore...”

Xia Yuanba raised his hand and wiped the tears off his face. Then, he determinedly exposed a smile: “Elder sister, don’t worry about me. I promise you that I won’t die... because the life that I have now is a life that Brother-in-law traded for with his own. No matter what, I won’t allow myself to die... I only ask for Elder sister to not stop me and not look for me either... I will return one day... Wait for the day I return, when I’ll use my own power to protect Elder sister, protect Father... protect everyone that I want to protect...”

Xia Qingyue: “...”

Xia Yuanba left with his back facing Xia Qingyue. His pace was unusually slow, but they were incredibly firm and unwavering. He didn't bring anything; he didn't even bring a single yellow profound coin. No one knew where he was going, perhaps he, himself, did not know either. Even less people knew and understood the sadness, pain, blame, and remorse that filled this sixteen year old youth's heart... as well as his thirst for power...

Xia Qingyue didn't chase after him, and only dazedly stared at Xia Yuanba's parting figure. Through her hazy gaze, she saw the usually cheerful, carefree, little brother who was always full of passion, unyieldingly grow up.

“Yuanba, take care of yourself. I'll wait for you to return.” Xia Qingyue lightly whispered. She pressed her hand to her chest and closed her eyes: “Yuanba... thank you for teaching me how to be strong...”

# Chapter 281 – A Great Disturbance (1)

---

Floating Cloud City, Xiao Clan's rear mountain, Reflection Gorge.

Returning from hunting, Xiao Lie was carrying a skinny wild rabbit in one hand. His face revealed mild happiness. As he sat down to prepare the prey he had caught, he heard the sounds of his daughter practicing swordsmanship.

At the start of their imprisonment, the Xiao Clan would send them food everyday. He was still able to occasionally obtain some information about how the Xiao Clan was from the disciples that delivered food. After some time, the frequency of the delivery of food became lesser and lesser and eventually, three months later, nobody sent them food anymore. Obviously, being imprisoned for twenty years and having no close relatives to rely on would mean that no one in the clan would bother to care about them. In the beginning, people had still somewhat pitied them. Eventually, they left them to their own demise in the rear



mountain.

Luckily, the rear mountains were not completely barren. In the area that they were allowed in, they could obtain some vegetables and occasionally were able to capture one or two delicious low ranked profound beasts. Just like this, the parent and child survived. Xiao Lie had also thought about escaping with Xiao Lingxi. After all, he could not let the most beautiful time of her daughter's life be wasted like this, trapped in the gorge. However, once he escaped, he would not doubt that they would be hunted by

the Xiao Clan... After all, they were imprisoned under orders of the fourth young master of the Xiao Sect. He was not afraid of being punished or even being labelled as a traitor who betrayed his sect. However, he was worried about Xiao Lingxi.

All this time, Xiao Lingxi spent more of her time each day concentrating on training. After all, there was nothing much she could do besides that. Having no distractions, her progression was quite fast. She had already broken through to the ninth level of the Elementary Profound Realm.

“AHHH!!!”

The young girl's cries were suddenly heard coming from the outside. Xiao Lie immediately stopped what he was doing and immediately sprinted out. Outside, he saw Xiao Lingxi sitting on the floor with her hands to her chest. The sword that already had rust on it had been thrown to one side.

“Xi'er, what's wrong?” Xiao Lie rushed forward and anxiously asked.

Although Xiao Lingxi's clothes were clean, they had already turned pale with age. Her skin did not become dry and rough under the constant blowing of the wind in the rear mountain. Instead, she was now even more graceful and pretty. Even the old clothes that she was wearing seemed to give off a special aura. However, compared to before, she had become visibly thinner. Within her pair of beautiful eyes, one could see the worry that she attempted to conceal. She seemed like an injured fairy, and would cause one's heart to ache in pity for her.

“I don’t know...” Xiao Lingxi gently shook her head, her hand still clutching her chest. Her brows trembled uncontrollably: “My chest suddenly felt very very painful just now... Wuuuu... It really hurts...”

“Chest?” His daughter’s appearance made Xiao Lie’s heart ache. He thought for a while and said: “Don’t stand up yet. Perhaps you are just too tired from sword practice. Rest a while and it should be fine.”

“Mn.” Xiao Lingxi replied obediently. Her eyebrows knitted tightly, for the pain seemed to have come from her soul. The pain was bone-piercing and with it, numerous thoughts of Yun Che floated into her heart and mind. She suddenly cried out loud: “Father... I’m not afraid of this pain... But... I miss Little Che... Where is he now... When he left, he didn’t have much money. Also, he was so weak, would he be bullied by others? Would he have enough food? Would he even have a proper place to sleep? Would he... Would he... Wuu... uuu... I miss him... I’m so worried about him.”

Xiao Lingxi covered her face and started sobbing. Since young, before that incident happened, she had always been with Yun Che. There were nearly inseparable. She also would never have thought that she would be separated from him one day... However, fate was cruel. They were separated due to circumstances, and had been separated for a very long time. Separation for such a long period of time was an immense torture for her. Her thoughts about him increased day by day, and she could only rely on hardcore training to divert her attention.

The sudden heartache caused all the longing that she desperately tried to hold back to blow out of control. It was sudden, as though water was gushing out of a broken dam, and fiercely eliminated any bit of control she might have over her feelings. She broke. Her feelings poured out of her along with loose tears that gushed out from her eyes.

Xiao Lie let out a long sigh and gently comforted her: “Xi’er, Che’er has already grown up. He is already a real man. Perhaps,



leaving the Xiao Clan was beneficial for him. Outside, he would undergo hardships and grow up. Even if he had to suffer a little and get injured, it would still be worth it.”

“Xi’er, don’t cry. He will become stronger outside. As his little aunt, you should be stronger than him. When he comes back, you need to show him a more energetic you. That would no doubt make him the happiest... Che’er has said before, he would be back within three years. As a man, I believe he would fulfill his promise and do what he said.”

Xiao Lingxi still continued to cry, but after hearing Xiao Lie's words, she fiercely nodded her head before wiping off the tears on her face. However, the sudden gush of longing and heart-piercing pain within her could not be stopped...

Little Che... Where are you... I really miss you... I don't need you to come back to see us in three years... I just want you to be safe... You have to be safe...

Heavenly Sword Villa, in front

of the Sword Management Terrace.

Xia Qingyue was dressed completely in white as she stood silently in front of the Heaven's Punishment Sword. The wind above the Sword Management Terrace constantly blew at her, and unceasingly raised her hair and sleeves. However, it was unable to shift her gaze. She stood alone for a very long time, with only the flying swords in the sky as companions.

The sky started to turn dark as

dusk slowly arrived. The wind from the swords had also begun to carry some coldness. A sudden gust caused her long hair to be gently blown into her face. Suddenly, deliberately gentle footsteps approached her from behind some distance away. The footsteps startled Xia Qingyue's silent thoughts.

Her gaze shuddered a little as she continued to look forward as she muttered softly: "Husband... Let Qingyue be your wife in your next life as well... Is, that okay... That Qingyue will be a... proper wife... okay...?"

Her soft muttering disappeared within the sounds of the wind. No one could hear what she had said. She turned around, and behind her, was a dashing young man standing in place.

Seeing Xia Qingyue's goddess-like appearance, Ling Yun's aura became slightly chaotic. He smiled slightly and performed a courtesy: "Xia fairy, are you sending your friend off as well?"

"No." Xia Qingyue shook her head and replied softly: "I'm

here to... send off my husband.”

Ling Yun’s entire body quaked as he jerked his head upwards to look at Xia Qingyue. Just as he was about to ask whether he had heard wrongly, he suddenly saw a black cloth wrapped around Xia Qingyue’s left arm...

“Xia fairy, wh... what did you just say? Husband? Did I hear wrongly, or is Xia fairy joking with me?” Ling Yun said in the calmest voice he could muster. However, both his hands were trembling and his inner self was

in turmoil.

Xia Qingyue did not answer him and merely extended her white hand to sweep it across her hair. As her left hand gently swept across, a segment of her hair silently broke off. She opened her jade hand, and scattered her hair towards the center of the Sword Management Terrace. In an instant, the hair was swept away by the swords' wind and circled around the Heaven's Punishment Sword, as if it yearned for something, and wanted to accompany it.

Xia Qingyue closed her beautiful eyes and flew off after a while, disappearing from Ling Yun's sight.

Ling Yun's entire body was stiff. He lost the strength in his body and knelt onto the ground. His pupils continuously dilated. This Heavenly Sword Villa's Young Villa Master, who had once been the strongest of the younger generation, seemed to have lost his soul right there...

“They're husband and wife...



Yun Che... is her husband... She is already... She is already married... Impossible... Impossible... It must be a lie... Impossible...”

Ling Yun kept on muttering to himself. His expression became lifeless, as though all of his beliefs had been shattered.

At the same time, his father, Ling Yuefeng was also very confused. He was pacing back and forth outside the courtyard in which the Frozen Cloud Asgard members were staying

at, worrying about Chu Yuechan's injuries, and also wondering why she would have such a huge reaction. He would never have thought that Chu Yuechan, who was as cold as snow, as icy like a frozen profound lotus, would lose control of her emotions and vomit blood.

Knowing Chu Yuechan's temperament, even if Frozen Cloud Asgard's number one disciple, Xia Qingyue, were to suddenly fall, her most appropriate reaction would be a suffocating coldness... There should not be anyone in this

world that could cause her to have such a reaction.

Could it really be because of the fallen Yun Che... No! Impossible! Absolutely impossible! There must be some other reason.

While he was under the emotional turmoil, he did not realize that his wife, Xuanyuan Yufeng, was not too far away. She had been coldly staring at every one of his emotional changes. Her gaze was turning colder and colder as she became more and more disappointed.

Just then, Ling Yuefeng's patience seem to have reached its peak and could not stand it any longer. He gritted his teeth and entered the courtyard. He then opened Chu Yuechan's room, and entered.

Chu Yuechan was still lying on the bed, and her face was still as white as sheet. Chu Yueli stood beside her bed with a face of worry and uneasiness. A skinny old lady who looked aged and weak was pressing her finger on Chu Yuechan's hand to read her pulse.

Grandmother Jiumu was already more than a hundred and ninety years old this year. Based on seniority, she was several times more senior than Villa Master Ling Yuefeng. When comparing medical skills, she was not below Blue Wind Empire's number one doctor Gu Qiuhong. However, she did not desire fame and had not stepped out of Heavenly Sword Villa all her life. There were not many within the empire, who had heard of her name.

“Grandmother Jiumu, how is

the Fairy of Frozen Beauty's condition?" Ling Yuefeng asked with concern. Facing Grandmother Jiumu, his actions were obviously more respectful.

Grandmother Jiumu removed her dry finger from Chu Yuechan's snow white wrist and picked up her walking stick. She walked forward a few steps before speaking in a hoarse voice that sound like rubbing sandpaper: "She is fine. She fainted only because she received a huge emotional trauma, and the sadness that attacked the heart caused her blood to flow in reverse. She will

wake up after a while.”

“Then that’s great...” Ling Yuefeng nodded. However, he still appeared to be in an emotional turmoil.

“However, she has practiced ice attribute profound arts for many years, so her five organs are all exceptionally cold. If this goes on, I fear it would be fatal for the baby that she is bearing.” Grandmother Jiumu said faintly.

The last sentence seemed like a

landmine that triggered beside Chu Yueli and Ling Yuefeng's ears. Chu Yueli hastily said: "Impossible! Grandmother Jiumu, you must be wrong. My sister has never interacted with any man before. How could she have a baby!"

"That's right. Granny Jiumu, you must be wrong. The fairies of Frozen Cloud Asgard stay single for all their lives. It is impossible for the Fairy of Frozen Beauty to have a baby." Ling Yuefeng also immediately continued.



“Hmph!” Facing the two people’s questioning, Grandmother Jiumu’s face turned angry. She strongly stamped her walking stick on the floor, and said hoarsely: “I have practiced medicine for the past hundred and eighty nine years and have seen all sorts of weird illnesses and strange sicknesses. I have treated more patients than people you have seen in your entire lives. Do you really think I will make a mistake on something as simple as whether a woman is pregnant! HMPH!”

## Chapter 282 – A Great Disturbance (2)

---

For a person like Grandmother Jiumu, this kind of thing couldn't be anymore simpler, and to doubt her on this matter was a huge insult to her medical knowledge and dignity. She couldn't be bothered to say anymore. Supported by her walking stick, she walked out, leaving behind the dumbstruck Chu Yueli and Ling Yuefeng.

“Impossible... absolutely impossible. How can Elder sister... ah? Elder sister... You...

you're awake!"

In her panic, Chu Yueli suddenly saw that Chu Yuechan, who was on the bed, had already opened her eyes some time prior. She hurried to the side of the bed and asked: "Elder sister, are you fine? Are you hurt anywhere... Just now, Grandmother Jiumu said that... you are pregnant..."

Facing Chu Yueli's words, Chu Yuechan had a startled look, and was completely reactionless. When Grandmother Jiumu took

her pulse, she was already awake and she had heard everything that was said. In a daze, she slowly extended her hand, and softly put it on her lower abdomen.

This action was what almost every woman would subconsciously do when they heard that they were pregnant.

Her gaze, and her action was an undeniably clear tacit approval of her pregnancy. As if struck by lightning, a buzzing sound rang through Chu Yueli's head. Ling

Yuefeng directly staggered a step back. His entire body shook, as he had been struck by a thunderbolt on a sunny day.

“Elder sister... you...” Chu Yueli was completely breathless. Seeing Chu Yuechan’s hand on her lower abdomen, her heart almost jumped out from her chest.

“Don’t ask me anything!” Chu Yuechan breathed in deeply, with her voice sounding incomparably cold: “Immediately depart from here,

return to Frozen Cloud Asgard!”

“Alright... alright!” The extremely confused Chu Yueli could only nod.

“Fairy of Frozen Beauty... you... who does the child in your stomach belong to... whose child are you carrying!” Ling Yuefeng panted a course breath, repeating the same question twice consecutively, his heart had clearly been flipped upside down. According to Grandmother Jiumu’s experience, she could not

possibly be wrong about this kind of thing. In addition to Chu Yuechan's reaction, there was no need for him to question whether or not if she's actually pregnant anymore. The thing he desperately wanted to know to the point of insanity at the moment, was who the child belonged to! Who exactly was this person, that actually made Chu Yuechan...

During those years he bitterly loved Chu Yuechan while lowering his figure, losing his dignity, and followed Chu Yuechen for dozens of years, yet he still had never even seen her

face once. In the end, he returned to the Villa, and married Xuanyuan Yufeng, who had an amazing background. But in his heart, he had never forgotten Chu Yuechan's figure.

In his heart, Chu Yuechan became an extremely beautiful, but impossible dream.

And this impossible dream was infinitely beautiful because this dream would never come true for anyone. This way, the dreams about Chu Yuechan would forever, perfectly exist



deep inside his heart.

But today, this dream was completely shattered.

When he was young, he was the publicly recognized number one genius of the young generation, and could not be compared to anyone. To this day, he was the leader of the number one sect in Blue Wind Empire, worthy of being number one in the whole Blue Wind Empire! In countless profound practitioners' eyes, he was an unreachable height, and was a godlike existence. Even if

the emperor saw him, the emperor would have to be respectful towards him! The thing he spent his whole life's effort on and pouring all his emotion in, was his attempt to pursue Chu Yuechan, which ended in a crushing defeat. Originally, he felt an infinite amount of regret at this result, but didn't feel too sad, because Frozen Cloud Asgard's disciples never married. Even the woman he could not pursue, could not be pursued by anyone in all of Blue Wind Empire... But today, he heard with his own ears, saw with his own eyes, that she was pregnant!

The blow in that moment was like lightning from the Nine Heavens that struck his heart, causing all of his fantasies, his yearning, his dignity, his arrogance to completely shatter into pieces.

Chu Yuechan did not look at him. With an icy voice like snow that sounded the same from the past, she said: “This is my matter, Villa Master Ling has no right to question it! This is my residence, not a place that you should be... get out!”

Along with Chu Yuechan's attitude that refused people from a thousand miles, Ling Yuefeng was also incomparably familiar with Chu Yuechan's voice that was icy and void of emotion. He recalled Chu Yuechan's abnormal reaction at the Sword Management Terrace, which caused him to feel an extremely preposterous feeling in his heart. He lost his voice and said: "Could it be... could it be that you and Yun Che... No! Impossible! Absolutely impossible... It absolutely can't be like that..."

The two words "Yun Che"

caused a deep stabbing pain in Chu Yuechan's heart, and made her body suddenly explode with a bone piercing coldness: "Whoever's child I carry, is none of your business! Get out of here immediately!!"

Ling Yuefeng's inner heart was shocked. His heart filled with an ice-cold sorrow, and amidst the confusion, his brain had almost lost the ability to think. He sighed deeply, turned around, and left in an infinitely lonely and desolate manner. When he stepped out of the door, Chu Yueli hurriedly said: "Villa Master Ling, this incident today,

is tied with the reputation of my sister and Frozen Cloud Asgard, please be sure to be tight-lipped! Please.”

Ling Yuefeng’s footsteps stopped. Then, he slowly nodded and walked out.

In the courtyard, Ling Yuefeng restlessly walked for a good while. His state of mind was finally calming down. He stopped walking, looking up at the sky, and silently sighed. He was very clear that this incident was probably was the heaviest

blow he had ever taken in his entire life. This blow completely shattered the most beautiful fantasy in his heart, causing him to feel the strongest sense of failure in this lifetime. There was even an indescribable sense of humiliation.

“Hahahaha! This is really ridiculous, you painstakingly chased after Chu Yuechan for more than a dozen years, yet you never even saw her face once. Dozens of years have passed, yet you still could never forget her and constantly thought about her, but she never even looked you once in the eye. She’d rather

have illicit sexual relationships with a junior, and got pregnant too! This is a joke as large as the heavens! Ling Yuefeng, don't you feel that you're hopelessly stupid!?

The ear-piercing sound came from behind him. Ling Yuefeng turned around with a face full of surprise and wrath as he looked at his wife, Xuanyuan Yufeng. He was surprised that his usually gentle wife had spoke such ear-piercing and ugly words. His heart was desperately suppressing his fury, but due to her words, his fury increased several times over.



“Silence!” Ling Yuefeng angrily said: “You actually overheard our conversation! This incident... this incident and I, I have absolutely nothing to do with it! Her being pregnant is not necessarily true, and with Yun Che... that is even more completely ridiculous! Forget what you heard, you’re not allowed to talk about it with anyone!!”

After Ling Yuefeng finished roaring, he felt that his tone was a bit too harsh, but with rage filling his heart, he didn’t want

to speak anymore. With a cold snort, he flipped his sleeves and left.

Xuanyuan Yufeng's face turned purple. Her entire body trembling due to anger and said: "Ling Yuefeng... at this stage, you're still protecting her!! Your attitude towards her... really is... filled~deep~with~affection!! You really... dare to do this to me!!"

"You don't want people know about this... then I will deliberately let people know! I will let everyone under the sky

know!!”

While still in her anger, Xuanyuan Yufeng suddenly saw Ling Yun walk towards her. His footsteps were slow, and seemingly restless.

She twitched her eyebrows. Suppressing her anger, she walked towards him and asked: “Yun’er, what’s wrong? Why do you look so dispirited?”

“Mother...” Ling Yun called out, then smiled with loneliness:

“From a young age, I was madly focused on the sword, with no distractions in my heart, and thought that in this life, I would never have feelings for a girl. But I recently fell in love with a girl. I think about her day and night, and cannot stop thinking about her.”

As a mother, Xuanyuan Yufeng could easily tell what was wrong with Ling Yun at a glance. She silently sighed, and comfortingly said: “The one you like, should be Xia Qingyue right? If you really do like her, and won’t marry unless it’s her, then in a few days, Mother will

go to Frozen Cloud Asgard to propose a marriage! Who cares about Frozen Cloud Asgard's rule of disciples not marrying! My Yun'er has no woman that he isn't worthy of! If Frozen Cloud Asgard does not agree, Mother will forcefully bring her here. I won't let you be like... hmph, be as hopelessly stupid as your father!"

Ling Yun bitterly raised his head and said: "It's already too late, she is... already married."

"What?" Xuanyuan Yufeng was

astonished in her heart: “How can it be? Frozen Cloud Asgard’s women never marries, how can she be married!”

“Mother, do you remember one year ago, Xiao Sect spread a message that a new female disciple who entered Frozen Cloud Asgard had a wedding in Floating Cloud City? At that time, because it was a normal female disciple who was a new recruit, no one put it in their hearts... But, I now know that female disciple, was actually Xia Qingyue... the person she married... is the recently fallen Yun Che... She is mourning for

him, and is broken-hearted because of him, and would not accept anyone else in her heart.”

As Ling Yun spoke, he painfully shut his eyes. If he had been a promiscuous person, this moment would at most, squeeze his heart, and it wouldn't take long for it to disappear like the clouds. But for a person who had been madly in love with the sword, the first time having feelings for another person, was too hard. And in his life, the first time he truly fell in love was only this one time...

“Unexpectedly... this actually happened...” Looking at Ling Yun’s face, Xuanyuan Yufeng felt a deep heartache: “Yun Che... it was actually Yun Che again, this Yun Che, really has countless tricks up his sleeve... and Frozen Cloud Asgard, you didn’t stop at hurting my husband... now you actually hurt my son as well...”

---

After the incident at the Sword Management Terrace, Ling Kun left Heavenly Sword Villa at nightfall. Frozen Cloud Asgard



had also left without bidding anyone farewell. The next day at dawn, Blue Wind Imperial Family had also left early in the morning, and also without bidding anyone farewell. It wasn't that they lacked etiquette, but they were just not in the mood to bid farewell to anyone within Heavenly Sword Villa... When they came, the four were filled with hope. The strength of Yun Che alone, allowed the Blue Wind Imperial family's name to again and again be heard in the battlefield of the ranking tournament. But at the time of departure, there were only two people left, and what they brought back, was honor contaminated with endless

sadness.

When they left, Cang Yue did not cry anymore. Without sadness, without tears, she was frighteningly calm, as if her whole heart followed Yun Che and left together with him, leaving behind an emotionless shell. What comforted Qin Wushang was she did not do anything extreme, and did not say any extreme things, because she had to return to protect her father, who was on his last leg.

If her father also makes his

final departure, then she would truly have nothing else to care for on this world.

However, what anyone couldn't anticipate, was that after the ranking tournament ended, the sensation that both Yun Che and Xia Qingyue's name caused in Blue Wind Empire had not subsided. An even larger storm of sensation was going to befall Blue Wind Empire, leading to an unprecedented large disturbance that would cause the name "Yun Che" to become a household name, where everyone would know this name.

“... When the Fairy of Frozen Moon, Xia Qingyue, exited the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, her profound strength was unexpectedly at Emperor Profound Realm! Right... it really was the Emperor Profound Realm. This was confirmed information by the ten large sects! My heavens... I heard she is not only called the number one beauty, but in the future, she would undeniably become an unmatched powerhouse in the Blue Wind Empire.”

“I’m questioning whether if she is an incarnation of a fairy. She’s unbelievably beautiful. Her talent and luck is indescribably high!”

“Did you guys hear! On the day when Yun Che exited the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, he actually died at the Heavenly Sword Villa’s Sword Management Terrace.”

“Sigh! Who wouldn’t know this. He actually died for a reportedly Elementary Profound Realm piece of trash. Sigh, the

heavens are truly jealous of this talent. There finally appeared a genius with a sectless background that would let us blow off some steam, and he died just like that. For the next one to appear, who knows how many years later it would be.”

“What!? Frozen Cloud Asgard’s Fairy of Frozen Beauty is pregnant!? Th-th-this....”

That’s right, this thing has been spread everywhere. It is said to have come from Heavenly Sword Villa, so it shouldn’t be fake. I

also heard, that it is the Fairy of Frozen Beauty and Yun Che's child!! Reportedly, after Yun Che fell at the Sword Management Terrace, the Fairy of Frozen Beauty went completely crazy, and vomited blood on the spot... If it wasn't for everyone saying this, I wouldn't dare believe this!"

“There's even more explosive news! The Fairy of Frozen Moon, Xia Qingyue, unexpectedly married at the age of sixteen, and the one she married, was Yun Che! The final battle of the ranking tournament, was a showdown between this pair of

husband and wife... This fact, is completely true!”

“Last year, there was news about a new female disciple from Frozen Cloud Asgard breaking the rules and marrying, and Xiao Sect confirmed it. The name of the female disciple who married was Xia Qingyue! The one she married is Yun Che... Reportedly, at Heavenly Sword Villa, someone saw with their own eyes that she mourned for Yun Che...”

“The number one beauty from



back then, and the current number one beauty, unexpectedly one became pregnant due to Yun Che, and another is his wife... Holy f\*ck!”

“Back then, many people had bitterly loved the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, Chu Yuechan. This also included Heavenly Sword Villa’s Villa Master Ling Yuefeng and Xiao Sect’s Sect Master Xiao Juetian, but no one could catch her eyes, yet she became pregnant from Yun Che. And the Fairy of Frozen Moon, surprisingly is even more beautiful compared to the Fairy of Frozen Beauty... Ah ah ah! I

want to replace Yun Che and go die instead!”

“This isn’t all, even our Blue Wind Imperial Family’s only princess, Princess Cang Yue was also taken by him! At Heavenly Sword Villa, if one wasn’t blind, it could be clearly seen. I heard that Fen Juecheng wanted to assassinate Yun Che in the Heaven Basin Secret Realm, but did not succeed.”

“This Yun Che is so amazing that he defies heavenly justice! I guess even the Gods couldn’t

continue watching, which was why they destroyed him!”

“It’s completely like a demon in the human world, the scourge of the common people! Ahhhh... why am I not Yun Che!!”

Yun Che’s name incited an explosive sensation in the Blue Wind Empire. In almost every ten steps in every street in the city, one could hear the name “Yun Che” at least seven or eight times. If he had simply fallen, the people would deeply regret and feel pity, and even infinitely

admire and wail for the young profound practitioner. But with the addition of rumors regarding Princess Cang Yue, the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, and the Fairy of Frozen Moon, their nature had completely changed instantly. At that time, people, especially when men discussed him, their voices would contain worship, envy, jealousy, shock, resentment... and countless other things.

At this time, Under the Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace, in a dark space, under Blue Wind Empire's focal point, Yun Che, who was

completely still as if he had been dead for a few days, finally opened his eyes with great difficulty.

---

## Author's Note

Under this is Ling Yuefeng's inner monologue:

The only woman I have fallen for that I spent my entire life pursuing without getting, had unexpectedly become pregnant

from a junior! My son finally fell for a woman with great difficulty, and is even deeply in love, but she was actually his wife. In regards to women, the number one father and son pair in Blue Wind Empire, had actually, completely lost to this kid... I really got f\*cked!

# Chapter 283 – New Lease Of Life

---

Where... is this...

I'm... not dead yet?

It was difficult enough for Yun Che to barely open his eyes. This was a gloomy place filled with a stale and rotten smell. In the darkness, there were small streaks of light that came from an unknown place, but it allowed one to roughly see the surroundings. Yun Che's whole

body was heavy and painful, especially his back. The pain on his back was excruciating.

Under such pain, his half-conscious self felt a surprising sense of happiness. This was because he could still feel pain, which meant that at the very least, he was not disabled.

“You’re finally awake.”

Jasmine’s relieved voice rung. Although Yun Che had just barely escaped from death, the



anger in Jasmine still exploded: “Have you ever counted how many times have you ‘died’ within these two years! You are always so reckless. For your objective, you would not care about your own life. Every single time, I have to make a huge sacrifice just to save you. I thought that once I sealed my own powers, it will make you more cautious, as you no longer have anything to rely on. However, I would never expect you to give up your own life even though no one is trying to hurt you. If not for the protection of the Great Way of Buddha and the strong body granted by the Dragon’s blood, you would have already been completely

destroyed.”

“Do you even know how to appreciate your own life! I helped you rebuild your profound veins,

granted you Divine Arts, and had to save you even though I knew my poison would relapse after that. I entrusted all my hopes onto you! And this is how you treat your life, and this is how you repay me!?”

The more Jasmine said, the angrier she became. All her worries, her frights and anger

that she had been holding in for the past few days had swarmed up with Yun Che's awakening. She scolded him ferociously and Yun Che, who had barely gotten back his life, did not dare to utter a word. Only until she had finished scolding did he weakly say: "Jasmine, I was wrong. I know that I shouldn't have been so rash. But when I saw Yuanba in trouble, I didn't care about myself... Sss! So painful... huu... If it were you who got into trouble that time, I would do the same for you... Even if... I know that I'll die..."

"Hmph!"      Jasmine      replied

coldly as though she did not care: “Already half-dead and yet you still remember to flaunt your skills in sweet-talking girls. Stop talking. Control your breathing. Don’t use any profound strength. Immediately concentrate on activating the power of your dragon’s blood and the Great Way of the Buddha to recover your injuries! The demon knew you were not dead but did not come and take your life these few days. He is probably wondering whether or not you are able to regain consciousness out of boredom. If he knew you’re awake, it’s highly likely he’ll come for your life... Therefore, before he finds out that you’re awake, you need

to control the injury on your back and gather enough strength to use Star God's Broken Shadow once!"

Yun Che immediately understood Jasmine's words. He controlled his breathing as his gaze moved slightly, looking towards the space beyond the borders of the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation. As long as he could execute the Star God's Broken Shadow once and instantly escape beyond the barrier, even if the demon wanted to kill him, it would still be impossible.

If he were to use the slightest bit of profound strength, he would most likely aggravate the already serious injury on his back and alert the demon. However, the Great Way of the Buddha was something that could be activated with just thought, and would not be detected. Needless to say, the activation of the dragon blood was the same as well.

Yun Che closed his eyes again and his entire body kept still. He controlled his breathing to an extreme point. Although his

body was in great pain, the pain was still insufficient to cause him to make a sound.

His initial injury was no doubt extremely serious. Even with Dragon Blood and the Great Way of the Buddha, he was merely one step away from death. For a normal person, five days of unconsciousness would speed up the worsening of the injury. A normal person might not even last five hours. However for Yun Che, he had the Rage God's Great Way of the Buddha; instead of his injuries worsening, they had instead slowly recovered. The presence of Dragon's Blood also

sped up the process of recovery to a large extent.

Yun Che's current injuries could no longer be considered fatal, but only seen as serious. His broken spine had reconnected by itself in the past five days of resting.

As Yun Che awoke, following his mind spurring it on, the Great Way of the Buddha activated at an even faster rate. In the silence, it also quickly recovered his external injuries.



Since I'm able to escape death...  
Then... I'm going to use all my  
might to survive... I absolutely  
cannot die!!

Time passed by slowly in the  
silence. Other than his own  
heartbeat, Yun Che could not  
hear anything else. Behind him,  
there were no sounds that  
signified the presence of the  
demon. However, even his  
significantly weaker self could  
sense the occasional scary gaze  
of the demon scanning pass his  
body.

Finally, a hoarse voice sounded: “He’s such a weird fellow. Suffering such injuries but still not dying after five days! I really want to see whether he is able to wake up in the end... However, even if he were to wake up, it’s impossible for him to live!”

The demon muttering to himself meant that he still had not realized that Yun Che had woken up. Yun Che felt slightly relieved in his mind as he controlled his breathing again and concentrated again, focusing solely on survival, quickly activating his Great Way of the Buddha.

One day.....

Two days...

On the third day, Yun Che's injuries were still very severe. However, he recovered to the extent where he would not die from using a bit of his profound strength. Furthermore, his body was no longer so heavy. Within his profound veins, he could now muster enough profound strength. He opened his eyes and saw the shiny yellow borders of the barrier as his fist started to

clench together tightly.

“It’s about time! Go now!”

Just as Jasmine had finished talking, Yun Che took in a large breath and instantly activated Star God’s Broken Shadow. Having laid down for nearly eight days, his corpse-like body suddenly rushed forward like a bolt of lightning. With a ripping sound, he rushed out and fell heavily outside the barrier and rolled instinctively for some distance before finally stopping. He laid on the ground, taking in

deep breaths while grimacing in pain.

The Yun Che now, had finally, truly escaped death. Previously, he was under the gaze of the demon. If the demon were to ever have the intention to kill him, he would definitely die. Now however, not only did his condition improve, he had also finally escaped from the clutches of the demon.

As the demon looked up, a pair of frightening eyes flashed pass in the darkness. Looking

upwards, he suddenly started laughing: “HAHAHAHA! I never expected that I had unintentionally brought such a weird kid in. Not dying after suffering such serious injuries for eight days and is actually able to recuperate without me knowing. In the end, you were still able to obtain an advantage over me! Other than those mongrels from the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, you’re the first person who is actually capable of doing so!”

One Star God’s Broken Shadow used up all of Yun Che’s strength. He gasped for air for a

while before replying: “Demon, I... won’t die so easily!!!”

“Hmph, you’re truly overestimating yourself. Do you really think you have nothing to worry about anymore?” The demon pulled along his steel chains, shouting back with a frightening voice: “This place is being suppressed by the Heaven’s Punishment. It can only be activated once every twenty years! So what if you have regained consciousness! Even if your injuries were to recover, what can you do? There is no food nor water here. With your profound level, are you

really that naive to think that you can live for twenty years?”

“No! No need to wait twenty years... There’s one way that I can get out!” Yun Che stared at the demon, gritted his teeth, and said: “And that is to kill you! The Heaven’s Punishment Sword is here to seal your soul. As long as you’re dead, the Heaven’s Punishment Sword would deactivate automatically! Then, I’ll be able to get out!”

This was of course not observed by Yun Che but instead, told to



him by Jasmine. What was trapping the demon was not the Meteorite Chain. Although the Meteorite Chain existed to restrict his movements, what actually trapped him there was the Heaven's Punishment!

The demon was surprised for a moment, then he laughing loudly once again: "HAHAHAHA! Such an interesting kid. What you said is absolutely right. As long as you kill me, you'll be able to escape from this place. However, it's a pity that you wouldn't live till the day that you'll kill me."

“I will definitely... kill you!” Yun Che said viciously as he clenched his teeth while looking at the demon with eyes filled with hatred. The demon went crazy under the Ling Kun’s provocation, nearly killed Xia Yuanba, and almost caused him to enter the afterlife. Although he had survived, he was trapped here, unable to control his own life and death. All of these were caused by the demon, which simply made him hate the demon to the bone!

He could predict that the

people outside must have thought that he had already died. In the end, his close ones suffered while his enemies were happy! This was all also due to the demon!

“Then, I want to see how exactly you are going to kill me!” The demon laughed wildly. A savage form of excitement was revealed under his grey white hair and dried face. The prison only had dull darkness and frightening loneliness to accompany it. To Yun Che, this was like dropping into a deep abyss. However, to the demon, having one extra person made it

seem like heaven in this hell. Even if he was able to touch Yun Che now, he might not even want to kill him.

“You look like you really hate me... That’s right! How can you not! Go ahead and hate me all you want. Let me see whether your hatred can kill me. Let me see how long you can survive here! HAHAAHAHA...”

The demon’s excited laughter carried a slight craziness. In the dark space here, his voice seemed eerily frightening. Yun

He stopped talking to him, gritted his teeth, and slowly sat up. His injury was mainly on his back and every inch he moved brought along great pain that was nearly unbearable. When he had finally sat down cross-legged, his whole forehead was drenched in cold sweat. He closed his eyes and placed his fists onto his knees. Before long, his mind and body had calmed down. His face was no longer pale and his breathing returned to normal.

His mind entered the Sky Poison Pearl. Once inside, he saw Jasmine gazing at him with

a strong killing intent. He laughed awkwardly before making a large number of promises to her. Then, he started to quickly look for numerous medicinal herbs before taking out the piece of Purple Veined Heaven Crystal that Xia Qingyue had given him.

The Purple Veined Heaven Crystal was able to provide strong recuperating strength to an injured part of the body, such as skin, bones or even organs. Drawing on the power within the crystal could even increase one's profound strength. This was why its value could not be

measured using money. If Yun Che wanted to recover in the quickest time possible, he would have to use the Purple Veined Heaven Crystal.

Under the refinement of the Sky Poison Pearl, Yun Che was able to complete the preparations of all the required medicine within an hour... Just when his mind was about to leave the Sky Poison Pearl, he seemed to have thought of something and examined around, which caused his heart to sink to the bottom.

All the food, water that he originally stored... were all gone! Not one bit was left!

It was all inside the purple spatial ring he had given to Su Ling'er, who was in the distant Azure Cloud Continent!



# Chapter 284 – Ice Heart Of The Moon Beauty (yuechan)

---

North of Blue Wind, Snow  
Region of Extreme Ice, Frozen  
Cloud Asgard.

With the existence of something like the Sound Transmission Talisman, the speed at which information traveled was naturally faster than people. As the buzz about Yun Che were passed along all over the place in the Blue Wind Empire, another hot topic also

dwelled in everyone's  
discussions... And that was  
Frozen Cloud Asgard!

To people of Blue Wind Empire,  
Frozen Cloud Asgard was an  
peerlessly sacred existence. Its  
mysteriousness and sacredness  
even surpassed Heavenly Sword  
Villa. In the knowledge of the  
masses, everyone within the  
Frozen Cloud Asgard were all  
goddess-like beings;  
otherworldly, and as flawless as  
ice and snow. The fairies of  
Frozen Cloud Asgard, were all  
the more so, a fantasy that no  
men had ever dared wish to  
touch.

But now, a fairy within Frozen Cloud Asgard... Moreover, the head of the Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies whose name shook the world, had actually gotten pregnant! Furthermore, the pregnancy was rumored to be with a junior!

One could imagine just what kind of public opinion's extremity this would push Frozen Cloud Asgard toward. To the thousand years of Frozen Asgard's serene reputation, this was a "blemish" that could never be erased. It was not even an

exaggeration to call it a great humiliation.

When Chu Yuechan's group of five returned to Frozen Cloud Asgard, the Mistress of Frozen Cloud Asgard was already personally waiting there.

Gong Yuxian was already over one hundred-seventy this year, yet she only looked to be thirty or forty. Wearing a snow embellished ella dress whose hem dragged onto the floor, her face was like condensed ice, and her eyes were like a cold blade.

Her expression was entirely still, without any hint of the fluctuation of emotions. However, the cold light that unceasingly flashed through the depth of her eyes, showed the fury inside her heart.

Beside her, five women who were also in snow-white attire accompanied her on both sides. Every single one of them had skin of ice and snow and features beautiful as snow lotuses; their charm could ruin cities. It could be said that placing any random disciple picked out from Frozen Cloud Asgard in a region would be able

to shock an entire city with their beauty. These five, were precisely the other five people of the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies juxtaposed with Chu Yuechan and Chu Yueli.

Chu Yueli's group of five returned, only to find that it was actually the Mistress who personally came to "greet" them. Her heart jumped with a thump. Glancing at the Chu Yuechan who was beside her, she stepped forward and spoke first: "Disciple Yueli pays respect to Master."

Gong Yuxian slowly nodded. Her expression was still ice-cold, yet did not pay attention to her any longer. Her gaze fell upon Xia Qingyue, and her expression finally displayed a hint of ease: “Qingyue, come over here.”

“Yes, Mistress.”

Xia Qingyue came before Gong Yuxian. On her arm, there still wrapped that black-colored silk strap.

Gong Yuxian reached out her

hand and pressed onto the center of Xia Qingyue's chest. After a short while, she revealed a slight smile: "Very good. At the tender age of seventeen, yet already into the early stages of the Emperor Profound. This is your fortune, and also the fortune of our Asgard. Looks like there is no longer need to worry about who should be next candidate for the Asgard Mistress. In the coming six months, you must cultivate behind closed doors at the core of the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, and stabilize the greatly increased profound energy in your body."



“Yes, Mistress.” Xia Qingyue responded faintly. Toward Gong Yuxian explicitly telling her that she would be the next Asgard Mistress, she did not refuse or panic, nor did she display any sort of surprise and joy; she was indifferent, as if she had heard a sentence that couldn’t be any more uninteresting.

The atmosphere was immensely frigid. Amongst five fairies beside Gong Yuxian, none of them had yet spoke, and were all looking at Chu Yuechan with complicated gazes. At this time, Gong Yuxian’s gaze finally fell beside Chu Yuechan. After a

short glance, she turned around:  
“Yuechan, follow me.”

Chu Yuechan fell silent, and followed behind Gong Yuxian without a word.

“Elder sister...” Chu Yueli cried out, her heart full of worry.

This was an ice palace filled with candle fire and spirit tablets. Every single one of the names on the spirit tablets all had previously shook the world; and these names, were naturally

of Frozen Cloud Asgard's predecessors.

“Kneel!” Standing in the center of the ice palace, facing the spirit tablets of many predecessors, Gong Yuxian's chest undulated as she coldly yelled.

Chu Yuechan kneeled down to the ground; her eyes were like ice, yet also like mist: “Master...”

“You actually still have the face

to call me Master!’ Gong Yuxian turned around, and spoke furiously: “Do you know, that Frozen Cloud Asgard’s thousand years of serene reputation, were all ruined because of you! You are the disciple I was the most proud of in these hundred years; no matter Frozen Cloud Arts nor Frozen Heart Formula’s grasping and comprehension, you far surpassed the others. I prepared against disciples breaking the taboo at all times, Qingyue’s marriage that was only in form, was already my limit... But I never ever expected that the first one to break the taboo would actually be you! Moreover, you’ve even casted down a blunder known by the entire

world that brought the Asgard to shame!”

Chu Yuechan closed her eyes, and spoke with misery: “This disciple acknowledges her faults... The faults that this disciple committed, she will definitely bear the responsibility with all her strength.”

“Bear the responsibility? How will you bear the responsibility? Even if you were to apologize by suicide in front of the predecessors, you still wouldn’t be able to make up for your

immense blunder!” Gong Yuxian’s eyebrows stood on their ends; Her fury had clearly reached its limit: “Speak! Just exactly... who’s bane of existence is that!”

Chu Yuechan’s eyes suddenly became hazy, but she did not hesitate, and instead lightly shouted out that name: “Yun Che!”

Gong Yuxian’s body wavered, and was furious to the point of her whole body shaking: “Devil’s spawn! Truly the devil’s spawn!

You actually... really, with a junior... you... you....”

Gong Yuxian was so angry that she became speechless. Even though according the rumors, she was pregnant with Yun Che's child, Gong Yuxian absolutely refused to believe it! With Chu Yuechan's disposition, to have done this kind of thing was already inexplicable. But no matter what, it wouldn't be possible to be with a junior. She did not expect in any way, that the rumor was actually not false in the slightest!

Gong Yuxian pointed at spirit tablets with her finger, and harshly spoke: “Kneel before the predecessors and swear right now, that you will immediately abort this child and shall never leave Frozen Cloud Asgard again for the rest of your life!”

“No...” Chu Yuechan shook her head. She placed her jade hand on her abdomen, and shook her head with strength; her face, revealed the expression of begging that Gong Yuxian had never seen before: “This child is mine and his. This disciple is at thousands of faults, but the child is innocent. Master, please spare



this child. If Master is willing to let this disciple give birth to the child, this disciple is willing to never oppose even half a sentence from Master... I beg master for her consent!”

“You!” Gong Yuxian’s body swayed as she started shaking from all the anger: “Having reached this point, you are actually still so unrepentant! This disciple of mine whom I’ve been most proud of all my life, actually... actually.... Fine! Do you really think that you can successfully birth the child if I don’t make you abort it? Do you know why our Frozen Cloud

Asgard had never allowed disciples to marry? The so-called falling in love will affect the Frozen Cloud Art's cultivation, is purely an excuse. The most important reason, firstly, is that it would transfer the Frozen Cloud Art to others! Secondly, cultivating Frozen Cloud Arts will chill the internal organs within the body. Even though one could conceive, within two months at most, the fetus would die in the abdomen! Furthermore, this place is located in the extreme north of Blue Wind Empire, and the chilling cold seeps through the bones all year long. Even if you don't have Frozen Cloud Arts, the fetus would still die from the

chill! Whether you abort the fetus or not, the result would be the same!”

Chu Yuechan froze there, and became dazed for a long time. All of a sudden, she extended both hands. One finger pressed onto her Dantian, and the other finger pressed onto the center of her chest. Two balls of ice-cold luminescence suddenly flared up, and right after, a great amount of cold aura poured out from within Chu Yuechan’s body, bringing up a large field of ice mist.

Gong Yuxian was greatly shocked, and instantly rushed in front of Chu Yuechan. However, it was already too late for her to obstruct... At this time, Chu Yuechan's upper body was swaying and looked like it would collapse at any moment. Her face was extremely ghastly, yet her expression was full of relief. Gong Yuxian's eyes trembled as she watched the dispersing ice mist, knowing that everything was already too late. While furious and shocked, there were more perplexion and heartache. She spoke with a painful tone: "Yuechan, why do you treat yourself so... That Yun Che, just what kind of bewitching soup did he feed you!"

Chu Yuechan's lips slightly lifted; that was as if an expression of wanting to smile. She spoke faintly: "He didn't feed me any bewitching soup, but... he allowed me to have a memory that I could never forget, and also allowed me to turn back into a real woman during that period of time...."

"During those five months, I had lost all my strength, and my entire body was crippled. It was supposed to be my darkest, most helpless and despairing moment. However, he made

everything change, far away from all my expectations. I couldn't walk, so he took me in his arms; no matter how great the danger he faced, he refused to put me down. I couldn't eat, so he fed me; every single spoon was adjusted to be just right for me, not allowing it burn nor chill me. I lost my strength, so he protected me with one hand, and swept away all obstacles with the other, sheltering me from weather... For an entire five months, he never had a hint of impatience, and never for a moment had the thought to put this burden down. Unwittingly, I started to enjoy this feeling, and completely depended on him. It was clearly my most helpless and

hopeless moment, yet I was wishing that this kind of situation would never end...”

“Within the Frozen Cloud Asgard, ten days are like one day, ten years are like one day, dozens of years are like one day... There is only eternal ice, snow and the Frozen Cloud Art. Every single day was passed under repetition. But during that period of time, he let me understand the happiness of living, and made me truly feel like I was a woman for the first time... The reason why I asked to go to the Ranking Tournament on my own

initiative, was because after I left him, my heart was filled with his silhouette during every single hour and moment. I convinced myself that I was going to meet him one last time, and sever the bond of affection once and for all. But in reality, I just wanted to see him... I wanted to see him...”

Gong Yuxian’s chest fiercely rose and fell. She let out a long sigh and lamented: “A sinful fate, truly a sinful fate! The predecessor saying that the romance between men and women is the most acute poison in this world... truly wasn’t



mistaken in the slightest. It is precisely this passion between man and woman that made you defy the rules for a junior, and shame the Asgard... Even making you unhesitantly self-abolish the Frozen Cloud Art you had bitterly cultivated for tens of years! You... you...”

“I do not regret... I will never regret.” Chu Yuechan spoke with misty and tearful eyes: “I only regret that only after he was gone, did I finally, truly understand some things... He is already dead, and this is his last bloodline he left in this world, the continuation of his life. As

his woman, even if it is to repay the everything he gave me during those five months, let alone Frozen Cloud Arts, even if I must pay the price of death, I will still definitely let this child live on... I beg Master for her consent... I beg Master for her consent!!”

Gong Yuxian powerlessly fell back onto the chair behind her; her complexion suddenly seemed to be many times older. Looking at Chu Yuechan who knelt there emitting mournfulness and resolution from her entire body, the agony in her heart couldn't be

intensified any further. She reached out her hand, and after it stalled in space for a long time, did she finally said with an extremely powerless voice: “Stand back up... stand back up... Just pretend that I, Gong Yuxian had never accepted you as a disciple... From now on, you are no longer a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Leave this place right now, leave the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, forget everything here, go wherever you wish to go. From now on, you no longer have anything to do with Frozen Cloud Asgard...”

Chu Yuechan’s tears flooded out

all at once. She knelt before Gong Yuxian, made a kowtow with force, and sobbingly spoke: "Master raised me, nurtured me, like my birth mother... Yet I committed a serious sin, saddened and angered you, and shamed the sect. I am aware myself that my sins are unforgivable... Master's benevolence of raising me, and the Asgard's favor of raising me, Yuechan... can only repay it in the next life!"

"No need to say anymore." Gong Yuxian turned her face away: "Go... For every moment further you remain here, an

extra hint of cold aura would invade your body... If you don't want to damage the fetus in your womb, then quickly go... You also need to leave secretly, without alerting anyone. The farther you go, the better... I don't want to see you ever again."

"I thank Master for consenting." Chu Yuechan kowtowed once again, stood up, and slowly retreated a step: "Master, please take care of yourself, Yuechan... won't be able to accompany you by your side anymore..."

As her voice fell, Chu Yuechan retreated back a few steps with difficulty. Then, after forcefully clenching her teeth, she exited the ice palace with brisk steps, and her snow-white silhouette quickly disappeared amidst the world of ice and snow.

Gong Yuxian's face finally turned back around, and looked toward the direction Chu Yuechan had left. Below her eyes, there lied two deep lines of tear marks.

After a long while, she finally managed to calm her heart as her expression returned to indifference. She then transmitted with a heavy voice: "Hanxue, come in."

As her voice transmitted out, very soon, a woman that appeared to be twenty-five or twenty-six walked in. Feng Hanxue, ranked seventh of the Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies, at Sky Profound Realm rank six, was at the same time the youngest of the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies.

“Inform all disciples to gather at Frozen Cloud Hall, I have a few major matters to announce!”

“Yes, Mistress.”

There were a total of three major matters Gong Yuxian wanted announce: Number one: To announce that Chu Yuechan had been exiled from the Frozen Cloud Asgard; Number two: Xia Qingyue will enter the ranks of Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies, replacing Chu Yuechan as first place; Number three: Recall all



the disciples outside of the Frozen Cloud Asgard, close the Asgard's gates starting from this day for three years, disallow visitors as well as recruiting of new disciples. No one will be allowed to exit the Asgard.

## Chapter 285 – Cutting Off All Means Of Retreat

---

In the dark space, there was no night and day. Thus, there was no way to tell time. Yun Che didn't know how long he was stuck in there, and in his heart, there was only the thought of trying to get out of here with all his might. The first step was to completely recover from his injury.

He concocted medicine, and with Purple Veined Heaven Crystal in addition with Great Way of the Buddha's recovery

power, Yun Che's recovery rate was extremely quick. Within half a month, his wounds were completely healed. In this type of surrounding, Yun Che's originally life threatening wounds did not even worsen to cause his death, but instead rapidly recovered. Within everything he has seen and heard, and within all his experiences, it was the first time he was secretly shocked... This could not simply be called a recovery... but a rebirth!

His back that was originally struck into a bloody skeleton, and his backbone that nearly

snapped, was now perfectly fine, without even a spot of scarring left behind, which was completely unbelievable!

“What an interesting fellow, unexpectedly fully recovering from this kind of wound in such a short period of time. This was mostly unrelated to medical skill, it looks like you trained in some type of miraculous Profound Art! But I have lived for a few hundred years, and I have never heard of such an amazing level of Profound Art existing!” the demon said with a low voice. Looking at the killing intent starting to gather in Yun

Che's eyes, he laughed loudly and said: "You think you can kill me just because you recovered from your wounds and that I can't move? Even though my profound strength has been greatly suppressed because of this formation, with just your miniscule Spirit Profound Realm, you shouldn't even think about killing me. You can't even hurt a strand of my hair!"

His wounds had fully recovered, and his profound strength had also recovering to around ninety percent. Yun Che grabbed Dragon Fault, and said with a heavy face while standing

at the edge of the enchantment:  
“In this place, if it’s not you who dies, then it’s me who dies! Since I actually managed to survive, then I definitely wouldn’t let myself die again... the one who’s going to die is only you!”

“His profound strength is being suppressed, but looking at the aura he emitted before at the Sword Management Terrace, he could probably release the strength of an early stage Emperor Profound Realm. Even though you’re not suppressed by the formation, the distance between you and him is too too far, killing him is simply just a

dream. But his body is tied up, and he can only move one hand, so he can't chase after you. With Star God's Broken Shadow and Sealing Cloud Locking Sun, keeping your life when attacking him isn't a hard thing to do... If you want to know whether or not there's a possibility of killing him, then you can try and see." Jasmine lightly reminded. But clearly, she didn't believe Yun Che could actually kill this demon.

“Without trying, how could I know!”

Yun Che's brows sank. He swung Dragon Fault, activated Burning Heart, and quickly charged within the boundary. The feeling of suppression suddenly hit him, but then instantly disappeared. He gazed at the demon's only movable right hand, tightly focusing with his whole body, but surprisingly, after he charged into the boundary, the demon didn't attack him. Under his long white hair, he stared at Yun Che with those gloomy eyes that contained no hostility.

Until he got close in front of the demon, the demon still did not



move a single bit.

“Haah! Overlord’s Fury!”

Yun Che growled, and Dragon Fault brought along a shocking wave of pressure that perilously pounded towards the demon. Yun Che’s only goal was to kill this demon, so his attack contained no mercy. This strike, smashed straight for the demon’s head... Under the heavy locus of Dragon Fault, the demon still did not move, allowing the extremely heavy Dragon Fault to severely smash

against his head.

Bang!!!!

Yun Che's profound strength was only at the early Spirit Profound Realm, but his overall strength absolutely could not be measured by just profound strength alone. The threat of this one slash was enough to shatter a small mountain, not to mention a person's head. The slash brought along an oppressive huge boom. The surrounding air was forcefully pushed away, creating a

temporary            yet            horrifying  
vacuum.

Yun Che was stunned... because the demon actually didn't dodge, and didn't block.

Dragon Fault smashed on the demon's head, but from the head to the whole body, the demon did not even budge one bit. Under Dragon Fault, he slowly raised his head, smiled and softly said: "You really are a freak, to not be suppressed inside the formation! And with the strength of a Spirit Profound

realm unleashing a battle power of such a level, even in the Illusory Demon Royal Family, there aren't many that can do this. I am suddenly interested in your cultivation and Profound Arts!"

With such a violent slash that could hack mountains and shatter rocks hitting the demon's head, not even a strand of hair was hurt. Yun Che felt shocked in his heart, quickly reversed his body and swung Dragon Fault downwards even more violently.

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!”

This time, the demon moved, welcoming Yun Che's Dragon Fault. The demon bent his arm with a speed so fast that it was unseeable, placing his palm diagonally, with his middle finger and ring finger that was difficult to exert a force on, and pinched the heavy blade of Dragon Fault.

All of the power Yun Che poured into Dragon Fault, was instantly like a clay ox entering the ocean, and disappeared

completely. It was followed by a terrifying power that came from the sword, causing him to feel an extremely dangerous and shocking feeling. Yun Che didn't even think twice. He withdrew his hands in a flash, but he was still hit with a storm of profound strength from the sword and flew away with a groan. When he landed, Yun Che quickly moved sideways and retreated to the outside of the boundary. After retreating out of the barrier, he squatted while panting, and his eyebrows locked up stubbornly.

An extremely scary demon!

He couldn't even hurt a strand of hair with a strike that contained all his strength. And the demon only used two fingers of strength to directly snatch away my weapon, and even forced me away... Jasmine was right, with my strength, killing him was essentially an idiot's dream!

Dragon Fault, weighing more than four thousand kilograms, was easily pinched between the demon's fingers as if pinching one's chopstick. Feeling the weight of this sword, a touch of

shock flashed across the demon's face. He shook his fingers and said: "A pretty good sword. To be able to release such a power like that with this sword, you're quite unusual! This sword, I'll return to you!"

The demon moved his fingers a bit, Dragon Fault suddenly became a gray shooting star, and shuttled through the boundary. With a "ding", it deeply embedded into the floor in front of Yun Che.

"Why didn't you kill me?" Yun



He asked as he coldly stared.

“Why should I kill you?” The demon asked in return: “In my life, even though I’ve killed countless people, I’ve never killed an innocent person. Truthfully speaking, looking back at it, by bringing you in here, it’s the first time in my life that I’ve hurt an innocent! That is due to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region’s despicable junior angering me, causing me to lose my reason. Now that you actually survived, I have no reason to kill you again. If I kill you, apart from increasing my crimes, there is no benefit

whatsoever. If I keep you here, at least before you die, I'll have someone to accompany me... In the end, you are just a pitiful victim!

Yun Che's ability to know people well was very strong. Frankly, he couldn't find a bit of cruelty or savagery from the demon. In this period of time, what he felt the most from the demon was sadness, resentment and longing. But these feelings could not be reasons that would cause him to not kill this demon. Because this demon had brought him here, only by killing him could Yun Che leave this place.

He coldly smiled and said: “If you have really never killed an innocent person, if you don’t want your sins to increase, then kill yourself, let an innocent person like me leave this place! Or else, don’t spout any grand and lofty bullshit.”

“Hahahaha...” The demon laughed out loud, and said: “Junior, you don’t have any qualifications to speak to me like that, because my life is worth way more than your life!” He opened his eyes widely, his pupils shooting out a frightening anger and hatred. His voice had also become hoarse: “I was never

afraid of death. Being alone in the darkness for a hundred years, this type of loneliness and despair is a thousand times more painful than a quick death! But I'm not willing to die pointlessly like this, as I still haven't personally annihilated the mongrels from that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! They won't let me die, then I'll just live well until the day I can leave this place and destroy their whole sect! I won't kill you, but you shouldn't even hope to kill me!"

Yun Che clenched both his hands tightly, and panted a

coarse breath as his gaze sharpened, but did not speak for a good while.

The air in this place was extremely turbid, the rate of exhaustion of the body was much faster than outside. Half a month without drinking, in addition to his heavy injuries, Yun Che's body revealed a weakness; his stomach was making noises due to the obvious feeling of hunger.

“If you still had the Phoenix Flames, then there's a chance of

burning him. But the current you has no chance of hurting him. No matter how you attack, there's no chance of success, and it would instead exhaust your stamina quicker. You'd best take a calm posture, and wait for the Phoenix blood to awaken. That way, you might still have a small chance of hope!"

"But the precondition is that you have to live until then!"

After thinking back to leaving all the food within the Sky Poison Pearl with Su Ling'er, he

came to a realization that even though he managed to survive, he was still in the abyss of despair, and was falling even deeper into the abyss.

With profound strength at the Sky Profound Realm, it was not a problem to not eat and drink for a year. At the Emperor Profound Realm, there was basically no need for food and drink. At that level, delicacy was only for the enjoyment of the taste, and not for sustenance.

But for Yun Che, the distance to

that level was at an impossible distance! An unreachable distance to the stage of not drinking and eating.

Time passed day by day. The feeling of hunger grew stronger, his body became weaker and weaker, until the feeling of hunger was akin to a nightmare. At this time, he was searching in a craze in the Sky Poison Pearl, yet he could not find anything edible. He even ate those dried miracle medicinal herbs, but to refine them used even more profound strength and body strength...



A month later, Yun Che completely could not feel the existence of hunger. It seems as if he couldn't even feel the existence of his body. His head felt dazed sometimes, felt absent-minded sometimes, his body was as light as a goose feather, and even moving was particularly difficult. Without the Dragon God's blood preserving his life, without his life threatening injury healing, without eating and drinking for more than a month, and being stuck in an incomparably turbid and vile environment, he would have starved to death long ago.

“In my first life, I was poisoned to death by someone.”

“In my second life, I jumped off Cloud’s End Cliff, and committed suicide...”

“I can... die a tragic death, or even die miserably... but how can I possibly... starve to death!”

Yun Che mused dejectedly. His eyes were half open, his rate of breathing extremely slow, and

his upper body rocked, shook, as if he would fall to the ground at any moment. In this period of time, he spent most of his time sleeping, and after sleeping a long while, waking up every time was getting harder than the last. He had no idea whether or not if he would wake up from his slumber the next time he fell asleep.

I can't die....

Even if I die... I can't just die hopelessly from starvation... Definitely cannot...

Yun Che extended his left hand, and the Sky Poison Pearl flashed a green light. In front of Yun Che suddenly appeared a hundred foot tall, huge crimson red dragon! Only, this supposedly immensely strong dragon had no signs of life. Even the corpse was split perfectly into four pieces.

Yun Che grabbed the Tiger Soul Sword, and walked to the Flame Dragon's tail end while panting. He activated Burning Heart and slashed downwards with all his strength. He cut off the peak of

the Flame Dragon's massive tail bloodily, and grabbed it in his hands. The dead Flame Dragon did not have profound strength reinforcing its body, so even though the corpse was still extremely tough, it was enough for Yun Che to cut open. If it was a living Flame Dragon, even if Yun Che's profound strength was ten times stronger, there would be no chance of hurting its body in the slightest.

Things stored in the Sky Poison Pearl wouldn't have a qualitative change. Even though this Flame Dragon had been dead for over a year, it was still preserved at the

state when it had just died. Fresh blood quickly streamed down from the part of the tail that was cut off, and that, was completely pure dragon blood!

Looking at the pouring dragon blood, Yun Che's eyes shone with a deep greed and longing... At this time, Jasmine's voice came out from his heart and helpless said: "Did you think this through? You should know that this is an Emperor Profound Dragon, and the power contained within its blood and flesh is not something that you can handle. If you really eat it as food... you could very likely die

immediately!”

“I... have no other choice! I believe... I can handle the power! Even if... even if I can’t handle it, I’d rather die from my body exploding, rather than dying from starving to death!

After speaking, Yun Che raised his arms quickly, and brought the dragon tail to his lips. The drops of dragon blood dripped into his mouth... The dragon blood’s fishiness, for Yun Che at this moment, was as good as honeydew from the heavens.

## Chapter 286 – Desperate Struggle

---

Yun Che wasn't sure of just how much power was contained within the blood of the Emperor Profound Flame Dragon. Yun Che was at the early stages of True Profound Realm when he refined the Dragon Blood Pellet, and one pellet was infused with only four drops of dragon blood. Only under the suppression of a variety of miraculous medicine was the power made gentle, and even then, after eating one pellet, it took at least one to two days to refine.



And today, he directly drank the dragon blood. In a short few breaths, with the dragon blood quickly dripping all over, more than a few hundred drops of Flame Dragon blood flowed into Yun Che's mouth, and with it a fiery heat of energy flowed into his stomach. The hunger in his stomach vanished in an instant, and even his originally empty spirit was roused.

Yun Che had the Evil God's fire seed within him, thus making him immune to any flames. But right now, he still felt as if an

incomparably hot flame had exploded within his stomach. This heat wave was like spilled mercury that pervaded every pore as it wildly surged through his whole body... four limbs, internal organs, blood stream, bone marrow... As if every part of his body, every single cell, had scorching oil poured into them. In addition to this, his bones and his soul was thoroughly in pain...

It was an extremely excruciating pain where his whole body seemed to completely crack apart and completely explode.

The dragon tail in Yun Che's hand fell to the floor as the sweat on his forehead rained down. In an instant, this sweat had completely evaporated, and his body staggered backwards, falling onto the ground. His body spasmed from the pain, and his face distorted greatly.

Whoosh!

The clothes on Yun Che's body were burnt to a crisp and was sent flying away, revealing crimson red skin. This crimson

red was deepening in color, eventually becoming a frightening dark red color. A frightening “pa pa pa” snapping sound rang out from every part of his body...

That sound of his bones cracking apart, being calcined!

“Kid... are you tired of living?!”

The demon gazed at Yun Che through his dirty white hair. With his level of strength, he could easily see that the massive

dead dragon was a flame type Emperor Profound dragon. When the huge dragon appeared, he was shocked about how Yun Che, with his miniscule profound strength, could even come to possess a corpse of an Emperor Profound dragon. He also had never thought that Yun Che would actually drink its blood!

Not to mention he was merely only in the early stages of Spirit Profound Realm, even if a person in the late stage Earth Profound Realm dared to take a large gulp of blood from an Emperor Profound Realm

dragon, he would be courting death!

This was something only a true madman would do!

After his exclamation, the expression in his eyes filled with more and more surprise. He stared wide-eyed at Yun Che's skin slowly becoming dark red. Then, it burst apart with a fish scale pattern, and heard the sound his bones exploding and calcining... This kind of pain was simply unimaginable. Even with his strength, he still

trembled with fear. He completely understood that even an Overlord at the Tyrant Profound Realm would find it extremely difficult to withstand this kind of pain.

But not a single trace of a scream emerged from Yun Che's mouth! His face was already completely distorted, his pair of eyes became a crimson red, but within the widely forced open eyes, apart from infinite pain... he was still undeniably wide awake!

That kind of pain, even if it was himself, he would definitely howl or scream, but this youngster... did not even let out a sound!

How much terrifying willpower did this require!

Impossible! This cannot possibly be the amount of willpower a youngster would possess!

The demon raised his head with eyes filled with shock. He



had always been calling Yun Che a freak because his power was not suppressed by the formation, and with profound strength at the Spirit Profound Realm, he could actually release power rivalling the battle strength of an Earth Profound Realm. But at this moment, he was shocked about this youth's terrifying amount of willpower. He was a freak amongst freaks, causing him to be incapable of not being deeply shocked.

But even if his willpower and endurance was stronger, it did not mean that he could live through the erosion of the

Emperor      Profound      dragon's  
blood. He regretfully said with a  
low      voice:      “You      really  
overestimated yourself! Seeing  
how you're being destroyed and  
burnt to a crisp, I really should  
have killed you cleanly in one  
strike instead!”

“Shut... up!!”

What caused the demon to be  
shocked was that Yun Che  
actually spoke... and in this  
terrifying condition, he didn't  
give out a blood-curdling  
scream, and instead he had let

out a cold, calm voice. His voice was incredibly hoarse and displeasing to hear, as if it came from a dying elderly, but his pronunciation was exceptionally clear: “I... will not... die... before... killing... you... I... definitely... will not... die!!!!”

Both of the demon's eyes narrowed. He saw that Yun Che's skin was completely burnt black, the bones' crackling sounds were concentrated, as if a few hundred pieces of glass were broken at the same time. Yun Che's current miserable condition couldn't help but make the demon have a sense of

horror. He howled: “Good! Then let me see... just how you plan on staying alive!!”

Yun Che's teeth were nearly completely chewed until shattered at this moment. He could feel his flesh, bones... even his bone marrow felt like it had been put on top of a fire and burned, being fried as if immersed into boiling oil. This kind of pain, absolutely could not be described with any kind of words. He basically couldn't breathe. His four limbs were immobilized, his organs exhausted or even broken down. He could also feel a countless

streams of irritable energy in his body thrashing around. The surface of his body was already completely pitch-black, filled with detailed cracks leaking out countless streams of blood.

His body in this instant was as weak as a tissue that could be ripped apart with one tear. His bodily functions had nearly decayed completely. What was left was only his willpower and obsessed soul.

Yun Che used every single bit of willpower to keep himself in a

stable sitting posture. He shut both of his eyes, closing off his five senses and consciousness. The cracks on his body rapidly increased, and the burnt black body gradually deepened. Apart from this, Yun Che was completely still, like a weathered sculpture.

Did he die?

Not yet... from his body, the demon still felt a slight trace of life.

If it was any other person at this stage, they would have definitely passed away long ago. But on Yun Che's body, there was still a trace of life. As time passed, unwilling to disappear, this trace of life continued to hang onto Yun Che.

The demon shook his head and sighed. So what if there's still a breath left? In this condition, there was basically no hope of surviving. With the Emperor Profound dragon blood entering his body, the tyrannical power would destroy his organs, bones, blood, physical body... and before this, the first thing to be

destroyed, were the profound veins!

Even if he stubbornly has a breath of life left, what could he even do?

But the demon had no way of knowing that even though Yun Che's body was ninety percent destroyed, his profound veins at the moment, were completely fine!

Because the profound veins came from a True God! How



could it be destroyed from the strength that came from merely a few drops of an Emperor Profound dragon's blood!

And it was exactly the Evil God's Profound Veins and Great Way of the Buddha that Yun Che relied on when he crazily drank the Flame Dragon's blood when he had no other choice!

He supported his life with his willpower, refined the dragon's blood with his profound veins, and after refining, recovered his body with the Great Way of the

Buddha...

Life through success, death through failure!!

With his five senses and consciousness shut off, he could not hear anything, and he already could not feel the pain on his body. Inside his mind, the only thing that remained were the alternatively twinkling red and blue lights inside the Evil God Profound Veins, and a weaving stream of power from the Flame Dragon blood...

Time, for Yun Che, became endlessly long.

Two hours passed...

Four hours passed...

Six hours passed...

In this period of time, the demon's gaze was locked onto Yun Che's unmoving body. A whole six hours had passed, and that last trace of life was still

tenaciously clinging on, neither increasing nor decreasing.

The only word he could think of right now was: “incredible”.

At this time, Yun Che's body finally showed some movement. A strange cyclone appeared on top of his head. The cyclone originally spun around slowly, then started spinning faster and faster... until it reflected a shadow of a small and delicate silver pagoda!

“What is that?” The demon had lived for over three hundred years, but it was the first time he had seen something like this. That pagoda contained a bizarre power, as if it was some kind of profound art... but he had never seen this type of profound art before.

Wait... profound art!!

Was... he actually using a profound art!?

This discovery caused the

demon's body to shake in shock. He suddenly moving forward, causing his chains to brawl loudly. He obviously should have died a long time ago, but while clinging onto his last breath, he clung on for six hours and had yet to die. Instead, a sign of him using profound arts had appeared!

How is this possible!

At this moment, the demon desperately wanted to break free from his chains to get closer to Yun Che and find what kind of

condition he was in!

Even if a dead person suddenly started moving, that would still be nowhere as close as the shock Yun Che brought him at this time.

The silver pagoda on top of Yun Che's head started to spin slowly, and started to expand whilst it was spinning. After six hours, it expanded until it was around three foot tall, and when the silver pagoda reached its size limit, it turned from a ghostly image into something

substantial, as if a real, small pagoda was actually suspended above Yun Che's head. Then, the small pagoda disappeared without warning.

At this time, Yun Che's life force suddenly burned as if a prairie fire, quickly combusted, and the combustion becoming more and more exuberant. Within four hours, that small trace of life became flames of life that filled his entire body!

Demon: "..."



Sixteen hours after drinking the dragon blood, Yun Che finally opened his eyes. The instant his eyes opened, there was a faint stream of fiery light flashing within his pupils.

Not only did he opened his eyes, he also slowly stood up.

The moment he stood up, the pitch-black crust that wrapped around his body suddenly rustled and fell, revealing a baby-like tenderness, and flawlessly smooth rebirthed skin. He stood up straight,

spread both his arms, and lightly gulped. A surge of profound energy had suddenly released, causing the burnt crisp on his body to completely burst open, showing a perfect and flawless body without a trace of injury. Even his hair was completely rebirthed, growing to the length it was previously at.

“You.....”

This powerful being who shook entire Illusory Demon Realm, who stood at the peak while looking down at millions of

people, was shocked, and stared dumbfoundedly, tongue-tied at this seventeen year old teenager.

Because everything he saw in this moment completely overturned everything he knew.

Not only this, he could also clearly feel that Yun Che, who should have been dead, was not only perfectly fine. In fact, even his profound strength... had increased to the second level of the Spirit Profound Realm!!

Yun Che, who miraculously survived from the abyss of death, did not say a word to the demon. Picking up the piece of dragon tail from the floor, he grabbed it in his hands as his palms blazed with profound fire, burning the tail until Yun Che thought was cooked well enough. He brought the tail up to his face and started to chew, eating large chunks of half cooked dragon flesh with his teeth. He was way too hungry, and that exaggerated face of eating was like a hungry demon that had been starved for several hundred years.

In a short while, around three kilograms of dragon flesh was eaten cleanly by Yun Che like a tornado. He licked his lips and burped out with satisfaction. The power density within the dragon flesh was not as much as the dragon blood, but there wasn't too much difference. At this time, that feeling of immersion in oil exploded within his stomach, causing his body to once again burn crimson red in a blink of an eye.

Without panicking at all, Yun Che was calm to a terrifying degree. He quickly sat down and closed his eyes. His face, that

had begun to show signs of  
emerging cracks was  
nevertheless a field of silence.

The demon unwaveringly  
stared at Yun Che. Hearing  
sounds of his bones cracking  
once more with his ears, his  
brain continuously vibrated  
with these same words...

This monster!!

This madman!!

# Chapter 287 – Extreme Training

---

Yun Che succeeded, but the pain and danger included in the process was something only Yun Che himself knew. Even though Yun Che had the Evil God's profound veins and the Great Way of the Buddha, drinking so much fresh Emperor Profound dragon blood with the body of a Spirit Profound Realm, and live through that while even refining a great majority of the energy within the dragon blood, it could still be considered to be a miracle. And if not for this miracle, the only ending for Yun

Che was a thorough death.

But as if he had gone mad, once he escaped the abyss of pain and death, he placed himself in this kind of abyss once more.

There were only a few minutes of time between the intervals before Yun Che's bones and body bursted once again. In the blink of an eye, the surface of his body had changed into an dreadful charred black. His life force had also been diminished to its last wisp, but like before, it was exactly this wispy flame of life



that was unwilling to die no matter what.

That strange little silver colored pagoda appeared again... This entire process, was almost exactly the same as before.

The different was that this time, Yun Che only took six hours to stand up again. He shed the black from his whole body, and his entire body rebirthed for the second time!

His profound strength, had also

rapidly risen to the early stages of the third level of the Spirit Profound Realm!

The Demon stared fixedly at Yun Che, and spoke with a shocked tone: “How... did you do that!?”

The mighty Demon King of the Illusory Demon World had unexpectedly used such a shocked tone to ask a mere seventeen year old youth “how did you do that!?”

Before today, forget about others, even he himself would never believe that there would come a day in which he would ask a junior this kind of question.

But what Yun Che had shown him at this very moment, flooded his heart with raging waves that were incapable of settling down.

A high ranked profound beast's flesh and blood were definitely not something that could be consumed carelessly on a whim.

Even if it was a Throne who wished to consume a Emperor Profound Beast's flesh and blood, they would have be cautious. And to a Throne, the flesh and blood of a Emperor Profound Beast was undoubtedly a kind of extremely good supplement, enough to let their profound strength progress noticeably. Even though this kind of progress wasn't too exaggerated, it came without a need to go through bitter cultivation. At the same time, if a Throne wanted to single-handedly slay a Emperor Profound Beast of the same level, it would be basically impossible. Even if it was a peak level Throne facing the lowest

level Emperor Profound Beast, defeating the beast would be easy, but slaying it would also be extremely difficult.

Therefore, even in a Throne's entire lifetime, they would have few chances to get to enjoy a treasure from an Emperor Profound Beast.

But Yun Che, who was merely at the Spirit Profound Realm, who drank a dragon type Emperor Profound Beast's blood, who ate a dragon type Emperor Profound Beast's flesh... had

actually miraculously lived! This kind of freakish, unimaginable situation's outcome was obviously incredibly ridiculous. Within this short period of time that had not even taken a day, Yun Che's profound strength had directly shot up by two levels!

As he looked at the standing Yun Che and the incredibly enormous giant Flame Dragon, the demon's heart could not help to have a crazy thought... He could not possibly want to slowly eat this entire Flame Dragon and turn it into his own power, right?

Two major crises, two rebirths after being on the edge of death. Yun Che felt that not only did his flesh not become weak because of rebirth, it was instead filled with even more strength. And his bones had also become more resilient after the impact and refinement of the Dragon's flesh and blood. His own blood slightly became viscous, and even his heart had an odd feeling of strength.

The nightmarish starving feeling he experienced earlier had completely disappeared.

While looking at this rebirthed body, feeling the explosively increased strength, Yun Che grinned and started to laugh. It seemed as if the heavens were looking after him at every moment; every single time he gambled with his life as wager, they all concluded with his victory. And this kind of victory, under the heavens, could only happen to him... If it were some other person with similar profound strength as him, at this moment, they would have become a pile of charcoal long ago.

He looked at the demon and



said in a low voice: “I have no obligation to answer your question. Let me say it again, in order for me to leave this place, I will definitely... kill you!”

Seeing Yun Che’s cold and resolute expression, the demon was silent for a while. Then, he started to chuckle: “Good! I am suddenly beginning to look forward to that day! Currently, my profound strength has been suppressed down to the Emperor Profound Realm. Do you really think that the gap between the Spirit Profound and Emperor Profound can be so easily made up for!?”

Yun Che did not speak again. He withdrew the Flame Dragon's carcass, and picked up Dragon Fault while his entire body exploded with profound energy. His vigorous swings gave conjured many winds as every strike contained an ear-splitting howl and an peerless might.

The incomparably heavy Dragon Fault conjured a sandstorm in Yun Che's hands, and a long, unceasingly storm began to fill this underground suppression space. The best way to solidify a dramatic increase in

profound strength was to continuously release it. It was also at this instant that Yun Che set a goal for himself —— Leveling his profound strength was the only thing he could do, and was also the only thing he had to do.

After two hours, Yun Che was already huffing and puffing. He put Dragon Fault back on his back and sat down. Very quickly, he entered a meditative state. All of his fifty four profound entrances in his profound veins completely opened as the powerful current of his profound energy rapidly moved

within his body.

While in his meditative state, time went by really quickly. Unwittingly, sixteen hours had passed when Yun Che opened his eyes. His body was now abundant in profound energy, but the rumblings of hunger could be heard from his stomach.

“I’m hungry again.” Yun Che said as he rubbed his belly. Under the demon’s watchful gaze, he summoned the Flame Dragon again, and sliced

another huge chunk of flesh from its enormous tail. It dripped with dragon blood as he held it in his grasp, and then began to cook it with profound fire. However, this time's hunger obviously could not compare to yesterday's. His roasting unhurried, not quick nor slow; it didn't take a while for the sweet aroma of cooked meat to permeate the area and make Yun Che gulp.

The deliciousness of dragon flesh was world-famous, and other profound beasts could not possibly compare with it. But in the entire Profound Sky

Continent, those who were fortunate to sample dragon flesh could only amount to a few. The cooked dragon meat's indescribable aroma lightly floated towards the demon, making the tip of his nose tremble and all ten of his fingers twitch... To this demon who had not eaten in a hundred years, the fragrance from the most extravagant meat in this world was undoubtedly a huge attraction, enough to make him go out of control.

But as the majestic Demon King, how could he possibly beg a junior for food? He bit the tip

of his tongue, turned his face the other way, and sealed his sense of smell. But immediately afterwards, he heard the sounds of Yun Che's teeth tearing and chewing the dragon meat. All of his fingers shook so much that they had nearly flown away from his joints.

The side effect had subsequently neared. Yun Che was once again, immediately confronted a baptism filled with endless pain and danger. But this time, not only was Yun Che incomparable resolute like before, he seemed to appear even more calm... Under the

dragon flesh's explosive power, he had even smoothly drank the bowl of dragon blood that had bled out...

The Flame Dragon that had been instantly killed by Jasmine existed within the Sky Poison Pearl for over a year, and was almost forgotten by Yun Che. Yet not only did it pull Yun Che back from the danger of starving to death, it also let him find a way, although incomparably painful, to rapidly increase his profound strength. Like the demon expected, after the first and second times of success, the third time his body burst apart



from the energy's impact, Yun Che only used eleven hours to finish absorbing the dragon's power and repair his body. Then, he started to crazily train with his sword, meditate, train with sword, meditate... Eat the dragon meat when hungry, and drink the dragon blood when thirsty; repeating it again and again in an unthinkable fashion.

During this process, Yun Che's profound strength was increasing at such a rapid pace that it might even anger the heavens.

Just in terms of raising his strength, this was an excellent place for Yun Che. In the outside world, it was simple impossible for him to achieve complete concentration. There would always be various people and matters distracting and tying him down. But in here, it was gloomy and silent. It was severed from the world, and no one would come to distract and obstruct him. The only person with him here, was also deprived of freedom. And everyone related to him in the outside world, all became his motivation to increase his strength as fast as possible in order to walk out from this place!

Thus, he spent all of his time training... crazily training! Killing the demon in the shortest time possible and then leaving this place, was currently his sole objective. In addition to this, he suppressed any worries and longing he had, and didn't bother to think about anything else.

---

Azure Cloud Continent,  
Grandwake Clan's rear  
mountain.

The little bamboo house they built together in the emerald green bamboo forest was Su Ling'er's most favorite place. Even though Su Hengshan had always told her that she could not run here by herself, she could not help but always secretly come here to sit in front of the little bamboo house all afternoon... She only sat there, bathing in the bamboo forest's wind, and always thought back to the time when she was with him that night with a face full of happiness.

This afternoon, was the same as all the previous afternoons. She secretly came here by herself. Leaning on the bamboo house with both hands on her cheeks, her watery eyes stared at the swaying green bamboo as she giggled from time to time. It was not known what she was thinking about.

Time passed by slowly, and night was gradually approaching. It was around the time that she should start leaving. Su Ling'er stood up and lowered her head to look at her... little hands, little legs, delicate body, and her chest that

had yet to begin blossoming... She flattened her lips and grieved: "Wuu... when am I going to grow up... I really wish I could grow up tomorrow so Big Brother Yun Che would come marry me."

Carrying a little girl's dreams, Su Ling'er was mixed with worry and happiness. At this time, an ear-piercing voice suddenly sounded:

"Oh? Isn't this my dear beloved little sister? Why did you come here all alone? Oh, I know why,

you probably came here to think about your, uh... Big Brother Yun Che again?" Su Haoran came out of nowhere and walked over to Su Ling'er at a leisure pace with a face full of smiles.

"Big brother..." Su Ling'er wasn't that close with Su Haoran, to the point of rejection, but she still gave the proper polite courtesy and even obediently answered: "Mn! I come here everyday to think about Big Brother Yun Che, hoping that he'll return sooner."

“Hahahahahaha!” Seeing Su Ling’er’s appearance, Su Haoran started to laugh out loud as though he had heard a funny joke: “Oh boy, my foolish little sister, your appearance really makes me unable to hold back my laughter... Sigh! Fine, even though there are some things that other people understand, but nobody was willing to tell you this. But I am of course, your older brother, so I ought to think about your own good. Therefore, I might as well be that villain... I’d advise you to let go of those unnecessary delusions. That big brother Yun Che of yours will never come back to find you. The only reason why he told Father that



he wanted to marry you was because that was how he went against Second Uncle Su Hengyue. It was a temporary excuse he made up at that time, and nothing more.

Su Ling'er immediately raised her head as her little face flushed red in anger: "You're lying! Big Brother Yun Che told me that when I grow up, he'll come marry me... You're lying! You're lying!"

"Heh, only a stupid little girl like you would believe that kind

of lie.” Su Haoran curled his lips in disdain: “That Yun Che’s background is even more prestigious than our Grandwake Clan by several times. That wife of his... Hmph!” Su Haoran clenched his teeth in envy: “No only does she look like a goddess, she’s even more powerful than our great-grandfather! Which part of you could possibly compare to her? He has such an extremely perfect partner by his side, so why would he even like a ten year old little girl like you! Forget about him, even if you replace him with another person, they would never, in only one day, want to marry a little girl like you. What he said

at that time, was only made up to help Father settle Second Uncle's matter, and only you would believe that."

"As for why he did that, hrm, it's probably because Father offered them shelter to recuperate from their wounds when that beautiful girl was in her coma. And this kind of person born from such a great family, would obviously not want to owe anything to us, who are from an inferior clan in their eyes. Thus, they took action to help us out, and regard it as returning the favor. But you actually deluded yourself to

think that he would truly come back to marry you. I'm assuming that he has already forgotten the two words "Grandwake Clan" by now, let alone remember you."

## Chapter 288 – Inflated Ambition

---

The longing Su Ling'er had for Yun Che was a bit baffling to outsiders, so much that it seemed somewhat unreasonable. Even Su Ling'er herself wondered why his figure had filled her mind and heart ever since she met him. Waiting for his return, had almost become everything that she wished for. And what Su Haoran had said to her, was undoubtedly the cruelest words in the world, because every one of his words was like a poisonous steel needle that stabbed at her most

beautiful and happiest dream.

“You’re lying... you’re lying!” Su Ling’er forcibly shook her head and yelled angrily: “Big Brother Yun Che said that he likes me. He said that he’ll come marry me when I grow up. Big Brother Yun Che won’t lie to me... You’re the liar! You can’t lie like that!”

“Oh, really?” Su Haoran began to grin: “If he really liked you, why didn’t he bring you along with him at that time? Since he likes you that much, then did he

tell you where he lived, and which sect he was born in?”

Su Ling'er's little face paled instantly: “That's because... that's because...”

“That's because he never even liked a little girl like you, so why would he bring you with him? He was scared that you might go looking for him, which was why he didn't tell you about his birthplace. Also, the others have said that aside from his name, what else do you know about him? Perhaps, even his name

was made up too.” Su Haoran laughed as he said this, without caring about how cruel those words were to Su Ling’er.

“You’re lying... You’re lying! They’re all lies! Big Brother Yun Che would never lie to me, he will definitely come for me.” Su Ling’er used both hands to cover her ears and fiercely shook her head. She powerlessly defended as her eyes began to water.

Su Haoran spread out his hand: “Then just continue on with your delusion. But what a pity,



my good little sister, as Grandwake Clan's great princess, you would have your pick of men in the river east in the future, yet you want to stupidly wait for a person who played you for a fool. If this matter were to be spread, tsk tsk, I'm afraid that our entire Grandwake Clan would be made fun of."

"You're lying... Everything you say is a lie, I hate you!!"

Still covering her ears, Su Ling'er ran far away into the

refreshing bamboo forest, and the faint sounds of her suppressed weeping could be heard.

“Why was Su Hengshan’s little girl here?” Not far from Su Haoren’s rear, a middle-aged dressed in black walked over. It was actually Su Hengyue!

“Ignore her.” Su Haoran casually curled his lips as he turned around: “I heard that you had something important to tell me. What is it?”

“With Haoran’s great intelligence, how could you not be able to guess it out?” Su Hengyue faintly laughed: “Of course it’s to help you get the clan treasure earlier, and become the Clan Master!”

The two looked at each other for a while, and then began to laugh at the same time.

.....

It was only until nightfall that Su Ling’er finally arrived back to

the Grandwake Clan. On the entire journey back, she had been completely spaced-out. She was unwilling to believe what Su Haoran had said, but that nightmarish voice continued to swim in her mind, making her unable to forget it.

Big Brother Yun Che would not not come for me, right...

No! Big Brother Yun Che would definitely not lie to me... He's so nice to me, and when he looks at me, his gaze is as warm as the bamboo forest's moonlight.

But, why didn't he bring me with him that day, why didn't he tell me where he lived...

I only know... his name... and don't know anything else...

If he really forgets about me, if he doesn't like me any more... What do I do... What do I do...

Su Hengshan walked out from the Training Room and immediately saw Su Ling'er's

light, powerless footsteps. He hurriedly rushed forward and asked: “Ling’er, where did you go? Why did you return so late?”

Su Ling’er lifted her tear-filled eyes. While trying really hard to not cry, she asked pitifully: “Papa, is Big Brother Yun Che... really not coming back to marry me? Was he... was he only casually saying that, has he already forgotten me?”

A few teardrops were already hanging from Su Ling’er’s cheeks, and it was obvious that

she had already cried earlier. Su Hengshan stared blankly for a while before squatting down and answering with a slight smile: “Ling’er, tell me what you feel, do you think he liked you?”

Su Ling’er gently blinked her eyes and then nodded: “Big Brother Yun Che... definitely likes me.”

“Then that’s the case.” Su Hengshan nodded with a slight smile: “If other people’s words and your feelings are in conflict, you obviously have to believe in

your own feelings. It's not only Ling'er, even I feel that your big brother Yun Che really likes you. When he looks at you, it was like he was looking at his life. Especially on the day he was leaving, I could tell that he really wanted to take you away with him... but it was just that you were too young. If he took you away now, or marry you now, it would definitely bring about many criticisms. That's why he wanted you to wait for him, and when you grow up, he will definitely come back and marry you... Even though he's not by your side now, you two are already engaged, and even had so many witnesses. This fact, absolutely cannot be severed."



Su Hengshan understood that after Yun Che had left, everyone believed that he would never come back, and that his and Su Ling'er's engagement was randomly brought up just to settle the dispute with Su Hengyue. But Su Hengshan didn't believe that. The way Yun Che looked at Su Ling'er, and the way he treated her so well... was not something that could be completely faked.

Her father's words were as warm as the spring breeze, and immediately dispersed all of Su

Ling'er's worries and fear. She nodded happily: "Papa, I understand! I knew it, Big Brother Yun Che definitely likes me... I'll quickly grow up, and wait every day for him to come back and marry me."

"Haha," Su Hengshan laughed somewhat helplessly. This ten year old daughter of his, who was originally an innocent and carefree little pixie at a tender age that should not know how to love yet, had actually begun to be immersed in love-sickness all day long after meeting Yun Che, and even thought about marriage every single day. This

made him, as the father, really not know whether to laugh or cry. He asked on a whim: “Did someone say something to you that hurt your feelings?”

Su Ling'er lightly nodded: “Uu.. It's elder brother, when I was in the bamboo forest, he also came there, and told me that everything Big Brother Yun Che told me were lies, so... so...”

“You said... your elder brother went over to the bamboo forest area?” Su Hengshan twitched violently.

“Mn! Papa, what’s wrong? Why did you suddenly become so serious?”

“Oh, nothing.” Su Hengshan hurriedly made a smile. He took a glance at the Dragonscale Armor under Ling’er outer garments, tightened Su Ling’er’s collars up, then once again exhorted seriously: “Ling’er, do well to remember what I said before. This dark golden colored clothing of yours, you have to wear it at any time, and you must also properly hide it and not let anyone see. That includes

the brother and sisters in the clan who regularly plays with you. If it were to be accidentally found out by others, it's highly possible for it to be snatched away. Do you understand?"

Su Ling'er subconsciously tightened her outer garment, and nodded very seriously: "I understand Papa, this was given to me by Big Brother Yun Che, I'll definitely properly keep it safe."

Su Ling'er finally opened the knot in her heart and ran away

happily, while Su Hengshan's heart became weighed with worry.

Only after the curtains of the night complete fell, did Su Haoran finally sneakily return to the Grandwake Clan. The moment he returned to his room, he discovered that his father Su Hengshan was actually standing in there. His heart suddenly throbbed, and he hastily spoke: "Father, why are you here?"

"I have something to talk to

you about...” Su Hengshan gave him a sideways glance, and said indifferently: “Where did you go this afternoon?”

“I trained too long this afternoon and was a bit tired, so I went for a walk in the rear mountain’s bamboo forest, and even met Ling’er. I wonder what important matters Father needs to speak to me about?” Su Haoran respectively spoke without a change in expression.

“Other than Ling’er, did you not meet anyone else in the

bamboo forest?" Su Hengshan's expression became faintly overcast, and his voice also became a little menacing.

Su Haoran lifted his head, his face revealing surprise: "The rear mountain's bamboo forest had always been secluded. I indeed had only met Ling'er, and spoke a few words with her. Other than that, I did not meet anyone else. Why is Father asking me this?"

After Su Hengshan stared him in the eyes for a long while, he



moved his gaze and spoke lightly: “Haoran, it’s not a bad thing for a mature man to have ambition. Without ambition, one would never reach the top. Cruelty, ruthless, sinister and cunning, are often necessary things for a successful person of power. But these, are only fit to be used on enemies. If they were used on one’s dearest family, then this person cannot be called a person, but a swine. This, you must remember.”

Su Haoran’s eyebrows jumped, then he immediately nodded forcefully and spoke sincerely: “Haoren shall bear Father’s

teaching in mind.”

Su Hengshan turned his face toward him, and lightly nodded: “It’s important for one to know their limitations. Whether your father here was a successful Clan Master or not, I very well understand in my heart. Many times, I wasn’t decisive enough, not ruthless enough, not unyielding enough. Otherwise, there wouldn’t be someone running wild and rampant in front of this Clan Master’s face here. However, I, Su Hengshan had never done anything of guilty conscience in my entire life. Even though I am mediocre,

I can still face the heavens and earth, face the sect, and face our ancestors... You are my, Su Hengshan's only son. I hope that in the future... you will never disappoint me."

"Yes... This child will not forget Father's words, and definitely won't do anything that would disappoint father."

"Mm!" Su Hengshan uttered a slight confirmation, and walked out with a slow pace without saying anything else.

Watching Su Hengshan leave, Su Haoran's expression slowly darkened, and then revealed a sinister smile: "Even though I have the identity as the Clan Master's son, in terms of aptitude, my position really is too dangerous, so I can't help but to plan ahead for myself... Dearest family? Heh, if I am to be so pedantic and irresolute, then this Grandwake Clan will never have a spot for me. When that happens, it'll really be over for me. As your son, how would I let you be disappointed.... Hehehehe.... HAHAAHAHA..."

# Chapter 289 – Double Breakthrough

---

Unknowingly, Yun Che had already “fallen” for half a year already, but the subjects and rumors regarding Yun Che was still spreading throughout every corner of the Blue Wind Empire and the versions of them were becoming more and more exaggerated. It was even compiled into books by some meddlesome people who sold it and spread it like crazy wildfire.

The Blue Wind Emperor's  
condition had slowly

deteriorated. The first and third princes' secret battle had formally turned into a clear battle. All of the princes were involved; none of them were able to stay out of it, and none of them were able to take care of the Blue Wind Emperor whose life force was becoming dimmer and dimmer. The only person who accompanied the Blue Wind Emperor was the Blue Moon Princess.

The entire Blue Wind Imperial Family was enveloped within an increasingly dark and gloomy cloud. Behind the dark cloud were the Xiao Sect and the

Burning Heaven Clan who were already beginning to expose their fierce teeth. Under the Xiao Sect and the Burning Heaven Clan's accentuation of this enormous maelstrom, the Blue Wind Imperial Family practically had no defensive capabilities.

Heavenly Sword Villa had always kept silent and showed zero signs of intervention. The matter regarding Chu Yuechan half a year ago shocked Ling Yuefeng, so he was not in the mood to care about anything else, and Frozen Cloud Asgard had already completely sealed

themselves away in order to completely ignore all the unstable situations of the outside world.

Heavenly Sword Villa, under the Sword Management Terrace.

Yun Che carried Dragon Fault on his back while sitting cross-legged on the ground. He had already maintained this position for over six hours. At this moment, strands of profound energy which were visible through the naked eye began to rise and white smoke above his



head.

“Oh... breaking through again?” Looking at the white smoke above his head, the demon quietly said.

Yun Che’s looked extremely calm on the exterior, but a storm was surging within his interior.

After he trained in his sword style until he was completely exhausted, he sat cross-legged on the ground and channeled his profound energy within his body

for over a hundred days while simultaneously pondering deeply about the images of the Sirius's second sword style which Jasmine mentioned during the ranking tournament. Only, that image only showed the motions of Sirius' second sword technique and the most important profound arts and the Prison God Sirius' profound skill. Even if he put all his heart into it in order to discover the real essence behind the second sword style from only seeing the movement of the heavy sword, it was simply impossible.

However, Yun Che never

thought this was “impossible”. He was pondering deeply about it every single day for the last half year and that image had also been recreated tens of thousands of times within his brain.

After two hundred days of channeling profound energy within his body, all of his profound energy suddenly disappeared without a trace.

Yun Che’s entire body shuddered and this shock was no small matter. His entire body

suddenly emitted sweat, but he immediately tenaciously calmed down... what is going on? Could it be...

During the moment when his profound strength suddenly disappeared and he was in a trance, his profound veins suddenly radiated as brightly as the red and blue radiance of stars. After that, incredibly thick profound energy swarmed out from the depth of his profound veins like a rapid flood, surging toward every muscle. His profound vein and channels started to rapidly relax and expand under the influence of

his profound energy as if they were dancing in excitement.

Beneath the Earth Profound Realm, profound energy was formless and shapeless, and one could only capture it when channeling their strength; however at this moment, Yun Che was able to clearly see this surging profound energy appear before him in a thin white color! They were like strands of smoke and its thickness was many times stronger than it was previously!

They were simply two things that could not be mentioned in the same sentence.

The radiance of his profound veins also became much brighter and the red and blue color also became increasingly clearer. Yun Che still had his eyes shut as he sensed the surge of profound energy within his profound veins. He slightly extended both his hands and opened them up as a joyous smirk slowly appeared at the corner of his mouth.

He was very aware what this meant.

This meant his profound strength had already broke through the Spirit Profound Realm and entered the Earth Profound Realm!

In just half a year, he went from the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm and stepped into the first level of the Earth Profound Realm!

In just six months!

Furthermore, due to the fact that all the profound entrances in his profound veins were open, there wasn't even a bottleneck from the Spirit Profound Realm to the Earth Profound Realm and he broke through as easily as water forming a canal through time!

This kind of breakthrough speed could be said to be impossible since the dawn of the Blue Wind Empire!

Indeed, the reason his



profound strength could increase this fast was mainly because of the large amounts of dragon flesh he ate and the large amounts of dragon blood he drank. Until today, the Flame Dragon's entire tail had been completely swallowed within Yun Che's stomach and turned into his eternal strength. Nevertheless, being able to crazily consume dragon flesh and blood in the Spirit Profound Realm and not die, and instead absorb it in order to refine it into his own strength was already an abnormal strength that made one's hair stand on end.

The surge of profound energy within his body stopped at this moment and that kind of abundant power made Yun Che feel as if his body was in the clouds. He opened up his eyes , stood up and spread his arms. All the pores within his body opened as he sensed everything around him as much as he wanted to. Every large breakthrough between realms would be followed by an improvement to the soul as well as an improvement to the perceptive strength by several folds. The range where he could sense things had already extended to several times of what he was capable of before to the point that he could faintly

hear the sounds of all kinds of elements' moving within the air and their mutual interactions.

Yun Che excitedly grabbed the Dragon Fault and let out a carefree shout. His gaze suddenly locked onto the demon and in the blink of an eye, his entire body charged into the barrier like lightning. He opened Burning Heart, and smashed down onto the demon's head with his sword.

When Burning Heart opened, there wasn't even the slightest

emergence of burden on his body. This also signified that he entered the Earth Profound Realm and was now like the Evil God, able to completely adapt to the state of Burning Heart, and could ordinarily maintain the Burning Heart state at will without any pressure at all.

When facing against Yun Che who just entered the Spirit Profound Realm, the demon had once easily used his head to meet Yun Che's heavy sword.

However, facing against Yun

Che who was at the initial stages of Earth Realm and had the strength of a Sky Profound Realm, the demon did not dare to forcefully take it with his head because Yun Che's strength already started to put a little pressure on him... Although it was extremely trivial, it was still a genuine oppressive strength!

“Breaking through into the Earth Profound Realm so fast is truly astonishing, but you're still far from able to kill me!” The demon disdainfully muttered and grabbed Dragon Fault with one hand, but when he went to grab the Dragon Fault, all he

caught was an afterimage.

The real Dragon Fault followed the strange movements of Yun Che's body as he ruthlessly smashed down on the demon's shoulders.

Crash!!

The Meteorite Chains began to emit an ear-splitting crashing sound. This strike of Yun Che's fell upon the indestructible profound steel and shook his arms until they were numb.

However, on the demon's shoulders, let alone an injury, even the weak clothes that he protected with his profound strength was not damaged in the slightest.

Even though he achieved the Earth Profound Realm, the difference between his strength and the demon's strength was as different as mud and sky!

The demon raised his hand and a surge of matchless profound strength was released, making the entire interior of the barrier

roil with an incredibly frightening storm. After one breath's time, Yun Che was thrown over three hundred meters away by the storm as he embarrassingly fell onto the ground. He immediately got up, wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth, and fiercely said: "There will be a day when I'll kill you!"

"Wait until that day, then you can make these arrogant remarks! Claiming that you'll kill me right now is still a joke!" The demon answered disdainfully.



“Whether or not it’s a joke is not something you have a say in!” Yun Che picked up Dragon Fault and did not go to heal himself. Instead, he suddenly charged into the barrier while continuously swinging Dragon Fault. Accompanied with the resonant sounds of phoenix cries, over ten streaks of phoenix flames flew towards the demon.

Phoenix Break!

The phoenix flames which had

been still for a long time had also finally awoken once more at this moment.

“Oh?” The demon did not receive Yun Che’s profound flame, but instead charged into the flames which clearly was incomparably hot and powerful. He flung his palms and shattered all the phoenix breaks, but the back of his hands were thoroughly burnt red, which made his eyebrows wrinkle.

However at this moment, Yun Che who was over thirty meters

away, suddenly charged over in a split second with his entire body wrapped up in scorching hot phoenix flames.

“Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing!!”

Boom!!

Dragon Fault ruthlessly smashed onto the demon’s chest and a frantic phoenix flame exploded on his chest, burning with incredibly high temperature and oppressive

might which stifled the demon for an instant. Yun Che somersaulted backwards and landed as an enormous and dark blue wolf howled toward the sky behind him. Dragon Fault fell and a streak of a wolf's silhouette charged out, ripped the air apart, and collided directly with the demon.

RIIIP!!

Sky Wolf Slash accurately struck onto the completely immobile demon's body, slashed open a hole that was half a feet

long on his clothes, and then unrelentlessly struck towards his stomach... as a sharp pain transmitted all over. Though it was only a sharp pain, a red scar that did not even rip his skin appeared over his stomach, but it was still able to greatly shock the demon.

He was not able to deliberately activate the protection of his profound strength, but he still had the defense from his naturally existent profound strength that even a sneak attack from an expert at the initial stages of the Sky Profound Realm would have a hard time

ripping through. His clothes were also under the protection of his naturally existent profound strength, but they were unexpected cut open by a slash from Yun Che which made him feel a sharp pain.

This clearly signified that he could forcefully release the power only achievable from the Sky Profound at the early stages of the Earth Profound Realm!!

Battle strength that surpassed the profound strength, this fact was not a rarity in the demon's

knowledge. Nascent Profound Realm having the battle strength of the True Profound Realm, True Profound Realm having the battle strength of the Spirit Profound Realm were all common occurrences to him, he had even seen quite a few in the True Profound Realm with battle strength at the Earth Profound Realm. However, with the advancement of realm, the disparity between each large realm increased multiplicatively and bottlenecks were harder and harder to overcome. Spirit Profound Realm to the Earth Profound Realm was considered to be the first true bottleneck, but overcoming that really wasn't too difficult. However the

Earth Profound Realm to the Sky Profound had a bottleneck that was hundreds to thousands of times harder than what the Earth Profound Realm had! Similarly, exhibiting battle strength at the Sky Profound Realm while in the Earth Profound Realm was fundamentally impossible.

However, Yun Che was only at the first level of the Earth Profound Realm yet the power of his sword had the genuine power of a Sky Profound Realm! Although this was perhaps the best strike that Yun Che could use, even using it for just a



moment was already world shocking.

Under the demon's astonishment, he was also starting to get angry... He was a glorious Demon King, but his clothes were harmed by a junior at the Earth Profound Realm. This was an extraordinary shame and humiliation that he could never have imagined. His expression became overcast and he grabbed out with his five fingers. An enormous deep cyan palm suddenly appeared beside Yun Che, then ruthlessly grabbed toward Yun Che's chest... But during the moment

that enormous palm appeared, the demon suddenly began to regret; however, it was too late to take it back. He angrily spread his five fingers and attacked Yun Che's chest.

Boom~~~~

Like a thunderclap suddenly exploding within his chest, Yun Che's eyes bulged outwards as he discarded Dragon Fault. His palms pushed forward with all his strength and used the resulting shockwave to rapidly fly backwards to land outside

the barrier. As soon as he landed, he had already shut his eyes and went into a proper sitting position with the Great Way of the Buddha rapidly activated in the next instant.

This strike from the demon was extremely tyrannical and was far stronger than what Yun Che had imagined. He felt that his five visceras and six organs had been completely displaced and his ribs all shattered as well, along with more than ten broken meridians... but after experiencing hundreds of “baptisms” from the dragon flesh and blood, this injury,

which should have been far more severe, was “nothing much” for him anymore.

With the activation of the Great Way of the Buddha, that little silver pagoda appeared above his head.

The demon withdrew his palm and silently stared at Yun Che. After quite a while, he muttered to himself: “I don’t know how this child trained his body. That strike a moment ago should have taken half a life from even a person of the Sky Profound

Realm, but he is actually able to sit still and tend to his wounds!

As soon as the demon spoke, a sudden change occurred. A sudden streak of gold light suddenly flashed past the corner of the demon's eyes. He subconsciously raised his head, and saw that little silver pagoda above Yun Che's head, had unexpectedly turned into a light gold color!

# Chapter 290 – Golden Buddha

---

Yun Che felt as though his body had traveled into outer space. He lightly floated like a feather, as everything around him had practically disappeared. The only thing his five senses could feel was his own existence. Strands of powerful aura rushed into his pores from out of nowhere and rapidly healed all of his injuries and refined his body... These, were the purest of nature's essence.

Even the strongest of creatures

had an instinctive reverence toward nature. Since even if those creatures were at the peak of strength, they were only a tiny existence in the face of nature. However, the nature's essence rushing within Yun Che's body had a slight reverence... a reverence towards Yun Che!

The difference between nature's strength and profound strength was that profound strength were the power of living being, but nature's strength was power that belonged to nature; on the surface, it would naturally crush

profound strength. However, when a living being's profound strength is powerful to a sufficient realm, it could utilize the force of nature to a certain degree; naturally, the consumption of profound strength necessary to utilize the force of nature is enormous.

With Yun Che's current profound strength, utilizing the force of nature was undoubtedly a crazy dream. His strength was completely unable to reach the realm where he could connect with nature, and only sense the existence of natural strength to a certain point. However, as long



as he was channeling the Great Way of the Buddha, the pure essence of between heaven and earth would spontaneously and competitively charge into Yun Che's body without him understanding any natural strength at all or even consume the slightest bit or strength.

This was a heaven opposing power that no one would be able to comprehend within the Profound Sky Continent!

But regretfully, this natural strength could only be used to

heal and refine the body; it was impossible to use it to attack.

Following the sudden change of silver to gold from the pagoda above Yun Che's head, the natural essence that charged into Yun Che's body suddenly became several times more dense. Yun Che extended his five senses and his body felt that wonderful refined sensation again as he clearly felt that his body's injuries healing at an inconceivable pace that far surpassed his previous recovery rate.

Although the Great Way of the Buddha was a profound art, it did not rely on the existence of profound strength, and relied on the strength of the soul and nature instead. Its cultivation was absolutely not from battle, but from comprehension. During the past half year, because he forcefully consumed dragon flesh and blood, Yun Che had put himself in a condition of serious injury hundreds of times and faced death's doors over a hundred times. Every time, he relied on his indestructible profound veins to absorb the Flame Dragon's strength and the Great Way of the Buddha to restore his body... It could be said that during this period of

over half a year, the Great Way of the Buddha, that was at the state where it was being activated at its limits, had also deepened his comprehension of the Great Way of the Buddha bit by bit. When breaking through into the Earth Profound Realm, his soul went under the excitement of evolving, and his comprehension of the Great Way of the Buddha finally reached an entirely new level.

The Great Way of the Buddha had successfully broken through to the third realm!

The third stage of the Great Way of the Buddha bestowed a strength of ten thousand kilograms, a body that was as strong as pure steel, and a healing capability that no ordinary person could possibly understand. Right now, even though Yun Che had completely exhausted all of his profound strength right now, he could still rival a profound practitioner at the Spirit Profound Realm while relying only on the strength of his body!

“Very good! Your oppressive kind of self-cultivation during this short amount of time had

indeed allowed the Great Way of the Buddha to breakthrough into the third stage in such a short amount of time. Your strength right now should be evenly matched with normal people at the Sky Profound Realm!”

Jasmine said within his head using a wise elderly voice: “Within the borders of the Blue Wind Empire, you are already considered an expert! In the Profound Sky Continent, you could barely be considered to be middle-upper level. Except, the next breakthrough in the Great Way of the Buddha will not be as

simple as before. Because the third stage of the Great Way of the Buddha is a divide! The first three realms could be considered the initial stage, but from the fourth realm onwards, it becomes the intermediate stage. With a normal human body, wanting to attain the fourth stage could be said to be as difficult as stepping onto heaven! If there comes a day when you can truly breakthrough into the fourth level... it will bestow you a bodily strength of fifty thousand kilograms!”

Yun Che: “...”

The golden colored Buddha Arts channeled for over four hours until it disappeared into Yun Che's head. He also opened his eyes at that moment as a light gold ray of light flashed past his pupils.

He stood up, extended his hands, and the Dragon Fault which he dropped within the barrier gravitated towards his hands. With his newly added ten thousand kilograms of arm strength, the four thousand or so kilogram Dragon Fault was simply as light as nothing in his



hands. His body did not look like it had changed in the slightest and his skin appeared even more white and tender after being refined by nature's powers for the third time.

The demon's gaze was always fixed on Yun Che's body. When Yun Che stood up, he faintly sense that Yun Che had somewhat changed, but he was not able to pinpoint what had exactly changed. At least, his outer appearance and the aura of his profound strength were still the same as before.

“Try receiving my sword again!”

His familiar body was strengthened by an unbelievable power which made Yun Che so excited that he wished to quickly release it. He shouted loudly while leaping with his sword and heavily chopped down towards the demon from the air.

The power of the sword which came at him made the demon's eyebrows wrinkle... Yun Che's profound strength did not change at all, but the pressure

that this sword brought was practically doubled that of before!

And at this moment of change had only been separated by four hours!

With the sword chopping downwards, phoenix flames began to dance and stormy winds began to spring up from everywhere. This was a might that only belonged to the heavy sword! The demon's eyes widened as he suddenly reached out with his hands to grab the

tip of Dragon Fault firmly within hands. But the sword force had completely vanished during that moment. However, the phoenix flames seized this opportunity and advanced to completely wrap around the demon's entire arm and burnt half of the messy clothes he wore on his body.

“...So it's actually phoenix flames!”

The demon finally understood why Yun Che's profound flames were so tyrannical. He shook his arms and expelled all the

phoenix flames, but Yun Che's second strike had already swept over. The demon arbitrarily waved his hand and grabbed towards Dragon Fault again; simultaneously, another large cyan hand appeared out of thin air and grabbed towards Yun Che's back. There were "two hands". One was constantly grabbing at Dragon Fault while the other struck towards Yun Che's back... but they all passed through an empty image.

"Ssss... it's that strange movement skill again!" The demon lightly roared.

The demon had no ways of moving and had absolutely no way of restraining Yun Che's Star God's Broken Shadow. After his palm struck nothing, Yun Che's heavy sword directly swept across his neck and made a slight dent appear on his neck. The demon's eyes widened and a cyan light suddenly flashed above his left arm that had been sealed by the Meteorite Chains. Suddenly, a cyan hand as tall as a man spread open by the demon's sides and ruthlessly grabbed towards Yun Che.

Bang!!

Dragon Fault and the large cyan hand collided, and the result was as one could imagine. Yun Che felt as if his chest had been smashed by a large sledgehammer as he tumbled in midair and flew outwards. Afterwards, battered and exhausted, he landed outside the barrier. His heavy sword struck into the ground and stopped his fall. An insolent smile appeared at the corner of his mouth: "Hehe... at first, I could not stand a single blow from you, but in half a year, I can already endure three of your moves! At

the start, an arbitrary wave of your hand would take a large chunk of my life away, but now, you can only make me feel an injury that isn't heavy nor weak... give me a maximum of two more years, and I'll kill you for sure!"

“Hahahaha!” The demon began to laugh loudly as well: “You brat, you're truly a strange one! However, being able to drag a little strange monster down to accompany me is still incredibly interesting! Right now, I truly want to see what stage you can mature to in the two years that you speak of.”



“I absolutely... won’t... let you... be disappointed!” Yun Che said in an extremely determined tone.

He sat down, and in less than two hours later, the injury he received from the demon’s strange hand had completely healed. As another day passed by without having eaten anything, his stomach began to transmit a hungry feeling. The Yun Che now did not need to worry about food anymore; the enormous body of the Flame Dragon was enough for him to eat for several

years. He flipped his left hand, and a five kilogram chunk of dragon flesh appeared within his hands. He took out a large bowl, filtered out the dragon blood, then ignited a flame and patiently waited for it to roast.

After the phoenix flames had awakened, his efficiency in roasting dragon flesh had increased by a lot. After a short while, the fragrance of the meat that only dragon flesh could have assailed his nostrils and gradually spread throughout the entire underground area. Yun Che withdrew the phoenix flames and licked the corner of

his mouth. He grabbed the dragon meat and happily took large bites of it.

Until he had stomached a quarter of the dragon flesh, a strange sensation transmitted from his interior, but this sensation was quickly subdued once again... Following his increase in profound strength, the breakthrough of the Great Way of the Buddha and the awakening of the phoenix flames, in addition to the hundreds of times that he had to adapt, Yun Che's body already reached a point where it could endure the Flame Dragon's

battering after consumption. Although he could not completely suppress it, and his insides was still battered by countless powerful auras which sharply pained him constantly. Compared to what it was originally, this was a practically ignorable little drizzle.

Perhaps in the near future, following the continual increase of Yun Che's strength, these uncomfortable sensations would completely disappear.

He enjoyed the delectable taste

of dragon meat with all his profound entrances open. His profound strength was shifting all over his body to completely refine all the power the dragon meat contained. At this moment, an extremely faint gulping sound suddenly echoed beside Yun Che's ears.

That was the sound of saliva being swallowed.

The hand which Yun Che used to hold the dragon meat became stagnant for a split second, but then he immediately began to

devour it again, and acted as if he simply did not hear anything.

And at the moment, the demon almost had the will to die.

A person who had been starving for a whole hundred years, yet had to face one of the best delicacies in the world, dragon meat... Every time Yun Che madly devoured the dragon meat was the most difficult moment for the demon. However, he had a respectable position as the dignified Demon King, so he was absolutely not

going to beg for food from a junior, and he should expose even less of his gluttonous desires in front of him. Therefore, every time Yun Che ate dragon meat, he would either turn his head around or remain motionless. He had the attitude that he did not feel like watching, but in reality, every moment was painfully hard to endure. He did not show a trace of desire for an entire half a year.

But no matter how powerful he was and no matter how well he hid it, it was impossible for him to never make a mistake. Under

an inattentive moment, he actually produced the sound of gulping down saliva. Although the sound was extremely light, he was certain that it was enough for Yun Che to hear.

At the same time, he saw that at the moment when that sound was transmitted outwards, Yun Che's movements also stagnated for a brief moment... However, he did not mock him, and did not even shift his gaze towards him, as he continued to bite down on the dragon meat as if he had heard nothing at all.



The demon calmed down as he exposed a gratified expression. Facing against the demon who was notorious within the Profound Sky Continent, who brought him into this abyss, Yun Che did not mock him when he was down and chose to let him retain his dignity without the slightest hesitation.

# Chapter 291 – Profound Handle

---

After swallowing a large chunk of dragon meat within his mouth and drinking a mouthful of dragon blood, Yun Che stood up and slashed with his fingers to cut the large chunks of dragon meat into two evenly sized pieces, then leisurely strolled into the barrier until he arrived in front of the demon. He stood a step away from the demon at a place where he could flee at any time from a life-threatening attack.

“After eating the dragon meat, I found out how absolutely incomparable the meat from other beasts are compared to the tastiness of dragon meat. However, enjoying it by myself is rather dull. Senior, do you want some?” Yun Che picked up a large piece of the sliced dragon meat and presented in front of the demon.

The demon turned his head around and said indifferently: “Are you pitying me? Only one person could survive between you and I. To be this close to me, are you not afraid of me trying to suddenly kill you?”

Yun Che's entire body had absolutely zero defense from his profound strength and his expression did not contain a trace of precaution as he gently said with a smile: "Even though there's not a moment where I don't think about killing you, the reason why I want to kill you is only for the sake of my survival and freedom, and not because I resent or loathe you. On the contrary, I am very certain that you're not a bad person, and even less of a scoundrel! If you think I am pitying you... hrm, that's true. Except, this kind of pity is one I would have for a fellow sufferer.

As for our situation, how are we any different? Only, the restraint on you is a bit more than the ones on me.”

The demon’s expression shifted as he fixedly gazed at Yun Che for a while. Then, he suddenly began to smile: “Haha... good! Fellow sufferer indeed! Then I’ll accept your ‘pity’!”

Once he stopped talking, he grabbed the dragon meat within Yun Che’s hands, put it at the side of his mouth, and wildly bit at it. Although there wasn’t any

oil or salt, for a demon who had eaten nothing for a hundred years, this was nothing other than a delicacy from heaven. Once the dragon meat entered his mouth, he was unable to stop. His fierce eating and ferocious biting, as if he was ravenously devouring his food, did not fall short of Yun Che when he was hungry to the point that he almost died. Yun Che lightly smiled and grabbed his own dragon meat and bit, but in comparison, he ate much more elegantly than the demon did.

In the blink of an eye, the large chunk of dragon meat in the

demon's hand had vanished cleanly and all entered into his stomach. A hundred years of being empty made the demon's face, which was as pale as limestone, appear a bit red. He sucked on his five fingers and began to loudly laugh: "Delightful! Truly delightful! I've never had such a delightful meal in my life! Hahahaha... little brother, I, Yun Canghai had never owed anybody in my life! Although you've only given me a meal, to me, it's still a great favor! Your kindness, I will remember it! Unfortunately, this is only meat and there's no wine. Otherwise, with you preserving my face and believing that I'm not a lowly scoundrel, I should

have drank a large cup with you!”

“Eh? Senior, your surname is also Yun?”

The demon widened his eyes, “What’d you say, your last name is Yun as well? Even after being locked up here for half a year, you, a little mad kid, wouldn’t even tell me what your last name is. After doing all these things, looks like we are unexpectedly from the same clan, hahahaha!”



When he did not consider the demon to be a mortal enemy that he must kill, not only did the demon's aura not make people disgusted or afraid, there was even a feeling of intimacy. Yun Che gently smiled and said, "This junior's family name is Yun and his name is Che."

"Yun Che... as free as the clouds, as clear as water, a very good name! Looks like when your father named you, he wished that you could live a carefree life without worries and not be caught up in this mundane world. But unfortunately, being such a

thoroughly monstrous little kid, you're definitely not destined to be a little creature in the pond. I'm afraid your parents will be greatly disappointed."

Yun Che stared blankly with disappointment and frustration in his heart. In the Azure Cloud Continent, his master named him "Yun Che" precisely because he wanted Yun Che to live a carefree life without worries, with fate as clear as water and not participate in any worldly disputes. However in the end, his life took another extremely opposite turn... with a hatred filled heart, he massacred

countless numbers...

In the Profound Sky Continent, his own biological parents should have had the same wishes as his master.

Yun Che held up the large bowl of dragon blood, poured half of the dragon blood inside into another bowl and put it in front of the demon while saying: “Senior, you and I being sealed up in here together and both being called Yun is truly a fantastic fate. For the sake of the same suffering and a similar fate

that allows us to empathize with each other, we ought to drink a bowl... even though we don't have delicious wine, the smell and taste of dragon's blood and its flavor is absolutely not inferior to the strongest wines. I'll treat this dragon blood as wine and toast senior with a bowl! I hope that after we drink this 'blood wine', when the day comes that I have to kill senior, senior will not resent me on his road into the netherworld."

The demon cupped the dragon blood and raised his eyes to look at Yun Che. Suddenly, his eyes seemed to contain something

more inside: “You and I are not from the same family, so we don’t need to differentiate between seniority. If we’re drinking this blood wine, it should be me who toasts you... if you want to toast me, then you have to acknowledge me as your master right now!”

“Huh??” Yun Che eyes widened and his mouth was agape, as if he was caught a bit unprepared. Although there were no animosity to speak of between the two, frankly speaking, these two were in an awkward situation where only one could survive. Yun Che voluntarily

sharing his dragon meat to eat was his natural instinct and he wasn't looking for anything in the slightest. He never could have thought that a meal of dragon meat could have evoked such a situation... Even if the demon was grateful towards him, wasn't this step still a bit too large?

Acknowledge him as master? What did he want to teach? Was he going to teach me how to kill him? This is truly a bit... wait a second! Could he actually be...

“What? You don’t want to?”  
The demon’s expression was wary and lacked any playful ideas: “My entire life, apart from guiding my son in his early years, I have never officially accepted any disciples. You’re an astonishing person with immeasurable potential, but with my power, I’m more than enough to be your master. Within the Illusory Demon Realm, many people wanted to acknowledge me but was denied at my door!”

With the importance the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region placed on this demon, it was

imaginable just how terrifying a person he was in the Illusory Demon Realm. Yun Che did not doubt his words in the slightest. If he could acknowledge this terrifying expert who could display the power of the Emperor Profound Realm while being sealed under this formation as master, for a young profound practitioner, this was an absolutely irresistible attraction and pleasant surprise; it was the same for Yun Che. But unfortunately, he carried a master with him, a master who raised him into a freakish level. If he acknowledged another master in front of her, then...



The consequences would undoubtedly be extremely dire!

“No no, absolutely not!” Yun Che waved his hand then earnestly said, “Senior can be so powerful while still inside the Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation, then surely senior’s actual strength is at a level where I have absolutely no way of comprehending. Being able to acknowledge an expert like senior as my master is my honor and it’s absolutely not because I am unwilling. Except... I already have a master. If I acknowledge senior as my master, it would be quite

inappropriate.

“What’s wrong with that!” The demon waved his hand: “Could your master be even stronger than I am?”

The demon’s words had a completely strong sense of arrogance to it, and his arrogance was absolutely not madness. It was impossible for Yun Che to know what kind of existence the Demon King was within the Illusory Demon World; he was second only to the Emperor, and above ten

thousand citizens.

But for this demon, it was even more impossible for him to imagine what kind of concept Yun Che's current master was.

Yun Che thought for a bit and used a mild tone such that he might not hurt his counterpart's self-esteem and said, "My master might indeed be a bit more powerful than senior..."

"Hahahaha! What a joke!" The demon madly laughed: "In your

Profound Sky Continent, there's less than five people who could match me! Could it be that your master is stronger than Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's Sword Master?

Yun Che did not know what the heck a Sword Master was. However, the terrifying power that Jasmine showed and the disdain she showed when mentioning the words Profound Sky Continent was enough to infer that even the Sword Master could not even compare to a poke from Jasmine's little finger.

Of course, if these words were spoken, the demon still wouldn't believe it even if he was beaten to death.

Yun Che no longer explained and directly said: "I know that senior has good intentions, but I am unable to accept. I cannot let down my current master."

Once Yun Che finished, he held the bowl with the remaining dragon blood and finished it in one gulp. Then, he used the empty bowl to hint towards the

demon: “This bowl of blood wine, treat it as my apology before I have to kill senior... Senior, please.”

The demon moved his brows slightly and didn't speak again. He raised his bowl and similarly drank it all down. Then, he returned the bowl to Yun Che and said: “If you don't acknowledge me as your master, I had no authority to pressure you. But I cannot eat this dragon meat and drink this dragon blood for nothing. No matter how extremely fast your profound strength's improvement is, you don't have

any opportunity to strengthen and stabilize your achievements in battle. When you fought with me, it was just all out attacks that finished in within a spark's time and that is absolutely of no use... From today onwards, I will formally become your sparring partner.”

Evidently, the demon still wanted to guide his cultivation... Guide the cultivation of a person who wanted, who had to kill him. Even hearing this was a bit strange. However, Yun Che could faintly understand his intentions. He retreated a step and said: “Senior, your body is

locked up, even if you want to be my sparring partner, it seems...”

“Hehe...” The demon faintly smiled: “You think that just because I’m locked up, I can’t train you well?”

Once he stopped talking, the demon’s left hand suddenly flickered with a cyan light as huge cyan palm appeared in front of him, and instantly flew towards Yun Che.

This was the strange palm that



struck him earlier, but at this moment, the strength of this hand was evidently being suppressed by the demon. Although it still had an incredibly oppressive strength, it was not enough to completely crush Yun Che. His body rapidly retreated as he grabbed Dragon Fault to face it straight on. As his sword smashed downwards... what went out of his expectations was that this cyan palm which should have been created through an ability suddenly changed directions and shifted as though it was intelligent as it dodged his sword. Afterwards, its shape also changed, changed into the exact shape of the Dragon Fault

in his hands. Only, this heavy sword was cyan as it fiercely smashed towards his shoulders.

During this half year, Yun Che had attempted to risk his life to kill this demon many times and had encountered this strange cyan light that appeared out of nowhere several times. He would face the demon at most one to two times when they were fighting and this cyan light often appeared only for an instant, so he had always believed that was an offensive profound strength light beam.

And after the profound light beam left his body, it would weaken as it extended outwards during its trajectory. But now, he shockingly discovered that not only was this cyan light able to take on any shape, it was also incredibly fast and its aura did not weaken in the slightest from start to finish... Just like a strange creature that existed independently!

It could become a palm, sword, shield or spear... Become bigger or smaller, become slower or faster. Even though the demon meticulously suppressed his power, it still suppressed Yun

Che to the point that he became flustered and overwhelmed. It was many times more difficult than going up against an expert of the same level. He loudly shouted and a Falling Moon Sinking Star pushed the cyan light aside. Then, he rapidly retreated backwards and anxiously asked: “What the heck is that thing?”

This demon faintly smiled. With a flash of his left arm, the thing which turned into a heavy sword changed back into a cyan light and went back into his arm: “This... is my Profound Handle! It’s created using the

profound veins and the blood vessels, and is controlled with my soul. It's a special power form that could exist independently from my soul. It could change into a countless number of things and could completely make use of my fighting style... it's an ability bestowed by the heavens to only my Illusory Demon Royal Family!

# Chapter 292 – Information About The Azure Cloud Continent

---

“Profound Handle?” Yun Che suddenly remembered when Ling Kun talked about the demon, he once mentioned that the demon had a special ability called the “Profound Handle”.

He never could have thought that the Profound Handle was such a powerful and weird thing. It seemed to apparently be a profound art, but it didn’t belong to any type of profound

art Yun Che knew of. Through his battle with the Profound Handle just before and the demon's simple explanation, the power of the Profound Handle could be said to be mystical and freakish. Its origin wasn't just from the profound veins, it also came from one's own lifeline. Just this fact was seemingly incomprehensible for people. It was obviously a form of energy, but it inconceivably had its own life force and it could exist independently, attack freely, and change into many different things. Even if the demon's freedom had been restricted, his Profound Handle could move for him instead. Through combat with the demon... when he

released the Profound Handle, it was undoubtedly equivalent to fighting two enemies at the same time!

In this huge world, there were indeed many mysteries! Ling Yun's Sword Spirit Doppelganger was already astonishing, but the strength of this Profound Handle was several times more powerful than Sword Spirit Doppelganger!

If he could use this kind of Profound Handle himself,



wouldn't his own battle power achieve a great improvement!?

He probed: "Senior, you say this Profound Handle is an ability the heaven bestowed to only your family... so does that mean it's your personal profound art that you guys can absolutely not teach others, or is it... your people's own special innate ability that's impossible for others to possess through cultivation?"

"Of course it's the latter!" The demon... who was also named

Yun Canghai, had a deep arrogance within his voice as he said: “Illusory Demon Realm has twelve large families protecting it and my Yun family is the strongest! And it’s precisely because of this innate Profound Handle! It doesn’t need any cultivation, and it’s naturally within our clan’s bloodline. When our profound strength breaks through into the Sky Profound Realm, it will immediately awaken.”

As the demon said that, his sealed left hand started to flicker with a cyan radiance: “In the records that the ancestors left

behind, it once talked about our noble Yun Family being the descendant of some Primordial True God's bloodline! And this Profound Handle, is precisely an ability that only a True God could possess!"

As he talked about the Profound Handle, Yun Canghai's face displayed ample arrogance. Because in legends, this was an ability a True God bestowed onto them, and it was also the strongest reason they stood at the top of the Illusory Demon Realm. He slowly said: "The Profound Handle you see now is cyan, but for different people of

my clan, the color of their profound handle is different based on whether or not their innate gifts are powerful enough. From weak to strong, the color of the profound handles are red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue, purple, and gold. The strength of the Profound Handle is determined when it awakens and this is an innate gift that will never change throughout your entire life. Within my clan, ninety percent of the clansman have red to yellow profound handles. Ones who awaken with a green profound handle would be a hard to come by genius. With a green profound handle, one could display forty percent of

their own battle power! And ones who awaken with a cyan colored Profound Handle...

Yun Canghai's arms started to flicker with an arrogant cyan light: "In my family, it could be said that there isn't one in ten thousand who could achieve it! For it could display fifty power their own battle power! I, for example, with my cyan profound handle, if compared to someone else with the same cultivation, who put in the same effort, consume the same resources, and stepped into the same realm, I would have more than fifty percent of their

overall power just because I possess this cyan profound handle... This is the power that my clan's Profound Handle possesses! Within the same level, the people of my clan could be said to be beyond compare! Even with the lowest level red profound handle, they could easily defeat an opponent of the same level!"

Yun Che's heart shook... What Yun Canghai said was not wrong. The existence of the profound handle, allowed their total battle power to far surpass and crush others of the same level. This was the power of the

Profound Handle; it was simply a golden finger given by god. Facing an opponent with the power of the profound handle, when you were clearly fighting one opponent, you would have to simultaneously deal with two people!

Yun Che's heart was suddenly overcome with an unrestrainable envy... He possessed all kinds of secret abilities from gods and two divine beast's blood so he could display battle power that far surpassed profound practitioners of the same level, but if he possesses this kind of

divine handle himself, then let alone the same level, he'd reckon that even if the opponent possessed power that surpassed him by an entire realm, he would still be able to easily crush them.

Unfortunately, this was not an ability that could be obtained through cultivation, and existed within a bloodline.

“Then what about a blue profound handle? Is it even more powerful?” Yun Che asked.



“Naturally!” Yun Canghai nodded: “But to be able to awaken the blue profound handle, one had to be a genius among geniuses; it’s hard to find even one in a million. The blue profound handle, could display sixty percent of their original battle power! As far as being able to able to display the seventy percent purple profound handle, that is a mythical existence. In the history of my clan, only one would appear within eight thousand years on average. One who awakens the blue profound handle would naturally be considered the number one expert of the Illusory Demon Realm!”

“Then... what about the gold profound handle?” Yun Che asked.

A deep yearning appeared within the demon's eyes. His voice lowered as he slowly said: “That's a legend among legends. It is a divine profound handle that would never appear within my clan. The gold profound handle could display one hundred percent of one's total power, and it is said that it possesses some special abilities that other profound handles do not have, but this profound

handle was something that only the legendary Primordial True God possessed. It could only belong to the True God, and it could never awaken within the people of our clan. Therefore, that's only just an extremely remote dream, a legend that could never be realized."

"Oh..." Yun Che consciously nodded. It became completely different after eating, and in addition to Yun Che's active friendship, the demon talked about all of this stuff with him non-stop. What he explained wasn't just the power of the Illusionary Demon Realm's

Profound Handle, he also explained their pride in protecting the royal family. Yun Che thought for awhile and suddenly said: “Since you claim you are a human, then why do the people of the Mighty Sword Region call you ‘demon’? Why is the place you came from called the ‘Illusory Demon Realm’?”

“I am obviously human, but our Illusory Demon Realm is different from your Profound Sky Continent!” The demon faintly said: “As far as I know, in your Profound Sky Continent, forty percent are humans and sixty percent are beasts, and the

combination of other species would not even account for one. However in my Illusory Demon Realm, thirty percent are humans, demons, and beasts. The ten other percent of the population are fairies. Included among the demons are all different kinds of flora, birds, fish, spirits and beasts. Humans and demons coexisted peacefully and never made any distinctions with each other. Even the discrimination between races were extremely dull. The two races were never scared or jealous of each other. In fact, apart from the Demon Emperor's clan and newly formed Demon Spirits, it's practically impossible to find a

pure demon or pure human within the Illusory Demon Realm.

“The Illusory Demon Realm is ruled by the Demon Emperor and twelve clans existed for the sake of protecting the Demon Emperor’s noble family. There are six human clans and six demon clans and my Yun Family is the strongest within the twelve guardians. That place has never had any disputes before. Although I am human, I was born in the Illusory Demon Realm and had the honor of protecting the Demon Emperor’s bloodline my entire life. Calling

me a demon is not inappropriate.”

In the Profound Sky Continent, “demon” would naturally have a negative connotation, and people who were called this would certainly be extremely uncomfortable. However, Yun Canghai showed no reactions towards being called that; on the contrary, he gave Yun Che a “it’s suppose to be like this” kind of feeling.

Before hearing rumors of “demons”, Yun Che had never

heard the name “Illusory Demon Realm” and had never seen any records or legends regarding them. Clearly, that was an existence that one would only find out after reaching a certain level. But today, he vaguely knew what kind of world it was from the demon’s mouth. It seemed to be a neighbor of the Profound Sky Continent, but it was also separated by an immeasurable distance, and the composition of its life forms were also largely different from the Profound Sky Continent’s.

Then... what about the Azure Cloud Continent?



“Senior, I have something to ask you.” Turmoil began to fill the inside of Yun Che’s heart and his voice also contained an unsuppressable longing and nervousness: “Have you heard of... the Azure Cloud Continent?”

Yun Canghai looked at him and his expression made Yun Che’s heart bulge... Then, he heard him slowly say: “The planet that we are on is called ‘Blue Pole Star’. It is ninety seven percent water and three percent land, with three separate landmasses

classified as three continents... The first is the Profound Sky Continent that we are on, the second is the Illusory Demon Realm, and the third, is precisely the Azure Cloud Continent that you just mentioned.”

Yun Che’s heart shook, because this was the first time in his life that he heard the name “Azure Cloud Continent” from someone else’s mouth. The demon’s words not only proved the existence of the Azure Cloud Continent, it had confirmed what Jasmine had said, that it existed within the same little

world as the Profound Sky Continent. He immediately asked excitedly: “Then, do you know how to get to the Azure Cloud Continent?”

“Between these three continents, there are oceans that are greater than you can imagine separating them. However, relatively speaking, the Profound Sky Continent and the Illusory Demon Realm are very close. The peak level experts of both continents are clear about each other’s positions; therefore, with enough strength, they could traverse the ocean between these two continents.

But as for the Azure Cloud Continent, I have only heard of its name. It existed within the ancient records of the Illusory Demon Realm. If the records aren't wrong, it certainly exists, but I've never heard of anyone reaching that continent, and I have heard of even less people who knows where it is... because this world is truly too large. This boundless blue ocean would make anyone who tried to navigate it lose their bearings and exhaust all of their strength until they become a corpse. But what is certain is that its distance from the Illusory Demon Realm and the Profound Sky Continent is extremely far. Perhaps it is located in the most

remote place within this little world.”

Yun Che’s excitement had suddenly been extinguished by a lot. This powerful Demon King from the Illusory Demon Realm knew about the existence of the Azure Cloud Continent... but he only knew of it, and even he, did not know where it was located.

“Why did you suddenly ask me about a place that exists only in legends?” Yun Canghai asked with a strange expression.

Yun Che was unable to openly answer and only said: "I have reasons that I must go there for."

Yun Canghai did not question him anymore and expressionlessly said: "If you have enough power, let alone crossing a little world, you could even travel the vast and endless mysterious space at will. Whether a small world, big world, or a mysterious star world, you can travel back and forth at will... If you truly have that kind of reason, then become stronger. Life belongs to the world, and the world, belongs to the strong!"

# Chapter 293 – Rapid Progress

---

Winter stealthily became spring. Along with the first wisps of warm breeze, another year had quietly passed by.

Spring left and autumn arrived, and dead leaves have dried to become yellow. It had already been a full sixteen months since Yun Che's "fall".

Even the brightest of sparkles would grow dim under the flow

of time. Although Yun Che's radiance was a cactus that bloomed only once, the influence it left behind was nevertheless long-lasting. Even though it couldn't compare to the initial enthusiasm, the name "Yun Che" still echoed often within every corner of the Blue Wind Empire. And to those young profound practitioners without sectoral background, it was a beautiful fantasy. It was as if his existence had become a religion.

Heavenly Sword Villa.



At four in the morning, the sky had just begun to brighten. In the dim illumination, a youth attired in lightweight clothing stepped up onto the Sword Management Terrace. The moment his foot touched the Sword Management Terrace's first brick, a captivating sword radiance was released as a longsword fell from the sky, landed in his hands, and danced gaily in the breeze.

Ling Jie was now already a seventeen year old youth. There was less of an immaturity on his face and more of a resoluteness. His gaze that was as sharp as a

sword had become even more sharper than before, and his profound strength was now at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm, only one step away from the peak of the Spirit Profound Realm. As for his sword intent and sword mind, they were getting closer and closer to perfection.

The Celestial Yang Sword drew chaotic flowing streams of light in his hands. Following the swinging movements of his arms, air currents that covered a large amount of space in his surroundings grew disordered. A notable change had also

appeared in the trajectory of the flying swords above the Sword Management Terrace. It was publicly acknowledged that his innate talent surpassed Ling Yun's. At the same time, he was even more hardworking than Ling Yun. After the ranking tournament, he had never left Heavenly Sword Villa. He started his everyday practicing the sword, and ended his everyday practicing the sword, and step by step, came closer to Ling Yun.

By comparison, in this period of time, ever since he was trapped by his inner demons, his

progress was very slight.

As for his inner demons, a large half of that came from Xia Qingyue and a small half of that came from Yun Che.

In the midst of the whistling sword energy, the sky above the Sword Management Terrace grew brighter and brighter, until finally, the first rays of sunlight shot came from the east. It was also at this time that the Celestial Yang Sword became a streak of burning light that broke through the sky,

conjuring up a vacuum of more than thirty meters wide. Then, it rapidly flew down, falling into his scabbard.

“Whoosh!”

Ling Jie let out a long breath of air as he sat down onto the ground. He wiped away the sweat that filled his forehead, and as he looked at the Heaven's Punishment Sword that shot straight into the sky, he immediately went into a daze. After a long while, he expelled a mouthful of turbid energy and

casually spoke to himself: “Boss, for you to become that powerful when you weren’t a part of any sect, you must have worked unimaginably hard. I heard that before the ranking tournament, you were even in the extremely dangerous Wasteland of Death, and stayed there for a full half year... Sigh, after the ranking tournament, I originally wanted to secretly look for you. Even if you were being chased by the Burning Heaven Clan, I was willing to escape with you. That kind of experience would’ve definitely been really awesome, thrilling, and exciting. It could’ve even allowed me to truly grow up. I didn’t expect that right after I acknowledged

you as my boss, I didn't even have an opportunity to learn anything from you... Sigh! The gods are truly unfair."

Ling Jie turned his head around and said in a low voice while looking west towards Blue Wind Imperial City: "I wonder how Princess Sis is doing now..."

Blue Wind Imperial City, Moon Embracing Palace.

"Princess, word has been transmitted from Burning

Heaven Clan's side. Young Clan Master Fen Juecheng has already set a date for Your Highness's engagement. In seven days at three quarters past eight in the morning, Young Clan Master Fen Juecheng shall come to the Moon Embracing Palace to escort the princess to the wedding ceremony. The third prince has already told people to begin the preparations."

Cang Yue motionlessly stood next to the lotus pond in the courtyard, and her beautiful eyes continued to stare at the withering lotus petals. At her side, a palace maid respectfully



reported to her in a deferential manner.

After the palace maid finished speaking, Cang Yue's expression was still a field of calm. She nodded, and said faintly: "Alright, you may go now... Wait! The wedding date's decision, does my royal father know of this yet?"

"Reporting to Princess, the Emperor has not awakened yet, so he has not been informed yet."

“Don’t disturb my royal father, let him rest well. Tell me about it after he wakes up.” Cang Yue said in a soft voice.

“Yes, this servant shall withdraw now.”

After the palace maid left, a cheerful laughter sounded: “Hahahaha! My royal sister, congratulations, congratulations!”

Cang Yue turned around and faintly smiled at Third Prince

Cang Shuo, who was walking forward in a sloppy manner: “It seems as if you’re even happier than I am about the wedding between me and Fen Juecheng.”

“That’s only natural!” Cang Shuo beamed while smiling: “Juecheng is completely worthy of being called a dragon amongst humans. Within the Blue Wind Empire, there are few that could compare to him. With your beauty that could overturn nations and exquisite body, you two could even be said to be a perfect match made by the heavens. Juecheng is my dear friend, and you are my only

sister. I would naturally be really happy about a union between you two, hahahaha.”

Cang Yue’s petal lips gently raised as she said with a slight smile: “Since you’re this happy about it, then I’ll let you handle the wedding matters here, I’d assume that elder brother would be thrilled to do so.”

Since returning from Heavenly Sword Villa, there was an enormous change in Cang Yue’s personality, and everyone around her could distinctly feel

this change. Yun Che's death didn't seem to have given her any psychological blows. After she returned to the palace, a large majority of her time was spent accompanying Cang Wanhe. As for how she acted, it was as if she had been switched with another person. No more did she retreat, escape, or try to compromise. In fact, she had become incomparably hard and decisive. She used Cang Wanhe's name to forcibly gather a majority of the neutral parties against Cang Lin and Cang Shuo's stirring movements. Even though she herself could not stop Cang Lin and Cang Shuo's struggle and the ambitions of the Xiao Sect and Burning

Heaven Clan, she had at least obstructed a large extent of the fighting within the Imperial Family. This, was already an extremely amazing outcome.

During this more than just a year, Cang Yue's character had become even more hard and unyielding. In fact, her gaze would sometimes bring about a cold light that caused one's heart to palpitate.

“Of course I have no objections!” Cang Shuo immediately replied.

“Since that’s the face, then I’ll be troubling elder brother with everything... In addition, I’d like to ask elder brother to remind Fen Juecheng a few more times that the ‘Burning Soul Flower’ has to be within the betrothal gifts he brings on the day he comes to the imperial palace. Tell him that if I don’t see the Burning Soul Flower, he should not even think about me following him back to the Burning Heaven Clan.” Cang Yue’s delicate brows focused as she spoke with resolute determination.

“You do not have to worry at all about this point. With the devotion Juecheng has for you, forget about a mere Burning Soul Flower, even if it’s all the stars in the sky, he would gladly give it to you without hesitation.” Cang Shuo said that as he gently chuckled. It seemed as if his mood was rather good today.

“I hope everything is as you have said. I am about to go see father, if you are interested in this Moon Embracing Palace, you may stay around as long as you like.”



After Cang Yue finished speaking, she didn't bother to pay attention to Cang Shuo anymore, and directly walked out.

After stepping out of the Moon Embracing Palace, Cang Yue's footsteps slowed. She raised her head towards the sky with her hands covering her chest. The hard sharpness in her gaze immediately faded away to become as misty as fog. She lightly muttered to herself: "Junior Brother Yun, I am so sorry, to have let you be all alone

by yourself for such a long time... Wait a few days for me, okay... after another seven days, I can go and accompany you...”

---

Under Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace, an intense battle was already approaching its conclusion.

Boom!    Bang!    Ding!    Clang!  
Slash...

The sound of collisions, explosions, and slashes... Under this sealed space, each and every sound was deafening.

The swings of Yun Che's heavy sword were wide, and each rotation would conjure up an shocking profound energy storm. The sharpness of the ever changing cyan profound handle was incomparably endless, and the intensity of its attacks was no less inferior to that of Yun Che's heavy sword. After more than a thousand collisions, Yun Che's entire body had already been covered in injuries. But every time they fought, he

became even more courageous, as if he was a fierce beast that had been excited.

Yun Canghai had been watching Yun Che and the Profound Handle's battle from the start. He unceasingly nodded with a gaze filled with amazement.

In these sixteen months of being in here, Yun Che's cultivation of profound strength had made rapid progress.

At the moment, his profound strength had already reached the sixth level of the Earth Profound Realm!

At that time, Ling Yun took two years to break through the Earth Profound Realm's first level to the third. And this progress, had never been surpassed by anyone of the same age, aside from Xia Qingyue.

And Yun Che had only used not even a year to go from the first level of the Earth Profound Realm to the third!

If Ling Yun were to know of this, perhaps he would be so ashamed that he might even suicide on the spot.

In terms of cultivation rate, Yun Che had fully surpassed Ling Yun by even more than ten times!

Of course, the fundamental reason behind this growth was still the Flame Dragon's blood and flesh. To the profound practitioners within Blue Wind Empire, even if it were profound

practitioners at the highest peak, an Emperor Profound Dragon's flesh was an heavenly grade treasure. Obtaining even a little piece of it would be extremely difficult. But for Yun Che, he had treated it like a normal meal!

And he had eaten it for over a year.

What Yun Che improved during this time was not just his profound strength. After knowing about Yun Canghai's Profound Handle, Yun Che had

spent at least twelve hours every day battling with the Profound Handle. His actual combat strength had also crazily soared during his close quarter combat.

Yun Che had lived two lives, so his combat experience was already naturally plentiful, but no matter how plentiful it was, it was impossible for it to compare with Yun Canghai, who had lived for for several hundred years. Even though Yun Canghai was probably no match for Jasmine, just based experience alone, Jasmine simply could not compare to Yun Canghai. The few instructions he gave to Yun



Che had all allowed him to benefit greatly from them.

When Yun Che and the Profound Handle had first fought, Yun Canghai still defeated Yun Che even when he suppressed its power into one portion. But in not even a month's worth of time, Yun Che had already tied with that portion of the profound handle's power. As a result, he increased the profound handle's strength by a second portion, then a third portion.... fourth... fifth... and now, Yun Che was currently facing up against his sixty percent of his profound handle's

power!

Sixty percent of his profound handle's power was comparable to the strength of a late stage Sky Profound Realm!

And now, it had already been fought into a tie again by Yun Che. After several thousands of exchanges, he had still not yet defeated yet.

“Haa!!”

After a loud roar, Yun Che soared into the sky, and transformed into four silhouettes that looked exactly the same... That's right! Four of them! Under the countless battles, his Star God's Broken Shadow that had been used a countless number of times had also advanced into its third stage, where it could materialize three mirages!

Forget about human perception and sight, the mirages that Star God's Broken Shadow materializes could even confuse the Profound Handle into not knowing which was the true

image. It was exactly this delayed response that gave Yun Che an opening to narrow his eyes and open Evil God Art's third realm, "Purgatory".

Two streaks of scarlet colored brilliance covered Yun Che's eyes. The profound energy aura on his body had also become incomparably berserk... During the ranking tournament, when he forcibly opened Purgatory, even though it was only a short instant, he still had almost lost half his life, and was unconsciousness for a good few days. With his current state now, forcibly opening Purgatory

would naturally not have such a dire side effect anymore. However, it still felt extremely unpleasant, and if it were to only be activated for a few breaths of time, he could still manage to support that.

“Sky Wolf Slash!”

The azure wolf howled as its terrifying power completely enveloped the profound handle, blocking off all of its potential movements. Then, an enormous silhouette of a wolf emerged upon Dragon Fault’s long range

assault, and ruthlessly struck the profound handle. The attack completely morphed it... and in the short period of a second, as if it was a dead leaf whipped up by a hurricane, the profound handle flew away, changed into a streak of cyan light, and flew into Yun Canghai's arm.

Crash!!

Dragon Fault fell to the ground and Yun Che's entire being had also met the ground. He heavily panted as sweat poured down all over his body. The long fierce

battle had exhausted nearly all of his strength. Added with huge burden after his opening of “Purgatory”, he could only spare enough energy to pant heavily, and couldn’t even move a single little toe.

“This little monster’s future accomplishments are simply unimaginable!” Yun Canghai lowly uttered. His profound handle that held back at sixty percent of its strength, had actually been defeated by him this quickly!

Back then, when Yun Che had said that he would kill him within two years, he still thought that it was really funny. But now... his words from before were not excessive in the slightest!



# Chapter 294 – What Is That In Your Hand!

---

Only after Yun Che rested for a long while, did he finally recover his strength. He sat up from the ground and patted his chest with a face full of satisfaction. Defeating the profound handle that held back at sixty percent of its strength, was unquestionably another enormous breakthrough.

“HAHAHAHA...” The demon looked at him, and suddenly wildly laughed out loud.

“What are you laughing at?”  
Yun Che asked.

“I’m laughing at myself for doing what could be considered the most laughable and contradictory thing in this world.” The demon said as he howled with laughter: “The me who was more dead than alive, yet was still unwilling to die for a hundred years, is actually teaching a junior to kill me quicker. If it were someone else doing this, I would definitely believe that he is a madman. And it just so happens, that I am

actually such a madman. Moreover, I actually can't feel any regrets doing so; seeing you breaking through day by day, I actually felt gratified... HAHAAHA! Could it be that I really have gone crazy?"

"No, you aren't crazy, of course you aren't crazy." Yun Che faintly smiled: "I can understand why you would do this. Because you aren't a bad person, and neither am I. You and I both, more so, aren't like those despicable people whom we both hate. We suffer from the same fate... and most importantly, I am someone

worthy of your entrustment.”

Yun Che's last sentence, made Yun Canghai's hearty laugh suddenly stop.

Yun Che calmly spoke: “Even though I am respecting you more and more, and am feeling increasingly grateful to you, I will unquestionably kill you the day I obtain the ability to do so. Because that would grant me freedom, and also liberate you... At the same time, the matter you wished to entrust me with, I'll definitely use all my power to

finish the task as well!”

Yun Canghai's entire body shook, and his gaze that looked at Yun Che started to slightly tremble. He slowly nodded, and said with a slightly shuddering voice: “Good! Good! This word of yours, was what I waited, and always wished for! I believe, that if you willingly spoke those words, then you'll definitely achieve them! Good... Good!!”

Yun Che spoke in a firm tone: “Even though you and I had not gone through the ritual of

master and disciple, during this period of time, you are already half of a master to me. Even if it's to fulfill my filial duty as disciple, I'll still definitely complete your entrustment."

"Haha... Hahahaha..." Yun Canghai started laughing once again; his laughter was filled with exhilaration and gratification: "The Heavens... have finally given me a little pity, to have sent you to me. I have been suppressed here for a hundred years, and was more dead than alive since long ago. With the Heaven's Punishment Sword's suppression and the

Heaven's Might Soul Sealing Formation's Seal, added to the fact that this is the Profound Sky Continent, I've actually already accepted my fate, that it was simply impossible for the day of my escape to come. Living, would instead become a concern and burden for my clan's people. The Mighty Heavenly Sword Region keeping me, is also just to use my life as a bargaining chip at the right time... However, I still have something important on me, something critically important to the entire Illusory Demon Realm. So I can't die... I can't die no matter what. Now, I finally found someone I can entrust it to... And finally, I can go accompany

his royal highness.”

As Yun Canghai spoke, his eyes were already vaguely tearful.

“Something extremely important to the Illusory Demon Realm? You want me to give it to Illusory Demon Realm?” Yun Che spoke in astonishment. His gaze swept through the demon’s entire body, as he felt surprised in his mind... The demon only had a piece of tattered clothing, and there simply wasn’t anywhere to store things. Even if he was strong to the extent of



being able to open up space himself, the things inside would definitely be forcefully seized by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's people. For such an important object, there was no way that people of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would let it remain on him... But from what he said, that object was still on him. If so, then just where did he hide it?

“Not yet!” The demon shook his head: “You are still too weak. Only till the day you are strong enough to kill the current me, will I pass it to you! So, if you want to obtain freedom after

killing me, then do not slack off! Even though your progress is extremely fast, you are still too weak, and don't have the power to head to the Illusory Demon Realm at all."

"I know." Yun Che nodded. Then, he held up a huge chunk of dragon flesh, cut it in half, and started roasting it in his hand: "Speaking of which, Senior, just how did you fall into the hands of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region? From what I heard, you seemed to have been... plotted against?"

The demon's eyes narrowed as an incomparable hatred flashed past his eyes. He made a sneer, and spoke: "My understanding toward your Profound Sky Continent's Four Great Sacred Grounds, is far greater than your lot. From my knowledge, these so-called Four Great Sacred Grounds, had always publicly declared their mission of protecting the Profound Sky Continent to the outside. Under this seemingly incomparably noble mission's halo, they were called 'Sacred Grounds', and gathered beings of the strongest plane within the entire Profound Sky Continent. And the enemies they 'protected' against... is our Illusory Demon Realm!"

“HAHAHAHA! What an enormous joke. In terms of size, the Illusory Demon Realm surpasses the Profound Sky Continent. In terms of resources, Illusory Demon Realm wins even further! Even though the Illusory Demon Realm discovered the Profound Sky Continent long long ago, we never had any wild ambition, and never had any reason to give birth to such ambition either. It was instead those despicable fellows who carried the name of “Sacred Ground Guardians” to put us Illusory Demon Realmers as villains who desired to swallow the Profound Sky

Continent, and then conducted themselves in the way of bandits! In order to obtain our Illusory Demon Realm's greatest treasure, they stopped at no expense and invaded my Illusory Demon Realm. The Demon Emperor went missing afterwards, and even though I didn't want to admit it, it was highly likely that the Demon Emperor had already encountered their malicious wrath. To search for the Demon Emperor, I single-handedly went toward the Profound Sky Continent, yet I carelessly stepped into Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation set by the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and was heavily

wounded by Sword Master Xuanyuan Wentian, and sunk to this place... My Illusory Demon Realm's grudge and hatred with the Four Great Sacred Grounds, is already to the extent of unwilling to exist under the same sky!"

Yun Che silently listened, and spoke: "I am someone of the Profound Sky Continent after all; your words, I cannot completely trust. Moreover, in the Profound Sky Continent, the Four Great Sacred Grounds had always been holy existences, like fairy tales. Their strength is unbeatable, and their prestige

was not allowed to be tainted. Even if these words of yours were to be told to the entire Profound Sky Continent, there would almost be no one who'd believe you. After all, many people have the ingrained belief that the Profound Sky Continent was only peaceful because there is the protection of the Four Great Sacred Grounds. There are also no notorious rumors of the Four Great Sacred Grounds oppressing the weak and such..."

As he spoke till here, Yun Che suddenly recalled that those so-called upright and honest clans

with excellent reputation and fame in the Azure Cloud Continent had hounded his Master to death for the Sky Poison Pearl. He deeply sucked in a breath, and continued: “But I don’t completely doubt your words either. After all, I am not familiar with the Illusory Demon Realm that you belong to, and I am even more so unfamiliar with the Four Great Sacred Grounds. How the real situation is, I’ll see it with my own eyes the day I become strong enough to touch the Four Great Sacred Grounds and Illusory Demon Realm.”



“Nice! Well said!” Yun Canghai nodded with admiration: “What you said, really doesn’t seem like words from a young man who has yet to reach twenty. Then, aren’t you afraid that because of my affairs, that you’ll be swept into the resentment between the Four Great Sacred Grounds and the Illusory Demon Realm? That is an even bigger vortex so huge that you can’t even imagine.”

“Of course I’m afraid!” Yun Che said honestly: “At least to the me right now, whether it is the Four Great Sacred Grounds or the Illusory Demon Realm, they all are behemoths that I can only

look from afar; the top most of the food chain in this world we belong in. But dread, does not mean I would breach my word and faith. Since you have already decided to grant my freedom with your life, then no matter what, I would still finish your entrustment. It's just that the time in which it'll take may take somewhat longer."

"HAHAHAHA!" Yun Canghai howled with laughter: "It's actually the first time I've ever heard someone speak the word 'afraid' so resonantly and heroically. If you had straightly spoken that you are not afraid,

even though I would be more grateful, I would also be a little disappointed. Because if you were to not know fear, then you would overestimate yourself, underestimate your enemies, and perhaps meet your downfall very early someday. But with these words of yours, I am even more at ease now.”

Yun Che smiled, and passed the already roasted dragon meat into Yun Canghai's hands. The two of them, one standing one sitting, started gobbling down at the same time. The dragon meat's deliciousness, became their only enjoyment in this

dark and gray space.

The two of them filled their stomachs up at the same time. Yun Che sat on the ground, closed his eyes and recovered his profound energy. Next, he'll be trying to challenge the profound handle of seventy percent strength.

Yun Canghai also closed his eyes, and low mutters came from his mouth non-stop...

“It's been a hundred years, and

no news of his Royal Highness have been heard... Is he really already dead...”

“If it’s the Sun Moon Divine Hall’s Heavenly Monarch Ye Meixie and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region’s Sword Master Xuanyuan Wentian together, then they indeed have the ability to kill his Royal Highness... No... Impossible.. I do not believe....”

“The Prince ought to have finished his wedding... That person from Mighty Heavenly Region said that the Prince had

already succeeded as the Little Demon Emperor... then impulsively rushed in the Four Great Sacred Grounds to kill on the succession day... and also died...”

“Illusory Demon Realm... the one dictating the whole picture is Little Demon Empress...”

“Little Demon Empress... Could it be.. her... Perhaps it’s her... The Crown Prince did not fear heaven and earth, and only feared her. The Crown Prince ascended the throne with her as

Empress... Even though she is a woman, she does indeed have the ability to dictate... sigh...”

Yun Che ears were full of Yun Canghai's mutters to himself, but he did not have much of a reaction. Because these words, Yun Canghai would recite them many times every day, to the point that his ears grew calluses when hearing them a long time ago. Every single moment he was here, he had always thought about the Illusory Demon Realm. His loyalty toward the Illusory Demon Royal Family, could even be testified by the heaven and earth itself. Yun Che

could also tell, that he and the Demon Emperor were half as king and subject, and half as brothers.

Quickly recovering profound strength, Yun Che's breath and mind had also completely calmed down. He opened his eyes, watched the pitch-black darkness ahead of him as dreamily figures emerged in his mind one after another... Amongst those he cared about, he wasn't worried about Xia Qingyue and Chu Yuechan, since with their strength it could be said that no one in the Blue Wind Empire could hurt them.



But he could not help but worry about Cang Yue and Xia Yuanba... They must all think that he was already dead. The Imperial Family was under unrest, he could not imagine how Cang Yue should hide and protect herself. Yet at this most important and helpless moment that she needed him the most, he, who had promised her, could not accompany her by her side.

Xia Yuanba would definitely deeply fall into self-blame. He could only hope for him to walk out from this kind of self-blame, and then truly grow up.

Grandfather and Little Aunt as well... From the promise of three years he had made before, there was only one month left.

Being trapped here, there was no way that he would have the power to kill Yun Canghai within a month. The promise he had made when he first left, was already destined to be impossible to fulfill.

Yun Canghai was very pitiful. Being suppressed for a hundred years while in despair for a

hundred years, he suffered all the misery there was. But at least he has had several hundred years of glory, had the past of looking down at the Illusory Demon Realm together with the Demon Emperor, had his own enormous family, had his own family members. Even if they couldn't meet in a hundred years, he could still think of his dearest family, and there were also family that thought of him... Yet Yun Che, till this day, still didn't even know who his birth parents were.

“Haah...” Yun Che silently sighed, and subconsciously

touched toward his neck with his hand, wanting to touch the only thing left to him by his birth parents. Only after the moment his finger touched his skin, did he finally remember that he had put it away in the Sky Poison Pearl after coming back from the Azure Cloud Continent and realizing it was extremely likely to be the Mirror of Samsara.

Yun Che took out that petite necklace from the Sky Poison Pearl, put it on his hand and silently stared at it... Fantasizing about just what kind of people his birth parents were, and if

they were still alive and healthy in this world.

Yun Canghai was also in a half-absentminded condition within his mutters. As he lifted his head, his gaze inadvertently fell onto the copper colored pendant in Yun Che's hands... Instantly, it was as if he had been struck by a profound thunderbolt from the nine heavens. His entire body abruptly shook as both eyes fixedly stared wide open in an instant. Released from his mouth was a shout that was as intense as a beast's roar...

“What is that in your hand...  
What is that in your hand!!!!”

## Chapter 295 – Blood Relative (1)

---

Yun Canghai's sudden roar scared Yun Che and caused him to jump. He immediately turned around, and surprisingly saw Yun Canghai's whole face distort, his eyes were so excited that a frightening layer of crimson red covered it. His right hand clawed forward and his whole body desperately struggled, which brought about rushing sounds on the chain.

This exaggerated reaction caused Yun Che to suddenly ask:

“You’ve seen this thing before?”

As he spoke, he hurriedly held up the pendent before Yun Canghai’s eyes. Then, he opened up the pendant, exposing the extremely ordinary small mirror within the pendant.

Yun Canghai’s eyes focused extremely hard on that mirror. Both eyeballs trembled, as if they were going to fall out from his eye sockets. After a brief moment of silence, his struggling body became more severe, as he fiercely roared:



“Where did you get this thing!!  
Why would it be with you...  
speak! Why is it with you!  
Speak!!”

Yun Canghai's reaction completely showed that he knew what the thing in his hand was. Not only did he recognize it, it seemed extremely important to him. His heart was excited due to this, and he took a step back, hung it around his neck, and used the calmest voice he could muster to answer: “When I was born, it was already with me. It was the only thing my birth parents, whom I've never seen, left for me... Since you recognize

it, can you tell me what it actually is? Who is the original owner of this item? The two who put it on me... are most likely to be my birth parents!”

The air instantly coagulated.

The two were both excited, as both stared at the other with wide eyes... Yun Che longed for his answer. This pendant was the one and only hope of knowing his past, and was the key to finding his parents. Today, he finally found someone who recognized it, and in front

of him, Yun Canghai's gaze went from intense to dull... more and more dull...

“This is... what your parents... left for you?” He looked at Yun Che and asked with a slow, hoarse voice that had difficulty speaking.

“Yes!” Yun Che nodded, lifting up the pendant. Breathing in deeply, he said: “Not long after I was born, my parents were being hunted down, and an intimate friend of my birth parents, who was my adoptive

father, secretly swapped his son with me to protect my life... After my parents left, there were no more messages, and the only thing they left with me was this pendant! Since I was young, I wore it with me, because it is the only proof that I have to find my parents! Since you recognize it, then, do you know who left it with me... Who my biological parents are?"

Yun Che, who urgently desired to know the answer said as much as he could possibly know. His eyes open wide open expectantly, waiting for the news he wanted from Yun

Canghai's mouth. As he narrated what he knew, the expression in Yun Canghai's eyes trembled more and more violently. So much that... more and more tears flashed around.

Yun Canghai's extended right hand was stiff in the air and he spasmed for a while without putting his hands down. Or maybe... under the extreme excitement, he forgot how to control his own body. He stared at Yun Che, not blinking for the whole while. After Yun Che finished speaking, his lips were agape, but he didn't make a noise. It wasn't until a long time

later that his trembling voice said incomprehensibly: "Child... you... you... this year... how... how old are you?"

"Nineteen." Yun Che replied. He just had his birthday this time last month. He was exiled from his family at sixteen, and it had nearly been three years since he'd been forced away from Grandfather and Little Aunt.

"Nineteen... Nineteen...  
Nineteen..." Yun Canghai murmured, and each time, the

expression in his eyes became more and more uncertain. His stiff arm in the air moved, and his fingers becoming a relatively soft posture: "You... come here... show me your left hand... don't be scared, I won't hurt you, and won't snatch your stuff... show me your left hand..."

Yun Canghai's expression became incomparably strange, surprising Yun Che for a bit. But from Yun Canghai's gaze, he could not find any malice or chill. He only hesitated for a moment, then took two steps forward and extended his left hand.

Yun Canghai extended his hands and grabbed Yun Che's wrist. Suddenly, Yun Che felt a bizarre and gentle hint of power come upwards from his wrist, which quickly wrapped around his whole left arm. He was just about to ask about it, when he suddenly saw a little finger sized, bright white sword shaped marking slowly appear atop the back of his left hand.

“What is... this?” Seeing this imprint suddenly appear from his body, Yun Che asked with astonishment.



And in the moment Yun Canghai saw the marking, he suddenly teared up. He looked at Yun Che through his misty eyes filled with tears... that was a gaze that Yun Che could not understand. The “om” sound he let out from his lips... was a type of weeping tone caused by his emotions that had gotten out of control: “This is my Yun Family’s... mark of an unawakened Profound Handle! It... It proves that you are a descendant of my Yun Family... my... Yun Canghai’s... biological grandson!!”

The last few words thundered and exploded next to Yun Che's ears, and caused his heart to be shocked: "Wh... wh... what did you say?"

"That white Profound Handle imprint is the Yun Family bloodline's proof... The thing you wore since you were young is our Yun Family's treasure that we protect for the Demon Emperor's Family! I normally wear it on me, and it had never left my body. When we left for Profound Sky Continent to find the Demon Emperor, I entrusted it to my son... and my son entrusted it to you... You are the

son of my son... I am your...  
biological grandfather!”

Yun Che’s mouth opened, eyes went wide open, and this message from the sky stunned him. He wobbled and took two steps back, then soullessly shook his head: “Impossible... impossible... how can you be my grandfather... how can there be such a coincidence... impossible... impossible...”

The “impossible” was said unconsciously under his muddled condition. After he

knew Xiao Lie wasn't his biological grandfather, the words "Blood Relative" became an incomparably distant and ethereal notion. The pendant that had always hung around his neck became the only link between him and his blood relatives.

And now, under an completely unguarded state, Yun Canghai, who brought him into this abyss, who coexisted with him for over a year, who became someone who he had to kill... suddenly told him that he was his family, and even his biological grandfather. His brain

subconsciously could not accept this, causing him to fall into a chaotic state of mind, nearly completely losing the ability to think.

“Yes... in this world there unexpectedly can be this type of coincidence...” Yun Canghai’s face was filled with tears as his excited voice became completely indistinct: “Your Profound Handle marking and the pendant on your body is indisputable proof... Do you remember the day I brought you down here, the junior from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region once said, that twenty years ago,

in order to find me, my son and his wife intruded into the Profound Sky Continent, and eventually found somewhere close to this place... Afterwards, they were hunted and chased by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... time, experience, area... coincides completely! You are the descendant my son, within those two to three years in Profound Sky Continent.... left behind!”

Yun Che: “!!!!”

“If... you really do not believe,

then we can use the blood paternity test to prove familial relationships... that is the most direct, impossible to falsify and question, way of proof!

Yun Canghai said excitedly. At the same time, turned over his right hand, and drops of fresh blood fell from the tip of his index finger.

The blood paternity test was the most authoritative way to prove family relations. Two drops of blood mixed together, with the most basic profound

energy. If it was a lineal blood relative, it would fuse even more completely, and if it wasn't a lineal blood relative, it would instantly separate... there was no exception!

What Ling Kun said that day was obviously heard loud and clear by Yun Che. Thinking back at this moment, the timing did surprisingly coincide.

Don't tell me...

Don't tell me...



Don't tell me it's really...

Seeing Yun Canghai's blood drop that had dripped from his fingertips, Yun Che was so nervous that he nearly suffocated. He clenched his jaw tightly, allowing his mind to be as calm as possible. He didn't speak, took a step forward and extended his finger, profound strength surged and broke through his fingertip. A drop of blood slowly agglomerated and drew downwards, then touched Yun Canghai's drop of blood.

Yun Che squatted while holding his breath. He extended his palm towards the two drops of blood that were touching... His palm moved ever so slowly, the distance that should have been crossed in an instant, but he felt as if a whole century had passed by. Finally, a strand of the most basic profound energy was released from his palm, enveloping downwards...

The two drops of blood vibrated at the same time, then practically, instantly... fully and completely, merged together...

Yun Che's brain felt a wave of dizziness...

Yun Canghai's body trembled as an endless grief and happiness swarmed within his heart, causing him to not know whether to cry or to indulge in laughter. He waved his only movable arm, and shouted with a hoarse voice that even he could not hear clearly: "Ahhh... My grandson... you are my grandson... my biological grandson... biological grandson...."

The two completely merged drops of blood were deeply branded within Yun Che's eyes and soul. He raised his head, looked at Yun Canghai, and absentmindedly whispered: "You really are.. my... grandfather... my... grandfather..."

"Yes... Yes I am!!" Yun Canghai extended his head towards the sky, not knowing whether to cry or laugh, and howled: "The heavens are not unkind to me, not only did they let me have a grandson, they sent him to my

side, and he's even so outstanding... The only young person I have admired in my life, is actually my biological grandson... haha... hahahaha! The heavens are not unkind to me, the heavens really are not unkind to me!!”

# Chapter 296 – Blood Relative (2)

---

“You really are... my...  
grandfather?”

Even with all the proof clearly laid out in front of him, those merged drops of blood, an indisputable, irrefutable evidence, he gave off a questioning sound. It wasn't that he did not believe it, but the blow from such a shocking truth caused his brain, which was in chaos, to find it difficult to accept.

“Child... my child...” Yun Canghai said with a face full of tears: “I really did not think that I actually had a grandson since nineteen years ago... You inherited our Yun Family’s bloodline, yet suffered from such miserable hardships... Since birth, you were separated from your parents and haven’t seen them since. Grandfather never gave you a hint of care, and the first day I met you, I nearly killed you... I really am the most incompetent, the most shameful grandfather in this world... The heavens saw this wretchedness and has allowed us to reunite as grandfather and

grandson in this lifetime. These hundred years, I was constantly scolding the heavens, but now... in my life, I've never been as grateful to the Gods as I am today..."

"You really are... my grandfather?" Yun Che was still murmuring soullessly.

"I know I don't have the qualifications to be your grandfather. I never gave you even a bit of care and brought you into this disastrous place. However much you hate me,



blame me, it is completely deserved..." Yun Canghai, this powerful Demon King whose might shocked the Illusory Demon Realm and the Four Great Sacred Grounds, was tearing up with each word at this moment. Perhaps all the tears he had let out in his couple hundred years when added up, would not be as numerous as today.

Yun Che stood up a little, looked at the ragged old man who had dirty and messy white hair, and a wet bony face full of tears. His nose was suddenly swarmed with a heavy wave of

sorrow and grief... family! In front of his eyes was his family, his grandfather, the most beloved family... his first true family member in his two lives!

“Grand... father...”

The incomparable familiarity of the word that he had said countless of times in this world, was extremely choppy when cried out at this instant... it was difficult... yet involuntarily left his mouth... Because in Yun Canghai's eyes, he saw exactly the same content in Grandfather

Xiao Lie's eyes. That type of love and affection deep in their blood that would not hesitate to give their whole world to him...

Yun Canghai's whole body was stiff, his whole body felt as if he was floating inside the clouds... He and Yun Che lived together for sixteen months, enough for him to have the most basic understanding of Yun Che. His amazing talent and potential was impossible to estimate. His perseverance also caused him to be deeply aghast. His temperament was arrogant, and he would at times, show insolence. His dignity and honor

were not allowed to be touched. Yun Canghai simply did not have any extravagant hopes that he would be called “grandfather” from such a person, because Yun Canghai only felt guilt, and thought that he owed him too much. But he never thought that he would address him the way a blood relative would from this close of a distance.

The happiness and fulfillment in that moment, allowed him to feel that even if he were to instantly perish now, he would be a million times willing.

“You’re willing to recognize me... you don’t... blame me?” Yun Canghai asked with a trembling voice.

Yun Che shook his head extremely slowly and said: “You are my grandfather. Without you, how would I be in this world... You are my grandfather, so how could I blame you... finally... I finally found my family... grandfather, these years, you’ve suffered...”

Yun Che walked forward after the words died down and

hugged Yun Canghai fiercely. He hugged the first family member he had found... they had no relationship of fostering between them, and even had past resentment and hostility, but this was not important anymore. He would not be cold and too prideful to reject this familial love. He would not blame his grandfather for not fulfilling even a day of a grandfather's responsibility... They were family, they had the same blood flowing within their bodies. This single fact, was enough.

After separating with Xiao Lie

and Little Aunt, his heart was broken. In his two lives, he completely understood that familial love was something worth everything, was something that was worth using his whole life to protect and cherish.

“Good child... my good child!”  
Tightly hugging the grandson that the heavens sent him, Yun Canghai’s mood had finally completely collapsed. Not caring about his image, he started to cry loudly...

“Your father is named Yun Qinghong. Even though I am already a few hundred years old, I only have one son which is your father. His talents are not too bad, and he had awakened the same cyan profound handle I have. Your mother is named Mu Yurou and is also from a Guardian Family of the Demon Emperor, and is the daughter of Mu Family’s Patriarch. The Twelve Guardian Families exist to protect the Demon Emperor and there are no estrangements between them. The relationship between our Yun Family and Mu Family have always been the best, and your father and mother were childhood friends who grew up together. A



hundred years ago, when I left the Illusory Demon Realm alone, they had just gotten married.”

“Sigh, these hundred years, they must have been extremely worried. The reason they would bear such a huge risk to come to the Profound Sky Continent was probably due to them hearing from somewhere that I haven’t died... I just did not think that during the time they were in Profound Sky Continent to search for me, they would actually have you... Perhaps even they had not expected you.”

Grandfather and grandson stood across each other, and after calming down, they mutually told each other about their own experiences and stories.

“The only thing I don’t know, is how they are doing right now. The person called Lin Kun said that they escaped from Profound Sky Continent, but the long period of time in escaping with heavy wounds had nearly extinguished their life force... Sigh!” Yun Canghai sighed deeply with a face filled with worry and a sense of loss... as well as a hidden deep hatred.

Yun Che did not speak.

Until now, he still had not yet recovered from the truth about his birth.

He was actually not someone from the Profound Sky Continent.

His homeland, was actually another world where demons ruled the world.

Even though his soul was sufficiently strong, in such a short period of time it was difficult to completely accept the truth.

“Even though your father didn’t find me, not only did he have you in the Profound Sky Continent, he had actually made a true friend. That could be said to be an enormous accomplishment.” In order to protect a friend’s son, he exchanged his own son into a situation of inevitable death. Towards the person who

fostered Yun Che, Yun Canghai was deeply grateful and asked: “Your foster father and foster mother, are they still healthy?”

Yun Che shook his head, closed his eyes and said: “Foster father Uncle Xiao was hunted and asked about where my parents were by a mysterious person after a short period of time. Then, he was murdered by the mysterious person. Foster mother died soon after due to grief... After Grandmother gave birth to Little Aunt, due to missing her son, she fell ill and eventually died. I still haven’t clearly seen what they looked

like... it was grandfather who took care of me and protected me when I grew up. He treated me as if I was his own grandson, because I withstood countless grievances and ridicule silently...”

Yun Canghai violently moved, and then said with a heavy voice: “Che’er, we can never forget this huge kindness! Your Grandfather Xiao Lie, you must treat and respect him as if he is your biological grandfather... And you must get revenge for this great hatred!”

Yun Che slowly nodded and silently tightened both hands, thinking back to three years ago when he left, and what he had said in front of Xiao Ying's grave. He said to himself silently in his heart: "Uncle Xiao, I finally know who killed you... There will be a day I will offer you their blood in front of your grave!"

Yun Che held up the strap on his neck and asked: "Grandfather, what exactly is this thing?"

“It is called the Mirror of Samsara.” Yun Canghai replied.

This name caused Yun Che’s heart to be fiercely shocked... It actually was what Jasmine had said it was, one of the seven great heavenly profound treasures, the Mirror of Samsara. Then, the two lives worth of incredible experiences was really due to that!

If it really was the Mirror of Samsara, then it was enough to fully explain Yun Che’s large amount of questions and doubt.



But Yun Canghai's expression was calm when he said the words "Mirror of Samsara". Yun Che suppressed his emotions and asked probingly: "Then what does it do?"

"I don't know." Yun Canghai shook his head: "I only know of its name. It was the Demon Emperor Family's treasure that they found a long time ago. The Demon Emperor Family says that in legends, it could completely change a person's luck and even destiny. If the Demon Emperor Family one day declines, it could even help the family rise once again. But

nobody knows how it should be used, and more so don't know the real use of the item. It was entrusted by the Demon Emperor Family to our Yun Family to protect, and under my protection for all these years, I've never seen any reaction or power from it... But somehow this treasure got found out by the Four Great Sacred Grounds. They seem to call it a 'Heavenly Profound Treasure' and attempted to possess it. It was the reason behind the hatred between the Illusory Demon World and Four Sacred Grounds."

Yun Che grasped the Mirror of Samsara and felt a wave of absentmindedness. He had no idea how to use the Mirror of Samsara. But from his two lives, he had completely released its heaven opposing ability, bringing him back from death twice, and changed his life.

After being poisoned to death by Xiao Yulong in the Profound Sky Continent... the Mirror of Samsara released its power for the first time, allowing him to reincarnate into the Azure Cloud Continent, but was reincarnated without his memories.

After he jumped to his death from the cliff in Azure Cloud Continent... the Mirror of Samsara released its power for the second time, allowing him to return to the Profound Sky Continent, waking up from the supposedly dead body, and this time, he was brought back with all his memories. In the Profound Sky Continent, his death was interspersed, but there were no signs of fault. As for his life in Azure Cloud Continent, his memories were branded into him like a dream.

According to Yun Canghai's description, after the Demon Emperor Family acquired the Mirror of Samsara, they seemed to have never used its power.

Then what exactly causes it to use its power? Could it be death?

Or maybe it must be on a specific person?

“Before I came to the Profound Sky Continent, I entrusted it to your father. I never thought that when he came to search for me,

he actually brought it with him... maybe he thought it could be used as exchange for my life. He really underestimated those so called “saints”, and how despicable they are!”

Yun Canghai raised his head; his gaze became incomparably sharp and cold. He looked at Yun Che and said each word sonorously: “Che’er! As your grandfather, I should convince you to let go of the hatred, to forget it all and live a peaceful life... but I cannot do that. Our Yun Family is a royal family of the Illusory Demon World. A member with the name Yun can

be weak, but none of us are cowards! I need you to keep in mind, just who harmed your foster parents that saved your life; who harmed your birth parents, making them go through an experience of being hunted, and not knowing whether they were dead or alive; who made your Grandfather suffer a hundred years of torment, and who separated you from your birth parents right after your birth, to the point where you haven't even met them to this day... You have to firmly carve this hatred into your heart. Unless you exterminate Heavenly Mighty Sword Region, don't ever erase it from your heart!"

Yun Che didn't speak and slowly nodded.

---

Author's Note: The matter about Yun Canghai being Yun Che's grandfather... Lots of people guessed it right, so it wasn't anything special... In the chapter where the demon appeared, that was why I had Ling Kun specifically say out the details of his son and daughter-in-law's matter. The time matched perfectly, just so you



guys can guess it! If I didn't specifically hint it explicitly, if you guys had guessed it like that, then that's just too clever. As expected, you guys don't like it when I make explicit hints ahead of time, and instead like that sort of misleading method that suddenly explodes into a hole... Since that's the cause, activating Mars Style ultimate aoe attack of face slaps! If you're brave enough, bring it on!

## Chapter 297 – Profound Handle Awakens

---

In an unexpected turns of events, Yun Che had finally found the first ever blood relative in his life. This undoubtedly was destiny playing a joke on him... However, Yun Che was unable to determine if this was a joke filled with good intentions, or a joke filled with evil intentions.

Although he found a blood relative, that person had suffered a hundred years of misery. If this sort of situation

happened on an outsider, Yun Che would only pity that person. However, this was happening on his blood relative, and what he was feeling was a soul-piercing heartache. Originally, killing this demon, was his only way of getting out of here. However, now, this demon had turned out to be his grandfather, so how could he act against his blood relative whom he had finally managed to find, just for the sake of his own freedom?

Yun Che stood up, grabbed and raised Dragon Fault. Activating Burning Heart, he swung a Phoenix Break up above with all

his strength.

The phoenix flames whizzed as they soared upwards, striking ruthlessly up above... After that, with a gentle “ding” sound, the Phoenix Break dispersed in the air, while up above, forget about any damage appearing, not even a speck of sand or dirt fell.

“It’s no use.” Yun Canghai shook his head. “The suppression of the Heaven’s Punishment Sword, is much stronger than you imagine it to be. Even if you grow ten times

stronger, it will still be impossible to deal a single inch of damage to it.” He revealed a kind smile, and waved towards Yun Che. “Come, come to my side. Let us grandfather and grandson have a good chat. I have many things that I wish to tell you.”

After recognizing each other as kin, the atmosphere they had built between them had naturally turned upside down as well. Along with the passage of time and the calmness in his heart, Yun Che became even more clear of his grandfather’s identity within his

consciousness. He stood in front of Yun Canghai, and listened to his every word.

The Illusory Demon Realm's terrain, structure, customs... The rise of the Yun Family and its present state, and the origin of the Demon Emperor's family... The friendship between him and the Demon Emperor back then... The Little Demon Empress who might be the current ruler of the Illusory Demon Realm... The rivalries between the twelve guardian families... the grudges between the Illusory Demon Realm and the Four Great Sacred

Grounds... The basic situation of the current Four Great Sacred Grounds and their strength...

Yun Canghai constantly explained to Yun Che, and similarly, he wanted to know what Yun Che experienced in these few years, and his well-being. Yun Che told him his childhood, explained the years of ridicule, scorn and low self-esteem he experienced. He told him that he had already gotten married... He told him that when he was sixteen, he met a very strong master, and his destiny began to change then... Yun Canghai listened very

attentively, fearing that he might miss even a single word. His expression occasionally revealed ecstasy, occasionally, it was sadness. At times, it was fury, and sometimes, it was filled with smiles... Within Yun Che's voice, he seemed to have exhausted every single one of his emotions.

Yun Canghai took him, and chatted for three whole days and nights, wishing that he could tell Yun Che everything he knew of.

“Grandfather, don't worry.



There's no definite path of demise in this world, we will definitely find a way to flee from here." Yun Che looked at the black hole up above, and said with a tight frown.

"Hoho, that's of course." Yun Canghai calmly laughed. In these few days, under extreme joy, his expression had reddened quite a bit, and his spirits were several times much better than before. His eyes especially, were no longer as cold as stagnant water, rather, it had turned especially gentle. He placed his hands on his chest, and slowly said. "Che'er, I have something

that I wish to hand to you.”

As he said that, he applied a strong force with his hand. His profound energy surged, and immediately after, he let out a suppressed groan, and pain flashed past his face. A white mass of light, which was the size of a fist, spat out from his mouth, and landed in Yun Canghai's hands.

This mass of white light was a layer of protective profound energy, and it securely enveloped the thing inside it.

Yun Che took a few steps closer, this mass of protective light was extremely dense, and was emitting an extremely high level aura which Yun Che was unable to comprehend. Clearly, this was something Yun Canghai had set up before he was suppressed. He asked. “Could it be that this is... the thing you wish for me to hand to the Illusory Demon Realm earlier?”

Earlier, he was still wondering just where the thing Yun Canghai wanted to entrust to him was placed at... So it was actually swallowed into his belly after he protected it with his

profound energy!

“Correct!” Yun Canghai took a deep breath. “Take this, do not try to inspect what is inside. If there’s one day that you get the ability to head to Illusory Demon Realm, then hand it over to the current ruler of Illusory Demon Realm... into the Little Demon Empress’ hands. You must definitely hand it over to her personally, do not allow others to touch it.”

Yun Che took the thing that was enveloped by mass of white

light, instantly stored it into his Sky Poison Pearl, and then, nodded cautiously. "Grandfather, don't worry. Before meeting the Little Demon Empress, even if I die, it will not land in anyone's hands."

"Good, naturally, I believe in your words." Yun Canghai gave a comforting smile, and then once again, raised his right arm. "Come, give me your left hand."

Yun Che obediently stretched out his left hand. "Grandfather, you're?"

“Your current strength is still too weak. It’s a pity that profound energy cannot be passed on, otherwise, I would not hesitate to pass down all of my energy to you... My current strength is being suppressed by a large degree, the only thing I can help you with, is to awaken... your       Profound       Handle prematurely.”

When Yun Canghai’s words fell, a wave of profound energy, like a raging sea, suddenly entered the left arm, and brought along severe pain that felt as though

his entire hand would explode. At the same time, that white sword-shaped mark resurfaced on the back of his hand.

“Grandfather...” Just when Yun Che was about to ask, Yun Canghai’s eyes suddenly closed tightly. His expression was heavy and firm. He instantly closed his mouth, and did not say another word. At the same time, he suppressed his energy as far as possible, allowing his entire body to be in a completely defenseless state.

Yun Canghai had said this. The Profound Handle in their Yun Family, would naturally awaken when one's profound energy reached the Sky Profound Realm.

Currently, Yun Che was only at the sixth level of the Earth Profound Realm... From Yun Canghai's words, he planned on directly awaken Yun Che's Profound Handle while he was still at the Earth Profound Realm!

Yun Canghai's profound handle



was released, turning into a long ray of cyan flowing light, which circled and danced around Yun Che's arm. The sense of pain on his arm became even heavier, as though it might burst apart at any moment. Yun Che slightly clenched his teeth, and did not let out a single groan. Looking at Yun Canghai, his teeth was even clenched tighter than Yun Che's, his forehead was already filled with warm sweat, and his entire body was slightly trembling, as though he was exhausting his profound energy unreservedly, and was enduring pain that was even much greater than Yun Che's.

What Yun Che did not know was that awakening one's Profound Handle prematurely was a very difficult task. With Yun Canghai's current strength, he could only barely do it... And almost all of his strength in his body would be used up as a consequence.

The circling of the cyan profound handle became even faster, and the sense of expansion in Yun Che's left hand began to become even more severe, as though it could explode in the very next second. At this moment, accompanying Yun Canghai's growl, the sleeves

on Yun Che's left hand suddenly burst out, revealing his entire left arm... On his arm, a crimson red light that was about fifteen centimeters long clearly shone.

The moment this crimson red light appeared, Yun Che's mind and profound veins shook severely, as though he sensed that there seemed to be something had been added within his arm. Something that, even though it was unfamiliar, was tightly connected to his blood vessels and profound veins.

The bloodline of the Yun Family he carried, the Profound Handle which belonged to him, was prematurely awakened at this instant!

“Urgh!”

Yun Canghai groaned out of relief, and released his grip from Yun Che’s arm, his entire body was quivering from extreme exhaustion. While at this moment, the sense of unfamiliarity in Yun Che’s arm completely disappeared, and he hurriedly stepped forward to

support Yun Canghai.  
“Grandfather, are you alright?”

“I’m fine... I’m fine.” Yun Canghai waved his hand, and gasped heavily for air. He raised his head, and looked towards Yun Che’s arm. When he saw that crimson red profound handle mark, he was stunned. “How could it be... red...”

Red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue, purple... Among the seven colors of the Profound Handle, red was the weakest! Within the Yun family, nine out

of ten of the Profound Handles were in the range of red, orange, and yellow, these three colors. And, within them, another nine out of ten were orange and yellow, red profound handles only made a very small ten percent of them, and the probability of it appearing was about the same as the green profound handle. Because red profound handles were the shame of Yun disciples, practitioners who awakened red profound handles, were instantly regarded as downright trash. They could only end up as servants or handymen for the Yun family. Forget about within the Yun family, even if they were to head outside, they would still

be looked down by others.

Yun Canghai, as the master of the Yun family, he and his son Yun Qinghong both awakened the overwhelming cyan profound handle... And in Yun Canghai's eyes, with Yun Che's talent, he who had inherited their blood, Yun Canghai had firmly believed that his Profound Handle would at least be cyan as well, or it might even be blue. And no matter how bad it would be, it should still be green, yet, he definitely did not expect that, what he awakened was actually the trashiest red profound handle which was seen

as a humiliation by the Yun family!

The surprise and disappointment on Yun Canghai's face was clearly caught by Yun Che. He glanced at the red mark on his left arm, and gently said. "The red profound handle, should be the weakest Profound Handle, right... I'm sorry, grandfather, I disappointed you."

Not growing up within the Yun family, he was not entirely sure what Profound Handles meant



to the Yun disciples, so, even it was the weakest red profound handle, he was not really too disappointed. After all, with an additional red profound handle, to him, it would simply increase his strength, and was not really a loss. He could more or less understand Yun Canghai's feelings... He had once said that, the Profound Handle was the greatest glory of the Yun family, and when he struggled with all his strength to prematurely awaken Yun Che's Profound Handle, naturally, he was carrying great expectations. That red-colored mark, had undoubtedly turned all of high expectations completely into disappointment.

“It’s... It’s fine...” Yet, Yun Canghai shook his head, and then, gave a casual smile. “It’s good enough to have successfully awakened your Profound Handle, so what if it’s a red profound handle? My grandson has such a formidable talent, and had even inherited the divine beast Phoenix’s blood. Forget about it being just the red profound handle, even if you did not have the Profound Handle at all, you will definitely still not be worse than anyone else!”

Yun Canghai’s disappointment

had only last for that short moment before it completely disappeared. His words was resounding, and came from deep in his heart. It was definitely not forceful in the slightest, rather, he became the one consoling Yun Che. Yun Che felt his heart warmed, and strongly nodded. "Grandfather, don't you worry. I will definitely not be weaker than anyone else, and if I were to return to the family in the future, I will definitely excel over everyone that came from the same generation as well. I will definitely not put grandfather's reputation to shame!"

“Good... good! I believe my good grandson!” Yun Canghai patted on Yun Che’s shoulder, his face revealed a pleased smile. “But, the reason why you have the red profound handle, is definitely not because of your lack of talent. The power of the Profound Handle, half it comes from one’s blood vessels, while the other half, comes from one’s profound veins. Earlier, you had said that, not long after you were born, your profound veins had been crippled, and your mysterious master had only reforged your profound veins when you were sixteen years old... Newly born profound veins, they are after all, not your innate profound veins, which

means, it's basically unable to spawn a strong Profound Handle, and there might be a possibility that your Profound Handle could not even spawn. Otherwise, with your talent, Yun'er, how could it just be a red profound handle!"

"But, it doesn't matter. While I'm still alive, to have reunited with my grandson, and even lived together for so long, I'm already deeply grateful to the heavens. What is there to be unsatisfied about... Hahahaha!"

Yun Canghai laughed out loud. His laughter was filled with fatigue, yet, it was filled with incomparable satisfaction as well.

## Chapter 298 – Dissipating Soul

---

“Come, try to release your profound handle. When your Profound Handle awakens, you will naturally understand how it is to be used.” Yun Canghai said while chuckling.

Yun Che nodded. Indeed, the moment his Profound Handle awakened, another spirit connection appeared within his soul... and the spirit connection from the Profound Handle brought about a strength that didn't feel foreign at all. In fact,

it was just like a new organ inside of his body. When he willed it to move, a red light above his left arm flashed. Afterwards, a crimson light noiselessly flew outwards and floated beside his body. Following his will, it transformed into the shape of Dragon Fault... Aside from the difference in color, its exterior appearance was exactly the same as that of Dragon Fault's.

Seeing the Profound Handle next to his body, although its power was far from that of Grandfather's, an indescribably excited feeling arose in Yun



Che's heart. Watching his expression, Yun Canghai smiled contently: "Believe in your feelings. Not only is it your power, it is a part of your body and soul. Although it is the lowest class among Profound Handles, the red color has its own benefits. Similarly, the power of the Profound Handle arises from the owner of the Profound Handle's body, so when it is released, it will also speed up the rate of consumption of profound energy as well as mental energy. The stronger the Profound Handle, the greater the rate of consumption. Accordingly, the red profound handle has the smallest rate of consumption."

Yun Canghai's words were naturally only words of comfort. As the lowest level of Profound Handles, this so-called "advantage" of the red profound handle could only be considered extremely laughable. The red profound handle began to change into various forms under Yun Che's will: occasionally, it was a sword; occasionally, it was a spear; occasionally, it was a long damask. Sometimes, it was a leaf, the shape of a water droplet, and even a man's silhouette. Yun Canghai continued: "The Profound Handle isn't only a type of special strength form. It can also

be a pure soul form, and invade opponents' souls or conduct mental attacks.”

“Mental attacks?” Yun Che was astounded. After, he concentrated his will speedily; almost instantly, his Profound Handle rapidly transformed until it was completely traceless and formless, becoming a pure soul form.

Once again, the might and mysticality of the Profound Handle exceeded Yun Che's expectations. Subsequently, his

heart wavered, as if he had thought of something.

“Heheheheh...” Watching the incessant excitement on Yun Che’s face as he operated the newly-awakened Profound Handle, Yun Canghai nodded his head continuously, and thought back to his youth, when he had just awakened his Profound Handle. As he smiled, his field of vision gradually became blurry. He was once so powerful and proud, capable of looking down on everything. He was the “king”, only below the “emperor”, yet now, he was in such miserable and dire straits.

His son had been harmed trying to save him, and he had no idea whether he was still alive. He had also unintentionally brought his grandson into this abyss... His grandson was nineteen right now, yet to this day, he had never assumed the responsibilities of a grandfather. The only thing he could do was consume his own origin strength, and help him awaken his Profound Handle earlier.

In the last hundred years, he had suffered through loneliness and hardship, distress and humiliation, yet since the very beginning, he had never been

willing to die. He didn't want such an important object for the Demon Emperor to be lost, and even more so, didn't want to die here without any contribution.

Yet today, he had already entrusted that important object to his own grandson. He could finally end his own wretched life with some value...

“Che’er, come over here.”

Yun Che withdrew his Profound Handle, and walked to

the front of Yun Canghai.

“Back then, when I left the Illusory Demon Realm in search of the Demon Emperor, I had tentatively left the heavy burden of the Family to your father, but I didn’t tell him an enormous secret. Only the Demon Emperor bloodline and my Yun family knows of this secret. Also, this secret is passed down orally by the Demon Emperor or master of the Yun family; absolutely no one else knows about it. If the Demon Emperor has actually died, then the only person in the world that knows this secret is me. As I have been trapped here,

I will never be able to see the light of day again. Only you will be able to succeed me... Che'er, move your ear closer to me."

Only the grandfather-grandson pair was here in this place, and it was impossible for anyone else to have heard them speaking. But Yun Canghai remained extremely cautious, so it was evident just how important this secret was. Yun Che didn't say anything more, complied to Yun Canghai's request and moved closer. Then, Yun Canghai, using an extremely soft voice, said something to his ear.



“Ah? Is this for real?” After hearing Yun Canghai’s words, Yun Che revealed a deeply startled expression.

“This issue concerns the future of the entire Illusory Demon Realm. You must keep this in your heart, and inform the Little Demon Empress, who currently dominates the Illusory Demon Realm, and you definitely must not let anyone else know.”

Yun Che nodded: “I will remember all of grandfather’s

words in my heart. Grandfather, you don't have to be too pessimistic either; we'll definitely be able to find a way to get out of here. I will prudently safeguard this secret grandfather has told me, but as for the matter of informing the Little Demon Empress about it, it doesn't necessarily have to be me; it'd be best if grandfather were to do so personally."

"Ha ha ha ha!" Yun Canghai began laughing with gratitude: "I'm very happy to hear you say these words. My Yun family owes you nineteen years, and Grandfather was the one that

trapped you here, yet you didn't display even the slightest bit of complaint. Not only were you willing to recognize me as your grandfather, you even looked out for me... To have such a grandson, my Yun family is truly fortunate, and it is also the greatest compensation I, Yun Canghai, have received from the Heavens in these hundred years of bleakness. I also believe that if you're ever to meet your biological parents, you definitely won't blame them for not protecting you well back then. Although your body carries thick killing intent, your innate disposition is yet especially kind; it looks like the Grandfather Xiao who raised you must've

been a good-natured man.”

Yun Che nodded lightly: “He is a... very noble grandfather.”

Yun Canghai looked upwards, and said sorrowfully: “I really want to thank him personally. In the hundreds of years I’ve lived, I’ve never been so grateful towards someone before... Che’er, remember my words from before. One day, you must pay him filial respects as if he was your biological grandfather in order to repay his kindness and grace in raising you.”

Yun Che nodded repeatedly.

“Alright... I’m tired, and I need to rest a while. Go outside the barrier and carefully study your newly-awakened        Profound Handle. Only studying it closely will allow you to gradually discover its infinite subtleties.” Yun Canghai said as he closed his eyes.

“Yes, Grandfather.” Yun Che nodded, and walked outside of the barrier. In order to awaken his Profound Handle, it looked

like Yun Canghai had consumed an extremely large amount of energy. Before, when he was speaking, he had been gasping for breath the entire time.

After walking outside the barrier, Yun Che sat down. He closed his eyes, yet didn't think about the Profound Handle; rather, he thought hard about how to leave this place.

Yun Canghai had been bound to that Heaven's Punishment Sword with what was known as the "Meteorite Chain". Once,

Yun Che had tried to attack the “Meteorite Chain” with Dragon Fault, but it was unable to cause even the slightest amount of damage, let alone sever it.

Jasmine had told him before that the suppressive force of the Heaven’s Punishment Sword was linked to Yun Canghai’s heart and soul. As long as Yun Canghai didn’t die, this suppressive force would always exist. Conversely, if he died, the suppressive force would disappear. This was also the reason he was so determined to kill Yun Canghai before. Now that he knew Yun Canghai was his grandfather, he obviously

couldn't make a move against him anymore. In that case, if he wanted to leave by himself...

.....

Yun Che opened his eyes forcefully, and his brain felt as if it had been pierced by an electric current.

There was no way Yun Canghai had a method to leave this place, otherwise, he wouldn't have been trapped here for a hundred years. Other than killing Yun



Canghai, he had no other way of leaving... However, the fact that he couldn't attack Yun Canghai didn't mean that Yun Canghai wouldn't kill himself in order to set him free!

The Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation was ineffective towards oneself. Then why did Yun Canghai still want him to study the Profound Handle outside of the barrier?

And his words from before... informing him of that enormous secret...

“Grandfather!!”

Yun Che roared. He jumped up abruptly, and charged into the barrier; the instant his feet entered the barrier, he froze in place...

Yun Canghai's head dangled in front of his chest. Even under his frightened scream, he was not in the least responsive, and Yun Che could no longer feel even a shred of life from his existence.

“Grandfather...  
GRANDFATHER!!”

The nightmare-like thought that had suddenly appeared in his mind suddenly drew closer to reality. Yun Che’s entire body shuddered, and charged forward as if he was mad, pouncing in front of Yun Canghai’s body.

Yet what responded wasn’t Yun Canghai’s voice, but the sound of the Meteorite Chains falling.

The Meteorite Chains that were wrapped around Yun Canghai's body suddenly loosened completely, and fell to the ground powerlessly. This was because the lock for the Meteorite Chains was similarly connected to the heart and soul of the person being bound; when the person being bound died, the Meteorite Chains would automatically loosen.

The imposing aura of the Heaven's Punishment Sword also dissipated without a trace at this time. Not a single shred of that heavy and boundless suppressive power remained,

and it was as calm as a dead sword.

Yun Canghai's body, which had been shackled there for an entire century, finally obtained its freedom at this moment, falling forward slowly into Yun Che's embrace. Yun Che held his grandfather's body and slowly knelt to the ground. He looked forward expressionlessly, without any sound, without any movements, even without any tears, as if his soul had left his body that instant.

“He severed his own heart veins... For him to make this choice, I’m not surprised at all.” Jasmine said lightly.

Yun Che: “...”

Yun Canghai had died, and just as Jasmine had said, he had died by severing his own heart veins.

He died very serenely, and his expression was tranquil. A slight smile still hung on the corners of his face, and it was a kind of pleased and satisfied smile. This

was the only thing that could comfort Yun Che... behind his smiling expression silently lay deep feelings of reluctance and concern.

At this time, Yun Canghai's last words sounded besides Yun Che's ear... Before he died, he had left behind a few lingering words from his soul:

“Che’er, in this period of time, Grandfather can see that within your heart rests many people, many issues, and you long to leave this place all the time... It’s

Grandfather that has let you down, and this is also the last thing Grandfather can do for you. Don't feel sad; although Grandfather has passed, to Grandfather, this is a relief I have yearned for day and night. To have met you, and entrusted something I am incapable of putting down to you, Grandfather no longer has any regrets and concerns. I can be at ease and go accompany the Demon Emperor contently... Besides, there's still you as the continuation of your grandfather's life and bloodline."



“Che’er, my good child, Grandfather hadn’t taken care of you well in this life. In another world, Grandfather will pray for you with all his time and energy. The Profound Sky Continent is your home, but the Illusory Demon Realm is your true homeland. Grandfather hopes that one day, you can return to the Illusory Demon Realm, and back to our Yun Family, and let your parents know that you are still living in this world safe and sound... Don’t blame your parents, they have definitely already torn their hearts and ripped their lungs worrying about you, longing for you these nineteen years... Grandfather’s last desire is not vengeance, nor

the Demon Emperor race, but the wish to see all of you... reunite as a family..."

Yun Canghai's last words faded away, and two streaks of tears finally rolled down Yun Che's face... Above his head, wisps of sand began rumbling and falling, which signified that the suppressive power of the Heaven's Punishment Sword had already disappeared completely. But Yun Che didn't move for a long time, embracing Yun Canghai's dead body... embracing the kin he lost after he had just met. His entire person seemed to have become a

sorrowful statue.

---

At the same time, Heavenly Sword Villa.

Ling Jie, who had just finished training, was walking back to his courtyard with a body full of heat. Just as he was about to enter his room, a Heavenly Sword disciple who wore clothes adorned with swords, rushed in hurriedly: “Second Young Villa Master!”

“Senior Brother Yun Peng... What matter is this urgent?” Ling Jie turned his face, and heaved a breath of air.

“Second Young Villa Master, congratulations on breaking through to the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm at such a lightning speed. You have overtaken Young Villa Master from back then.” The Heavenly Sword disciple said with a smiling face. Ling Jie had shaken the entire Heavenly Sword Villa yesterday when he broke through, because, when

Ling Yun was seventeen, he was only at the ninth level of the Spirit Profound Realm. This time around, Ling Jie's breakthrough signified that his innate talent completely surpassed that of Ling Yun's. He retrieved an invitation inlaid with fiery lines from his bosom: "This is an invitation issued by the Burning Heaven Clan. In four days, the Young Burning Heaven Clan Master will leave for the Blue Wind Imperial City to escort Princess Cang Yue for marriage. In seven days, they will complete the marriage at Burning Heaven Clan's Fiery Sun Hall. By chance, the Villa Master has something to do seven days from now, and is asking Second Young Villa

Master to represent him there. He says it has already been two years since Second Young Villa Master left the Heavenly Sword Villa, and that you should take advantage of the fact that you just broke through to travel outside for a bit.”

“Fen Juecheng... and Princess Sis!?” Ling Jie quivered, and snatched the invitation from the disciple’s hands with a “whoosh” sound. He swept over it after opening it, and his brow sunk: “How could it be like this... this isn’t right! This definitely wasn’t Princess Sis’s real intention; Princess Sis is Boss’s...”

He looked over the invitation many times. Finally, his eyes stopped for a while on the date. He scrunched his brow, seeming to have come to a decision. He put the invitation away, and said with an earnest expression: "Senior Brother Yun Peng, inform father that seven days from now, I will go to the Burning Heaven Clan in his stead."

## Chapter 299 – Seeing The Light Of Day Again

---

In the dusky space underground, Yun Che knelt for an entire three days and three nights.

To Yun Canghai, death was indeed a form of relief. In these past hundred years, he had longed to die countless times, yet couldn't die because his body carried the important object from the Illusory Demon Realm and the enormous secret. Now, he had entrusted everything to Yun Che, and it was finally time



for him to obtain relief. Besides, his own relief could trade for Yun Che's freedom.

Furthermore, this wasn't only to let Yun Che obtain his freedom, but also the best way to guarantee his safety. The Heaven's Punishment Sword and Meteorite Chains both contained soul imprints set by the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, so if Yun Che forcefully escaped from the suppressive power of the Heaven's Punishment Sword, the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would certainly discover him and investigate how he got out of the suppressive power of

the Heaven's Punishment Sword. If he had escaped with Yun Canghai, then the consequences would be even more unimaginable. With Yun Che's current strength, he couldn't even be considered an ant in the face of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Only Yun Canghai committing suicide, allowing the Heaven's Punishment Sword and Meteorite Chains retract their power after not having an objective anymore, was the best method to allow Yun Che to escape safely.

Yun Che understood all this,

but to him, this was just too cruel. Because Yun Canghai was his first blood-related kin he had found in both worlds, he had yet to completely experience the feeling of warmth and connection of blood that only blood relatives could have. But now, he was right in front of him, forever gone from this world.

Yun Che, who had originally desired to leave this place, chose not to leave immediately after obtaining his freedom. Rather, he knelt in front of Yun Canghai's body for three whole days... to keep watch beside him

for three days, and also to use three days' time to calm his heart of all its ripples and sorrow.

At the same time, a name had been firmly engraved within his sea of consciousness over these three days.

Mighty            Heavenly            Sword  
Region!!

Three days passed, and Yun Che finally moved. He opened his eyes, and got up

incomparably slowly. He carefully shifted Yun Canghai's body into the Sky Poison Pearl, and said gently in a low voice: "Grandfather, you've suffered through a century of hardship; you must've longed to return to your homeland. Wait for the day I have the capability to set out for the Illusory Demon Realm; I will bring you back to the clan you have missed and worried about for this entire time. I will let you sleep peacefully on the soil of your homeland... Wait for when I have children; I will bring my wife and children, and visit you every year. I won't let you be lonely..."

Amidst his low words, Yun Che also stood up straight and looked up at the sky... Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, regardless of whether you are evil or not, right or wrong, virtuous or vicious, just because you hounded my Grandfather to death and killed Uncle Xiao who saved me, the day I have sufficient capability, I will definitely force you to pay the heaviest price in order to offer a sacrifice to the spirits of my Grandfather and Uncle Xiao in heaven!

Yun Che's temperament was much stronger than that of an

ordinary person's. After three days of endless mourning and following his placement of Yun Canghai into the Sky Poison Pearl, the expression in his eyes became a field of ice. His heart was also empty and alert. He raised his head to look up, drew a small breath of air, and jumped up.

Bang!!

With a trembling noise, Yun Che directly blew away the land above, which no longer had any suppressive power...

.....

Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace, a quarter past five in the morning.

At the first glimmer of light in the morning, Ling Jie arrived at the Sword Management Terrace for his morning exercises as usual. But these past few days, he always trained absentmindedly because his head was filled with thoughts about Fen Juecheng and Princess Cang Yue's marriage.



RIP!

The Celestial Yang Sword flew out of his hands, causing waves of light to ripple like waves before flying back to his hand. And at this time, an unusual rumbling suddenly spread over from downwards diagonally. This unusual sound caused him to stop his actions for a moment. Just as he was about to concentrate and listen attentively to the sound, the surface in front of the Heaven's Punishment Sword suddenly ruptured, and a black silhouette

flew out from within.

“AHHH!!”

Ling Jie was startled by this sudden unforeseen change, and retreated in panic whilst screaming involuntarily. That human silhouette flew upwards for several tens of feet before dropping down rapidly and landing heavily in front of Ling Jie. Under the great pressure brought by Dragon Fault, a large area of the land underneath him shattered.

“You...” Ling Jie took another step back, and subconsciously held the Celestial Yang Sword horizontally in front of his body. After shouting out one word, his eyes suddenly stared wide, and gave another startled cry involuntarily: “B... boss!!”

Ling Jie’s appearance simply looked like someone who had seen a ghost in broad daylight.

Someone who had been presumed to be dead for a year had suddenly appeared in front of him from underground. If it

wasn't a ghost, what could it be? In that instant, Ling Jie truly believed he had encountered a zombie from the myths.

“Little Jie?” Yun Che looked at him with amazement. He never would've thought that the first person he would see after coming out was Ling Jie. After sixteen months of no contact, Ling Jie had already grown a lot, and although his expression still contained hints of his childish nature, on the most part, it was as sharp as the tip of a sword.

Having heard his voice and felt the aura of strength emitted from him, Ling Jie, as if he had awoken from a dream, revealed an enormous expression of pleasant surprise. He retrieved the Celestial Yang Sword, charged over, and said incomparably excitedly: “Boss, y-y-you... you didn’t die? You actually didn’t die... You really didn’t die?”

“Nonsense. If I died, would I be standing here right now?” Yun Che smiled, but also sighed in his heart. Without a doubt, in this period of time, everyone believed that he had died. For

those that cared about him, how sorrowful and heartbroken they must be...

“But, the day you were struck by that demon and sealed together underground, there was basically no chance you would survive...” Ling Jie said as he subconsciously swept over the Heaven’s Punishment Sword. Suddenly, he noticed that the formless suppressive force of the Heaven’s Punishment Sword had disappeared. These past several days, when he was training at the Sword Management Terrace, he had felt that something

wasn't right all along, but never considered the Heaven's Punishment Sword.

Ling Jie stared wide, and said: "Could it be that you didn't die after receiving such a grave injury that day, and the demon didn't try to attack you anymore... after, you survived, and ended up killing the demon in return? Wahahaha! That's right, that's must've been what happened. Only after that demon died would there be some chance of escaping the suppressive force of the Heaven's Punishment Sword! Boss, you're truly too awesome... ahhhh!

Worthy of being this Ling Jie's boss; there's simply nothing you can't do in this world. I really am stupid to have thought that this Ling Jie's boss would've died that easily... Hahahaha! Boss, did you know, you're currently an unsurpassable legend in the Blue Wind Empire. When the news that you survived spreads, you'll become an even greater legend!!”

“Wow! Your current profound strength aura is actually even stronger than my Big Bro's. Could it be that your profound strength is above the fourth level of the Earth Profound Realm?”



After detecting the richness of Yun Che's profound strength aura, Ling Jie cried out in shock again. Sixteen months ago, Yun Che's profound strength was only at the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm, yet now, his profound strength aura's richness already surpassed that of Ling Yun's, who was currently at the fourth level of the Earth Profound Realm! This was so startling that Ling Jie almost dropped his jaw in shock.

Yun Che, when he was at the tenth level of the True Profound Realm, was already capable of defeating Xia Qingyue, who was

at the Earth Profound Realm. Now, Yun Che must be above the fourth level of the Earth Profound Realm; his fighting capability was simply impossible to estimate!

“I’m currently at the sixth level of the Earth Profound Realm... I didn’t kill the demon; he severed his own heart veins in order to allow me to obtain my freedom.” Yun Che said with incomparable tranquility.

“Earth Profound Realm... sixth level?” The corner of Ling Jie’s

eyes twitched as he swallowed forcefully. To have advanced from the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm to the sixth level of the Earth Profound Realm in sixteen months' time, and underground with no resources, this speed was simply legendary. In contrast to this enormous shock, the later half of Yun Che's words were basically unimportant. He stared wide at Yun Che, and said blankly: Boss, you're simply an omnipotent god. My admiration and reverence towards you can no longer be described with any language... Although I've worked really hard this past year, I'm currently only at the tenth level of the Spirit

Profound Realm... Will you still accept me as your little brother?"

A seventeen year old at the tenth level of the Spirit Profound Realm who had crushed Ling Yun, who was the former number one of the younger generation, shaking the Heavenly Sword Villa, and Blue Wind Empire in turn. Ling Jie was also once immensely pleased with himself when he did that, but he suddenly discovered that this achievement of his, in the face of Yun Che, who had advanced from the first level of the Spirit Profound Realm to the

sixth level of the Earth Profound Realm, was simply a plate of pure slag.

Yun Che smiled casually, and said: “I used a very special method to get to the Earth Profound Realm; in fact, there really isn’t anything extraordinary about it. In the time I was suppressed, a lot must’ve happened in the Blue Wind Empire...”

“Mn, mn, mn, mn!” Ling Jie immediately nodded: “Boss, you didn’t know, after you died... ah,

pooh, pooh, pooh! After you had been pulled down by the demon, your achievements had also widely spread across the entire Blue Wind Empire. In that time, every single part of the Blue Wind Empire were talking about you, especially those young profound practitioners that have no sectoral backing; almost all of them had made you into a religion. Because of you, the Blue Wind Imperial Family had also obtained supreme honor and glory. It has been said that in this year's Blue Wind Profound Palace and other Profound Palace branches' registration, there had been an increase of seven times the amount of disciples! That little

courtyard you stayed in when you were in the Blue Wind Profound Palace's Inner Palace is also being independently safeguarded. In front of the Inner Palace's Supreme Profound Hall, there's even a sculpture of you! I heard that the words on the sculpture's description also stated that you were Blue Wind Profound Palace's most outstanding disciple in all of history! Even until now, there are still stories about you everywhere in the Blue Wind Empire. That being said... Boss! You're just too awesome! Those things that you did... just how did you do them?"

“...” Yun Che had a face full of amazement. Didn't he just obtain first place in the ranking tournament? Causing a sensation was just typical, but it shouldn't be so impactful to such a degree, right?

He still was not fully aware of the fact that ranking first in ranking tournament was only secondary when it came to causing a sensation within the Blue Wind Empire. The main reason, was because he had no one supporting him in the rear. An unknown individual that



practically nobody knew of, had actually married the publicly recognized number one beauty, the younger generation's current number one, Xia Qingyue, and even had gotten the number one beauty in the past, whom many sect masters could only dream of, the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, pregnant! He had even made plans with Blue Wind Empire's only princess, who had the most noble of identities, to marry him...

Such a fellow could only be described with three words...  
Cool as f\*ck!

As long as it was a man, they would admire him to the point of worship, or be jealous to the point of wanting him to go down all eighteen levels of hell.

“Is it really that exaggerated?” Yun Che muttered in a low voice, and then cautiously asked: “After I was suppressed by the Heaven’s Punishment Sword, how were Princess Cang Yue, Yuanba, and them? What happened afterwards?”

When Yun Che mentioned

Princess Cang Yue, Ling Jie's expression stiffened. All of his excitement had also cooled off. The sudden change in his expression tugged at Yun Che's heart as he promptly asked: "What? What happened afterwards?"

Ling Jie drew a breath of air, and said evasively: "Boss, there is something... uh... after I say it, you must not get angry... it definitely wasn't Princess Sis's real intention... uh... Princess Sis... she... she... she's about to marry... Fen Juecheng..."

“Wh...at!!” Yun Che’s body distinctly shook, and his complexion sunk immediately.

“Boss, don’t worry about right now; Princess Sis definitely didn’t consent to it. Perhaps she was coerced, or because she was forced to do so as a last resort...”

“Tell me. When will they be married, and where will it be?”

Yun Che coldly interrupted Ling Jie with an incomparably calm voice... So calm that it

made Ling Jie break into cold sweat, and subconsciously replied: "Burning Heaven Clan's procession is already headed towards the Imperial City to escort the bride. The latest that they arrive would be tomorrow at seven to nine in the morning. They will be getting married at Burning Heaven Clan's Fiery Sun Hall..."

Just as Ling Jie's words fell, Yun Che had already charged out like a gust of violent wind, traveling tens of feet in the blink of an eye.

“Wait! Boss!!”

Ling Jie quickly ran to catch up, and simultaneously extended his left hand. Following a flashing streak of light, an approximately six meter long large bird, that brought about a gust of wind, charged at Yun Che: “This is my contracted profound beast, the Fierce Zephyr Bird. With its speed... you might make it in time!”

The Fierce Zephyr Bird was a high level Earth Profound Beast.

In terms of speed, it was no way inferior to that of the Fierce Storm Hawk, and had even more than ten times the endurance. Yun Che turned around and leapt high, then landed on the Fierce Zephyr Bird's back. In the wake of the Fierce Zephyr Bird's long cry, it broke into the sky and directly flew in the direction of the Blue Wind Imperial City.

“Phew... definitely have to make it in time!” Ling Jie tightly clenched his fist. Then, at this time, he suddenly thought about the discovery about Chu Yuechan being pregnant sixteen months ago, and immediately

shouted: “Boss! Wait, there’s another very important thing...”

With the Fierce Zephyr Bird’s extreme speed, it had already become a little black dot in his line of sight. It was already impossible for his voice to be heard... and even if Yun Che, who was currently burning with anxiety, heard the sound of his voice, he would still not turn back.



# Chapter 300 – The Princess Marrying

---

The dawn has just arrived, and the Blue Wind Imperial City was already rowdy everywhere. Streets of various sizes were all filled with the masses, lifting their chin and looking into the distance. Because today, was the day for the Imperial Family's only princess to be wed. And at this moment, the bridal escort party of Burning Heaven Clan had already entered the city gate, and was parading forth toward the direction of Blue Wind Imperial Palace in a mighty formation.

That's right, the bridal parade of Burning Heaven Clan, was indeed worthy of the word "Mighty". Carrying a smile on his face, Fen Juecheng rode on top of a enormous fire-like maned horse and looked forward placidly. Behind him, was a huge eight poled palanquin carved with dancing phoenixes of fire. Around them, more than two thousand Burning Heaven Clan disciples wearing flame-red clothing formed a very long rank. Looking from a high place, they were like a fire dragon that moved slowly toward the Imperial Palace. All of these

Burning Heaven Clan disciples had been meticulously selected, and every single one of them was extremely extraordinary. Even the ones weakest in profound strength were at the Spirit Profound Realm. Ones with high profound strength, were already at the mid Earth Profound Realm. This kind of lineup, was extremely rare even in the entire Blue Wind Empire, and could even be deemed as frightening. Clearly, Burning Heaven Clan who had lost a great deal of face because of their failure in the Ranking Tournament, seemed to have wanted to take advantage of this chance of being the princess's bridal escort, and once again

display the prowess of the Burning Heaven Clan to the world.

In accordance to the custom, Fen Juecheng's father, Fen Duanhun, naturally would not come along, but the elder level experts that came along, not one didn't inspire awe throughout the land. Just for experts of the Sky Profound Realm, there were already eight. Moreover, the two leading were more so already at the later ranks of Sky Profound Realm, and were two of Burning Heaven Clan's ten strongest experts. These eight people wore flame red clothing that were

even more eye-catching, and floated evenly dispersed in the air space above the bridal escort ranks... The entire echelon emitted a kind of imposing air that made one's heart palpitate. Even from far away, it made one feel an almost suffocating pressure.

Even if one were to say this was a echelon that could flatten the entire Blue Wind Imperial City, it wouldn't be much of an exaggeration.

“Look! The bridal escort party

of Burning Heaven Clan is here!”

Following someone’s large shout, the crowd started to stir. Everyone went onto their tiptoes, and looked toward the Burning Heaven Clan’s bridal escort party that gradually neared from the distance.

Normally, when onlooking a bridal procession, the crowd would be incredibly clamorous. But at this moment, under that incomparably shocking pressure of the Burning Heaven Clan, no one had actually dared to shout

loudly. When the parade walked past their front, that kind of unparalleled feeling of pressure almost made their heart jump out. Even ones who were proud of their strength, and had enough guts, also only dared to secretly whisper.

“The legendary Profound Floating Technique... And it’s even eight of them! Don’t tell me that these eight, are all of the Sky Profound Realm?”

“Of course that’s the case. Of the two leading, the one on the

left is Feng Duancang, the younger brother of the same womb with Burning Heaven Clan's Clan Master Feng Duanhun; it is rumored that his profound strength has already reached the eighth level of the Sky Profound Realm! The one on the right is the Burning Heaven Clan's thirteenth elder, his profound strength is at the seventh level of the Sky Profound Realm! Even in the Burning Heaven Clan, they are beings of extremely high administrative level. I'd have never thought the Burning Heaven Young Clan Master's procession, would have them as company!"



“Fen Juecheng is the future Burning Heaven Clan Master, you know. Having this kind of line-up, isn’t exaggerated at all.”

“Sky Profound Realm of the legends, I have only seen one in my entire life... which is the Blue Wind Profound Palace’s Palace Chief Qin. Eight of them have actually popped out at once today! My heavens... as expected of the Burning Heaven Clan!”

“Fen Juecheng courting the

Blue Moon Princess, I had already heard about it many years ago. But wasn't Blue Moon Princess won over by Yun Che later..."

"Too bad Yun Che has fallen, otherwise... otherwise, Yun Che still wouldn't be able to outcompete Fen Juecheng. No matter how amazing Yun Che is, he is only a single person without any supporting forces behind his back. Behind Fen Juecheng, is the enormous Burning Heaven Clan, you know."

“You can’t be so sure! Even though Fen Juecheng is a dragon amongst men, but what kind of being is Yun Che? He’s a dragon amongst dragons, the legend of our Blue Wind! Fen Juecheng’s daddy Fen Duanhun had also sought after Chu Yuechan before, yet he couldn’t even see her face; but didn’t Yun Che win her over anyway! If Yun Che had not died and Feng Juecheng wanted to out-compete him, the only method would be to assassinate him using the Burning Heaven Clan’s powers. But Yun Che has Frozen Cloud Asgard behind him! Both of his women are of the Frozen Cloud Asgard. One of them is the head of the Frozen Cloud Seven

Fairies, and the other is the future Asgard Mistress. If Burning Heaven Clan wanted to act, even if they had one hundred thousand percent confidence to succeed, they would still need to weigh the consequences. Even if Fen Juecheng dared to, Fen Duanhun may not even have that kind of courage.”

Amidst the crowd’s onlooking and whispering, the Burning Heaven Clan’s bridal escort party came closer and closer. The moment it was seven o’clock in the morning, they accurately stepped before Blue Wind

Imperial Palace's palace gates. After going through simple conversations, the bridal escort party continued forward as gongs and drums sounded and eight lions danced, straight toward the Moon Embracing Palace that Princess Cang Yue resided in.

In the Emperor's Chambers.

“Reporting to your majesty, Burning Heaven Clan's bridal escort party has already entered the palace gates, and will arrive at the Moon Embracing Palace in

half a quarter of an hour.” Cang Wanhe’s personal eunuch reported to him in a respectful manner.

The complexion of the current Cang Wanhe was bad to the point that almost a trace of human color couldn’t be seen. His eyes were embedded deep into their sockets, his hair was half white, and wrinkles filled his face. If Yun Che saw him right now, he definitely wouldn’t have recognized him as the Cang Wanghe he had met two years ago. In two years of time, it was as if he had grown a few tens of years older. Even his every

breath were difficult, like a soon to be dead elderly man that could stop breathing entirely at any given moment.

The flames of his life, had already reached the brink of immediate extinguishment.

Cang Wanhe stayed up all night. Hearing the eunuch's voice, he opened his eyes with difficulty and said with a hoarse voice: "Support us up, prepare the imperial chariot. We will personally visit... the Moon Embracing Palace... Cough

cough... Cough cough cough  
cough....”

Just after speaking a few sentences, Cang Wanhe was already coughing horrendously, and his complexion became even more frightening as well.

“This... “ The eunuch hastily started patting Cang Wanhe’s back. A pained expression on his face: “Your Majesty, the day is still early right now, and the wind is still chilly. Your honored body really can not handle the toss and turns. Her Highness



had also especially instructed, that after the Burning Heaven's bridal escort party arrives, she will directly go with the palanquin, and would not go through some complicated ceremonies; Your Majesty also does not need to be there at all."

"No... We, must go." Cang Wanhe shook his head, slightly struggled, and assumed a posture of getting off the bed: "To escape from Fen Juecheng back then, Yue'er had even gone far away from the Imperial City at all costs, so how could she... willingly be wed to him... Yue'er had always been obedient, and

only for this matter, had she always refused to tell us the reason... We have a feeling... if We do not go this morning, maybe... We won't ever see her again... Quickly... carry Us over."

"Sigh!"

A long sigh came from above. Right after, a middle-aged man in a grey robe with refined features who emitted the air of a scholar from his entire being descended: "Since Your Majesty has already decided, then let this

old subject accompany Your Majesty forward.”

“Palace Chief Dongfang!” Seeing this refined young man who had suddenly appeared, the eunuch hastily took two steps back, but did not reveal any surprise and said with respect: “With Palace Chief Dongfang accompanying personally, His Majesty will definitely be fine... This old servant will go prepare the imperial chariot right now.”

.....

The Moon Embracing Palace was fully lit with lamps; flower lamps and red carpet filled one's eyes. Even within the pond, there lied red colored ribbons everywhere. These were all prepared by the Third Prince Cang Shuo's personally appointed people. He awaited Fen Juecheng's marriage with Cang Yue, and looked forward to this day for many years; he naturally dedicated his all regarding this matter.

For Burning Heaven Clan's bridal procession this time, Cang Shuo had more so started waiting a long time ago in front

of Moon Embracing Palace. The moment he saw Burning Heaven Clan's group arrive, he immediately scuttled over to greet them. After greeting Fen Juecheng, he personally started leading at front of the party.

Fen Juecheng was completely attired in red. A red flower was on his chest, with flames embedded in the robe's shoulder and a scarlet red flame feather crown on his head; He could be said to be extremely handsome with an extraordinary atmosphere, and even triumphed far over the Cang Shuo who was the prince,

making the hearts of those palace maids speed up just from looking.

Burning Heaven Clan's bridal procession parted in front of the Moon Embracing Palace, and all of the guests that the Moon Embracing Palace invited were also present. However, the guests were very few in terms of numbers. With a glance, other than a few dozen palace maids and over a dozen of eunuchs, there were only a few people of the Blue Wind Profound Palace... Qin Wushang and Qin Wuyou were both in there. And another, had come from the

Black Moon Merchant Guild, a elderly person surnamed Mu who was in charge of medicinal material trade.

Under Cang Yue's instructions, Moon Embracing Palace did not prepare any complex greeting ceremony. The Burning Heaven Clan's group had already arrived, so then the preparation was over. Next, was to wait for Princess Cang Yue's appearance.

“His Majesty arrives!”

Accompanying a sharp and long shout, a golden dragon imperial chariot slow came under the surrounding protection of a few dozens golden attired bodyguards, and descended in the front of the Burning Heaven Clan's group. Fen Juecheng immediately dismounted with a jump, came before the imperial chariot with a brisk pace, and said while bowing: "Juecheng greets father."

"Hmph!" Cang Wanhe did not open the curtain, and made a faint sneer: "Today is only the bridal procession, you and Yue'er have not gone through



the wedding ceremony. This word father, was called rather early.”

Fen Juecheng wasn't angry in the slightest, and smiled with without any impatience: “Father's scolding is correct. It is Juecheng who have acted rashly.”

Right at this time, the Moon Embracing Palace's main entrance slowly opened. Princess Cang Yue wore a phoenix coronet and shawl with the aurora's color. Under the

supporting hand of two palace maids, she slowly walked out. She, who was in a completely red attire, was as if the newly risen tender moon, and in a moment, stole all of the colors in this world while also attracting every stunned gaze.

“Hahahaha!” Seeing Cang Yue appear, Cang Shuo started to laugh first and laid his hands at Fen Juecheng: “Young Clan Master Fen, please.”

Fen Juecheng nodded. With a smile on his face, he walked

toward Cang Yue with a handsome posture, stopped before her, and extended a hand in her direction.

Since it was a bridal escortment, then Fen Juecheng definitely needed to support Cang Yue by the arms into the carriage. Yet Cang Yue had no response, as if she didn't see his extended hand at all, and asked coldly: "Where's the Burning Soul Flower I wanted?"

Fen Juecheng made a slight smile, clapped his hands, and

said: "Present the betrothal gift."

Over thirty Burning Heaven Clan disciples came forward simultaneously. Every single one of them carried a huge chest in their hands. The chests were gracefully lined up, and then opened simultaneously. Instantly, the marvelous luster of jewelry and the medicinal scent of high-grade medicinal materials filled the entire Moon Embracing Palace's airspace above. A large wave of exclamation resounded, and even personages at the level of Qin Wushang revealed odd

colors in their eyes... This betrothal gift, could be said to be worth as much as a few cities! Even if it was to marry the princess of the Imperial Family, it appeared somewhat exaggerated.

# Table of Contents

Synopsis

Chapter 201 – An Assembly Of Talents

Chapter 202 – Heavenly Sword Villa

Chapter 203 – Someone's Coming

Chapter 204 – Ranking Tournament: Start

Chapter 205 – Ranking Tournament: Profound Strength  
Assessment

Chapter 206 – The Unsurpassable Ling Yun

Chapter 207 – The True Profound Realm Who Broke History

Chapter 208 – First Battle

Chapter 209 – Establishing Dominance

Chapter 210 – Reunion

Chapter 211 – Second Round Of Group Stages

Chapter 212 – Consecutive Victories!

Chapter 213 – Qingyue Under The Moon

Chapter 214 – The True Beginning

Chapter 215 – Fighting Xiao Nan

Chapter 216 – Complete Victory

Chapter 217 – Bullying To An Intolerable Extent

Chapter 218 – A Quick And Decisive Battle

Chapter 219 – I'm An Expert In The Same Field

Chapter 220 – Yun Che VS Fen Juebi

Chapter 221 – Extinguished

Chapter 222 – Unforeseen Event

Chapter 223 – The Power Of A Throne

Chapter 224 – Xia Qingyue VS Xiao Kuanglei

Chapter 225 – Glazed Glass Heart, Exquisite Body

Chapter 226 – The Heaven Blessed Xia Qingyue

Chapter 227 – The Danger Planted In Silence

Chapter 228 – Celestial Yang Sword

Chapter 229 – Yuan Yang Combination

Chapter 230 – Overlord's Fury (1)

Chapter 231 – Overlord's Fury (2)

Chapter 232 – Overlord's Finale

Chapter 233 – Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's Offer  
Chapter 234 – Qingyue VS Ling Yun  
Chapter 235 – Otherworldly Beauty  
Chapter 236 – Ice Phoenix Snowflower Ribbon  
Chapter 237 – Sword Spirit Doppelganger  
Chapter 238 – Conclusion Through Domain  
Chapter 239 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (1)  
Chapter 240 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (2)  
Chapter 241 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (3)  
Chapter 242 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (4)  
Chapter 243 – Battle Between Husband And Wife (5)  
Chapter 244 – Burn! Phoenix Blood!  
Chapter 245 – The Last Strike  
Chapter 246 – Victor  
Chapter 247 – Waking Up  
Chapter 248 – The Night Before Heaven Basin  
Chapter 249 – Heaven Basin Secret Realm (1)  
Chapter 250 – Heaven Basin Secret Realm (2)  
Chapter 251 – Jasmine's Decision  
Chapter 252 – Killing With A Borrowed Blade  
Chapter 253 – How Do You Want To Die?  
Chapter 254 – A Woman's Heart  
Chapter 255 – Heaven Basin's Enormous Beast (1)  
Chapter 256 – Heaven Basin's Enormous Beast (2)  
Chapter 257 – On The Brink Of Death  
Chapter 258 – Finding The Hope Of Life In Despair  
Chapter 259 – Another World  
Chapter 260 – Ling'er  
Chapter 261 – Azure Cloud Dream  
Chapter 262 – Su Hengshan  
Chapter 263 – Grandwake Mountain, Grandwake Clan  
Chapter 264 – Qingyue Awakens  
Chapter 265 – Mutual Hostility  
Chapter 266 – Disruption  
Chapter 267 – Tyrannical Might  
Chapter 268 – Engagement  
Chapter 269 – Steamrolled  
Chapter 270 – Borrowing Power To Induce Fear  
Chapter 271 – The Bamboo Forest Phantasmagoria  
Chapter 272 – The Dream-Waking Hour

Chapter 273 – The Sudden Truth  
Chapter 274 – Leaving Heaven Basin Secret Realm  
Chapter 275 – Gargantuan Favor  
Chapter 276 – “Demon” (1)  
Chapter 277 – Demon (2)  
Chapter 278 – Frightening Change Of Events  
Chapter 279 – The Fallen Genius  
Chapter 280 – The Siblings Part Ways  
Chapter 281 – A Great Disturbance (1)  
Chapter 282 – A Great Disturbance (2)  
Chapter 283 – New Lease Of Life  
Chapter 284 – Ice Heart Of The Moon Beauty (yuechan)  
Chapter 285 – Cutting Off All Means Of Retreat  
Chapter 286 – Desperate Struggle  
Chapter 287 – Extreme Training  
Chapter 288 – Inflated Ambition  
Chapter 289 – Double Breakthrough  
Chapter 290 – Golden Buddha  
Chapter 291 – Profound Handle  
Chapter 292 – Information About The Azure Cloud Continent  
Chapter 293 – Rapid Progress  
Chapter 294 – What Is That In Your Hand!  
Chapter 295 – Blood Relative (1)  
Chapter 296 – Blood Relative (2)  
Chapter 297 – Profound Handle Awakens  
Chapter 298 – Dissipating Soul  
Chapter 299 – Seeing The Light Of Day Again  
Chapter 300 – The Princess Marrying

## Guide

Cover